



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2016

THE
JOURNAL
OF THE
ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY
OF
GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND.

NEW SERIES.



VOLUME THE NINETEENTH.

LONDON:
TRÜBNER AND CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

MDCCCLXXXVII.

STEPHEN AUSTIN AND SONS,



PRINTERS, HERTFORD.

CONTENTS OF VOL. XIX.

[NEW SERIES.]

PAGE

ART. I.—The Story of the Old Bamboo-Hewer. (Taketori no Okina no Monogatari.) A Japanese Romance of the Tenth Century. Translated, with Notes, etc., by F. VICTOR DICKINS, M.R.A.S. (<i>With three Chromolithographic Plates.</i>)	1
--	---

ART. II.—An Essay on the Brāhūi Grammar, after the German of the late Dr. Trumpp, of Munich University. By Dr. THEODORE DUKA, M.R.A.S., Surgeon-Major Bengal Army	59
---	----

ART. III.—Art. A Version in Chinese, by the MARQUIS TSENG, of a Poem written in English and Italian by H. W. FREELAND, M.A., M.R.A.S., late M.P., Commander of the Order of the Crown of Siam..	136
---	-----

ART. IV.—Some Useful Hindī Books. By G. A. GRIERSON, M.R.A.S., Bengal Civil Service ..	138
--	-----

ART. V.—Original Vocabularies of Five West Caucasian Languages. Compiled on the spot by Mr. PEACOCK, Vice-Consul of Batúm, Trans-Caucasia, South Russia, at the request of, and communicated by, Dr. R. N. CUST, Hon. Sec. R.A.S., with a Note	145
--	-----

NOTES OF THE QUARTER

1. Reports of Meetings of the Royal Asiatic Society, Session 1886-7	157
---	-----

	PAGE
2. Proceedings of Asiatic or Oriental Societies	158
3. Correspondence—(1) The Persian for Rouble, by J. W. Redhouse. (2) The Farhang Jahángirí, by J. W. Redhouse. (3) Note on a Modern Contributor to Persian Literature, Rezá Qulí Khan, and his Works, by Sidney Churchill. (4) The Idols of Bamian, by Alfred Haggard. (5) The Pre-Akkadian Writing, by G. Bertin ..	161
4. Obituary Notices	166
5. Excerpta Orientalia.....	170
6. Seventh International Oriental Congress (commu- nicated by the Honorary Secretary)	185
ART. VI.—Some Remarks on the Narrative of Fâ-hien. By the Rev. S. BEAL, M.R.A.S. (<i>With a Plate.</i>) ..	
	191
ART. VII.—Priority of Labial Letters illustrated in Chinese Phonetics. By the Rev. J. EDKINS, D.D., Peking, Hon. Member R.A.S.	
	207
ART. VIII.—The Present State of Education in Egypt. By H. CUNYNGHAME, Esq. (Communicated through Mr. Habib Anthony Salmoné, M.R.A.S.)	
	223
ART. IX.—The Tri-Ratna. By FREDERIC PINCOTT, M.R.A.S.	
	238
ART. X.—Description of the Noble Sanctuary at Jerusalem in 1470 A.D., by Kamâl (or Shams) ad Dîn as Suyûtî. Extracts Re-translated by GUY LE STRANGE, M.R.A.S. (<i>With a Plate.</i>)	
	247
NOTES OF THE QUARTER	
1. Reports of Meetings of the Royal Asiatic Society, Session 1886-7	306
2. Proceedings of Asiatic or Oriental Societies	313

3. Correspondence—(1) The Persian for Rouble, by Alexander Finn. (2) Notes on Persian Literature from Tehran, by Sidney J. A. Churchill. (3) Assyrian Names of Domestic Animals, by Theo. G. Pinches	317
4. Obituary Notices	320
5. Excerpta Orientalia	321
6. Special Committee, Royal Asiatic Society.....	342

ART. XI.—The Life and Labours of Alexander Wylie, Agent of the British and Foreign Bible Society in China. A Memoir. By M. HENRI CORDIER, Professor at the École des Langues Orientales Vivantes and École des Sciences Politiques, Paris. (Communicated by Professor R. K. Douglas, M.R.A.S.) ..	351
---	-----

ART. XII.—The Modern Languages of Oceania. By Dr. R. N. CUST, Hon. Sec., accompanied by a Language-Map and a Bibliography	369
---	-----

ART. XIII.—Ibnu Baṭūṭa in Sindh. By Major-General M. R. HAIG, M.R.A.S.	393
---	-----

ART. XIV.—Formosa Notes on MSS., Races and Languages. By TERRIEN DE LACOUPERIE, Ph. & Litt.D., Professor of Indo-Chinese Philology, University College, London. Including a Note on Nine Formosan MSS. by E. COLBORNE BABER, H.B.M. Chinese Secretary, Peking. (<i>With three Plates.</i>)..	413
--	-----

ART. XV.—On the Revenues of the Moghul Empire. By H. G. KEENE, Esq. (Communicated through the Secretary R.A.S.).....	495
--	-----

NOTES OF THE QUARTER

1. Reports of Meetings of the Royal Asiatic Society, Session 1886-7	500
---	-----

	PAGE
2. Proceedings of Asiatic or Oriental Societies	506
3. Correspondence—(1) Buddhist Remains at Guṇṭu- palle, by R. Sewell (<i>with two Plates</i>). (2) Tsuh fu, by Robert K. Douglas	508
4. Obituary Notices	513
5. Excerpta Orientalia	528
6. Notes contributed by the Hon. Secretary	545
7. Address to Her Majesty the Queen on the occasion of the Jubilee	549
ART. XVI.—The Miryeks or Stone-men of Corea. By Prof. TERRIEN DE LACOUPERIE, Ph. & Litt.D., M.R.A.S. (<i>With a Plate.</i>)	
	553
ART. XVII.—The Pre-Sanskrit Element in Ancient Tamil Literature. By E. S. W. SENĀTHI RĀJĀ, LL.B., M.R.A.S.	
	558
ART. XVIII.—Were Zenobia and Zebbā'u Identical? By J. W. REDHOUSE, M.R.A.S., C.M.G., Litt.D., etc... ..	
	583
ART. XIX.—The First Maṇḍala of the Ṛig-Veda. By FREDERIC PINCOTT, M.R.A.S.	
	598
ART. XX.—Origin and Development of the Cuneiform Sylla- bary. By G. BERTIN, M.R.A.S.	
	625
ART. XXI.—The Babylonian Chronicle. By THEO. G. PINCHES, M.R.A.S.	
	655
NOTES OF THE QUARTER	
1. Reports of Meetings of the Royal Asiatic Society, Session 1886-7	682
2. Proceedings of Asiatic or Oriental Societies	682

CONTENTS.

vii

PAGE

3. Correspondence—(1) The Persian for Rouble, by Capt. T. G. de Guiraudon. (2) The Bibliography of Africa, by Capt. T. G. de Guiraudon	686
4. Obituary Notices	687
5. Excerpta Orientalia	691
6. Notes contributed by the Hon. Secretary	706
7. Special Committee, Royal Asiatic Society	714

INDEX	721
-----------------	-----

Proceedings of the Sixty-Fourth Anniversary Meeting of the Society, held on the 16th May, 1887	i-xvi
---	-------

LIST OF MEMBERS	i-xxii
---------------------------	--------

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE
The Oread's ¹ Haunt	40
The Upbearing of the Lady Kaguya	40
Fujisan from the Pass of Gokanya (Nanaozaka)	40
Plate of Sanskrit root-combinations	206
Plate of the Pau section from Chalmers' "Kanghi"	217
Buddhist Praying-wheel	243
Buddhist Symbols	245
Plan of the Haram-ash-Sharîf	257
Language-map of Oceania	369
A Chinese Seal	422
Three Plates of Bilingual Manuscripts from Formosa	427
Guṇṭupalle Chaitya Cave	510
Vihara Caves at Guṇṭupalle	510
Photograph of a Miryek at Un-jin, Corea	553
Pictorial Signs illustrating M. Bertin's article	629 <i>et seq.</i>

¹ *Misprinted Dreads' on the Plate.*

LIST OF THE MEMBERS
OF THE
ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY
OF
GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND:

FOUNDED, *March*, 1823.

CORRECTED TO JULY, M.DCCC.LXXXV^{II}.

22, ALBEMARLE STREET,
LONDON.

ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY.

PATRON:

HER MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY THE QUEEN.

VICE-PATRONS:

HIS ROYAL HIGHNESS THE PRINCE OF WALES.
THE SECRETARY OF STATE FOR INDIA.

PRESIDENT:

SIR THOMAS F. WADE, K.C.B.

DIRECTOR:

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR HENRY C. RAWLINSON, K.C.B., D.C.L.,
LL.D., F.R.S.

VICE-PRESIDENTS:

SIR THOMAS EDWARD COLEBROOKE, BART.
MAJOR-GEN. A. CUNNINGHAM, R.E., C.S.I., C.I.E.
THE REV. PROFESSOR A. H. SAYCE, M.A.
COLONEL HENRY YULE, R.E., C.B., LL.D.

COUNCIL:

BENDALL, PROFESSOR CECIL, M.A.
DICKINS, F. V., Esq.
DOUGLAS, PROFESSOR R. K.
DUKA, THEODORE, Esq., M.D.
FRYER, COLONEL GEORGE E.
GOLDSMID, MAJOR-GENERAL SIR F. J., C.B., K.C.S.I.
HOWORTH, H. H., Esq., F.S.A., M.P.
KAY, HENRY C., Esq.
LACOUPERIE, PROFESSOR TERRIEN DE, PH. & LITT.D.
MACLAGAN, GENERAL ROBERT, R.E., F.R.S.E.
MONIER-WILLIAMS, PROF. SIR MONIER, C.I.E., M.A., D.C.L.
ROBERTSON SMITH, PROFESSOR W., M.A.
MORRIS, HENRY, Esq.
THORNTON, T. H., Esq., C.S.I.

TREASURER:

E. L. BRANDRETH, Esq.

SECRETARY:

PROFESSOR T. W. RHYS DAVIDS.

HONORARY SECRETARY:

ROBERT N. CUST, Esq., LL.D.

TRUSTEES:

SIR T. EDWARD COLEBROOKE, BART.
ROBERT N. CUST, Esq., LL.D.
SIR RICHARD TEMPLE, G.C.S.I., C.I.E., D.C.L., M.P.

HONORARY SOLICITOR:

ALEX. H. WILSON, Esq.

Members.

RESIDENT AND NON-RESIDENT.

N.B.—The marks prefixed to the names signify—

• Non-resident Members.

+ Members who have compounded for their Subscriptions.

‡ Members who, having compounded, have again renewed their Subscriptions, or given Donations.

‡ Members who have served on the Council.

1863 HIS ROYAL HIGHNESS THE PRINCE OF WALES.

1882 HIS ROYAL HIGHNESS THE DUKE OF CONNAUGHT.

1883 *HIS HIGHNESS MUHAMMAD TAUFIK, KHEDIVE OF EGYPT,
C.I.E.

†HIS HIGHNESS HASSAN PASHA, *Egypt.*

1876 ABBOTT, Major-Gen. James, C.B., *Ellasy, Swanmore, Ryde.*

1883 *†ABD-UL-HAKK SAIYID SALAR JANG NAWÁB-BAHADUR, *Hyderabad, Dekhan.*

1879 *ADAMSON, Harvey, Esq., M.A., *Assistant Commissioner British Burma.*

1879 *ADDIS, William Judson, Esq., *C.E. to the Moulmain Municipality; British Burma.*

1874 *†AKAMATZ, S., Esq., *Honganji, Kioto, Japan.*

1883 *ALFORD, R. Gervase, Esq., *M.Inst.C.E., 130, George Street, Edinburgh.*

1849 *†ALI MAHOMED KHAN.

1884 *ALLEN, Clement F. A., Esq., *H.B.M. Consul, Pakhoi, China.*

1880 *ALLEN, H. J., Esq., *H.B.M. Consul, Newchwang, China.*

1880 AMHERST, W. Amhurst Tyssen, Esq., M.P., 88, *Brook Street, Grosvenor Square; Diddington Park, Brandon, Suffolk.*

1882 *ANDERSON, John, Esq., M.D., LL.D., F.R.S., F.R.S.E., 71, *Harrington Gardens, S.W.*

1886 ANDERSON, John, M.D., C.I.E., Retired Brigade Surgeon, 105, *Gloucester Place, Portman Square, W.*

- 1882 ANDERSON, Major-Gen. R. P., *Lucknow Residency, Harold Road, Upper Norwood, S.E.*
- 1886 *†ANGRIA, Jai Singh Rao, Esq., *Baroda.*
- 1868 ARBIB, Dr. Enrico, 5, *Craven Hill, W.*
- 1882 ARBUTHNOT, Foster Fitzgerald, Esq., 18, *Park Lane.*
- 1837 *†ARDASEER, Cursetji, Esq., *Bombay.*
- 1837 *†ARDASEER, Hormanji, Esq., *Bombay.*
- 1879 §ARNOLD, Edwin, Esq., C.S.I., 21, *West Cromwell Road.*
- 1854 ARTHUR, The Rev. W., M.A., *Battersea Rise, Clapham Common.*
- 1883 ASHBURNER, L. R., Esq., C.S.I., *East India United Service Club.*
- 1879 *ASTON, W. G., Esq., *British Consulate, Hiogo, Japan.*
- 1883 ATTERIDGE, A. Hilliard, Esq., 63, *St. Stephen's Avenue, Uxbridge Road, W.*
- 1879 AUSTIN, Stephen, Esq., *Lynchmere, Queen's Road, Hertford, Herts.*
- 1885 *†AVERY, John, Esq., Professor of Greek, *Bowdoin College, Brunswick, Maine, U.S.A.*
- 1867 *†BABBAGE, Maj.-Gen. H. P., *Yorkleigh, St. George's Road, Cheltenham.*
- 1882 *§BABER, E. Colborne, Esq., *Chinese Secretary, Peking.*
- 1886 BAILLIE, General John, 4, *Queensborough Terrace, Kensington Gardens, W.*
- 1883 *†BALL, James Dyer, Esq., H.M.C.S., 2, *West Terrace, Hong Kong.*
- 1886 *BARBER, J. H., *Colombo, Ceylon.*
- 1878 †BARKLEY, David Graham, Esq., *Meghera, Ireland.*
- 1881 *†BATE, The Rev. J. Drew, *Allahabad, India.*
- 1887 *BAUMGARTNER, Professor A. J., *St. Jean la Tour, Genève.*
- 1873 *†BAYNES, A. E., Esq., 19, *Castle Street, Holborn.*
- 1885 BAYNES, Herbert, Esq., *Daheim, Parliament Hill, Hampstead.*
- 1862 BEAL, The Rev. S., *Prof. of Chinese, University College, London; The Rectory, Wark, Northumberland.*
- 1883 *†BECHER, H. M., Esq., *Messrs. Jardine & Co., Shanghai.*
- 1878 *BELLEW, Walter H., Surgeon-General, C.S.I., 83, *Linden Gardens, Bayswater, W.*
- 1883 †BENDALL, Cecil, Esq., *Fellow of Caius College; British Museum.*

- 1881 BERTIN, G., Esq., 12, *Oakford Road, Junction Road, N.W.*
- 1880 *BEST, J. W., Esq., *Mangalore, Madras.*
- 1882 *BIABHA, Shapunje D., Esq., M.D.
- 1883 *BIHAWANI SINGH, Esq., M.D., *Udaipur, Rajputana.*
- 1883 *BHOWNAGRI, Mancherji M., Esq., 3, *Church Street, Bombay.*
- 1886 †BIRCH, J. K., Esq., *Magistrate, Province Wellesley, Straits Settlements.*
- 1876 BIRDWOOD, Sir George, C.S.I., K.C.I.E., M.D., *India Office.*
- 1874 *BLAIR, Lieut.-Col. H. F., R.E., *Senior United Service Club.*
- 1882 BLUNT, The Lady Anne Isabella, 10, *James Street, Buckingham Gate, S.W.*
- 1861 *BLUNT, John E., Esq., C.B., *H.B.M. Consul General, Salonica.*
- 1882 BLUNT, Wilfred S., Esq., 10, *James Street, Buckingham Gate, S.W.*
- 1880 *†BOND, I. Swinburne, Esq., *Singapore.*
- 1877 BOULGER, D. C., Esq., 46, *Edwardes Square, Kensington.*
- 1870 BOWRING, Lewin B., Esq., C.S.I., *Lavrockbere, Torquay.*
- 1857 †§BRANDRETH, E. L., Esq., 32, *Elvaston Place, Queen's Gate, Treasurer R.A.S.*
- 1883 *BRITO, Philip S., Esq., *Colombo, Ceylon.*
- 1884 *†BUCHANAN, J. Beaumont, Esq., C.E., *Hyderabad, Dekkan.*
- 1882 BUCKINGHAM AND CHANDOS, His Grace the Duke of, G.C.S.I., *Wotton, Aylesbury, Bucks.*
- 1866 †BURGESS, James, Esq., LL.D., *Archæological Surveyor and Reporter, India; 22, Seton Place, Edinburgh.*
- 1836 †*BURNS, David Laing, Esq., *Allahabad.*
- 1886 *BURROWS, S. M., Esq., *Ceylon Civil Service.*
- 1867 †BURT, Major T. S., F.R.S., *Pippbrook House, Dorking.*
- 1859 †BURTON, Captain Sir Richard F., K.C.M.G., *H.B.M. Consul, Trieste.*
- 1880 *BUSHELL, S. W., Esq., M.D., *Pekin.*
- 1887 *BUTCHER, The Very Rev. Dean, *Chaplain at Cairo.*
- 1877 *BUTTS, Henry H., Esq., *Assistant Commissioner, Fyzabad, Oudh, N.W.P.*
- 1881 *CAIN, The Rev. John, *Dummagudem, Upper Godavari, S. India.*

- 1886 CAMA, Jehangir K. R., Esq., 3 and 4, *Great Winchester Buildings, Great Winchester Street.*
- 1867 †*CAMA, K. R., Esq., C.I.E., 12, *Malabar Hill, Bombay.*
- 1874 CAMPBELL, Sir George, K.C.S.I., M.P., *Southwell House, Southwell Gardens, S.W.*
- 1884 CAMPBELL, James M., Esq., *Achnashie, Rosneath, N.B.*
- 1887 CAPPER, William C., Esq., 14, *Nevern Square, Earl's Court, S.W.*
- 1876 *CARLETTI, Signor P. V., *Professor of Arabic, 4, Rue de la Couronne, Brussels.*
- 1881 *CESNOLA, General Palma di, *Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York.*
- 1877 *CHAMBERLAIN, Basil Hall, Esq., *Imp. Naval College, Tokio, Japan.*
- 1875 CHARNOCK, R. S., Esq., M.D., F.S.A., *Junior Garrick Club, 1A, Adelphi Terrace.*
- 1883 *CHUBILDĀS RĀMDAS, Esq., *Christ's College, Cambridge.*
- 1885 *†CHURCHILL, Sidney, Esq., *English Government Telegraph Department, Persia.*
- 1881 †CLARKE, Hyde, Esq., 32, *St. George's Square, S.W.*
- 1881 *†CLARKE, H. Wilberforce, Major R.E., *Simon's Town, Cape of Good Hope.*
- 1882 CLARKE, G. Purdon, Esq., C.S.I., *Keeper Indian Section, South Kensington Museum; 36, Bath Road, Chiswick.*
- 1879 CLENDINNING, Miss, 29, *Dorset Square, N.W.*
- 1885 *COBHAM, Claude Delaval, Esq., *Commissioner, Larnaca, Cyprus.*
- 1877 §CODRINGTON, Oliver, M.D., 85, *Upper Richmond Road, Putney.*
- 1836 ††§COLEBROOKE, Sir T. Edward, Bart., *V.P.R.A.S., 14, Brook Street, Park Lane; Abington House, Abington, N.B.*
- 1885 *COLQUHOUN, Archibald, Esq., *Burma.*
- 1883 COMPIGNÉ, Charles, Esq., A.K.C., 114, *Kennington Park Road, S.E.*
- 1886 COOKSON, Charles, C.B., *H.B.M. Consul and Judge, Alexandria, Egypt.*
- 1885 COPP, Alfred Evelyn, Esq., *Treasurer Numismatic Society, Hatherley, Wimbledon.*
- 1886 CORNISH, W. R., Surgeon-General, C.I.E., 8, *Cresswell Gardens, The Boltons, S.W.*

- 1887 *COUSENS, HENRY, *Assistant Archæological Surveyor for Western India, 57, Neutral Lines, Poona.*
- 1866 COWELL, EDWARD B., ESQ., M.A., *Professor of Sanskrit, Cambridge.*
- 1879 *CRAIG, W., ESQ., *Brisbane, Queensland, Australia.*
- 1878 CRANBROOK, THE RIGHT HON. THE VISCOUNT, G.C.S.I., 17, *Grosvenor Crescent, S.W.*
- 1882 CRAWFORD AND BALCARRES, THE RIGHT HON. THE EARL OF, F.R.S., *Haigh, Wigan.*
- 1852 †CRAWFORD, R. W., ESQ., 71, *Old Broad Street.*
- 1880 †CRAWSHAY, G., ESQ., *Haughton Castle, Humshaugh-on-Tyne; 6, Adelphi Terrace, Strand.*
- 1883 *CUMINE, ALEXANDER, ESQ., E.I.U.S.C., *Ratnagiri, Bombay.*
- 1877 *CUNHA, GERSON DA, ESQ., 39, *Hornby Row, Bombay.*
- 1855 *§CUNNINGHAM, MAJOR-GENERAL SIR ALEXANDER, R.E., C.S.I., K.C.I.E., *V.P.R.A.S.*
- 1835 *†CURSETJEE, MANOCKJEE, ESQ., *Bombay.*
- 1852 CUST, ROBERT N., ESQ., LL.D., *Hon. Secretary R.A.S.; Travellers' Club, Pall Mall; 63, Elm Park Gardens, S.W.*
- 1886 *CUFFENBURG, HECTOR VAN, *Ceylon.*
- 1836 *†DADABHAI PESTONJI, ESQ., *Bombay.*
- 1884 *DAMES, M. LONGWORTH, ESQ., *Dera Ghazi Khan, Panjab.*
- 1886 DAVID, MAREAR, ESQ., 9, *Prince's Square, Bayswater.*
- 1859 §DAVIES, THE REV. JOHN, M.A., 16, *Belsize Square, South Hampstead, N.W.*
- 1886 *DAVIES, WILLIAM, ESQ., 29, *Via Babuino, Rome.*
- 1834 †DAVIS, SIR JOHN FRANCIS, BART., K.C.B., F.R.S., *Athenæum Club; Hollywood, Bristol.*
- 1887 *DE MORGAN, W. C., ESQ., *Ceylon.*
- 1861 †DERBY, THE RIGHT HON. THE EARL OF, D.C.L., F.R.S., 33, *St. James's Square.*
- 1882 †§DICKINS, F. V., ESQ., *Assistant Registrar, London University, Burlington Gardens.*
- 1863 *DICKSON, W., ESQ., *Foreign Office.*
- 1874 §DOUGLAS, R. K., ESQ., *Professor of Chinese, King's College; British Museum.*
- 1879 *†DOYLE, PATRICK, ESQ., C.E., F.G.S., *Ballara, Madras Presidency, India.*

- 1861 †DUFF, The Right Hon. Sir Mountstuart Elphinstone Grant-,
G.C.S.I., F.R.S., *Governor of Madras.*
- 1886 *DUFFERIN, The Right Hon. the Earl of, G.C.S.I.,
Government House, Simla.
- 1884 §DUKA, Theodore, Esq., M.D., F.R.C.S., 55, *Nevern
Square, Earl's Court, S.W.*
- 1883 *DUKE, Joshua, Esq., M.D., *Messrs. Grindlay & Co.*
- 1885 *DUMERGUE, Willoughby, Esq., 3, *Norland Square, Notting
Hill, W.*
- 1837 ††EASTWICK, Capt. Wm. J., 12, *Leinster Gardens, Hyde
Park.*
- 1852 †ERSKINE, Claude, Esq., 66, *Oxford Terrace, Hyde Park.*
- 1881 *†FARGUES, J., Esq., *Indian Telegraph Department, Teherán.*
- 1879 †*FAULKNER, Alexander S., *Surgeon, Bombay.*
- 1877 *†FERGUSON, A. M., jun., *Abbotsford Estate, Lindula,
Ceylon.*
- 1877 *†FERGUSON, Donald W., *Colombo, Ceylon.*
- 1883 *†FERGUSON, The Right Hon. Sir James, Bart., K.C.M.G.,
G.C.S.I., *Under Secretary of State, Foreign Office.*
- 1881 *FERGUSON, Thomas T., Esq., *Consul du Royaume de
Belgique, Chefoo, China.*
- 1881 *FINN, Alexander, Esq., *H.M. Legation, Consul Resht
Teherán, via Vienna.*
- 1878 FITZGERALD, Sir W. G. S. Vesey, K.C.I.E., C.S.I., *India
Office.*
- 1877 *FLEET, J. F., Esq., C.I.E., *Belgaum, Bombay Presidency.*
- 1887 *FLOYER, Ernest A. E., *Inspector-General of Telegraphs in
Egypt.*
- 1879 FORLONG, Major-Gen. J. G. Roche, 11, *Douglas Crescent,
Edinburgh.*
- 1867 *FOULKES, The Rev. T., *Madras Presidency.*
- 1883 *FRANKFURTER, Oscar, Esq., Ph.D., *Bangkok, Siam.*
- 1873 FRANKS, A. W., Esq., M.A., F.R.S., *British Museum.*
- 1886 FRAZER, Robert W., Esq., *London Institution, Finsbury
Circus, E.C.*

- 1862 †FREELAND, H. W., Esq., *Athenæum Club; Chichester.*
- 1860 §†FRYER, Col. George E., 16, *Arundel Gardens, Kensington Park Road, W.*
- 1880 *FURDOONJI, Jamshedji, Esq., *Aurangabad, Dekkan.*
- 1881 *GARDNER, Christopher T., Esq., *H.B.M. Consul, Ichang.*
- 1865 †GAYNER, C., Esq., M.A., F.R.S.E.
- 1885 *GEISLER, Theodor, Esq., *Dusseldorf, 2, Elizabeth Strasse, Germany.*
- 1884 *GHEYN, Van den, M., S.J., 11, *Ancienne Abbaye, Tronehiennes, Belgium.*
- 1879 *GHOSE, Ramchundra, Esq., 32, *Jhamapukar Lane, Calcutta.*
- 1880 †GIBB, E. J. W., Esq., 13, *Mongomerie Crescent, Kelvinside, Glasgow.*
- 1880 GILL, T. R., Esq., 21, *Harefield Road, Brockley.*
- 1887 *GOLDSMID, Frederic L., Esq., *Uncovenanted Serviez, Bombay, India.*
- 1886 GOLDSMID, Louisa, Lady, *Portman Square, W.*
- 1864 §†GOLDSMID, Major-Gen. Sir F. J., C.B., K.C.S.I., 3, *Observatory Avenue, Campden Hill.*
- 1861 *GORDON, The Hon. Sir A., G.C.M.G., D.C.L., *Governor of Ceylon.*
- 1882 *GORDON, Sir James D., K.C.S.I.
- 1876 *GORDON, Major R., 32, *Clarges Street.*
- 1884 *†GORPARSHAD, Thakur, *Talookdar of Baiswan, Alligurh.*
- 1885 *GOSSETT, Col. M. W. Edward, *2nd Dorsetshire Regiment.*
- 1884 *GOUR, Adhar Singh, Esq., B.A., LL.B. (Cantab), *Barrister-at-Law, Inner Temple, Extra Assistant Commissioner, Central Provinces, Nagpur.*
- 1858 GRAHAM, Cyril C., Esq., C.M.G., *Colonial Office, S.W.*
- 1887 GRAYSTONE, S. Wynn, 20, *Bury Street, St. James's.*
- 1875 †*GRIBBLE, James D. B., Esq., *Madras Civil Service, Cuddapah.*
- 1884 *GRIERSON, George A., Esq., *India.*
- 1866 *GRIFFIN, Sir Lepel H., K.C.S.I., *Bengal C.S., Indore, Central India.*
- 1852 †*GRIFFITH, R. T. H., Esq., M.A., *Director of Public Instruction, N.W.P.*
- 1884 *GROWSE, F. S., Esq., *Bulandshahr, N.W.P.*

- 1880 HAGGARD, A. H., Esq., *Athenæum Club*; 20, *Grove Road, Wanstead, Essex.*
- 1883 *HAGGARD, W. H. D., Esq., *Charge-d'Affaires, Rio Janeiro, Brazil.*
- 1880 §HAIG, Major-General Malcolm R., 5, *Park Road, Beckenham, Kent.*
- 1881 *HALÉVY, Prof. Joseph, 26, *Rue Aumaire, Paris.*
- 1887 HALLETT, Holt S., Esq., 35, *Bryanston Street, W.*
- 1883 *HAMID ALI KHAN, Esq., *India.*
- 1884 *HARBHAMJI, PRINCE OF MORVI, B.A., LL.M., *Rajkumar College, Rajkote, Katthiawadh, India.*
- 1884 †*HARLEZ, Monseigneur C. de, *Professor of Oriental Languages, Louvain.*
- 1880 HARRISON, J. Park, Esq., 22, *Connaught Street, Hyde Park.*
- 1882 HARTINGTON, The Most Hon. the Marquess of, *Devonshire House, Piccadilly.*
- 1883 †HATFIELD, Captain C. T., late Dragoon Guards, *Harts Down, Margate.*
- 1881 HEAD, Barclay V., Esq., *Sec. Num. Soc., British Museum.*
- 1834 †HEMING, Captain Dempster, *Madras.*
- 1885 HENDERSON, George, Esq., jun., 7, *Mincing Lane, E.C.*
- 1887 *HENDERSON, R. M., C.E., *care of Messrs. Henry S. King and Co., Cornhill.*
- 1884 *HENDLEY, J. Holbein, Esq., *Surg.-Major, Jeypore, Rajputana.*
- 1880 *HERVEY, The Hon. D. F. A., 36 *Duke Street, St. James's.*
- 1846 †HEYWOOD, James, Esq., F.R.S., 26, *Kensington Palace Gardens.*
- 1883 *HICKIE, J. R. D., Esq., *care of Hickie, Borman & Co., Waterloo Place.*
- 1885 *HIPPLISLEY, Alfred E., Esq., *Commissioner of Chinese Customs, and Chinese Secretary to the Inspectorate General of Customs, Peking.*
- 1828 †§HODGSON, Brian Houghton, Esq., F.R.S., *Alderley Grange, Wotton-under-Edge.*
- 1881 *HOEY, William, Esq., M.A., *Bengal C.S., Crofton House, Knock, Co. Down, Ireland.*
- 1882 *HOLMWOOD, Frederic, Esq., *H.B.M. Consul, Zanzibar.*
- 1852 †HOLROYD, Thomas, Esq., *The Palace, Hampton Court.*
- 1865 *†HOLROYD, Major W. R. M., *Director of Public Instruction, Lahore.*

- 1880 †*HOOPER, Walter F., Esq., *Negapatam, India.*
- 1883 HOWORTH, H. H., Esq., F.S.A., M.P., 9, *Hereford Square, Gloucester Road, S.W.*
- 1857 HUGHES, Captain Sir F., K.C.B., *Barntown House, Wexford.*
- 1882 *HUGHES, George, Esq., *Bengal C.S., Rūpan, Punjab, India.*
- 1877 *HUGHES, The Rev. T. P., *Lebanon Springs, New York State, U.S.A.*
- 1867 *§HUNTER, Sir W. W., K.C.S.I., C.I.E., LL.D., *Director-General Gazetteers and Statistics to the Government of India, Calcutta.*
- 1879 *IRVINE, W., Esq., *Sahāranpūr, N.W.P., India.*
- 1885 *†JAİKISHAN DASS BAHADOOR, Rajah, *Muradabad, Rohilkhand.*
- 1871 *†JAMES, S. Harvey, Esq., *Bengal Civil Service, Allahabad.*
- 1878 *JARDINE, John, Esq., *Judge, High Court, Bombay.*
- 1881 *†JAYAKAR, Atmarain S. G., Esq., *Surg.-Maj., Muscat, Persian Gulf.*
- 1883 *†JAYAMOHUN, Thakur Singh, Magistrate and Tahsildar of Seori Narayan, *Bilaspur, Central Provinces, India.*
- 1887 JOHNSTON, C. J., Esq., *Messrs. Allen, Waterloo Place.*
- 1879 *JOYNER, R. B., Esq., *Tokak Canal, Belgaum.*
- 1881 §KAY, H. C., Esq., 11, *Durham Villas, Kensington.*
- 1880 §KEATINGE, Major-General R. H., C.S.I., V.C., 62, *Lexham Gardens, S.W.*
- 1884 *KEITH, Major J. B., *Junior United Service Club; Archaeological Survey, Lucknow, N.W.P.*
- 1874 *KELSALL, John, Esq., *Madras C.S., Ganjam.*
- 1864 *†KEMBALL, Lieut.-Gen. Sir Arnold, K.C.B., K.C.S.I., 5, *Upper Belgrave Street; Uppat House, Solspie, N.B.*
- 1856 †KERR, Mrs., 19, *Warwick Road, Kensington.*
- 1872 *KIELHORN, Dr. F., C.I.E., *Professor of Sanskrit, Göttingen.*
- 1884 KIMBERLEY, The Right Hon. the Earl of, 35, *Lowndes Square.*
- 1884 *KING, Lucas White, Esq., *Political Agent, Ajmere, Rajputana, N.W.P., India.*

- 1884 †*KITTS, Eustice John, Esq., *Bengal C.S., Azamgarh, N.W.P.*
- 1884 *KNOWLES, The Rev. J. Hinton, *Srinagar, Kashmir.*
- 1884 KNIGHTON, W., Esq., LL.D., *The Cedars, Sydenham.*
- 1880 *KYNNEERSLEY, C. W. Sneyd, Esq., *Chief Magistrate, Penang, Singapore, Straits Settlements.*
- 1884 *LACHMAN SINGH, Rāja, *Bulandshahr, N.W.P.*
- 1879 §LACOUPERIE, Terrien de, Esq., Litt.D., Professor of Indo-Chinese Philology, University College, London, 54, *Bishop's Terrace, Walham Green, S.W.*
- 1887 LAKSHMI, Narayan, 49, *Chesterton Road, North Kensington.*
- 1880 *†LANMAN, Charles R., Esq., *Professor of Sanskrit, Harvard College, Cambridge, Mass., U.S.A., Corresponding Secretary to the American Oriental Society.*
- 1884 †*LANSDELL, The Rev. Dr., D.D., *Eyre Cottage, Blackheath, S.E.*
- 1874 LAWRENCE, F. W., Esq., *Oakleigh, Beckenham.*
- 1882 *LAYARD, The Right Hon. Sir Austen H., G.C.B., D.C.L.
- 1872 §LEES, Major-General W. Nassau, LL.D., 64, *Grosvenor Street, W.*
- 1877 LEGGE, The Rev. Dr., D.D., *Professor of Chinese, Oxford.*
- 1881 *†LEITH, Tyrrell, Esq., *Barrister-at-Law, Malabar Hill, Bombay.*
- 1861 *†LEITNER, Gottlieb W., Esq., *Officiating Director of Public Instruction, Lahore.*
- 1883 *LE MESURIER, Cecil John Reginald, Esq., C.S., *Kandy, Ceylon.*
- 1863 *LE MESURIER, Henry P., Esq., C.S.I., *President of the Administration of Egyptian Railways, Alexandria.*
- 1878 *†LEPPER, C. H., Esq.
- 1880 †LE STRANGE, Guy, Esq., 46, *Charles Street, Berkeley Square.*
- 1875 LETHBRIDGE, Sir Roper, C.I.E., M.P., 19, *Clanricarde Gardens.*
- 1879 §LEWIN, Lieut.-Col. T. H., *Parkhurst, Abinger, Gourshall Station, Surrey.*
- 1883 *LILLEY, R., Esq., 33, *East 17th Street, New York.*
- 1883 LINDLEY, William, Esq., C.E., 10, *Kidbrooke Terrace, Blackheath.*
- 1870 *LOCH, Sir Henry B., K.C.B., *Governor of Victoria, N.S.W.*

- 1879 *LOCKHART, J. H. Stewart, Esq., *Hong-Kong*.
- 1840 LOEWE, Dr. L., *Oscar Villas, Broadstairs, Kent*.
- 1880 *LOW, Sir Hugh B., *Sarawak, Straits Settlements*.
- 1873 LUMSDEN, Major-Gen. Sir Peter S., K.C.B., C.S.I., 29,
Ashburne Place, Cromwell Road.
- 1873 §LYNCH, T. K., Esq., 33, *Pont Street, Chelsea, S.W.*
- 1878 MACARTNEY, Sir Halliday, M.D., *Secretary to the Chinese Embassy; Richmond House, 49, Portland Place*.
- 1882 *McCORKELL, G., Esq., *Bombay C.S., Haidarabad, Sindh, India*.
- 1881 §McCRINDLE, J. W., Esq., M.A., *The Lindens, Abbotsford Park, Edinburgh*.
- 1882 MACDONELL, Arthur Anthony, Esq., *Phil.D. Leipzig University, Boden Sanskrit Scholar, Corpus Christi, Oxford*.
- 1887 *McDOWALL, W., Esq., *Indo-European Telegraph, Karachi, Sindh*.
- 1881 MACKENZIE, Sir W., M.D., K.C.B., C.S.I., 2, *Gloucester Houses, Hyde Park*.
- 1882 †MACKINNON, William, Esq., *Ballinakill, near Clachan, West Loch, Tarbert, Argyleshire*.
- 1879 §MACLAGAN, Gen. Robt., R.E., F.R.S.E., 4, *West Cromwell Road, S.W.*
- 1879 MACRAE, A. C., Esq., M.D., 119, *Westbourne Terrace, Hyde Park, W.*
- 188 MADAN, Gopal, Esq., M.A. *Calcutta University, 39, Colville Terrace, Bayswater*.
- 1877 MADDEN, F. W., Esq., *Hilton Lodge, Sudeley Terrace, Brighton*.
- 1862 MALCOLM, General G. A., 67, *Sloane Street*.
- 1881 MALLESON, Colonel George Bruce, C.S.I., 27, *West Cromwell Road, South Kensington, S.W.*
- 1871 *†MANDLIK, Ráo Sahib Vishvanáth Náráyan, C.S.I., *Bombay*.
- 1879 †MANNING, Miss, 35, *Blomfield Road, W.*
- 1883 *MATEER, The Rev. S., *Trivandrum, Travancore*.
- 1880 *MAXWELL, The Hon. W. E., *Residency, Larut, Straits Settlements*.

- 1877 MAYNE, J. D., Esq., *Goodrest, Reading; 1, Crown Office Row, Temple.*
- 1884 *MEHDY KHAN MIRZA, F.R.G.S., *Chudder Ghat, Hyderabad, Deccan.*
- 1854 MELVILL, Major-Gen. Sir Peter M., K.C.B., 27, *Palmeira Square, Brighton.*
- 1863 *MILES, Colonel S. B., *Bengal Staff Corps; Political Agent, Muscat.*
- 1873 *MINCHIN, Lieut.-Col., *Bengal Staff Corps; Polit. Agent of Bahawalpur, Panjáb.*
- 1879 *MITCHELL, Thomas Candy, Esq., Assistant Commissioner of Forests, *Karen Hill, Toungoo, British Burma.*
- 1878 †MOCATTA, F. D., Esq., 9, *Connaught Place, Hyde Park.*
- 1874 *MOCKLER, Major E., *Bombay Staff Corps.*
- 1884 *MOLONEY, Capt. C. A., C.M.G., *Government House, Bathurst, Gambia, West Africa.*
- 1882 *MOHANLÁL VISNULÁL PANDIA, Pundit, Member and Secretary of the State Council of Mewar, *Oodeypore.*
- 1846 †§MONIER-WILLIAMS, Sir Monier, M.A., K.C.I.E., D.C.L., Professor of Sanskrit, Oxford, 7, *Cromwell Place, S.W.*
- 1885 *MONTE, D. A. de, Esq., *Bandora, Bombay.*
- 1887 *MONTET, Prof. E., *Professor of Oriental Languages, Geneva University.*
- 1886 MORGAN, E. Delmar, Esq., 15, *Roland Gardens, Kensington, S.W.*
- 1883 MORISON, J. Cotter, Esq., M.A., *Clairvaux, Fitz John's Avenue, N.W.*
- 1877 §MORRIS, Henry, Esq., *Eastcote House, St. John's Park, Blackheath.*
- 1881 MORRISON, Walter, Esq., M.A., 77, *Cromwell Road, S.W.; Malham Tarn, Bell Busk, Leeds.*
- 1882 *†MORSE, H. Ballou, Esq., *Chinese Imperial Customs, Shanghai; 8, Storey's Gate, St. James, S.W.*
- 1877 *MUIR, Sir W., K.C.S.I., D.C.L., LL.D., *Edinburgh.*
- 1885 *MUKAND LAL, Esq., *Udaipur.*
- 1882 *MUKERJI, Phanibhusan, Esq., *Rajshahya College, Bengal, India.*
- 1838 *†MUNMOHUNDASS DAVIDASS, Esq., *Bombay.*
- 1850 *†MURRAY, The Hon. Sir C. A., K.C.B., *The Grange, Windsor.*

- 1886 *NAIDU, V., *Cambridge*.
- 1881 *NANJIO, The Rev. Bunyiu, *Hongwanji, Asakusa, Tokio, Japan*.
- 1875 *†NARASIMMIYENGAR, V. N., Esq., *Assistant Commissioner, Mysore*.
- 1877 *NAVILLE, M. Edouard, *Malaguy, near Geneva*.
- 1860 *†NELSON, James Henry, Esq., M.A., *Cuddalore, Madras*.
- 1879 NEWMAN, Prof. F. W., Emeritus Professor, 15, *Arundel Crescent, Weston-super-Mare*.
- 1861 *NIEMANN, Prof. G. K., *Delitz, Hildesheim*.
- 1876 *NORMAN, Lieut.-General Sir Henry, K.C.B., K.C.S.I., *Capt.-Gen. and Governor-in-Chief of Jamaica*.
- 1876 NORTHBROOK, The Right Hon. the Earl of, G.C.S.I., F.R.S., 4, *Hamilton Place, Piccadilly*.
- 1885 *OLIVER, Edward E., Esq., *Under Secretary of the Panjab Government, Lahore*.
- 1879 ORMISTON, The Rev. James, 14, *Arlington Villas, Clifton, Bristol*.
- 1861 *†OSBORNE, Lieut.-Colonel J. W. Willoughby, C.B., *Bengal Staff Corps, Bhopal, India*.
- 1865 *PALGRAVE, W. G., Esq.
- 1885 *PARKER, Capt. Geo. C., *Port Officer, Kurrachee*.
- 1869 PEARSE, General George Godfrey, C.B., R.H.A., *Godfrey House, Cheltenham*.
- 1880 *PEAL, S. E., Esq., *Sapakati, Sibsagar, Asam*.
- 1882 †PEEK, Cuthbert E., Esq., *Ronsdon, Lyme Regis, Dorset*.
- 1882 †PEEK, Sir H. W., Bart., M.P., *Wimbledon House, Wimbledon, Surrey*.
- 1858 †PELLY, Lieut.-Gen. Sir Lewis, K.C.B., K.C.S.I., M.P., *Athenæum Club; 1, Eaton Square, S.W.*
- 1887 *PERKINS, Miss L. L. W., 103, *Lexington Avenue, New York City*.
- 1880 *†PHILIPPS, W. Rees, Esq., *Herbert Rees Philipps, Esq., India Office*.
- 1874 *†PHYA RAJANATTAYANTHAR, His Excellency, *Private Secretary to the King of Siam*.

- 1861 PILKINGTON, James, Esq., *Swinthwaite Hall, Bedale, Yorkshire; Reform Club.*
- 1881 PINCHES, Theophilus G., Esq., *British Museum.*
- 1874 PINCOTT, Frederic, Esq., 25, *Wilson Road, Peckham.*
- 1880 *PITMAN, Charles E., Esq., C.I.E., *Decca, Eastern Bengal, India.*
- 1883 PITT-RIVERS, Major-General, F.R.S., 4, *Grosvenor Gardens, S.W.*
- 1876 POOLE, Stanley Lane, Esq., 6, *Park Villas East, Richmond, Surrey.*
- 1874 POPE, the Rev. Dr. G. U., *Professor of Tamil, Oxford.*
- 1881 PORTMAN, M. V., Esq., *Ashfield, Bridgewater, Somerset; Andaman Islands.*
- 1875 †*POWELL, Baden, Esq., *Conservator of Forests, Panjab.*
- 1861 POWIS, The Rt. Hon. the Earl of, LL.D., D.C.L., 45, *Berkeley Square.*
- 1887 *PRATT, Spencer E., *United States Minister to the Court of Persia, Teheran.*
- 1886 PRESTLEY, Henry, Esq., *East India United Service Club.*
- 1852 §PRIAULX, Osmond de Beauvoir, Esq., 8, *Cavendish Square.*
- 1882 *PRIDEAUX, Licut.-Col. W.
- 1882 †*PRISDANG, His Excellency The Prince, *La Legation de Siam, Rue de Siam (Passy), Paris.*
- 1862 PUSEY, S. E. B., Esq., 21, *Grosvenor Street, W.*
-
- 1887 *RAGHUNATHJI, K., *Farraswady Lane, Bombay.*
- 1874 †*RÂMASVÂMÎ, Iyengar B., Esq., *Bangalore, Madras.*
- 1884 *RAM DAS SEN, *Zemindar of Berhampore, India.*
- 1887 RANG LAL, *Middle Temple.*
- 1885 *RANKIN, D. J., Esq., jun., *Mozambique, E. Africa.*
- 1885 RANKIN, James, Esq., *Local Marine Board, Tower Hill, E.C.*
- 1869 †RANSOM, Edwin, Esq., 24, *Ashburnham Road, Bedford.*
- 1882 *RASSAM, Hormuzd, Esq., 10, *Rochester Gardens, Hove, Brighton.*
- 1847 †§RAWLINSON, Major-Gen. Sir H. C., K.C.B., D.C.L., F.R.S., *India Office; 21, Charles Street, Berkeley Square; Director R.A.S.*
- 1887 *REA, A., *Archæological Survey Department, Madras.*

- 1880 REED, John David, Esq., *Madras Civil Service.*
- 1883 REID, Lestock, Esq., *Charlton, Llandudno, Bath.*
- 1879 *RICE, Lewis, Esq., *Dir. Pub. Instruction, Bangalore.*
- 1880 RICKETTS, G. H. M., Esq., C.B., *E.I.U.S. Club.*
- 1875 RIDGELL, H. B., Esq., C.S.I., *Whitefield House, Hepple, Rishbury.*
- 1860 RIPON, The Most Hon. the Marquess of, K.G., F.R.S., 1, *Carlton Gardens, S.W.*
- 1872 †*RIVETT-CARNAC, J. H., Esq., C.I.E., F.S.A., *Bengal C.S., Ghazipur.*
- 1880 ROBINSON, Vincent J., Esq., *Hamdene Feldey, Dorking.*
- 1882 *ROCKHILL, W. W., Esq., *United States Legation, Peking.*
- 1881 *RUDGEES, C. J., Esq., *Unrishter, Punjab, India.*
- 1869 *ROGERS, Col. H. T., R.E., 72, *Ladbroke Grove, Notting Hill, W.*
- 1861 ROLLO, The Right Hon. the Lord, *Dunrobin Castle, Perthshire.*
- 1883 *ROSS, David, Esq., C.I.E., *Lahore, India.*
- 1873 *ROSS, Lieut.-Col. E. C., *Bombay Staff Corps, Bushire, Persia.*
- 1878 *RAW, Krishna P., *Retired Deputy Commissioner, Mysore.*
- 1885 *RUSSEN, G. W., Esq., *Albion Club.*
- 1866 †RUSSELL, the Lord Arthur, M.P., 2, *Audley Square.*
- 1879 †*RUSTOMJI, C., Esq., *Jamshedpur, N.W.P.*
- 1880 *RYLANDS, T. Glazebrooke, Esq., *Highfields, Titchwell, Warrington.*
- 1876 RYLANDS, W. H., Esq., F.S.A., *Sec. Bib. Arch. Soc., 11, Hart Street, W.C.*
- 1887 SADDER-UTTIN KHAN, *Mulla Temple.*
- 1883 SALMONÉ, Habib A., Esq., 70, *Great Russell Street, Bloomsbury.*
- 1865 SASSOON, Sir Albert D., C.S.I., 1, *Eastern Terrace, Brighton.*
- 1865 SASSOON, Reuben D., Esq., 1, *Belgrave Square, S.W.*
- 1884 *SATHU, J. B. Pathy, Esq.
- 1880 *SATOW, Ernest, Esq., Ph.D., *H.B.M. Consul, Bangkok.*
- 1880 *SAUVAIRE, M., *Rolernier par Montfort (Var), France.*
- 1874 †§SAYCE, The Rev. A. H., M.A., F.P.R.A.S., *Deputy Professor of Comparative Philology, Queen's College, Oxford.*
- 1870 *SCHINDLER, General A. H., *Tehran, Persia.*
- 1876 *SCHUYLER, Eugene, Esq., *Consul-General, Bucharest.*
- 1885 *SCOTT, James George, Esq., *Burma.*

- 1886 *SCOTT, John, Esq., *Judge, High Court, Bombay.*
- 1887 *SELL, The Rev. E., *Church Missionary Society, Madras, India.*
- 1876 *†SENART, Emile M., 16, *Rue Bayard, Paris.*
- 1877 *§SEWELL, R., Esq., *Madras C.S.*
- 1882 *SHAMULDANJI, Kavi Raja, *Udaipur.*
- 1883 †SHANKS, The Rev. W. Rose.
- 1883 *SHEPPARD, G. F., Esq., *Kaira, Bombay Presidency.*
- 1867 *†SHIDIAK, Selim, Esq., *Constantinople.*
- 1884 *†SHYAMAJI KRISHNA VARMA, Pandit, *Balliol College, Oxford.*
- 1883 *SHYAMAL DAS, Kavi Raja, *Member of the Royal Council, Udaipur, Mewar.*
- 1882 *SIBREE, The Rev. James, jun., *Madagascar.*
- 1883 SIMCOX, Miss Edith, *Woodleigh, Mayfield, Sussex.*
- 1886 *SIMPSON, Lieutenant Walter Henry, 14, *Cornwall Gardens, South Kensington, & Junior Travellers' Club.*
- 1887 SIMPSON, W., 19, *Church Road, Willesden.*
- 1877 *SINCLAIR, W. F., Esq., *Kaira, Bombay Presidency.*
- 1885 SMITH, Miss Agnes, *Swaynethorpe, Upper Long Ditton, Kingston-on-Thames.*
- 1883 *SMITH, Vincent A., Esq., *Bengal C.S., Bhasti, N.W.P., India.*
- 1887 *†§SMITH, Professor W. Robertson, *Librarian to the University, Cambridge.*
- 1882 *SOLTAU, H., Esq., *Bhamo, British Burma.*
- 1886 *STACK, George, Esq., *Professor of Ancient and Modern History, Presidency College, Calcutta.*
- 1873 *ST. JOHN, Lieut.-Colonel Sir Oliver B. C., C.E., K.C.S.I., *Srinagar, Cashmir.*
- 1858 §STANLEY OF ALDERLEY, The Right Hon. the Lord, 15, *Grosvenor Gardens, S.W.*
- 1887 *STEIN, Dr. Marcus Aurell, Ph.D. *Tubingen, Budapest.*
- 1881 STEEL, Major-General James, 28, *Stafford Terrace, South Kensington.*
- 1879 *STEPHEN, Carr, Esq., *Ludiana, N.W. Provinces.*
- 1848 STRACHEY, William, Esq., *Oriental Club, Hanover Square.*
- 1881 STUBBS, S., Esq., F.R.G.S., 263, *Hampstead Road, Mornington Crescent.*
- 1879 *STÜLPNAGEL, Dr. C. R., M.A., Ph.D., *Prov. Government College, Lahore.*

- 1875 *†TAGORE SOURENDRO MOHUN, Rajah Bahadur, Mus.D.,
F.R.S.L., *Calcutta*.
- 1883 *TAWNEY, C. H., Esq., *Presidency College, Calcutta*.
- 1866 TEMPLE, Sir Richard, Bart., G.C.S.I., C.I.E., *Athenæum Club*.
- 1879 *TEMPLE, Capt. R. C., *Mandalay, Upper Burma*.
- 1881 *†THEOBALD, W., Esq., *Budleigh Salterton, Devon*.
- 1881 *†THOMPSON, Major, *Moscow*.
- 1880 *†THORBURN, S. S., Esq., *Dera Ghāzi Khān, Panjāb*.
- 1881 §THORNTON, T. H., Esq., C.S.I., D.C.L., 23, *Bramham Gardens, South Kensington, S.W.*
- 1859 *†TIEN, The Rev. Dr. Anton, 23, *Park Place, Gravesend*.
- 1886 *TORRENCE, Dr. William W., *Teheran*.
- 1879 TROTTER, Coutts, Esq., *Athenæum Club*; 17, *Charlotte Street, Edinburgh*.
- 1884 †TUFNELL, H., Esq., 26, *Lowndes Square, S.W.*
- 1882 *UDÁIPŪR, H. H. The Maharāna Fateh Singhji Bahādur of.
- 1884 *VALENTINE, The Rev. Dr. Colin S., LL.D., F.R.C.S.,
Medical College, Agra.
- 1884 *†VASADEV, Mādhār Samarth, R. R., B.A., *Balliol College, Oxford*.
- 1883 VERNEY, F. W., Esq., *La Legation de Siam, 49, Rue de la Pompe, Paris*.
- 1827 †VERNEY, Major Sir Harry, Bart., M.P., 4, *South Street, Mayfair; Lower Claydon, Bucks*.
- 1887 *VITTO, Signor E., *Consul H.M. The King of Italy, Aleppo, Syria*.
- 1827 †VIVYAN, K. H. S., Esq., *Ireuan, St. Colomb, Cornwall*.
- 1884 WACE, The Rev. Dr., D.D., *Principal of King's Coll., London*.
- 1868 §WADE, Sir Thomas F., K.C.B., *President Royal Asiatic Society, 5, Salisbury Villas, Cambridge, and Athenæum Club*.
- 1883 *WAGHJI, Rawaji, H.H. *Thakur of Morvi*.
- 1873 §WALHOUSE, M. J., Esq., 9, *Randolph Crescent, Maida Vale*.
- 1882 *WALLACE, Sir Mackenzie, K.C.S.I., *Private Secretary's Office, Government House, Simla*.

- 1869 *WALSH, Lieut.-Colonel T. P. B., *Conservative Club*.
- 1885 †*WARREN, H. C., Esq., 67, *Mount Vernon Street, Boston, Mass.*
- 1883 *WATERS, T., Esq., *China*.
- 1882 †WENTWORTH, The Right Hon. the Lord, *Wentworth House, Chelsea Embankment*.
- 1885 *WEST, E. W., Esq., *Rottmannstrasse, 10, Munich*.
- 1873 *WESTMACOTT, E. Vesey, Esq., B.A., *Noacolly, Bengal Presideney, India*.
- 1887 *WHEELER, Stephen, Esq., 26, *Leigham Court Road West, Streatham, S.W.*
- 1882 WHINFIELD, E. H., Esq., *Ravensbury, Dartmouth*.
- 1883 WHITE, William H., Esq., *Sec. Royal Institute British Architects, 9, Conduit Street, W.*
- 1885 WIGRAM, Herbert, Esq., *Uplands, East Sheen*.
- 1868 *†WILLIAMS, The Rev. Thomas, M.A., *Rewari, Panjaub*.
- *†WILMOT, Charles Webster, Esq., *Deoghur, Bengal*.
- 1883 §WILSON, Charles Edward, Esq., *Reader of Persian, Cambridge, Royal Academy, Burlington House*.
- 1869 WISE, Thomas A., Esq., M.D., *Thornton, Beulah Hill, Upper Norwood, Surrey*.
- 1876 †WOLLASTON, A. N., C.I.E., Esq., *India Office; Glen Hill, Walmer*.
- 1881 WORTHAM, The Rev. Biseoe Hale, *Eggesford Rectory, North Devon*.
- 1885 §YULE, Colonel Henry, C.B., *India Office; 3, Pen-y-wern Road, Earl's Court*.

Honorary Members.

- Syed Ahmed Khan, K.C.S.I., *Aligarh*.
 Senator M. Amâri, *Rome*.
 Prof. T. Aufrecht, *Bonn*.
 Professor Ramkrishna Gopâl Bhândarkar, *Bombay*.
 5 Paṇḍit Bâbû Deva Śâstri, *Benares*.
 Pandit Bhagvânlal Indrajî, *Bombay*.
 Professor Otto von Bôhtlingk, *Jena*.
 Professor Bühler, *Vienna*.
 The Right Rev. Robert Caldwell, D.D., LL.D., *Bishop of Tinnevely*.
 10 Professor Dillmann, *Berlin*.
 The Rev. J. Edkins, D.D., *Peking*.
 Professor H. L. Fleischer, *Leipzig*.
 Don Pascual de Gayângos, *Madrid*.
 Professor De Goeje, *Leyden*.
 15 Commendatore Gaspar Gorresio, *Turin*.
 Nawab Ikbâl ud daulah, *Bagdad*.
 Professor H. Kern, *Leiden*.
 Professor Barbier de Meynard, *Paris*.
 Bâbû Râjendralâla Mitra, C.I.E., LL.D., *Calcutta*.
 20 Professor F. Max Müller, *Oxford*.
 Professor Jules Oppert, *Paris*.
 J. W. Redhouse, Esq., C.M.G. *Kilburn, London*.
 Professor E. Renan, *Paris*.
 Dr. Reinhold Rost, Ph.D., M.A. (Oxon), *London*.
 25 Professor R. Roth, *Tübingen*.
 Marquis Tsêng, *China*.
 Dr. A. Sprenger, *Wiedepplatz, Heidelberg*.
 Ahmed Véfîk Pasha, *Constantinople*.
 Professor A. Weber, *Berlin*.
 30 Professor W. D. Whitney, *Yale College, New Haven, U.S.A.*

Foreign Member.

[No further additions will be made to the list of Foreign or Corresponding Members.]

M. Alexander de Chodzko, *Professeur du College de France, 77, Rue Notre Dame des Champs, Paris.*

Corresponding Members.

Sir Rutherford Alcock, K.C.B., 14, *Great Queen Street, Westminster, S.W.*

Lieut.-General Sir George Balfour, K.C.B., M.P., 6, *Cleveland Gardens, W.*

Professor F. Nève, *Louvain.*

The Rev. W. M. Thompson, *Boston, U.S.*

Sir Richard Wood, C.B., G.C.M.G.

CONTENTS OF VOL. XIX. PART I.

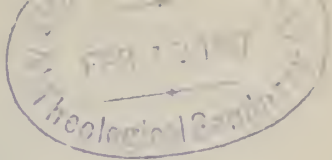
[NEW SERIES.]

ORIGINAL COMMUNICATIONS.

	PAGE
ART. I.—The Story of the Old Bamboo-Hewer. (Takatori no Okina no Monogatari.) A Japanese Romance of the Tenth Century. Translated, with Notes, etc., by F. VICTOR DICKINS, M.R.A.S. (with Illustrations).....	1
ART. II.—An Essay on the Brāhūi Grammar, after the German of the late Dr. Trumpp, of Munich University. By Dr. THEODORE DUKA, M.R.A.S., Surgeon-Major Bengal Army	59
ART. III.—Art. A Version in Chinese, by the MARQUIS TSENG, of a Poem written in English and Italian by H. W. FREELAND, M.A., M.R.A.S., late M.P., Commander of the Order of the Crown of Siam..	136
ART. IV.—Some Useful Hindī Books. By G. A. GRIERSON, M.R.A.S., Bengal Civil Service ..	138
ART. V.—Original Vocabularies of Five West Caucasian Languages. Compiled on the spot by Mr. PEACOCK, Vice-Consul at Batúm, Trans-Caucasia, South Russia, at the request of, and communicated by Dr. R. N. CUST, Hon. Sec. R.A.S., with a Note	145

NOTES OF THE QUARTER

1. Reports of Meetings of the Royal Asiatic Society, Session 1886-7	157
2. Proceedings of Asiatic or Oriental Societies	158
3. Correspondence—(1) The Persian for Rouble, by J. W. Redhouse. (2) The Farhang Jahāngiri, by J. W. Redhouse. (3) Note on a Modern Contributor to Persian Literature, Rezā Qulī Khan and his Works, by Sidney Churchill. (4) The Idols of Bamian, by Alfred Haggard. (5) The Pre-Akkadian Writing, by G. Bertin	161
4. Obituary Notices	166
5. Excerpta Orientalia.....	170
6. Seventh International Oriental Congress (communicated by the Honorary Secretary)	185



JOURNAL

OF

THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY.

ART. I.—*The Story of the Old Bamboo-Hewer. (Taketori no Okina no Monogatari.) A Japanese Romance of the Tenth Century.* Translated, with Notes, etc., by F. VICTOR DICKINS, M.R.A.S.

THE COMING OF THE LADY KAGUYA AND THE DAYS OF CHILDHOOD.

(KAGUYA HIME NO OITACHI.)

FORMERLY¹ there lived an old man, a bamboo-hewer, who hewed bamboos on the bosky hill-side, and manywise he wrought them to serve men's needs, and his name was Sanugi no Miyakko.² Now one day, while plying the hatchet in a grove of bamboos, was he suddenly ware of a tall stem, whence streamed forth through the gloom a dazzling light. Much marvelling, he drew nigh to the reed, and saw that the glory proceeded from the heart thereof, and he looked again and beheld a tiny creature, a palm's breadth in stature and of rare loveliness, which stood midmost the splendour. Then he said to himself, "Day after day, from dawn to dusk, toil I among these bamboo-reeds, and this child that abides amidst them I may surely claim as mine own." So he put forth his hand, and took the tiny being, and carried it home, and gave it to the goodwife and her

¹ *Mukashi*—here, as often, equivalent to the Latin 'olim.'

² Or Saruki, or Sadaki. Sanugi, or Sanuki, is a province of Shikoku. Miyakko is *miya-tsu-ko*, servant of the August Home, that is, of the Court or Palace, equivalent to *ason* (*asomi*, *asobi*) or Baron. The expression was also used in the sense of 'ruler,' 'governor.' But, like many other titles, it degenerated, as here, into a mere name.

women to be nourished. And passing fair was the child, but so frail and tender that it was needful to place it in a basket to be reared. But after lighting upon this gift whilst hewing bamboos, he ceased not from his daily toil, and night after night, as he shore through the reeds and opened their internodes, came he upon one filled with grain of gold, and so, ere long, he amassed great wealth. Meanwhile the child, being duly tended, grew daily in stature, and after three months—wonderful to relate!—her stature was as that of a maiden of full years. Then her tresses were lifted¹ and she donned the robe of maidenhood, but still came not forth from behind the curtain.² Thus cherished and watched over and tenderly reared, grew she fair of form, nor could the world show her like, and there was no gloom in any corner of the dwelling, but brightness reigned throughout, nor ever did the Ancient fall into a sorrowful mood but that his sadness was chased away when he beheld the maiden, nor was any angry word ever heard beneath that roof, and happily the days went by. Long the Ancient hewed bamboos, and gathered gold, and thus it was that he came to flourish exceedingly in the land. After this wise grew the girl to maidenhood, and the Ancient named her Mimurodo Imube no Akita, but she was more commonly called the Lady Kaguya, the Precious Slender Bamboo of the Field of Autumn.³ Then for three days a great feast was held, and

¹ Anciently the hair was allowed to fall in long tresses on either shoulder. At the age of 13 or 14 these were brought up and fastened in a sort of knot on the crown or side of the head. The custom is alluded to in a "tanka" of the Manyōshū (The Myriad Leaves—an Anthology of the tenth century):

Tachibana no	Under the long-root bright with the hues reflected
tereru nagaya ni	from the orange-blooms,
waga ineshi:	have I slumbered—
unahi bakari wa	a girl of tender years,
kami agetsuran ka?	shall my tresses ever be bound up?

² Hung before the *toko*, or alcove, or upper end of the house-place. The meaning is that she remained within her mother's care, unbetrothed and unmarried.

³ *Mimurodo* means the place of three caves, alluding, perhaps, to the aboriginal habit (still practised in Yezo) of living in caves or half-underground huts. It is sometimes written *mimoro*, which has the signification of a sacred (*mi*) place. *Imube* (*imbe* or *imibe*) were originally the hereditary builders of Shinto shrines. In certain provinces—Sanuki was one—the designation became a family-name. Mr. Satow explains it as signifying an association (*me* or *be*) eschewing (*imi*) uncleanness. *Akita* is the Field of Autumn, more strictly the laboured field made

the neighbours, one and all, menfolk and womenfolk, were invited, and they came in merry crowds and noble was the revelry.¹

THE WOOING OF THE MAIDEN.

(Tsuma-goi.)

Now the gentles dwelling in those parts, men of name and eke men of low degree, thought of nothing but how they might win this fair maiden to wife, or even gaze upon her beauty, and so distracted were they with love that they let their passion be plain to all the world.² Around the fence and about the porch they lingered, but in vain, for no glimpse of the maiden could be got, nor slept they when night came but wandered out in the darkness, and made holes here and there in the fence and peered through these, but to no purpose did they strain their eyes, for never caught they sight of her on whom they longed to gaze, and thus sped their wooing from the twilight-hour of the monkey onwards. Well-nigh beside themselves were they with love and woe, but no sign was vouchsafed them, and though they essayed to gain speech of some among the household, no word of answer ever got they. So it was, yet many a noble suitor still lingered thereabouts, watching through the livelong day and through the livelong night, to catch some glimpse of the

ready in late autumn for the rice-sowing. It is a not uncommon place-name. The whole subject of Japanese place, family, and personal names awaits investigation. *Kaguya* is often written 赤赤映 'illuminer of darkness,' hence, perhaps, the present legend. On the other hand, it may, and probably did originally, mean simply the Princess or Goddess (*hi me*, i.e. glorious lady) of Kaguyama, or Kagoyama (deer-hill, as Kagoshima is deer-island), the *ya* being an emphatic suffix. Kaguyama is the subject of an oft-quoted stanza, said to have been composed by the Emperor Jitō (A.D. 690-696) on beholding the mountain bathed in a flood of summer sunlight (some say moonlight):

Haru sugite	The spring hath passed away,
natsu ki ni kerashi :	and the summer hath come ;
shiro taye no	and the pure white raiment (of the gods)
koromo hōsu chō	is spread out belike,
Ama no Kaguyama !	on the slopes of Amonokagu !

¹ Such appears to be the meaning of the text, here probably corrupt. The original is *otoko ōna kirawazu yobitsudoyete ito kashikoku asobu*, which the commentary thus explains, *otoko onna no kirai naku niguwashiku yobitsudoyetaru nari*. Another reading is *otoko wa ukekirawazu yo hi hodoete*, etc.

² Which was contrary to good manners, and so a proof of the intensity of their love.

maiden; but those of low degree after a time bethought them 'twere vain to pace up and down thus bootlessly, and they departed and came no more. But there tarried five suitors, true lovers, and worthier of the name belike, in whose hearts, love died not down, and night and day they still haunted the spot. And these noble lovers were the Prince Ishizukuri¹ and the Prince Kuramochi, the Sadaijin Dainagon Abe no Miushi and the Chiunagon Ōtomo no Miyuki, and Morotada, the Lord of Iso.

When a woman is somewhat fairer than the crowd of women, how greatly do men long to gaze upon her beauty! How much more filled with desire to behold the rare loveliness of the Lady Kaguya were these lords, who would touch no food, nor could wean their thoughts from her, and continued to pace up and down without the fence, albeit their pain was thus in no wise eased. They indited supplications, but no answer was vouchsafed; they offered stanzas of complaint, but these too were disregarded; yet their love lessened no whit, and they affronted the ice and snow of winter and the thunderous heats of mid-summer² with equal fortitude. So passed the days, and upon a certain day these lords summoned the Hearer and prayed him to bestow his daughter upon one of them, bowing before him and rubbing their palms together suppliantwise. But he said: "No child of mine by blood is the maiden, nor can she be constrained to follow my will." And the days and the months went by, and the lords returned to their mansions, but their thoughts still dwelt upon the Maiden, and many a piteous prayer they made, and many a supplication they indited, nor cared they to cease their wooing, for surely, they said to themselves, the Maiden might not remain unmated for ever. And they

¹ These names, at least such as require it, will be explained below.

² *Minazuki*, i.e. *Kami-nashi-tsuki*, part of July and August under the old calendar. The name signifies "godless month," because during it all the gods were believed to be absent from the world holding council in the bed of the Stream of Heaven (the Milky Way), to determine the fortunes of men during the ensuing year. This legend is of Chinese origin, as indeed are most Japanese legends in a greater or less degree, and embodies, perhaps, some memory of the time when the ancestors of the Chinese dwelt about the sources of the Yellow River, which was supposed to be the continuation on earth of the Stream of Heaven.

continued their suit, and so plainly did they manifest the strength of their passion that the Ancient was constrained to say to the Maiden, "By the grace of Buddha,¹ through the cycle of changes hast thou come to us, daughter, and from babe to maid have we cherished thee, and I pray thee hearken to the words of an old man who loveth thee passing well."

And the Maiden answered :

"What might my father say that his daughter would not give dutiful ear to? I know not if I came to thee through the cycle of changes, but this I know, that thou art my dear father."

Then the Ancient replied :

"Right happy do thy words make me, daughter; but consider, I am an old man whose years outnumber seventy, to-day I may pass away or to-morrow, and 'tis the way of the world that the youth cleave to the maid, and the maid to the youth, for thus the world increaseth, nor otherwise are things ordered."

But Kaguya said :

"Oh father, what mean these words you utter; must it then be as you say?"

"Ay," replied the Ancient, "though strangely hast thou come to us through the cycle of changes, yet hast thou the nature of a woman, while such are thy father's years that he may not long tarry in the world to protect thee. These lords have sought thee to wife for months and years, listen, prithee, to their supplication, and let them have speech with thee, each in due turn."

Kaguya answered :

"Not so fair am I that I may be certain of a man's faith, and were I to mate with one whose heart proved fickle, what a miserable fate were mine! Noble lords, without doubt, are these of whom thou speakest, but I would not wed a man whose heart should be all untried and unknown."

¹ Or "my child, my Buddha," *i.e.* "my darling."

And the Ancient said :

"Thou speakest my very thoughts, daughter. But, prithee, what manner of man hast thou a mind to mate with? Assuredly these lords are of noble nature and nurture."

Then she answered :

"Nay, 'tis but that that I would know what the quality of these noble gentlemen's constancy may be. So like are the hearts of men that one may by no means easily part the better from the worse; go, I pray you, to these lords, and say to them, your daughter will follow him who shall prove himself the worthiest to mate with."

And the Ancient, nodding assent to her words, said :

"'Tis well."

Now the night fell, and the suitors assembled and serenaded the Maiden with flute-music and with singing, with chanting to accompaniments and piping, and with cadenced tap and clap of fan, in the midst whereof came forth the Ancient, and thus spake them :

"Months and years have my lords tarried by this poor hut, and their servant presents his respectful homage and ventures to offer his humble gratitude for their high favour. But many are his years, and he knows not whether he may pass away to-day or to-morrow. After this wise hath he spoken to the Maiden and prayed her to choose one among your lordships for a husband; but she would fain learn which of you be the worthiest, and him alone will she wed. Fair seemed her speech to your servant, perchance your lordships, too, will not disdain her words." And they nodded assent, saying: "It is well." Whereupon the Ancient went within and spoke with the damsel, and thus she expressed her will :

"In Tenjiku¹ is a beggar's bowl of stone, which, of old, the Buddha himself bore, in quest whereof let Prince Ishizukuri depart and bring me the same. And on the mountain

¹ The Japanese form of the Chinese Buddhist name for Northern India, said to be a corruption of "Shintuh," or the Chinese form of the name now known as Scinde.

Hôrai, that towers over the Eastern ocean, grows a tree with roots of silver and trunk of gold and fruitage of pure white jade, and I bid Prince Kuramochi fare thither and break off and bring me a branch thereof. Again in the land of Morokoshi men fashion fur-robcs of the pelt of the Flame-proof Rat, and I pray the Dainagon to find me one such. Then of the Chiunagon I require the rainbow-hued jewel that hides its sparkle deep in the dragon's head; and from the hands of the Lord of Iso would I fain receive the cowry-shell that the swallow brings hither over the broad sea-plain."

But the Ancient said :

"Terrible tasks these be—the things thou requirest, daughter, are not to be found within the four seas; how may one bid these noble lords depart upon like quests?"

"Nay," quoth the damsel, "these be no tasks beyond stout men's strength."

Thereupon the Ancient saw that there was nothing for it but to obey, and he went out from her, and told the suitors all that had passed, saying :

"Thus hath it been willed, and these are the tasks that must be accomplished that your worth may be known."

But the princes and the lords murmured among themselves, and said :

"'Tis, forsooth, that the Lady holds in disdain our courteous suit." So they turned and with heavy hearts fared each to his own home.

THE SACRED BEGGING-BOWL OF THE BUDDHA.

(HOTOKE NO MI ISHI NO HACHI.)

Now the days to come seemed void of pleasure to Prince Ishizukuri¹ if never he might gaze upon the Lady's beauty, and he fell to turning over in his mind whether he might not light upon the Holy Buddha's bowl if he went up and down the

¹ *Ishizukuri no miko*. *Miko* is noble (*mi*) child (*ko*), originally a prince of the blood royal. *Ishizukuri* (*tsukuri*) may mean 'stone-built,' or, in a bad sense, 'stone-counterfeit.' *Sei-yô zukuri* is still a common expression for 'western-fashioned.'

land of Tenjiku in search thereof. But the Prince cared not to set out lightly on such a journey, and after much pondering over the matter he bethought himself it were after all a vain quest to fare tens of thousands of leagues on the chance of finding, in all the broad land of Tenjiku, a certain beggar's dish. Therefore, he let it be made known to the Lady that he had that very day undertaken the Quest; but towards Tenjiku he fared not a league, but hid him in Yamato, and abode there three years, at the end whereof, in a hill-monastery in Tōchi, he found upon an altar of Binzuru¹ a bowl blackened by age and begrimed with smoke, which he took and wrapped in a web of brocade. He then attached the gift to an artificial Bloom-branch,² and sought again the dwelling of the Lady Kaguya, and caused the gift to be carried in to her. And as she looked upon the Bowl she marvelled greatly, and in it lay a scroll, which she opened, and a stanza was writ thereon:

Umi yama no	Over seas, over hills
michi no kokoro wo	hath thy servant fared, and weary
tsukushi-hate :	and wayworn he perisheth :
ishi no hachi no	O what tears hath cost this bowl of
	stone,
namida nagare wa ! ³	what floods of streaming tears !

Then the Lady looked again to see if the Bowl shone with light,⁴ but not so much as a firefly's twinkle could she discover, and she caused the bowl to be returned to the Prince, and with it was bestowed a scroll whereon was writ a verse:

¹ Pipdola, the Suecourer in Sickness, one of the sixteen Rakan. In the *Butsu-zō-zui* this Arhat (Rakan) is the first enumerated, and is called Hatura tasha. He is represented as an old man seated by the edge of a precipice overlooking the sea, and holding in his right hand a feather-brush (?) to keep off flies, in his left a scroll (or tablet?) of the law.

² It was a pretty custom in Old Japan to accompany a gift with a branch of peach or plum or wild cherry in full bloom.

³ The last two lines, by a word-play, may be read *ishi no wa chi no namida nagare wa ?* which would mean 'of a truth this stone hath been the bed of a stream of tears of blood.' In winter, when the rivers in Japan are at their driest, the stony central portion of the broad river-bed is laid bare, along which flows the diminished stream.

⁴ The intrinsic splendour of a true relic of the Buddha is meant.

Oku tsuyu no	Of the hanging dewdrop
hikari wo da ni mo	not even the passing sheen
yadosunashi :	dwells herein :
Ogura yama nite	On the Hill of Darkness, the Hill
	of Ogura, ¹
nani motomekemu?	what couldst thou hope to find?

Thereupon the Prince cast away the Bowl and made answer thuswise :

Shirayama ² ni	Nay, on the Hill of Brightness
ayeba hikari no	what splendour
usuru ka to :	will not pale?
hachi wo sutete mo	would that away from the light
	of thy beauty
tanomaruru kana !	the sheen of yonder Bowl might
	prove me true !

But no answer would the Lady make, nor give ear to any supplication, and the Prince, wearied with bootless complainings, after awhile turned him sadly away and departed. And still men say of a crestfallen fellow, "hachi (haji) wo suteru."³

¹ Situate in the district in which the Bowl had been found. In *gura* (*kura* with *nigori*) is involved the sense of darkness (*kurashi*), though the character used in writing the name means "granary." So in a *tanka* (ode) of the Manyōshū :—

Yuu sareba,	As the shades of evening fall
Ogura no yama ni	on the Hill of Ogura,
naku shika no	the calling deer
koyoi wa nakazu,	cease this night their cry,
ine ni kerashi !	and in slumber is wrapped the world.

And again :—

Ohoigawa	On the waters of the Ohoi
ukayeru fune no	float the fisher-barks ;
kagari-bi ni	was it in the glare of their decoy-fires,
Ogura no yama wa	O Hill of Ogura,
na nomi narikeri !	thou gainedst thy name ?

² Shirayama is said to be opposite in situation as in the meaning involved in its name (originally, no doubt, *Shiroyama* or Castle Hill, but corrupted into *Shirayama* or White Hill), to Ogurayama. The intrinsic brilliance of the Bowl was lost in that of the Lady's beauty, if it were cast aside out of her presence its sheen would become visible.

³ *Hachi*, bowl, by *nigori* becomes *haji*, shame ; hence the word-play, conveying a sense of the shame which attends the defeat of a tricky and dishonest scheme.

THE JEWEL-BEARING BRANCH OF MOUNT HŌRAI.

(HŌRAI NO TAMA NO YEDA.)

Of a wily turn was Princee Kuramochi, and he gave out to the world that he was about to take the baths in the land of Tsukushi, but to the Lady Kaguya he let it be declared that he was setting out upon the Quest after the Jewel-laden Branch. So he fared towards Naniwa with some of his squires, but not many, for he alleged him fain to travel without state, and took with him but a few of those who were in closest attendance upon their lord, and even these, after they had watched him with their eyes as he took boat, went back to Miako. Thus the Prince made folk think he had departed faring towards Tsukushi or towards Hōrai, but he tarried three days at Naniwa, and then turned him again capitalwards, being seulled up-stream. Beforehand all needful commands had been given, and six men of the Uchimaro family, the most noted craftsmen of the time, had been sought out and lodged in a dwelling aloof from the world-ways and surrounded with a triple fence, and there the Prince too retreated. Then he furnished the chief of the craftsmen with resources drawn from sixteen of his farms,¹ the produce of which he allotted to that purpose, and caused furnaces to be erected and a jewel-laden branch to be fashioned differing no whit from that which the Lady Kaguya had bidden him go in quest of. Thus cunningly the Prince laid his scheme, and taking the branch with him set off seerctly, and embarking in a boat journeyed down to Naniwa, whence he let it be made known to his squires that he had returned, and assuming the guise of one terribly worn and spent with travel, awaited their coming. And his squires and retainers came accordingly to meet him, where-

¹ This seems to be the general sense of an obscure and probably corrupt passage—*shiraseta mataru kagiri jiu roku so wo (o?) kami ni kudo wo akete*, etc. I have followed the hints given in the commentary of Ohide. Perhaps the passage ought to read, *jiu roku sho (so) no kami no kura*, etc. Another commentator suggests that *So o kami* is the county of Sōkami, and retains *kudo*, furnace, the reference then being to sixteen furnaces or pottery ovens in Sōkami. But this interpretation seems far-fetched. Possibly a sort of pun is intended on the Prince's name, Kuramochi, which really meaning (*Kuruma-mochi*), "guardian or keeper of the Mikado's carriages," may also be read as signifying "superintendent of the Royal treasuries or granaries."

upon the Prince caused the Branch to be placed in a coffer which was covered with brocade, and a clamour arose as he went through the city. "Wonderful! the Prince Kuramochi comes up to the capital, bearing with him the Udonge¹ in bloom." But the Lady Kaguya, when these tidings reached her, said to herself, "This Prince hath surely gotten the better of me," and her heart broke within her. While thus matters stood was heard a knocking at the entrance, and presently it was announced that the Prince had presented himself and begged to be permitted to speak with the Lady, although still wearing his travelling-garb, for he had perilled his life in the quest after the Jewel-laden Branch, and had won it, and now desired to lay it at her feet. The Ancient received the message, and took the Branch and carried it within, and attached to it was a scroll whereon was written a stanza:

Itazura ni,	Though it were at the peril
mi wa nashitsu tomo,	of my very life,
tama no ye wo	without the Jewel-laden Branch
taorade, saye wa	in my hands never again
kayera-zaramashi!	would I have dared to return!

But the Lady looked on the Branch and was sad, and the Ancient came to her hastily, saying, "'Tis the very branch, daughter, thou desiredst the Prince to bring thee from Mount Hōrai, and he has accomplished the Quest thou badest him undertake without failing in any particular, nor mayst thou delay his guerdon; without tarrying to change his raiment, and before seeking his own mansion, has he hasted hither, nor longer canst thou refuse his suit."

But the maiden answered nothing, resting her chin mournfully on her palm, while the tears streamed in floods over her cheeks. Meanwhile the Prince, thinking that now he need dread no denial, remained waiting in the porch-way, and the Ancient resuming, said: "The like of this Jewel-laden Branch is not to be found within the four seas, thou

¹ The Buddhist Udumbara; the fig-tree (*Ficus glomerata*), believed to flower once only in three thousand years, hence the expression is used in respect of anything very rare and marvellous.

canst not refuse the promised guerdon, nor is the Prince uncomely of person."

But the Lady answered: "Hard it is thus still to oppose my father's will, but this thing is deemed unattainable whereof I laid the quest upon the Prince, yet how easily hath he won it; a bitter grief it is to thy daughter." Then the Ancient fell to busying himself with putting the chamber in order, and after awhile went out and accosted the Prince again, saying: "Your servant would fain know what manner of place it may be where grows this tree—how wonderful a thing it is, and lovely and pleasant to see!" And the Prince answered: "The year before yesteryear, on the tenth of the second month (*Kisaragi*), we took boat at Naniwa and sculled out into the ocean, not knowing what track to follow; but I thought to myself, what would be the profit of continuing life if I might not attain the desire of my heart; so pressed we onwards, blown where the wind listed. If we perished even what mattered it, while we lived we would make what way we could over the sea-plain, and perchance thus might we somehow reach the mountain men do call *Hōrai*. So resolved we sculled further and further over the heaving waters, until far behind us lay the shores of our own land. And as we wandered thus, now deep in the trough of the sea we saw its very bottom, now blown by the gale we came to strange lands, where creatures like demons fell upon us and were like to have slain us. Now, knowing neither whence we had come nor whither we tended, we were almost swallowed up by the sea; now, failing of food we were driven to live upon roots; now, again, indescribably terrible beings came forth and would have devoured us; or we had to sustain our bodies by eating of the spoil of the sea. Beneath strange skies were we, and no human creature was there to give us succour; to many diseases fell we prey as we drifted along knowing not whitherwards, and so tossed we over the sea-plain, letting our boat follow the wind for five hundred days. Then, about the hour of the dragon, four hours ere noon, saw we a high hill looming faintly over the watery waste. Long we gazed at it, and marvelled at the

majesty of the mountain rising out of the sea. Lofty it was and fair of form, and doubting not it was the mountain we were seeking, our hearts were filled with awe. We plied the oar, and coasted it for two days or three, and then we saw a woman, arrayed like an angel, come forth out of the hills, bearing a silver vessel which she filled with water. So we landed and accosted her, saying: 'How call men this mountain?' and she said, ''Tis Mount Hōrai,' whereat our hearts were filled with joy. 'And you, who tell us this, who then are you,' we inquired. 'My name is Hōkanruri,' she answered, and thereupon suddenly withdrew among the hills. On scanning the mountain, we saw no man could climb its slopes, so steep were they, and we wandered about the foot thereof, where grew trees bearing blooms the world cannot show the like of. There we found a stream flowing down from the mountain, the waters whereof were rainbow-hued, yellow as gold, white as silver, blue as precious ruri;¹ and the stream was spanned by bridges built up of divers gems, and by it grew trees laden with dazzling jewels, and from one of these I broke off the branch which I venture now to offer to the Lady Kaguya. An evil deed, I fear me, but how could I do otherwise than accomplish the object of my Quest? Delightful beyond all words is yonder mountain, in all the world there exists not its like. After I had plucked off the branch, my heart brake within me, and I hasted on board, and we sped hitherwards with a fair wind behind us, and after some four hundred days came to Naniwa, whence I departed without tarrying, so great was my desire to lay the Branch at the feet of the Lady, nor did I even change my raiment, soddened with the brine of ocean."

Moved by the piteous tale the Ancient composed a stanza :

Kuretake no	Amid the gloomy bamboo-groves
yoyo no take toru	long long have I hewed bamboos,
noyama ni mo :	even upon the wild hill-sides ;
saya wa wabishiki	but thus sad an internode
fushi wo nomi miji !	(thus sad a fortune) never have
	I beheld.

¹ See below.

The Prince read the verse and said : " For these many days have I endured misery, now methinks shall I know peace," and indited a stanza in reply :

Waga tamoto	The sleeve of my garment
kiyo kawakereba,	but this day hath become dry,
wabishiki no	and of miseries
chigusa ¹ no kazu mo	the countless kinds I have endured
wasurarenubeshi !	no longer will be remembered
	by me.

At this juncture came six men within the fence, one after the other, and one of them carried a cleft bamboo, bearing a scroll in the cleft, and said : " The chief of the craftsmen, Ayabe no Uchimaro, humbly represents that he and his fellows for the space of a thousand days broke their hearts and spent their strength in fashioning the Jewel-laden Branch. Yet, though long and heavy their labours, they have received no wage for their toil, and he humbly prays that they may be accorded due payment that they may have wherewithal to buy food for their wives and little ones." Then he lifted up the bamboo with the scroll in its cleft. The Ancient, with his head on one side, marvelled as he heard the words of the craftsman, but the Prince was beside himself with dismay, and felt his liver perish within him. And the Lady Kaguya, hearing of the matter, commanded that the scroll should be brought to her, whereupon it was taken within and unrolled and thus was it writ thereon : " Lately His Highness shut himself up with us mean craftsmen, and caused a jewel-laden branch of the rarest beauty to be fashioned, and promised me by way of guerdon the mastership of the craft. And after pondering over the matter, coming to know that the Branch was to be bestowed upon the Lady Kaguya, who was about to become a Lady of the Palace, I deemed it well to seek aid at the Lady's dwelling that my guerdon might be given me and the wages due be paid to us."

¹ *Chigusa*, thousand herbs—an expression signifying a thousand kinds, or the innumerable, that is, all kinds and varieties of wretchedness.

As the Lady Kaguya read these words, her face, which had been clouded with grief, turned radiant with joy, and she summoned the Ancient and smilingly said to him: "Ha! a veritable Branch from Hōrai this; by my faith, let his false and trickful Highness be dismissed at once and take his Jewel-laden Branch with him!"

The Ancient nodded assent, saying: "As the Branch is clearly a counterfeit, there need be no hesitation about returning it."

And with the Branch the Lady Kaguya, her heart now free of gloom, sent this stanza:

Makoto ka to	Was it the true branch of Hōrai
kikite mitsureba,	I asked as I gazed on thy gift:
koto no ha wo	mere leaves of sound (words)
kazareru tama no	were the jewels that adorned it,
yeda ni zo arikeru!	the Branch of Bloom thou
	broughtest me.

So was the False Branch returned to the Prince. The Ancient remembered the lying tale wherewith he had been beguiled, and regarded His Highness with anger, who meanwhile stood still a space, not knowing whether to go or stay. But as the sun sank deeper in the west, he bethought him again, and slunk off. Now the Lady Kaguya summoned the craftsmen who had caused this pother, and praised them, giving them ample largesse, whereat they rejoiced greatly, saying, thus they knew things would be, and departed. But on their way homewards they were set upon and punished by order of the Prince, blood was shed, and all their treasure was taken from them, and thus despoiled they fled and vanished. But His Highness felt he was put to unexampled shame, and his discomfiture threw a shadow over the remainder of his days. "Not only," he complained, "have I lost my mistress, but my name has become a reproach throughout the land." Thereupon he fled to the deepest recesses of the hills, and dwelt there all the rest of his days. Times and again the chiefs and retainers of his household sought to discover their lord's retreat, but could not, and he

was as it were dead. And it was out of this history of His Highness Prince Kuramochi that arose the expression "tamazakaru."¹

THE FLAME-PROOF FUR-ROBE.
(HI-NEZUMI NO KAWAGOROMO.)

The Sadaijin² Abe no Miushi³ was a lord of wealth and substance, and mighty withal. In the year whereof we speak, came to our country a merchant of Morokoshi,⁴ by name Wōkei,⁵ on board a ship of that land, to whom was indited a letter requiring him to buy for the Sadaijin a fur-robe, which was said to exist, made of the pelt of the Flame-proof Rat,⁶ and Ono no Fusamori, one of the trustiest of his lord's squires, was despatched in charge of the missive. So Fusamori took the letter and went down to the coast,⁷ and delivered it to Wōkei, to whom he likewise gave gold. Wōkei unrolled the scroll and read it, and made answer thus:

"The Flame-proof Fur-Robe is not to be obtained in my country; men have talked of such a robe, but it has not been seen. If it exists anywhere, it is a thing that should assuredly be brought to this land, but 'tis very hard to get by way of trade. Nevertheless, if by any hap such a robe has been carried to India, the great merchants may be able to obtain it, and should they fail, the gold now bestowed upon me shall be returned to him who brought it, to hand back to the Lord Sadaijin."

Upon the ship's return from the land of Morokoshi,

¹ An expression which may be taken to mean either, "blooming with jewels," or "preciously blooming," or again, *tamashii-zakaru*, "to have one's wits gone a wool-gathering."

² *Sadaijin*, Left Great Minister, next in rank to the Daijōdaijin or Premier.

³ In some texts Abe no Mimuraji. Mi-muraji is Great Chieftain, see Mr. Chamberlain's translation of the *Kojiki*.

⁴ An invented name. The characters are 王卿.

⁵ A common designation of China, even up to recent times. Its derivation is uncertain.

⁶ *Hi-nezumi*. *Nezumi* (root-gnawer or perhaps rice (inc) gnawer) is a generic name for Rodents. In the legend is doubtless involved an allusion to the asbestos-cloth mentioned in Colonel Yule's admirable work on Marco Polo, as a product of the country lying north of China proper.

⁷ Probably to Hakata in Chikuzen, a favourite resort of Chinese traders in early times.

the Sadaijin, having tidings that Fusamori was on board and was making ready to come up to the capital, despatched a swift horse to meet him, so that he journeyed from Tsukushi to Miako in the short space of seven days.¹ Then a letter was delivered to the Sadaijin, who unrolled it and read these words: "The Flame-proof Fur-robe have I finally won, after great toil and the despatch of many men in quest thereof, for difficult it is to find now, as it was of old. Long ago a venerable priest from India brought such a robe into our land, and I heard that it was preserved in a certain temple lying among the remote western hills. I besought the aid of the ruler of the district, which was accorded me, and was allowed to purchase the robe, but the money was not sufficient, and fifty riyōs² of my own monies were added, which doubtless will be repaid to me ere the ship depart, or the Robe will be returned as pledge for the same." "Nay," cried the Sadaijin, "what is this talk about the gold; let the merchant have his gold without delay; welcome to me beyond words is the fruit of his quest." And turning his face towards the land of Morokoshi, he bowed him thrice, clasping his hands thankfully. Then, looking at the casket wherein the Fur-Robe was laid folded, he saw that it was beautifully adorned with inlaid work of various kinds of precious ruri,³ and the Robe itself was of a glaucous⁴ colour, the hairs tipped with shining gold, a treasure indeed of incomparable loveliness, more to be admired for its pure excellence than even for its virtue in resisting the flame of fire. "'Tis the very Robe, how pleased, methinks, the Lady Kaguya will be," cried the Sadaijin, and laid the Robe

¹ The distance is described as more than 900 *ri* (the Chinese *li* are meant) by the land route.

² Liang or taels, greatly exceeding in purchasing value, but to an extent not now definitely ascertainable, the tael or riyō of the present day.

³ In the Commentary *ruri* is said to be a kind of precious stone that stands the fire, ten kinds of which are found within the famous 大秦國 Ta Ts'in country, supposed by some to be the Roman Empire, by others the countries lying west of China. Possibly varieties of turquoise or lapis lazuli are covered by the name. It has also been identified with the emerald, and Dr. Williams says it is the Sanskrit *Vaidurya*, which appears to be a sort of lapis lazuli.

⁴ 靑. Probably a brilliant (lit. golden) shade of blue is meant. The Commentary explains the tint as superior to that of the sky 空靑.

carefully in the casket which he attached to a Branch of Bloom; and putting on his fairest apparel,¹ and feeling assured that the gift would win him his wooing, added a scroll, whereon was writ a stanza, and carried the gift to the Lady's abode.

Kagiri naki	Endless are the fires of love
omoï ni yakenu	that consume me, yet unconsumed
kawagoromo :	is the Robe of Fur :
tamoto kawakite	dry at last are my sleeves,
kiyō koso wa mime !	for shall I not see her face this day !

Thus cheering himself, the Sadaijin reached the entrance of the Lady's dwelling, and the Ancient came out and took the casket and bore it within to the Lady Kaguya. And she gazed awhile upon the Robe and said :

"A fair robe of fur it seems to be, but till it be proved, how can we know if it be not false."

But the Ancient answered :

"However that may be, deign to invite the Sadaijin to enter; the like of yonder Robe the world doth not appear to hold; be not so distrustful, daughter, nor drive men to despair."

Then he went out and invited the Sadaijin to enter. And now the Lady, though her heart was heavy, felt she must receive him, for greatly as the Ancient had grieved over her continued maidenhood, seeking ever to find her a worthy mate, yet never had he sought to constrain her, seeing how deeply she dreaded to give herself to any man.

But she said to the Ancient: "If this Robe be thrown amid the flames and be not burnt up, I shall know it is in very truth the Flame-proof Robe, and may no longer refuse this lord's suit. As it has not its fellow in the world, and 'tis averred to be, without doubt, the famous Robe that resists flame, the proof may well be dared."

And the Ancient agreed, and told the Sadaijin it must be so, whereupon he answered: "What doubt can there be—

¹ More literally, taking the greatest pains with his personal appearance, as if he was going to a Court Levee—*on mi no keshō (keshō) ito itaku shite*.

even in the land of Morokoshi the Robe was not to be got, and could only be found after long and toilsome search ; nevertheless, as the Lady will have it so, let the Robe be cast among the flames."

And a fire was kindled, and the Robe was flung therein and in a flash of flame perished utterly. So was it shown that it was not, in truth, made of the famous Flame-proof Fur. When the Sadaijin saw this, his face grew green as grass, and he stood there astonished. But the Lady Kaguya rejoiced exceedingly, and caused the casket to be returned with a scroll in it whereon was writ a verse :—

Nagori naku mo	Without a vestige even left
moyu to shiriseba,	thus to burn utterly away,
kawagoromo	had I dreamt it of this Robe of Fur,
omoi no hoka ni	Alas the pretty thing! far otherwise
okite mimashi wo!	would I have dealt with it. ¹

But the Sadaijin withdrew discomfited and shut himself up in his mansion. And men, hearing that Abe had accomplished his Quest and was abiding with the Lady Kaguya, inquired at the Lady's dwelling if that were so, and were told the fate of the Robe of Fur and that he abode not with the Lady, and hearing this they exclaimed "An *ahenashi*,² piece of work in truth, this fruitless job."

THE JEWEL IN THE DRAGON'S HEAD.

(TATSU NO KUBI NO TAMA.)

The Dainagon³ Ōtomo no Miyuki,⁴ being in his mansion, assembled his household and deigned to say: "In the head of the Dragon lies a jewel, rainbow-hued, and on him who

¹ There is a word-play here on the *i* (*hi*) of *omoi*, *hi* meaning 'flame.'

² *Ahenashi* (*ayenashi*), with *nagori*, *abenashi*. *Ayenashi* 敢無 or 無端 is a locution used of a bootless undertaking, something feeble, awkward and unsuccessful.

³ *Dainagon*, Great Councillor, next in rank to the Udaijin, or Right Great Minister, who followed the Sadaijin.

⁴ Ōtomo seems to mean many multitudes or companies of men. Miyuki—the personal name—is homophonous with the word signifying a Royal Progress or Promenade.

shall win it me shall nought remain unbestowed he may desire." His men listened to their lord's words, and one said humbly: "The high behests of our lord his servants hear with trembling awe; but how shall a mortal man light upon such a jewel, or draw it forth from the head of a Dragon!" Whereto the Dainagon answered: "If ye call yourselves the servants of your lord, even at the peril of your lives are ye bound to do his bidding. The jewel whereof I speak is not to be found in our land,¹ nor yet in the land of Tenjiku, nor in that of Morokoshi; the Dragon is a monster that creeps up the hill-slopes from the sea and rushes down them into the ocean²—but of what can ye be thinking in shirking this Quest?" And they said: "As our lord wills, so must it be, and albeit the task were a perilous one, we will not shirk it." Whereupon the Dainagon regarded them with a smile, and cried, "Ye would not surely put shame on your lord's name nor refuse to do his bidding."

Then he dismissed them upon the Quest after the Dragon's head gem, and that they might not want for food and support on their way, endless store of silk and cotton and coin and other things needful were bestowed upon them. And the Dainagon promised that he would live in seclusion, awaiting their return, and bade them not cast their looks homewards until they had won the jewel. So they hearkened humbly each of them and departed.

They were bidden to take the jewel from the Dragon's head, but where to turn their steps they could not tell, and they fell to reproaching their lord for being thus bewitched by a fair face. Then they divided amongst them what had been bestowed upon them, and some withdrew to their houses, there to lie hid, while others went whither they

¹ That is, in none of the Sankoku (three countries, Japan, India, and China), of which, in imitation of the Chinese Sankwoh, the civilized world was supposed to consist.

² In some provinces, says the Commentary, the rivers, roaring down the narrow valleys to the sea during the heavy rains, are supposed to be changed into this particular form of Dragon, which has been seen to lift itself from the sea-surface towards a descending cloud—an interpretation doubtless of the phenomena attending the formation of a waterspout.

listed. 'Twas very well to be loyal to parent and prince, as the maxim runs, they muttered, but a behest so burdensome as this could not be obeyed, and bitterly they reproached their lord for having laid upon them such a task.

Meanwhile the Dainagon deeming his mansion common and mean, and unfit to receive the Lady Kaguya, caused it to be adorned throughout and made beautiful with curious lacquer-work in gold and silver, as well as with plain bright lacquer, and over the roof he ordered silken cloths of divers colours to be drawn, and every chamber to be hung with fine brocade, and the panels of the sliding partitions to be enriched with cunningly-wrought pictures, and the splendour of the mansion passed all description. And feeling sure that ere long he should obtain possession of the Lady Kaguya, he put away all the women of his household, and passed the days and the nights in solitude, and through the days and the nights awaited the return of his men; and so a year came and went, but still he heard no tidings of them. At last, weary of waiting, and sick at heart with the lack of news, he took two of his squires with him, and thus meanly served journeyed to Naniwa, and made inquiry there if any of his folk had taken boat in quest of the Dragon, to slay the monster and win the jewel that lay in his head; but the shipmen laughed and answered: "'Tis a strange thing thou speakest of; on such a business be sure no boat has left this haven." Thereupon the Dainagon said to himself: "These be but silly, feeble ship-folk, how should they know aught of this matter? Myself I will take my bow and despatch this monster, and draw the jewel from his head, nor wait longer for these laggard fellows of mine." So he took a boat, and embarked in it, and fared over sea until the land lay far behind him, and still he caused the boat to be sculled on until his keel rode on the waters of distant Tsukushi. Then without any foresign the wind rose and the air darkened, and the craft was driven hither and thither, blown about by the gale; now it seemed as though the boat must founder in the trough of the sea, now great billows threatened to topple over and overwhelm it, while the thunder-god

thundered so appallingly that his monstrous drums seemed to hang close overhead. So the Dainagon lost heart, and cried aloud, saying : " Never before have I been in such perilous case, alas ! what help may be invoked ? " And the helmsman answered : " Long have I voyaged in these waters, yet so terrible an ill fortune as this never hath befallen me ; if we sink not to the bottom of the sea, the thunder will strike us ; if by good hap the favour of the gods save us from these perils, the gale will drive the boat far amid (the barbarian islands of) the southern ocean ; woe worth the day I took service with my lord of evil fate, where death, belike, must be the wages ! " And as he spoke the shipman burst into tears. But the Dainagon said :

" He who fares over sea must needs trust himself to the helmsman, who should be steadfast as a high hill. Why speakest thou then thus despairfully ? " and as he uttered these words a terrible sickness came upon him. Then the helmsman answered : " Is your servant then a god that he can render service now ? The howling of the wind and the raging of the waves and the mighty roar of the thunder are signs of the wrath of the god whom my lord offends, who would slay the dragon of the deep, for through the dragon is the storm raised, and well it were if my lord offered a prayer. "

" Thou sayest wisely, " answered the Dainagon, and he fell to calling upon the god of seafolk, repenting him of his frowardness and folly who had sought to slay the Dragon, and vowing solemnly that never more would he strive to harm so much as a hair of the great ruler of the deep. A thousand times he repeated his prayer, neither standing nor sitting (but bowing him humbly before the god without ceasing). Then—was it not in answer to his prayer?—the thunder died down and the gloom lifted, but still the wind blew mightily. "'Tis the Dragon's handiwork," said the helmsman after a while, " a fair wind blows now, and drives the boat swiftly towards our own land. " But the Dainagon could not understand him. For three or four days the bark sped before the wind till land came in sight, and they saw

it was the strand of Akashi in Harima. Nevertheless the Dainagon would not be persuaded they had not been blown southwards on some savage shore, and lay motionless and panting in the bottom of the boat, nor would he rise, when the governor of the district, to whom his squires had sent tidings of their lord's misadventure, presented himself. But under the pine trees that overshadowed the beach mats were spread, whereupon the Dainagon saw it was on no savage shore they had drifted, and he roused himself and got on land. And when the governor saw him, he could not forbear smiling at the wretched appearance of the discomfited lord, chilled to the very bone, with swollen belly and eyes lustreless as sloes. But the proper orders were given, and a litter got ready in which the Dainagon was borne slowly to his mansion. Then those of his followers whom he had sent upon the Quest got wind somehow of their lord's return, and presented themselves humbly before him, saying: "We have failed in our quest, and have lost all claim to an audience, but now 'tis known how terribly hard was the task imposed, and hither have we ventured to come, and we trust that a gracious forbearance will be extended and that we shall not be driven out of our lord's following."

The Dainagon went out to receive them and said: "Ye have done well to return, even empty-handed. Yonder Dragon, assuredly, has kinship with the Thunder-God, and whoever shall lay hands on him to take the jewel that gleams in his head shall find himself in parlous peril. Myself am sore spent with toil and hardship, and no guerdon have I won. A thief of men's souls, and a destroyer of their bodies, is the Lady Kaguya, nor ever will I seek her abode again, nor ever bend ye your steps thitherwards."

Then the Dainagon took what was left of his substance, and divided it among those whom he had bidden go in quest of the Jewel. And when his women, whom he had dismissed, heard of his misadventure, they laughed till their sides were sore, while the silken cloths he had caused to be drawn over the roof of his mansion were carried away, thread by thread, by the crows to line their nests with.

And when men asked whether the Dainagon Ōtomo had won the Dragon-Jewel, they were answered: "Not so, but his eyeballs are become two jewels very like a pair of sloes,¹ nor other jewels has he won." "Ana! tayegata,"² was the reply, and thus the expression first arose.

THE ROYAL HUNT.

(MI-KARI NO MIYUKI.)

Meanwhile the fame of the incomparable loveliness of the Lady Kaguya had reached the Court, and the Mikado caused one of the palace dames, Fusago by name, to be summoned, and said to her: "Of many a man has the strange beauty of this Kaguya been the ruin; go thou, therefore, and see what manner of damsel the girl be."

The Dame heard and departed, and came to the dwelling of the Bamboo-Hewer, where she was courteously received by the goodwife and invited to enter. "'Tis at the bidding of His Majesty I have journeyed hither, who has heard that the beauty of the Lady Kaguya passes all description, and has commanded me to seek audience of her."

So spoke she and the goodwife answered, "Your servant will humbly repeat your message," and sought the inner apartment, and prayed the maiden to receive the Palace Dame. But she would not, for that she was no wise beautiful, she said. Then the goodwife chided her for her churlish speech, and inquired how she dared treat thus rudely the King's message. But the Lady Kaguya still refused to receive the Dame, saying that His Majesty showed little wisdom in despatching one of his ladies upon such an errand. Nor might the Ancient nor his goodwife constrain her, for though she filled the place of a child born to them, ever she held herself aloof from the ways of the world. So the goodwife sought again the Palace Dame, and said, "Pity 'tis, but of so tender years

¹ *Sumomo*. Chinese 李 opposed to the 桃, the peach, symbol of beauty and plumpness.

² *Tayegata* (*tahegata*) means 'insupportable' but with *nigori* (*tabegata*), uneatable. The Dainagon had got his eyeballs swollen like sloes, and these were uneatable fruits, for his pains.

is our daughter she may not venture to meet a Lady of the Court." But the Dame answered, not without some anger: "The Damsel may not be excused, for His Majesty has bidden me see her, and how can I return without fulfilling the Royal behest? Will she set at nought the commands of the Ruler of the Land, and so be guilty of an unexampled folly?"

Still the Lady Kaguya willed not to give audience to the Palace Dame, saying: "I cannot yield obedience in this matter, if need be, let me be put to death."

And the Dame thereupon returned to the Palace, and made report of what had occurred.

"Verily," said His Majesty, "I can well believe 'tis a woman who revels in the destruction of men." So after a pause, thinking over the matter, the Mikado concluded that she must be constrained to yield due obedience, and caused the Ancient to be summoned to the Palace, to whom was conveyed this command. "A daughter thou hast, Kaguya by name, whom we bid thee bring to us. Fair of face and form we have heard she is, and we sent one of our Ladies to see her, but she would not be seen. How comes it our will is thus disdainfully received in thy house?"

To which the Ancient answered humbly: "It is true the child willed not to become a Lady of the Palace, and caused your servant sore grief, but he will hasten back to his dwelling and lay your Majesty's gracious commands upon her." To which was deigned the reply: "How! has not the Ancient reared the child, and may she oppose his will? Let the Maiden be brought hither, and a hat of nobility, perchance, shall be her father's reward."

The Ancient rejoiced greatly at hearing this, and returned to his dwelling, and conveyed the Royal command to the Lady Kaguya, bidding her no longer refuse obedience. But she said: "Never will I serve His Majesty as 'tis desired; and if constraint be used towards your daughter, she will pine away and die, and the price of my father's hat of nobility will be the destruction of his child."

"Nay, die thou shalt not," cried the Ancient; "what were

a hat of nobility to me if never again I beheld thee? Yet, daughter, I pray thee, tell thy father why thou refusest to become a Lady of the Palace and why shouldst thou die if thou shouldst serve his Majesty?"

"Empty words seem thy daughter's," answered the Damsel, "but true will they prove if she be constrained to do this thing. Many a suitor has wooed her, lords of no mean estate, who nevertheless have been dismissed, and should she listen to his Majesty, her name would become a reproach among men."

Then the Ancient answered: "Little care I for matters of state, but thy days must know no peril, nor shalt thou be in any wise constrained, and I will hasten to the palace and humbly represent to His Majesty that thou mayest not become an inmate thereof."

Thereupon he went up to the Capital, and represented that the Lady Kaguya, after hearing the Royal Command, nevertheless willed not to become a Lady of the Palace, and might not be constrained without peril of her life; and further, that she was not the born child of Miyakko Maro, but had been found by him one day when hewing bamboos on the hill-side, and that she was in ways and moods of other fashion than the fashion of this world. Upon this being reported to his Majesty, he said: "Dwells not this Miyakko Maro among the hills hard by our capital? Let a Royal Hunt be ordered, and, perchance, thus we may gain a glimpse of the Maiden."

The Ancient, when the Royal pleasure was made known to him, said: "'Tis an excellent device; thus may his Majesty, without difficulty, on the Hunt being unexpectedly ordered, gain a glimpse of the Lady Kaguya ere a thought of it enters her heart."

So a day was appointed, and the Royal Hunt ordered, and the Mikado watched for an opportunity and entered the Bamboo-Hewer's dwelling. And as the threshold was crossed, it was seen that the house was filled with light, and midmost the glory stood a Being. "Ha! 'tis the Lady," cried the Mikado, and drew nigh, but she made to fly, and a

royal hand was laid upon her sleeve, and she covered her face, but not with such swiftness that a glimpse of it was not caught, and the loveliness of it was seen to be incomparable. And His Majesty would fain have led her forth, but she stood there and spoke these words: "No liege of your Majesty is his servant, and she may not therefore be thus led away." But it was answered that she must not resist the Royal Will, and a palace litter approached, whercupon of a sudden the Lady dissolved in thin air and vanished. The monarch stood dumb with astonishment, and understood that the Lady was of no mortal mould, and said: "It shall be as thou desirest, Maiden; but 'tis prayed that thou resume thy form, that once more thy beauty may be seen."

So she resumed her form and the glory of her loveliness filled the Royal heart with overwhelming delight; and graciously was the Ancient remembered, through whom this joy had come to His Majesty, and upon him was bestowed the rank of Chief of the Hiyak'kwan.¹

But great was the grief that the Lady willed not to dwell in the Palace, and as the Monarch was about to be borne away, it seemed as if the Royal soul was being left behind, and a stanza was composed whereof the words were these:

Kayeru sa no	Mournful the return
miyuki mono uku	of the Royal Hunt,
omohoyete;	and full of sorrow the brooding
	heart;
somukite tomaru	for she resists and stays behind,
Kaguya Hime yuye!	the Lady Kaguya!

And the Lady answered thuswise:—

Mugura hafu	Under the roof o'ergrown with
	hopbine
shimo ni mo toshi wa	long were the years
tōrinuru mi no;	she passed,
nanika wa tama no	how may she dare to look upon
utena wo mo mimu!	the Palace of Precious Jade?

¹ Here Chief of the Mikado's Retinue:—it was, however, merely an honorary, not a real appointment.

When the answer was read, more than ever was the Monarch disinclined to go back bootless to the Palace, and long the litter was delayed, for no resolve could be come to, until it seemed at last as though the dawn would be there waited for through the night; whereupon reluctantly was the order given to return. But the Ladies of the Court were disdained, for their beauty paled before that of the Lady Kaguya, aye the fairest of them, when compared with her image, lost all her charms. Only on the Lady could the Royal heart dwell, and on none other, and the apartments of the Palace Dames were abandoned and desolate, sad to say! while letter after letter was sent to the Lady Kaguya, who answered them not ungently,¹ and verses were composed and fairly writ on scrolls attached to posies, and interchanged, and thus the days passed by.

THE CELESTIAL ROBE OF FEATHERS.²

(AME NO HA-GOROMO.)

So in the Palace and in the Hut was consolation attained; and three years went by, when, in the early spring, the Lady Kaguya fell to gazing upon the shining orb of the rising moon, and a brooding sadness seemed to take possession of her. She was counselled not thus ceaselessly to contemplate the face of the moon, for so was bred mournfulness; but she still in solitude watched the orb, until tears of grief ran down her cheeks in floods. Then, on the mid-month day of the seventh month rose the full moon, and unutterable grew the misery, and the maidens who served the Lady sought the Ancient and said: "Long has the Lady Kaguya watched the moon, waxing in melancholy with the waxing thereof, and her woe now passes all measure, and sorely she weeps and wails; wherefore we counsel thee to speak with her."

¹ "Go henji sasuga ni nikukarazu kikoyekawashitamaite."

² The fifth quest—that of the Lord of Iso—is omitted, principally on account of its triviality and lack of interest. A brief account of it will be found in the concluding portion of this article.

And the Ancient went to her and said : " What hast thou on thy mind, daughter, that ever thou gazest thus sadly on yonder moon's pallid face? Lackest thou aught that may be needed for thy happiness?"

But she answered : " As I gaze upon the moon I am sad because my heart is broken as I consider the wretchedness of this world."

And deeper grew her melancholy each time the Ancient visited her chamber, till sorrow-struck by her distress, he said : " Ah! my darling, my Buddha, why broodest thou thus? what grief oppresses thee?"

" 'Tis no grief, save the grief that breaks my heart because of the wretchedness of the world."

" Watch yonder moon no more, daughter; ever art thou gazing upon it, and thus thy woe deepens."

" How may I cease, father, to gaze upon the orb!" said the Lady, and still she watched the moon from its rising to its setting, her face wet with tears the while; but when the nights were moonless,¹ her woe departed from her. Yet as the new moon came and waxed again, the Lady wailed and wept, and her women whispered among themselves that ever deeper grew the misery; but they could not learn the secret of her woe, neither could the Ancient. So the eighth month came in due course, and when the moon was at its full the Lady wept floods of tears, nor essayed she to hide her grief. And again and again her foster-parents prayed her to tell them the cause of her wretchedness. The Lady yielded to their prayer, and said, weeping sorely the while : " Again and again have I willed to tell you all, but I felt assured your hearts would be wrung with grief by my words, and therefore have I forborne till now; and now is the hour come I may no longer abide with you. No maid of this mortal land am I, but the Capital of Moonland is my birth-place. Long ago it was decreed that I should descend upon this earth, and bide there awhile; but now is the time at hand when I must go back whence I came, for when yonder orb shall be

¹ After the 21st day of the month, explains the Commentary.

at its fullest, a company of moonfolk will come down from the sky to bear me away. Well I knew this was my doom, and now ye can understand my misery and wherefore I have wept and wailed so sorely since the spring followed winter."

And as the Lady spoke, again the tears flowed in abundance down her cheeks. But the Ancient said: "What thing is this thou speakest, daughter? I found thee, 'tis true, in the hollow of a bamboo, but no bigger wert thou than a rape-seed, and have we not cherished thee while thou grewest up to full maidenhood? None dare take thee from us, by heaven! I will not let thee go."

And he clamoured, amid his tears, that he was like to die; unbearably piteous 'twas to see his misery. But the Lady answered: "My father and my mother are still numbered among the dwellers in yonder Moonland's capital. It was but for a while I came down to earth, and now many a year has gone by since you found me. So long have I dwelt among you that I have forgotten my father and my mother, and now I look upon you as though I were your very child; nor indeed would I fain do otherwise than remain with you, but, though terrible to me is the thought of quitting you, I may not flee my fate." And she fell to weeping, and the old folk wept also, and her women who had tended her through so many years and watched her grow up into perfect beauty, now hearing they must lose her whom they loved so well, could not swallow their tears, and, oppressed by a like woe, were consumed with grief.

Now the Mikado, hearing of these things, sent a messenger to the Hearer's dwelling, and the Ancient came out to receive him, weeping abundantly. So bitter had been his grief that his hair had turned white, and his limbs become bowed, and his eyes blar, and though his years were but fifty,¹ he seemed as if his woe had all at once turned him into an old man.

The messenger inquired if the tidings which had reached

¹ He has previously been described as a man of seventy. The Commentary treats the question with befitting gravity in a long note.

His Majesty as to the cause of the Hewer's distress were true, and the Ancient, still weeping, answered :

"At the full moon a company from the Moonland capital will come down to bear away our daughter. Deeply grateful am I to His Majesty, who deigns to make inquiry about this matter, and I humbly represent that if at the time of full moon a guard of soldiers be granted us, these Moonfolk, if they make their raid, may all be captured."

The messenger thereupon returned, and reported to the Mikado the plight wherein he found the Ancient.

And the Mikado said : "But a passing glimpse have I had of the Lady Kaguya, yet never shall I lose the memory of her exceeding loveliness ; how hard then must it be for those who are wont to see her morning and evening to lose her !" So orders were given that the captains should be ready by the full moon, and the General Taka no Ōkuni was commanded to take a thousand men from each of the Left and Right Regiments of Royal Guards to protect the Hewer's dwelling against the raid of the Moonfolk. When the two thousand soldiers reached the Ancient's abode, one moiety was posted around it on the earth platform whereon it stood, and the other moiety on the roof of the house, all with bow bent and arrow on string, while the men of the household too were arrayed, and so many were the defenders that no spot remained unguarded, and even within the dwelling the women kept watch and ward, while the Lady was placed in the store-house, surrounded by her attendants, the door whereof the Ancient bolted, and posted himself outside thereof, saying : "Watch and ward thus strict, even Heavenfolk may not win through," and crying to the soldiers on the roof to look out for the first sign of a swoop being made through the air, and slay whatever creature might in this way approach them, whereto they answered : "Have no care, so keen our watch not even a bat shall escape our artillery, and due exposure of its head, by way of punishment, should it venture near our ranks."

And the Ancient was greatly comforted by these words, but the Lady Kaguya said : "Though ye thus surround me

and protect me and make ye ready to fight for me, yet ye cannot prevail over the folk of yonder land, nor will your artillery harm them nor your defences avail aught against them, for every door will fly open at their approach, nor may your valour help, for be ye never so stout-hearted, when the Moonfolk come, vain will be your struggle with them."

Then the Ancient was angered, and shouted: "If these Moonfolk come, my nails shall turn into talons to claw out their eyes. I will seize them by their forelocks and twist them off, and trample upon them; their hinder-parts will I tear to pieces; to shame will I put them before the face of these Royal warmen."

But the Lady said: "Make not so great a clamour, lest the warmen hear thee, which were unseemly. Ere long, alas! I shall no longer be within your love, ere long I must know the bitterness of parting, nor can I ever return to show my love and gratitude, for closed to me will be the world's ways. When I went out month after month to watch the waxing moon, I prayed for yet another year to bide with you; but the boon was refused me, and I could but wail and weep as ye saw me. I have beguiled your hearts to love me, and now must quit you; alas, alas! Of that pure essence are these Moonfolk that they know not old age nor ever suffer from any pain or grief, yet fain would I abide with my foster-parents; terrible it is to me to think that ye will grow old with no child to cherish you." So saying, the Lady wept sorely, but the Ancient, restraining his grief, said:

"Nay, daughter, thou must not anger beings so lovely as those thou speakest of."

Meanwhile, the night wore away, and, at the hour of the Rat, behold! a glory fell about the dwelling that exceeded the splendour of noon and was ten times as bright as the brightness of the full moon, so that the smallest hair-pore could be seen on the skin. In the midst thereof came down through the air a company of angels riding on a coil of cloud that descended until it hovered some cubits' height above the ground. And there the angels stood ranked in due order; and when the warmen on guard saw them, a great fear fell

upon them, upon those without as upon those within the dwelling, and they had no stomach for fighting. But after a while they rallied; and some bent the bow, but the strength departed from their arms, and they were as though stricken with palsy; and mightier men let fly anon, but the shafts went all astray, and these too could not fight, and thus feeble and bootless proved the vaunted watch and ward of the Royal Warmen.

In shining garments were the angels clad, that had not their like under heaven, and in the midst of them, as they stood in serried ranks upon the cloud, was seen a canopied car hung with curtains of finest woollen fabric, where sat One who seemed to be their lord. And the Archangel turned towards the Hewer's abode, and cried out in a loud voice, "Come thou forth, Miyakko Maro." And the Hewer came forth, staggering like a drunken man, and fell on his face prostrate.

Then the Archangel said, "Thou fool! Some small virtue didst thou display in thy life, and to reward thee was this maiden sent to bide with thee somewhile, and years and years hath she dwelt under thy ward, and heaps and heaps of gold have been bestowed upon thee, and thou hast as it were become a new man. To expiate a fault she had committed was the Lady Kaguya doomed to bide a little while in thy wretched home, and now is the doom fulfilled, and we are come to bear her away from thine earth. Vain is thy weeping and lamentation, render up the girl and delay not."

Then the Ancient answered humbly, "For over a score of years thy servant has cherished the maiden, whereof his lord speaks strangely as being but a little while. Perchance the Lady whom his lord would bear away with him dwells elsewhere; the Lady Kaguya who bides beneath this roof is very sick and may not leave her chamber."

No answer was vouchsafed, but the Car was borne upwards on the cloud till it hovered over the houseroof and a voice cried, "Ho there, Kaguya! how long wouldest thou tarry in this sorry place?"

Thereupon the outer door of the storehouse, wherein stood the Lady Kaguya, flew open and the inner lattice-work, untouched by any hand, slid back and the Lady was seen in the light of the doorway, surrounded by her women, who, understanding that her departure could no longer be stayed, lifted up their hands and wept. But the Lady passed out, and drew nigh to where lay the Hearer, grovelling on the ground, weeping and stunned with grief, and said: "My fate bids me, father; will you not follow me with your eyes as I am borne away?"

But the Hearer answered: "Why in my misery should I follow thee with my eyes? Let it be done unto me as may be listed, let me be left desolate, let these angels who have come down from the sky to fetch thee bear thee thither with them." And the Ancient refused to be comforted. Then the Lady indited a scroll, seeing that her foster-father was too overcome with grief to listen to her words, and left it to be given him after she had gone, weeping sorely and saying that when her father should yearn after his daughter, the words she had written should be read. And these were the words she wrote: "Had I been born in this land, never should I have quitted it until the time came for my father to suffer no sorrow for his child;¹ but now, on the contrary, must I pass beyond the boundaries of this world, though sorely against my will. My silken mantle I leave behind me as a memorial, and when the moon lights up the night, let my father gaze upon it; now my eyes must take their last look, and I must mount to yonder sky, whence I fain would fall meteor-wise to earth."

Now the Angels brought with them a coffer, wherein were contained a Celestial Feather Robe and a joint of bamboo filled with the Elixir of Life, and one of them said to the Lady Kaguya: "Taste, I pray you, of this Elixir, for soiled has your spirit become with the grossnesses of this filthy world."

¹ An euphemistic phrase hinting at her longing to remain with her father till death took him, and her fate could no longer grieve him.

Then the Lady tasted of the Elixir, and would have privily wrapt up a portion in the mantle she was leaving behind, as a memorial of her; but an Angel stayed her, and drawing forth the Celestial Robe, made ready to throw it over her shoulders, whereupon she said: "Have patience yet awhile; who dons yonder robe changes his heart, and I have still somewhat to say ere I depart." And again she fell to writing, and an Angel said: "'Tis late, and you delay, Lady, overmuch." But she rebuked him, and before all, mournfully and composedly, she wrote on; and the words she wrote were these:

"Your Majesty deigned to send a host to protect your servant, but it was not to be, and now is the misery at hand of departing with those who have come to bear her away with them. Not permitted was it to her to serve your Majesty, and maugre her will was it that she yielded not obedience to the Royal Command, and wrung with grief is her heart thereat, and perchance your Majesty may have thought the Royal will was not understood, and was opposed by her, and so will she appear to your Majesty lacking in good manners, which she would not your Majesty deemed her to be, and therefore humbly she lays this writing at the Royal Feet. And now must she don the Feather Robe and mournfully bid her lord farewell." Then when she had finished writing the scroll, the captain of the host was called, and it was delivered over, together with the bamboo joint containing the Elixir, into his hands, and as he took it, the Feather Robe was thrown over the Lady Kaguya, and in a trice, all memory of her foster-father's woe vanished, for those who don yonder Robe know sorrow no more. Then the Lady entered the car, surrounded by the company of Angels, and mounted skywards, while the Hewer and his Dame and the women who had served the Lady shed tears of blood, and stood stunned with grief; but there was no help. And the scroll left for the Ancient was read to him, but he said:

"What have I to live for? a bitter old age is mine. Of what profit is my life? whom have I to love?" Nor would

he take of the Elixir, but lay prostrate on the ground and would not rise.

Meanwhile the Captain of the host returned to the capital with his men, and reported how vain had been the attempt to stay the departure of the Lady Kaguya, and all that had occurred, and gave the scroll, together with the bamboo joint containing the Elixir, to be laid before the Mikado. And His Majesty unrolled the scroll and read it, and was greatly moved, nor would take food nor any diversion. After a while a Grand Council was summoned, and it was inquired which among the mountains of the land towered highest towards heaven. And one said: "In Suruga stands a mountain, not remote from the capital, that towers highest towards heaven among all the mountains of the land." Whereof His Majesty being informed composed a stanza:

Au koto mo,	Never more to see her!
namida ni ukabu	Tears of grief overwhelm me,
waga mi ni wa;	and as for me,
shinanu kusuri wa	with the Elixir of Life
nani ni ka wa semu?	what have I to do?

And the scroll together with the Elixir was given into the hands of one of the ladies of the palace, and she was charged to deliver them to one Tsuki no Iwakasa, with the injunction to bear them to the summit of the highest mountain in Suruga, that there, standing on the top of the highest peak thereof, he should cause the scroll and the Elixir to be consumed with fire.

So Tsuki no Iwakasa heard humbly the Royal Command, and took with him a company of warriors, and climbed the mountain and did as he had been bidden. And it was from that time forth that the name of Fuji¹ was given to yonder mountain, and men say that the smoke of that burning still curls from its high peak to mingle with the clouds of Heaven.

¹ One among the many ways of writing Fuji (*Fusiyama*) was 不死, Immortal.

Japanese literature begins with the *Kojiki*¹ or Record of Ancient Matters, which appeared in A.D. 712. During the eighth and ninth centuries various works were produced, none of which, if we except the Anthologies, have any claim to admiration on literary grounds. But in the next century the Japanese mind seems to have taken a fresh flight, or rather to have awakened to a consciousness of its powers, and the remarkable series of *monogatari* or romances, of which the Tale of Taketori is at once the earliest example and the type, gave a lustre hitherto unknown to the literature of Japan.

Among these early romances, unsurpassed, probably unequalled, in literary quality, by the later fiction of Japan, the *Genji-monogatari*² holds the chief place in the estimation of native critics, who scarcely condescend to notice the Hewer's simple and tender story. To European readers, however, the record of Genji's love-adventures soon becomes wearisome, despite the clever dialogues upon the virtues and failings of women regarded as ministers to men's sensuous or æsthetic pleasures that relieve the monotony of the narrative—dialogues, by the way, that wear a strangely modern air, and might, with a few necessary changes, be transported bodily into a drawing-room novel of nineteenth-century London.

In the sense in which Shakespeare is said to have had little invention, the nameless author of the *Taketori* lacked originality. Most of the materials of his story are drawn from Chinese or Sinico-Indian sources. It could hardly

¹ This extraordinary farrago of feeble and often filthy myths and legends has had the good fortune to meet with so able a translator as Mr. B. H. Chamberlain. Trivial, even childish, as the collection is, it is interesting as furnishing striking instances of what myths in their crude beginnings really were. In addition, the traits of a fairly ample picture of the social life of the unsinicized Japanese may be gathered from it, and the songs it contains, though devoid of literary value, have considerable philological interest. Mr. Chamberlain has enriched his version with notes and commentaries that constitute an invaluable aid to the study of the origins of Dai Nippou.

² Many chapters of this history of a Japanese Don Juan have been recently translated by Mr. Suyematsu.

have been otherwise, for even as early as the tenth century the legends and traditions of his country had been either replaced by Chinese myths or recast in a Chinese mould, and, excepting in the Rituals of Shinto, and some of the songs quoted in the *Kojiki* or collected in the Anthologies, all vestiges of the unwritten literature of primitive Japan seem to have been lost. But the art and grace of the story of the Lady Kaguya are native, its unstrained pathos, its natural sweetness, are its own, and in simple charm and purity of thought and language it has no rival in the fiction either of the Middle Kingdom or of the Dragon-Fly Land. The tags of word-plays that close the tale of each Quest are, I cannot but believe, the additions of later hands, and I am loth to look upon the story of the fifth Quest¹ as other than the broad farce of some manipulator of a coarser period. Perhaps, indeed, the Moon-maiden's story stood originally alone, the work of some pious but not too orthodox Buddhist, who shaped a Taouist legend into an allegory exemplifying the great doctrine of *inguwa*, or Cause and Effect, in the maiden's recovery of her celestial home through subduance of the very feeling the indulgence of which had led her to exile, despite the circumstance that a Mikado sought to inspire, and a father to foster, the tender sentiment. In such a story the narratives of the Quests may have been afterwards interpolated, partly to display more fully the maiden's constancy and purity, partly by way of gentle

¹ The Chiunagon Marotada has to present the Lady with a Cowry shell (*Koyasugai*) brought by a swallow, *tsubakurame*, probably the *Hirundo gutturalis*, Scop., which, according to Messrs. Blakiston and Pryer, nests always in a house, where a shelf is provided for its accommodation. He has recourse to his retainers, who devise various schemes, more or less trivial and ridiculous, in pursuance of one of which the Chiunagon endeavours to catch a swallow sitting upon its nest and in the act of wagging its tail. Thus far he is successful, but only to be rewarded by a ball of dung, which he grasps firmly in his hand, believing he has obtained the much-desired prize. In being lowered from his post of observation, to which he had been raised in a sort of basket attached by a rope, he meets with a mishap, and falls into a rice cauldron, from which his retainers drag him out still grasping his supposed prize—the nature of which he then, to his stupefaction, discovers.

The *Koyasugai* is described in the *Wakan sanzai* as the shell currency of ancient China. The word is often written 子安, under a false notion of its etymology—probably *Koyasu* is a strengthened form of the root *Koye*, to bring over, import, etc.

satire upon the taste for love-adventures which all the early romances show to have characterized the peaceful age, when neither Hei nor Gen had yet raised the stormy din of factious arms.

To render literally an Oriental text involves the effacement of whatever charm the original may possess.¹ I have therefore sought to give an English dress to the ideas, rather than to the mere language of the teller of this old-world story, probably the most ancient work of fiction extant of the whole Altaic race. But I have desired, at the same time, to preserve in the version as much as possible of the spirit, as distinct from the structure, of the unsinized tongue of early Japan; and with this object have reproduced, to some extent, the loosely composite paragraph and sentence characteristic of Japanese prose, and abhorred of Chinese writers, who delight in a terse and antithetic, but bald and artificial style, that too commonly sacrifices wit to an obscure brevity, and loses all naturalness in the strain after mere symmetry of literary form. I have endeavoured, also, to retain the impersonality which so markedly differentiates Turanian² from Aryan speech; but I have usually found this possible only so far as it resulted from avoidance of metaphorical forms of expression. Of the numerous word-plays that disfigure the text I have not attempted any explanation unless needed to give some definite meaning to the passages where they occur. The 'honorifics' in Japanese have often little more than a pronominal value, and I have not been careful to translate them when not used to emphasize respect. The word 'mi' is the honorific commonly employed in the text in relation to the Mikado, and is usually rendered

¹ An Italian version of the *Taketori* has been made by M. Severini, which I cannot greatly praise. It has also been translated into German, and through German into English. Of these latter versions I have seen neither. The present is, I believe, the first direct translation into English that has been produced, and the only one based on Daishu's text, or annotated with any approach to adequacy.

² On this peculiar feature of Turanian languages the reader is referred to some excellent observations by Mr. Lowell in his *Chosŏn* or *Land of Morning Calm* (Korea). Mr. Aston, too, has some admirable remarks on the subject in a paper on the Korean and Japanese languages, which will be found in Vol. XI. Part III. of this Journal.

‘imperial’ or ‘august,’ expressions to which I have preferred the simpler ‘royal.’ In his preface Tanaka Daishu (the Sinico-Japanese pronunciation of the characters with which Ōhide is written) says that if you read the *Taketori* over lightly, it will seem quite easy to understand; but if you want to ‘taste’ it, you will find it no easy matter thoroughly to comprehend it, not only because the style is antique and concise, but because by dint of frequent copying the text is not unfrequently corrupt. I have experienced to the full the justice of these remarks, and am less certain now of the accuracy of many passages in my translation than I was at the beginning of my task; it was only after prolonged study of the text that I found I did not always fully ‘taste’ it.

Japanese art has but rarely drawn its motives from the scenes of the Tale of *Taketori*. The earliest edition I have met with is illustrated with coarse woodcuts, but these are destitute of all merit. My friend M. Philippe Burty, however, possesses the concluding roll of an illuminated *maki-mono*, which he has kindly lent me, and the second of the three chromo-lithographs, with which I have been allowed to illustrate this translation—the Upbearing of Kaguya—is a reduced reproduction of its last scene. The two remaining chromo-lithographs are taken from *makimono*s in my own possession; the View of Fujisan from a roll bearing the title *Sanka rekishōzu*, a Series of Pictures of Hills and Streams, and the other, which I have called The Oread’s Haunt, from a roll that is partly calligraphic and partly a copy of a Chinese painting. The latter roll is contained in a case of black persimmon wood (*Diospyros kaki*), superscribed *Tōgen senseki*, 桃源仙蹟, and on the silk lining of its lid is a legend written in Chinese by the copyist, of which the subjoined version may be found interesting:—

“Hath any mortal, pray you, ever trod the streamy domains where the Fairy’s¹ peach-tree blooms? Now the

¹ The Chinese Oread (仙), Si Wang Mu, the Western Royal Mother, who on Mount Kwenlun rules over thousands of Taoist genii. A peach-tree growing within her domain on the borders of the Gem Lake (瑤池) bears fruits which confer immortality upon those who are allowed by the Mother to partake of them.



1, THE DREADS' HAUNT.





1852 PHOTO BY LANDON 21

3 FUJISAN FROM THE PASS OF GOKANYA (NANAOZAKA.)

sage Tōrei (陶 今) beheld the wickedness of the world, and his heart was sore within him, and he fled from men, and made his abode among the Eastern wilds, and the gates of the Fairies' domain were opened to him, and in that mystic land untrodden by foot of man he gained the fruits of creative energy. To Meichō (明 趙¹), whose days were when the Ming ruled, came the fame of the adventure of Tōrei, and he bethought him and wrought a picture, and depicted the high hills rising endlessly one above the other, and many a dizzy precipice, and the mulberry bush and the hemp plant, and fair to behold was the varied scene. There, too, were upland fields and valley rice-lands, and amidst them was seen the humble thatch of the husbandman. It was cunningly linned, one might liken it to fine needlework or the tracery of a patterned fabric. And in the course of time the scroll was brought within the borders of Kishiu, and my lord begged the loan of it, and at my lord's behest I made this copy of the picture. Though the scroll has been borne over the surging sea, amid roaring gales, over wild passes and streamy hills, and has been in peril from fire and struggle of armed men, and from tooth of rat and gnaw of worm, as from harm by spear or arrow, yet has no hurt come to it, for the gods and demons, I trow, have ever watched over its safety, during the many hundred years that have passed since it was wrought. Fair is the retreat among the wild hills, by the lintels of the door waves a willow, hard by the chrysanth blows, and a little beyond a pine-tree overshadows the meeting of three ways. Who shall now say that never have the gates of the Fairy Domain been thrown open to mortals? Written on a forenoon, in the second month of the second year of Ansei (A.D. 1855-6), at Sanke (?), within the province of Kishiu, by Kikuchi Tōsei."

As the legend of Mount Hōrai (P'êng lai) is, doubtless,

Kwenlun is by some identified with the range of mountains known as the Hindu Kush (see Mayers' Chinese Readers' Manual, p. 108), and the legend is evidently in great part of Indian origin.

¹ Not to be confounded with the Japanese *Meichō* 明 長.

intimately connected, in part at least, with that of Si Wang Mu, I have used a portion of Chao's picture, no adequate representation of the Island Mountain being known to me, as fairly conveying the Sinico-Japanese idea of the fabled Immortal Isle of the Eastern Ocean.¹

In the third volume of the *Gunsho ichiran* (a Japanese bibliography published about the year 1800), the early *monogatari*, among which the Hewer's tale holds the first place in merit as in time, are enumerated and briefly noticed, often with a good deal of learning and acumen. The account given of *Taketori* mentions as sources of some of the elements of the story the *Manyōshū* and the *Kojiki*,² and among others the *Naigeden* (内外典), whence a curious Buddhist legend is cited to the following effect. Three recluses, after long-continued meditation, found themselves possessed of the truth, and so great was their joy that their hearts broke and they died. Their souls thereupon took the form of bamboos with leaves of gold and roots of precious jade, and after a period of ten months had elapsed, the stems of these bamboos split open and disclosed each a beauteous boy. The three youths sat on the ground under their bamboos, and after seven days' meditation they, too, became possessed of the truth, whereupon their bodies assumed a golden hue and displayed the marks of saintliness, while the bamboos disappeared and were replaced by seven magnificent temples. The legend is manifestly of Indian origin, and seems to have been first quoted by Kūkai or Kōbō Daishi from a sutra intitled *Hōrokaku* (寶樓閣). Of the authorship of the *Taketori* nothing certain is said to be known, but it is doubtfully ascribed to one Minamoto Jun, who is also believed by some to have had a hand in the composition of the *Utsubo monogatari*,³ and the *Ochikubo monogatari*, both of which are

¹ See Mayers, *op. cit.*, Nos. 559 and 647. Compare also the description of Amida's Paradise in Prof. Max Müller's translation of the text of the *Sukhavatī* brought from Japan Part II. Vol. XII. of this Journal.

² Kaguya, for instance, is the name of a princess who is mentioned in the history of the Mikado Suinin (B.C. 70-A.D. 70), and one of her five lovers is, I believe, called Ōtomo no Miyuki (see the third Quest).

³ An account of this work will, I believe, be found in the American Cyclopædia, from the pen of Mr. Satow.

noticed in the *Gunsho*. The *Sumiyoshi monogatari* is a lengthy love-story, the plot turning mainly upon the craft and cruelty of a step-mother: it is considered one of the best of the series. An old writer, says the *Gunsho*, ascribes the authorship to the heroine of the tale, who is said to have written the whole story on a screen in a small room near the north-eastern gate of the Palace, which was a favourite rendezvous for lovers. More popular, perhaps, is another of the series, the *Yamato monogatari*, a collection of tales from which Mr. Chamberlain has taken his pretty story of the Maiden of Unai. It seems to have been, in part at all events, written by the Retired Mikado Kwanzan (A.D. 983-5), and the accepted editions contain nearly three hundred 'uta' or quintains. It is specially recommended, together with the *Ise monogatari* and the *Genji monogatari* to the attention of those who desire to become proficient in the art of composing 'uta' with elegance and rapidity, an art held in high honour at the court of the early Mikados. For an account of the *Genji* the reader is referred to Mr. Suyematsu's translation. The authoress, the Princess Murasaki Shikibu, was asked, says the *Gunsho*, to compose a story in a more modern style than that of the earlier romances such as the *Taketori*, and this she was able to do after passing a moonlit night in meditation and prayer. She repented towards the close of her life of the frivolities of her youth, and made with her own hands six hundred copies of the Hanniya Sutra in order to merit salvation. The *Izumi Shikibu monogatari*, which is next described, contains the lady's correspondence with her lover, the fourth son of the Mikado Reizei. Among the remaining *monogatari* a few only can be briefly mentioned here. The *Ima monogatari* is rather a series of poet-biographies than a romance, but it narrates, among other curious matters, a singular dream of one of its personages that Murasaki Shikibu may, after all, have gone down into Hell. The sixty volumes of the *Ima mukashi monogatari* (so called from its beginning with the time-honoured phrase *ima mukashi* 'once upon a time') describe the habits and customs of Japan

and India, the wonders to be found in both countries, the examples and effects of good and bad conduct they afford, and the traditions concerning the Buddha current in them.

The *Akinoyonaga no monogatari* (A Long Autumn-night's Story) is of later date. It narrates the unlawful loves of the priest Keikai, who lived in the reign of Horikawa II. (A.D. 1222-34), and is characterized as extremely pathetic and interesting. The priest finally repented of his evil ways and founded the temple of Unkyō. The *Matsuho monogatari* is similar to the last in style and matter. The *Omina meshi monogatari*, or 'Girls' Stories,' is a series of narratives of celebrated women, containing many wise saws and exemplary instances of successful diligence. Of the remainder of the nineteen *monogatari* enumerated, some are collections of essays rather than stories, and are evidently compilations. Indeed, in the Hearer's tale we have the only pure fiction of the whole series—at least the story of the Lady Kaguya may justly be so regarded—absolutely free from every trace of grossness, which is more than can be said of the *monogatari* which succeeded it. The word-plays it contains are its only blemishes, and these are far less common than in the later romances, where almost every page bristles with them. Even the narrative of the fifth Quest is rather vulgar and trivial than coarse in matter or manner, and in the imaginative literature of Japan which it ushered into being, the *Taketori monogatari* remains to the present day unsurpassed, nay unequalled, in purity, simplicity, pathos, and unstrained quality of style.

Three editions of the *Taketori* are known to me. One in two volumes has been already mentioned. Another, also in two volumes, published in the period Temmei 1781-9, is enriched with interpretative notes, by Koyama Tadashi. But the edition I have used is the work of Tanaka Daishin, a native of the province of Owari, which appeared in the year 1829. It is in six volumes, the first being an introductory essay upon the story and its sources, the remaining five volumes containing the text, distributed in short portions, each followed

by a commentary, in which obsolete expressions and customs are explained, and various readings are presented and discussed, often at great length, and always with considerable learning and critical power. I have subjoined Daishu's text romanized in accordance with the system adopted by the Rōmaji-kai (Society for the Romanization of Japanese—a reform I was the first to advocate some twenty years ago). It does not appear that the *Taketori* was printed before the middle of the last century, and the text has doubtless suffered considerably at the hands of the MS. copyists, whose labours have handed it down during a period of eight hundred years. The language of the text, the oldest prose of the Altaic races,¹ is almost wholly archaic Japanese (*Yamato kotoba*); but a few Chinese expressions occur in it. Originally it was probably written, like the *Manyōshū*, partly in syllabic partly in Chinese, character, and the rendering of the latter into *Yamato kotoba* has, doubtless, not been accurately preserved in all cases. It is worthy of notice, as showing the extent to which Japan merged whatever indigenous civilization she possessed in the imported civilization of China, that the *Taketori* hardly contains a single reference to Shintō or to any primitive tradition or myth. So at the present day we see modern Japan, discarding Chinese modes of life and thought, engaged in a strenuous endeavour, despite her geographical remoteness, to gain a place in the great family of Western nations.

It had been my intention to extend these somewhat superficial notes so as to include some criticism of the text and an adequate examination of the Chinese and Sinico-Indian sources whence the author of the *Taketori* drew most of his materials. But I found my own library quite insufficient for the purpose, and with regard to researches of the kind I had in view, the doors of the great library in Bloomsbury are practically closed to those who do not command a much more abundant leisure than I am ever likely to enjoy.

¹ The *Kojiki*, *Nihongi*, etc. are written in a style which is a bad imitation of Chinese.

THE TEXT.

KAGUYA HIME NO OI-TACHI.

Ima wa mukashi Taketori no okina to iyeru mono arikeri. Shigeyama ni majirite take wo toritsutsu, yorozu no koto ni tsukaikeri; na wo ba Sanugi no Miyakko to namu iikeru. Sono take no naka ui moto hikaru take namu hito suji arikeri. Ayashigarite yorite miru ni, tsutsu uo uaka hikaritari. Sore wo mireba, sau sun bakari naru hito ito utsukushiute itari. Okina in yō:

“Ware asa goto yū goto ni miru take no naka ui owasuru nite shirinu¹ ko ni naritamōbeki hito nameri.” To te, te ni uehi-irete, iye ye motte kinu, ue no ōna² ni azukarite yashinawasu. Utsukushiki koto kagiri-nashi, ito osanakereba ko³ ni irete yashinau.

Taketori no okina take toru ni kono ko wo mitsukete, nochi ni take torn ni fushi wo hedatete, yo goto ni kogane aru take wo mitsukuru koto kasanariuu. Kakute okina yōyō yutaka ni nari-yuku. Kono chigo yashinau hodo ni sugu-suguto ōkini nari-masaru. Mi tsuki bakari ni uaru hodo ui yoki hodo naru hito ni narinureba kamiage nado tadasbite⁴ kami-age-sesase mo⁵ gisu chō⁶ no uehi yori idasazu. Itsuki-kashizuki yashinau hodo ni kono chigo no katachi kyōra⁷ naru koto yo ni naku, ya no uehi wa kuraki tokoro naku, hikari-miehitari. Okina kokoichi asbiku kurushiki toki mo kouo ko wo mireba kurushiki koto mo yaminu haradatasbiki koto mo nagusanikeri. Okina take wo toru koto hisashiku nari; ikioi mō⁸ no mono ni nari ui keri.

Kono ko ito ōki ni narinureba, na wo ba Mimuro Imube no Akita wo yobite tsukesasu Akita Nayotake no Kaguya Hime to tsuketsu. Kono hodo ni ka uehi-age-asobu yorozu no asobi wo zo shikeru, otoko ōua kirawazu yobi-tsudoyete ito kashikoku asobu.

Tsuma-GOI.

Seikai no onoko, ate uaru mo iyashiki mo, ikade kono Kaguya Hime wo yeteshi gana, miteshi gana to, oto ui kiki medete madō.

Souo atari no kaki ni mo, iye no to ni mo. orn hito da ni tawayasaku mirumajiki mono wo, yoru wa yasuki i mo nezu, yami no yo ni idete mo ana wo kujiri, koko kashiko yori nozoki, kaima mi-madoi ayeri, saru toki yori namu yobai to wa iikeru. Hito no monoshi to mo seuu tokoro ni madoi arikedomo, nani no shirushi arubeku mo miyezu, iye no hito domo ni mono wo da ui iwamu tote iikakaredomo koto to mo sezu. Atari wo hanarenu kimi-tachi yoru wo akashi hi wo kurasu hito ōkari. Oroka naru hito wa yō naki ariki wa yoshinakarikeri tote kazu nari ni keri. Souo naka ni nawo iikeru wa; irogonomi to iwaruru hito go uin omoi yamu toki uaku yoru hiru kitari keru. Sono na, hitori wa Ishizukuri no miko, hitori wa Kura-mochi no miko, hitori wa Sadaijin Abe no Miushi Dainagon, hitori wa Ōtomo no Miynki Chiuuagon, hitori wa Iso no Kami no Marotada kono hitobito narikeri. Yo no naka ui ōkaru hito wo da ni sukoshi mo katachi yoshi to kikite wa mima-hoshu suru hitobito narikereba, Kaguya Hime wo mimahoshiushite mono mo kuwazu omoitsutsu; kono iye ni yukite tatazumi arikikeredomo ka-i arubeku mo arazu, fumi wo kakite yaredomo kayeri-goto mo sezu, wabi-uta nado kakite yaredomo kayeshi mo sezu, ka-i nashi to omoyedomo, shimotsuki shiwasu uo furi, kōri, minazuki no teri-hatataku ni mo sawarazu kikeri. Kono hitobito aru toki wa Taketori wo yobi-idete “musume wo waro ni tabo” to fushi-oganui te wo suri

¹ *Shiru* sometimes, as here, means to exercise power, have rights over, etc.

² *omina*, *onna*.

³ *hako* or *kago*.

⁴ *Sa-u-shite* (左右), *sōshite*, *sōsoku* (*sōzoki*?).

⁵ 装. ⁶ 帳 *kichō*.

⁷ *kesō*.

⁸ 猛. Most editions omit the sentence beginning with *ikioi*.

notamayeba "Ono ga nasanu ko nareba kokoro ni mo shitagawazu namu aru" to iite, tsuki hi wo sugusu. Kakareba kono hitobito iye ni kayerite mono wo omoi inori oshi giuwan¹ wo tate omoi yamemu to suredomo yamubeku mo arazu. Saritomo tsui ni otoko awasezaranu ya wa to omoite, tanomi wo kaketari, auagachi ni kokoro-zashi wo miye arite, kore wo mitsukete Okina Kaguya Hime ni iu yô:

"Waga ko no hotoke henguye no hito to mōshinagara warawa ôkisa mado yashinaitatematsuru kokoro-zashi orokanarazu okina no mōsamu hito kiki-tamaiten ya."

To iyea, Kaguya Hime:

"Nanigoto wo ka notonawamu koto wo uketamawarazaranu, henguye no mono nite haberikemu mi to mo shirazu, oya to koso omoi-tate-matsure." To iyea, okina: "Ureshiku notamō mono gana!" to iu: "okina toshi nanasoji ni amarinu, kyō tomo asu to mo shirazu, kono yo no hito wa, otoko wa ôna ni ô koto wo su ôna wa otoko ni ô koto wo su, sono nochi namn kado mo hiroku nari-haberu, ikadeka saru koto nakute wa owashimasenu."

Kaguya Hime no iwaku:

"Najō, saru koto ka shihabaranu" to iyea, "Henguye no hito to iu tomo, ôna no mi-mochi tamayeri, Okina no aranu kagiri wa kōte² mo imazu³ kari namu kashi, kono hitobito no toshi tsuki wo hete kō nomi imashitsutsu, notamō koto wo omoi-sadamete, hitori-hitori ni aiatematsuritamaine" to iyea, Kaguya Hime iwaku: "Yoku mo aranu kataehi wo fukaki kokoro mo shirade, ada kokoro tsukinaba, nochi kuyashiki koto mo arubeki wo to omō bakari nari, yo no kashikoki hito naritomo, fukaki kokorozashi wo shirade wa aigatashi to namu omō" to iu. Okina iwaku: "Omoi no gotoku mo notamō kana! Somosomo ikayō naru kokorozashi aranu hito ni ka awamu to ohosu kabakari, kokorozashi orokanaranu hito hito ni koso amere." Kaguya Hime no iwaku: "Nani bakari no fukaki wo ka minu to iwamu isasaka no koto nari. Hito no kokorozashi hitoshi kannari, ikadeka naka ni otorimasari wa shiranu. Go nin hito no naka ni yukashiki mono wo misetamayeramu ni on kokorozashi masaritari tote tsukomatsuramu, to sono owasuramu hito hito ni moshi tamaye" to iu, "Yoki koto nari" to uketsu. Hi kururu hodo rei no atsmarinu hitobito, aruiwa fuye wo fuke, aruiwa uta wo utai, aruiwa shōga⁴ wo shi, aruiwa uso wo fuki, ōgi wo narashi nado suru ni Okina idete iwaku: "Katajikenaku mo kitanagenaru tokoro ni toshi tsuki wo hete mono shitamō koto kiwanaritaru kashikomari to mōsu, Okina no inochi kyō asu to mo shiranu wo. kaku notamō,⁵ kimidachi ni mo yoku omoi sadamete tsukōmatsure to mōseha fukaki no kokoro wo shirade wa to namu mōsu, sa mōsu no kotowari nari, izure otori-masari owashimaseneba yukashiki mono misetamayeramu ni on kokorozashi no hodo miyubeshi, tsukōmatsuramu koto wa sore ni namu sadamubeki" to iu; kore yoki koto nari, hito no urami mo uramaji" to iyea, go nin no hitobito mo "Yoki koto nari" to iyea, Okina irite iu⁶: "Kaguya Hime Ishizukuri no miko ni wa, Tenjiku ni Hotoke no mi ishi no hachi to iu mono ari, sore wo torite tamaye to iu; Kuramochi no miko ni wa, Higashi no umi ni Hōrai to iu yama annari, sore ni shirogane wo ne to shi, kogane wo kuki to shi, shiraki tama wo mi to shite tateru ki are, sore hito yeda orite tamawaramu to in; ima hitori ni wa Morokoshi ni aru hinezumi no kawagoromo wo tamaye; Ūtomo no Dainagon ni wa, tatsu no kubi ni go shiki ni hikaru tama ari, sore wo torite tamaye; Iso no kami no Chiunagon ni wa,

¹ *negai*. The words from *omoi* to *suredomo* are omitted in other editions.

² i.e. *kakute*.

³ Perhaps *imazu* is a form of *ima zo*.

⁴ 唱歌.

⁵ The subject of *notamō* is the Lady Kaguya.

⁶ This very complicated sentence is a good example of the loose style of composition common among Japanese writers. The whole passage is corrupt; another rendering is *to mōshi mo kotowari nari, izure mo otori masari owashimaseneba mi kokorozashi no wa mitamōbeshi tsukōmatsuran koto wa sore ni namu sadamubeki to iyea. . . .*

tsubakarama no motaru koyasugai torite tamaye" to iu. Okina, "kataki kotodomo ni koso amere, kono kuni ni aru mono ni mo arazu, kaku kataki koto wo ba ika ni mōsan" to iu; Kaguya Hime, "nanika katakaramu" to iyeba, Okina tomare kakumare mosamu tote idete, "kaku namu kikoyuru yō ni misetaumaye" to iyeba, mikotachi-kamudachibe¹ kikite, "Oiraka ni 'atari yori da ni na ariki so' to ya wa notamawanu" to iite, unjite mina kayerinu.

HOTOKE NO MIISHI NO HACHI.

Nawo kono onna mide wa, yo ni arumajiki kokochi noshikereba, Temujiku ni aru mono mo mote konu mono ka wa to omoi megurashite, Ishizukuri no Miko wa, kokoro no shitakumi aru hito nite, Temujiku ni futatsu to naki hachi wo hyaku sen man ri no hodo ikitaru to mo, ikadeka torubeki to omoite, Kaguya Hime no moto ni wa kyō namu Temujiku ye ishi no hachi tori ni makaru to kikasete, ni tose bakari hete, Yamato no kuni, Tōchi no kōri ni aru yamadera ni Binzuru no maye naru hachi no hitakuro ni susuzukitaru wo torite, nishiki no fukuro ni irite, tsukuri-hana no yeda ni tsukite, Kaguya Hime no iye ni motekite misekereba, Kaguya Hime ayashigarite miru ni, hachi no nakani funi ari, hirogete mireba:

"Uni yama no | michi ni kokoro wo | tsukushi-hate: | mi ishi no hachi no | namida nagare wa!"

Kaguya Hime hikari ya aru to miru ni hotaru bakari no hikari da ni nashi.

"Oku tsuyu no | hikari wo da ni mo | yado-sumashi: | Ogura no yama nite | nani motomekemu!"

Tote kayeshi-idasu. Hachi wo kado ni sutete kono nta no kayeshi wo su:

'Shirayama ni | ayeba, hikari no | usuru ka to? | hachi wo sutete mo | tano-maruru kana!'

To yomite-iretari. Kaguya Hime kayeshi mo sezu narinu. Mimi ni mo kiki-irezarikereba iwazuraite kayerinu. Kauo hachi wo sutete mata iikeru yori zo omonaki koto wo ba "Hachi wo sutsuru" to zo iikeru.

HŌRAI NO TAMA NO YEDA.

Kuramochi no miko wa, kokoro tabakari aru hito nite, ōyake ni wa, Tsukushi no kuni ni yuani ni makaramu tote, itoma mōshite Kaguya Hime no iye ni wa, tama no yeda tori ni namu makaru to iwasete, kudaritamō ni tsukōmatsurubeki hitobito mina Naniwa made okuri-shikeri.

Miko ito shinobite to notomawasete, hito mo amata ite owashimasezu, chikō tsukōmatsuru kagiri shite, idetamainu, mi okuri no hitobito mi-tatematsuri okurito kayerinu, owashimashinu to hito ni wa miyctamaite mitsu hi bakari arite kogi-kayeri tamainu.

Kanete koto mina ohosetarikereba, sono toki ichi no takumi² narikeru Uchi marora roku nin wo meshitorite, tawayasku hito yori-kumajiki iye wo tsukurite, kana ye wo miye ni shikomete, takumi-ra wo iritamaittsu, miko mo onaji tokoro ni komoritamaite, shirasetamaitaru kagiri jiu-roku so wo kami ni kudo wo akete, tama no yeda wo tsukuritamō.

Kaguya Hime notamō yō ni tagawazu tsukuri-idetsu. Ito kashikoku tabakarite Naniwa ni misoka ni mote idenn, fune ni norite kayeriki ui keri to touo ni tsuge yarite ito itaku kurushigenaru sama shite i-tamayeri.

Mukaye ni ni hito ohoku mairitari, tama no yeda wo zo nagahitsu ni irete, mono ohoite moehite mairu. "Itsuka kikemu Kuramochi no miko wa udomuguye no hana moehite nobori tamayeri!" to nonoshirikeri.

Kore wo Kaguya Hime kikite, "Ware wa kono miko ni makenu-beshi!" to mune tsuburete omoikeri. Kakaru hodo ni, kado wo tatakito "Kuramochi no miko owashitari" to tugu.

¹ The word *be* has a collective force. Compare *Imibe*, etc. *Kamudachi* is equivalent to *kami-* or *kimi-tachi*.

² Of *ichi no takumi* a variant is *hitotsu no takara*.

Tabi no on sugata nagara, owashimashitari to iyeba aitematsuru miko notamawaku: "Inochi wo sutete, kano tama no yeda mote kitari" tote Kaguya Hime ni misetat-matsuritamaye to iyeba, Okina mochite iritari; kono tama no yeda ni funi wo zo tsuketari keru:

"Itazura ni | mi wa nashitsu to mo, | tama no ye wo | taorade sara ni | kayera-zaramashi!"

Kore wo mo aware to mite oru ni Taketori no Okina hashiri irite iwaku: "Kono miko ni mōshitamaishi Hōrai no tama no yeda wo hitotsu no tokoro mo ayashiki tokoro naku ayamatazu, mote owashimaseri, umi wo mochite ka to kaku mōsubeki ni arazu Tabi no mi-sugata nagara ware ou iye ye mo yori-tanawazu-shite owashimashitari, haya kono miko ni aitsukōmatsuri tanaye" to iu ni mono mo iwadzu, tsurazuye mo tsukite imijiku nagekashige ni omoitari.

Kono miko ima sara nani ka to iubekarazu to iu nama ui, yen ni hai-nobori tamainu. Okina kotowari ni omo, "Kono kuni ni miyenu tama no yeda uari, kono tabi wa ikadeka inaimosamu, hito sama mo yoki hito ni owasu" ii-itari.

Kaguya Hime no iu yō; "oya no notamō koto wo hitaburu ni inabinōsanu koto no ito hoshisa ni yegataki mono wo yukashi to wa moshitsuru wo kaku asamashiku mote kuru koto namu netaku omoi haberu" to iyedo uawo Okina wa neya uo uchi shitsurai uado su. Okina miko ni mosu yo: "Ikanaru tokoro ni ka kono ki wa sōraikemu, ayashiku uruwashiku medetaki mono ni mo" to mōsu.

Miko kotayete notomawaku: "Saotodoshi no kisaragi no tō ka goro ni, Naniwa yori fune ni norite, umi naka ui yukamu kata mo shirazu oboveshikado, omō koto narade yo no naka no iki nani ka wa senu to omoishikaba, tada muna-shiki kaze ni makasete ariku. Inochi shinaba, ikaga wa senu; ikite aramu kagiri, kaku arikite Hōrai to iuramu yama ni au ya to umi ni kogi tadayoi-arikite, waga kuni no nehi wo hanarete ariki-makari shi ni, aru toki wa nami aretsutsu, umi no soko ni mo irinubeku; aru toki ni wa, kaze ni tsukete shiranu kuni ni fuki-yoserarete, oni no yō naru mono idekite korosamu to shiki. Aru toki ni wa, koshi kata yuku suye mo shirade umi ni uagiremu to shi, aru toki ni wa, kate tsukite, kusa no ne wo kuimono to shi, aru toki iwamu kata naku mukutsuge naru mono no kite kui-kakaramu to shiki, aru toki wa umi no kai wo torite inochi wo tsugu. Tabi no sora ni tasuke-tamōbeki hito mo naki tokoro ni iroiro no yamai wo shite yuku kata sora mo oboezu, fune no yuku ni makasete umi ni tadayoite iho ka to iu. Tatsu no koku bakari ni umi no naka ni wazuka ni yama miyu. Fuue no uchi wo namu semete miru. Umi no ure ni tadayeru yama ito ōki nite ari. Sono yama no sama takaku uruwashi. Kare ya waga motomuru yama naramu to omoite sasuga ni osoroshiku oboete yama no meguri wo sashimegurashite futsu ka mi ka bakari mi-ariku ni, amabito uo yosohōi shitaru ouna yama no naka yori idekite shirogane no kanamaru wo mochite mizu wo kumi-ariku. Kore wo mite, fune yori orite, "Kono yama no na wo nani to ka mōsu" to tō. Ouna kotayete iu, "Kore wa Hōrai no yama nari" to kotau. Kore wo kiku ni, ureshiki koto kagiri nashi. "Kono ouna kaku uotamō wa tazo" to tō. "Waga na wa Hōkanruri" to iite, futo yama no naka ni irinu."

"Kono yama wo miru ni, sara ni noboru-beki sama nashi. Sono yama no sobazura wo megureba, yo no naka ni naki hōna no ki domo tateri, kogane, shirogane, ruri iro no mizu nagareidetaru. Sore ni wa iro-iro no tama no hashi wataseri, sono atari ni teri kagayaku ki-tomo tateri, sono naka ni kono torite mochite mōde kitarishi wa ito warokarishi ka domo, notamaishi ni tagawamashikaba tote, kono hana wo torite mōde kitaru nari. Yama wa kagiri-naku omoshiroshi, yo ni tatōbeki ni arazarishi ka do, kono yeda wo oriteshikaba, sara ni kokoromoto nakute, fune ni norite, oi-kaze fukite, shi hyaku yo nichu ni namu mōde-ki ni shi. Dai kuwan no chikara ni ya Nauiwa yori kinō namu Miyako ni mōde kitsuru, sara ni shiwo ni nuretaru kinu wo da ni nugi-kayenade namu kochi mōde kitsuru" to notamayeba, Okina kikite, uchiagekite yomeru:

"Kuretake no | yoyo no taketoru | no yama ni mo, | saya wa wabishiki | fushi wo nomi miji!"

Kore wo miko kikite, kokora no higo omoi wabi-haberitsuru kokoro wa, kyō namu ochi-inuru to notamaite kayeshisheshi:

"Waga tamoto | kiyō kawakereba, | wabishiki no | chigusa no kazu mo | wasurarenubeshi!"

To notamai; kakaru hodo ni otokodomo roku nin tsuranete niwa ni idekitari; hitori no otoko fubasami ni fumi wo hasamite mōsu:

“Tsuku mo Okina kono zukasa no takumi Ayabe no Uehimaro mōsaku: Tama no ki wo tsukuritsukōmatsurishi kokoro wo kudakite, sen yo nichu ni chikara wo tsukushitaru koto sukunakurazu, shikaru ni roku imada tamawarazu, kore wo tamawarite wakachite kego ni tamawasen” to iite sasagetaru.

Taketori no Okina kono takumira ga mōsu koto wa nanigoto zo to katabuki-ori, miko wa ware ni mo aranu kimo kiyenubeki kokochi shite itamayeri.

Kore wo Kaguya Hime kikite, kono tatematsuru fumi wo “tore” to iite mireba, fumi ni moshikeru yo “Miko no Kimi sen yo michi iyashiki takumira to morotomo ni onaji tokoro ni kakure i-tamaite, kashikoki tama no yeda wo tsukurase-tamaite, tsukasa mo tamawamu to ose-tamaiki; kore wo kono goro auzuru ni mi tsukai to owashinasubeki Kaguya Hime no yōji tamōbeki narikeri to uke tamawatte kono miya yori tamawaranu to mōshite tamawarubeki nari.”

Kaguya Hime kururu mama ni omoi-wabitsuru kokochi yemi sakayete, Okina wo yobitorite iu yō: Makoto Hōrai no ki ka to koso omoitsure! kaku asamashiki sora goto nite arikereba, haya tote kayeshi tamaye,” to iyeba, Okina kotō: “sadaka ni tsukurasetaru mono to kikitsureba, kayesamu koto ito yasushi to unazuki ori.”

Kaguya Hime no kokoro yukihatete aritsuru nta no kayeshi:

“Makoto ka to | kikite mitsureba, | koto no ha wo | kazareru tama no | yeda ni zo arikeru!”

To iite, tama no yeda mo kayeshitsu. Taketori no Okina sabakari kataraitsuru ga sasuga ni oboyete noburi ori. Miko wa tatsu mo hashita, iru mo hashita nite itamayeri hi no kureureba suberi detamainu.

Kano ureyeseshi takumi ra wo ba, Kaguya Hime yobisnyete, ureshiki hito domo nari to iite, roku ito ōku torase-tamō; takumira imijiku yorokobite “omoitsuru yō ni mo aru kana!” To iite, kayeru michi nite, Kuramochi no miko, chi no nagaruru made chōzasasetamō, roku yeshi kai naku, mina torisutesase tamaite kereba, nige-nse ni keru.

Kakute kono miko issō no haji, kore ni suguru wa araji, ouna wo yezu narinuru nomi ni arazu; ame no shita no hito no omowamu koto no hazukashi koto to notamaitte, tada hito tokoro ikakki yama ye iritamainu. Miya-zukasa sōrō hito bito mina te wo wakachite motome-tatematsuredomo on shini mo ya shitamaikemu ye-mi-tsuke-tatematsurazu narinu. Miko wa mi tomo ni da ni kakushi-tamawamu tote, toshi goro miyetamawazarikeru narikeri. Kore wo namu tamazakaru to wa ii-hajimekeru.

HINEZUMI NO KAWAGOROMO.

Sadai-jin Abe no Minshi wa, takara yutaka ni iye hiroki hito ni zo owashikern. Sono toshi watarikern Morokoshi fune no Wokei to iu mono no moto ni fumi wo kakite, Hinedzumi no Kawagoromo to iu naru mono kaite okoseyo tote, tsukomatsuru hito no naka ni kokoro tashikanaru wo yerabite, Ono no Fusamori to iu hito wo tsukete tsukawasu.

Mote itarite kano ura ni orn Wokei ni kogane wo torasu. Wokei fumi wo hirogete mite kahegigoto kaku, “Hinedzumi no Kawagoromo waga kuni ni naki mono nari, oto ni wa kikedomo imada minu mono nari, yo ni aru mono naraba kono kuni ni mo mote mōdeki namashi; ito kataki akinai nari; shikaredomo moshi Temujiku ni tama-saka ni mote wataruaba, moshi chōja no atari ni toburai motomemu ni naki mono naraba tsukai ni soyete kogane wo ba kayeshi tatematsuramu” to iyeri.

Kano Morokoshi fune ki-keri Ono no Futamori mōde kite, mō noboru to iu koto wo kikite, ayumi-tō suru mumu wo mote hashirase mukaye-sase-tamō, toki ni, mumu ni norite, Tsukushi yori tada nanuka ni nobori-mōde kitari. Fumi wo miru ni iwaku “Hinedzumi no Kawagoromo karōjite, hito wo dashite motomete tatematsuru. Ima no yo ni mo, mukushi no yo ni mo, kono kawa wa tawayasku naki mouo narikeri. Mukashi kashikoki Temujiku no hijiri kono kuni ni moto watarite tsukumatsurikeri. Nishi no yama-dera ni ari to kiki-oyobite oyake ni mōshito karōjito, kai-totte-tatematsuru, atai no kane sukumashi to kokushi

tsukai ni mōshikaba, Wōkei ga mouo kuwayete kaitari. Ima kogane gojin riyō tamawarubeshi. Fune no kayeramu ni tsukete tabi-okure, mōshi kane tamawanu mono naraba kano koromo wo shichi kayeshi tabe" to iyeru koto wo mite :

"Nani obosu, ima kogane sukoshi no koto ni koso anare, kanarazu okurubeki mono ni koso anare, ureshikunshite okosetaru kana!" tote, Morokoshi no kata ni mukaite fushi-oganai-tamō. Kono kawa-goromo iretaru hako wo mireba kusa gusa no uruwashiki ruri wo iroyete tsukureri.

Kawagoromo wo mireba, konjō uo iro nari, ke no suye ni wa kogane no terashi kagayasi-tari, ge ni takara to miye, uruwashiki koto narabubeki mononashi. Hi ni yakenu koto yori mo kiyōra naru koto narabi nashi. "Ube; Kaguya Hime no konomoshikaritamō ni koso arikere!" to notamaite "ana ka-shiko!" tote hako ni iretamaite, mono no yeda ni tsukete, on mi no kesō itō itakushite, yagate tomari namu mouo zo to oboshite, uta yomi-kuwayete mochite imashitari; sono uta wa :

"Kagiri naki | omoi ni yakenu | Kawagoromo; | tamoto kawakite | kiyō koso wa iume" to iyeri.

Iye no kado ni mote itarite tateri, Taketori idekite tori-irite, Kaguya Hime ni misu. Kaguya Hime kauo kawagoromo wo mite iwaku: "Uruwashiki kawa nameri, wakite makoto no kawa naran to mo shirazu." Taketori kotayete iwaku: "Tomare kakumare mazu shōji iretatematsuran yo naka ni miyenu kawagoromo no sama nareba, kore wo makoto to omoi-tamaine, hito na itaku wabi-sase-tamaizo" to iite yobi-suye-tatematsureri.

Kaku yobi-suyete kono tabi wa kanarazu awan to ōna no kokoro ni mo omoi ori; kono Okina wa Kaguya Hime no yamoue naru wo nagekashi-kereba, yoki hito ni awasemu to omoi hākaredomo sechi ni ina to iu koto nareba yeshiinu wa kotowari nari.

Kaguya Hime Okina ni iu: "Kono kawagoromo wa hi ni yakamu ni yakezuba koso makoto uarame to omoite, hito no iū koto ni mo makemu, yo ni naki mono nareba, kore wo makoto to utagai naku omowan to notamō, nawo kore wo yakite kokoromite" to iu. Okina, "sore sa mo iwaretari" to iite, Daijin ni kaku namu mashi to iu; Daijin kotayete iu. "Kono kawa wa Morokoshi ni mo nakarikeru wo karōjite motometazune yetaru nari; nauti no utagai aramu, sa wa mōsu to mo haya yakite mitamaye" to iyeba, hi no naka in uchikubete yakasetamō ni, mera-mera to yakenu. Sareba koso koto-mono no kawa nari keru to iū.

Daijin kore wo mi-tamaite, on kao wa kusa no ha no iro nite i-tamayeri. Kaguya Hime wa, "Ana ureshi!" to yorokobite itari. Kano yomi-tamaikeru uta no henji hako ni irete kayesu:

"Nagori naku mo | moyu to shiriseba, | Kawagoromo. | Omoi no hoka ni | okite mimashi wo." | to arikeru, sareba kayeri imashi ni keru.

Yo no hito-bito "Abe no Daijin Kinedzumi no Kawagoromo wo mote imashite, Kaguya Hime ni sumitamō to na koko ni ya imasu?" nado to. aru hito no iu: "Kawa wa hi ni kubete yakitarishikaba mera mera-to yake ni shikaba Kaguya Hime aitamawazu" to ii-kereba, kore wo kiite zo togenaki mono wo ba "abenashi" to iikeru.

TATSU NO KUBI NO TAMA.

Ōtomo no Miyuki no Dainagon wa, waga iye ni ari to aru hito wo atsumete, notamawaku. "Tatsu no kubi ni go shiki no hikari aru tama anari, sore wo torite tatematsuritaramu hito ni wa negawamu koto wo kanawamu" to notamō. Onoko tomo ōse no koto wo kikitte mōsaku: "Owase no koto wa itomo tōtoshi, tadashi kono tama tawayasku yuki-torashi wo, iwanya! Tatsu no kubi no tama wa ikaga toramu" to mōshi ageri. Dainagon notamō: "Kimi no tsukai to iwau mono wa, inochi wo sutete mo one ga kimi no ōse koto woba kanawamu to koso omōbekere. Kono kuni ni naki, Temujiku, Morokoshi no mono ni mo arazu. Kono kuni no uni yama yori tatsu wa ori notoru mono nari; ikani omoite ka. nanjira kataki mono to mosuheki?" Onoko tomo mōsu yo: "Saraba, ikaga wa sen, kataki mono nari tomo, ōseru ni shitagate, motome ni makaramu" to mōsu

ni Dainagon miwaraitē, "nanjira ya kimi no na wo nagashitsu kimi no ōse koto wo zo ikaga somukuhēki?" to notamō.

Tatsu no kubi no tama tori ni tote idashite tamō. Kono hito hito no michi no kate kui mono ni tono no uchi no kinnu, wata, zeni nado, aru kagiri tori idesoyete tsukawasu. Kono hito bito tomo kayeru made, imoi wo shite, ware wa oramu, kono tama toreyede wa maye ni kayerikuna to notamawasekeri. Ono ouo ōse uketamawarite makari-idenu.

"Tatsu no kubi no tama toriyeznba kayerikuna!" to notamayeba, iznchi mo, iznchi mo, ashi no mukitaramu kata ye inan to su; kakaru snki goto wo shitamō koto to soshiri ayeri tamawasetaru mono wa, ouo ono wake tsutsu tori, aruiwa ono ga iye ui komori-i aruiwa ono ga yukamahoshiki tokoro ye inu.

Oya kimi to mosu tomo, kaku tsukinaki koto wo ōse tamō koto to koto yukanu mono yuye Dainagon wo soshiri-aitari.

Kaguya Hime suyemu ni wa rei no yō ni wa mi-nikushi to notamaite, uruwashiki ya wo tsukuritamaite, urushi wo nuri, makiye wo shi iroveshi-tamaite, ya no uye ni wa, ito wo somete iro iro ni fukasete, uchi uchi no shitsurai ni wa iubeku mo aranu; aya orimono ni ye wo kakite magoto ni haritari.

Moto no medomo wa mina oi-haraite Kaguya Hime wo kanarazu awamu mōkeshite, hitori akashi kurashi tamō. Tsukawashishi hito wa, yoru hiru machi tamō ni, toshi koyuru made, oto mo sezu. Kokoromoto nagarite, ito shinobite, tada toneri futabito meshitsugi to shite, yatsuretamaite, Naniwa ni owashima-shite, toitamō koto wa, "Ōtomo no Dainagon no hito ya, fune ni norite, tatsu koroshite, so ga kubi no tama toreru to ya kiku" to towasuru ni, funahito kotayete iwaku: "Ayashiki koto kawa!" to waraite, "Saru¹ waza suru fune mo uashi!" to kotayuru ni, "Ojinaki koto suru funabito ui mo aru kana! yeshirade kaku iu to oboshite, waga ōnmi no chikara wa tatsu araba futo i-koroshite, kubi no tama wa toritemu, ōsoku kuru yatsubara wo uataji" to notamaite, fune ni norite, umi koto ni ariki-tamō ui, ito tohokute Tsukushi no kata no umi kogi-ide-tamainu. Ikaga shikemu, hayaki kaze fukite, sekai kuragarite, fune wo fuki-mote ariku. Izure no kata tomo shirazu. Fune wo umi naka ni makari idennbeku; fuki-mawashite, nami wa fune ni nehikake-tsutsu maki-ire, nami wa ochi kakaru yō ui hirameki; kakuru ni Dainagon wa madoite, "mada kakaru wabishikine wa mizu, ikanaramu to suru zo!" to notamō, kajitori kotayete mōsu: "kokora inue ui uorite makari ariku ui mada kaku wabishikime wo mizu, fune umi no soko ui irazuba, kami ochikakarubeshi, moshi saiwai ni kami no tasuke araba, nankai ni fukare-owashinubeshi, utate aru nushi no on moto ni tsukayematsurite, susuro naru shini wo subekameru kana" to kajitori naku.

Dainagon kore wo kikite, notamawaku, "Fune ni norite wa, kajitori no mōsu koto wo koso takaki yama to mo tanome nado, kaku tauomoshige-naki koto wo mōsu zo!" to awohedo wo tsukite, notamō.

Kaji tori kotayete mōsu: "Kami naraneba ani waza wo ka tsukōmatsuramu, kaze fuki nami hageshikeredomo kami saye itadaki ni ochikakaru yō naru wa tatsu wo korosamu to motometamai sōrayaba kaku annari; hayate mo tatsu no fukasuru nari, haya kami ni inori tamaye!" to iu.

"Yoki koto nari" tote, kajitori no mi kami kikoshimese, "Ojinaku, kokoro osanaku, tatsu wo korosamu to omoikeri, ima yori nochi wa ke no suye hito suji wo da ui ugokashi tsukamatsuraji" to yogoto wo hanachite, tachi-i naku naku, yobai-tamō koto, chitabi bakari moshitamō; ge ni ya aramu! yōyō kaminari yamini, sukoshi akarite kaze wa nawo hayaku fuku Kajitori no iwaku; "Kore wa tatsu no shiwaza ni koso arikeru, kono fuku kaze wa yoki hō no kaze nari, ashiki kata no kaze ni wa airazu, yoki kata ni omomukite fuku nari" to iyedomo, Dainagon wa kore wo kiki-ire-tamawazu. Mika yoka fukite, fuki-kayeshi yose-tari, hama wo mireba, Harina no Akashi no hama narikeri. Dainagon nankai no hama ni fuki-yoseraretaru ni ya aramu to omoite, ikitsuki fushi-tamayeri, fune ni aru onokodomo kuni ni tsugetaraba, kuni no tsukasa mōde-tohurō ni mo ye-oki-agari-tamawade, funa-zoko ni fushi-tamayeri. Matsu-hara ni mi mushiro

¹ i.e. *sa aru*.

shikite oroshi-tatematsuru, sono toki ni zo nankai ni arazarikeri to omoite, karōjite, okiagari-tamayaru wo, mireba, kaze ito omoki hito uite hara ito fukure, kouata, kanata no me ni wa sunomo wo futatsu tsuketaru yō nari. Koro wo ni-tatematsurite zo kuni no tsukosa mo hohoyemitaru. Kuni ni ōsetamaite, tagoshi tsukurasetamaite, nyōnyō ni nawarete, iye ni iritamainuru wo, ikadeka kikemu, tsukawashite, onoko domo mairite mōsu yō, “tatsu no kubi no tama wo yetora-zarikababa, namu, touo ye mo yemairazarishi, tama no torikatakarishi koto wo shiritamayereba, namu, kandō araji tote, mairitsuru” to mōsu. Dainagon oki-idete notamawaku “Nanujira yoku mote koku narinu. Tatsu wa nari kami no ni nite koso arikere, sorega tama wo toranu tote, sokora no hitobito no gai serarenamu to shikeri, mashite, tatsu wo torayetaramashikaba, mata koto mo naku iye wa gai serarenamashi, yoku torayezu nari ni keru. Kaguya Hime chō ō nusubito no yatsu ga hito wo korosamu to saru narikeri, ware no atari da ni ima wa tōraji, onokodomo mo na ariki so” tote, ware ni sukoshi nokoritarikeru monodomo wa, tatsu no tama toranu monodomo ui tabitsu. Kore wo kikite hanaretamaishi moto no iye wa, hara wo kirite waritamō, ito wo fukasete tsukurishi yane wa tobi-karasu no su ni mina kui-mote i ni keru. Sekai no hito no ikeru wa, Ōtomo no Dainagon wa, tatsu no kubi no tama ya torite owashitaru, ina sa mo arazu, on manako futatsu ni sunomo no yō naru tama wo zo soyete imashitaru, to iikereba, anata yegata! to iikeru yori zo, yo ni awauu koto wo ba Ana tayegata! to ii-bajimekeru.

TSUBAKURAME NO KOYASUGAI.

Chiunagon Isonokami Marotada wa iye ni tsukawaruru onoko tomo no moto ni “tsubakurame no su knitaraba tsugeyo” to notamō wo uketamawarite:

“Nani no yō ni ka aramu” to mōsu. Kotayete notamō yō: “Tsubakurame no motaru koyasugai wo toramu riyō nari” to notamō. Onoko domo kotayete mōsu, “Tsubakurame wo amata koroshite miru ni da ni mo, hara ni naki mono nari; tadashi ko umu toki namu ikadeka idasuramu to mōsu hito da ni mireba usenu” to mosu.

Mata hito no mōsu yō: “ōizukasa no ii kashiku ya no mune ni tsuku no ana goto ni tsubakurame wa su wo kui aru; sore ni mame naramu onoko domo wo ite makarite, agura wo yuiagete ukagawasemu ni, sokora no tsubakurame ko umasaramu ya wa, sate, koso torashime tamawame” to mōsu.

Chiunagon yorokobitamaite “okashiki koto ui mo aru kana! mottomo yeshi-razarikeri, kiyō aru koto moshitari” to notamaite mame naru onokodomo nijiu nin bakari tsukawashite ananai ni age-suyaretari. Dono yori tsukai hima naku tamawasete koyasu no gai toritaru ka to mukawaseta. Tsubakurame no hito no amata nobori itaru ni, su ni noborikozu, kakaru yoshi go henji wo moshikereba, kiki-tamaite, ikaga subeki to oboshimeshi wazurō ni kauo tsukasa no kuwan-nin Kuratsu-marō to mōsu okina mōsu yō: “Koyasugai toramu to oboshimesaba, tabakari mōsamu” tote, on maye ni mairitareba, Chiunagon hitai wo awasete, mukai-tamayari. Kuratsu Marō ga mōsu yō: “Kono tsubakurame koyasugai wa ashiku tabakarite torase-tamō nari; sate wa, yetorasetamawaji, ananai ni odorō-odorō-shiku nijunin no hito no nobotte habereba arete yori-mōde koku namu. Sesasetamōbeki yō wa, kouo ananai wo kobochite, hito mina shirizokite, mame nasamu hito hitori wo arako ni nosesu-shite, tsuna wo kamayete, tori no ko nmamu ma ni tsuna wo tsuri-age-sasete futo koyasugai wo torasetamawamu namu yokarubeki” to mōsu. Chiunagon notamō yō: “Ito yoki koto nari” tote, ananai wo kobochite, hito mina kayeri mōdekinu. Chiunagon Kuratsu Marō ni notamawaku: “Tsubakurame wa, ikanaru toki ni ka ko wo umu to shirite hito wo ba agubeki” to notamō, Kuratsu Marō mōsu yō: “Tsubakurame ko umamu to suru toki wa, o wo sasagete, nanatabi megurite, namu, umi otosumeru, sate, nanatabi meguramu ori hikiagete, sono ori koyasugai wa torasetamaye” to mōsu. Chiunagon yorokobitamaite yorozu no hito ni mo shirasetamawade, misoka ni tsukasa ni imashite, onokodomo no naka ni majirite, yoru wo hiru ni nashite, torashime tamō.

Kuratsu Marō kaku mōsu wo ito itaku yorokobitamaite notamō: “Koko ni tsukawaruru hito ni mo naki ni negai wo kanōru koto no ureshisa!” to iite, on zo nugite, kazuke-tamaitu; sara ni yosari kono tsukasa ni mōde-koto notamaite

tsukawashitsu. Higurenureba kano tsukasa ni owashite mi-tamō ni, makoto ni tsubakurame su tsukureri, Kuratsu Maro ga mōsu yō o wo sasagete meguru ni, arako ni hito wo nosete, tsuriagesasete, tsubakurame no su ni te wo sashiressasete, saguru ni mono mo nashi to mōsu ni Chiunagon ashiku sagureba naki nari to haradachite, "Tare bakari oboyemu ni tote ware nobotte saguran" to notamaite, ko ni norite tsurare-noborite, ukagaitamayeru ni, tsubakurame o wo sasagete itaku meguru ni awasete, te wo sasagete saguritamō ni, te ni hirameru mono sawaru. toki ni "ware mono nigiritari ima wa oroshite yo, okina shiyetari!" to notamaite, atsumarite, toku orosamu tote, tsuna wo hiki sugishite, tsuna tayuru, sunahaehi ni Yashima no kanaye no uye ni nokesama ni oohitamayeri.

Hito-bito asamashigarite, yotte, kakayetsukamatsureri, ou me wa shirame nite fushi tamayeri, hitobito on kuchi ni mizu wo sukui, iretsukamatsuru, karōjite iki detamayeru ni, mata kanaye no uye yori tetori, ashitori shite, sageoroshitate-matsuru.

Karōjite, on kokochi wa ikaga obosaruru to toyaba, iki no shita nite mono wa sukoshi oboyuredo, koshi namu ugokarenu.

Saredo koyasugai wo futo nigiri motareba, ureshiku oboyuru nari. Mazu shisokuseshite, kokono kai gao mimu to tsukushi motagete on te wo hiroge tamayeru ni, tsubakurame no mariokeru furu kuso wo nigiritamayeru narikeri. Sore wo mitamaite, "ana! kaina no waza ya" to notamaikeru yori zo omō ni tagō koto wo zo "kai nashi" to iikeri.

Kai ni mo arazu to mitamaikeru ni, on kokochi mo tagaite, karabitsu no futa ni irare tamōbeku mo arazu. On koshi wa ore ni keri, Chiunagon wa iwaketaru waza shite yamu koto wo hito ni kikaseji zo shitamaikeredo, sore wo yamai nite ito yowaku naritamai ni keri. Kai wo yetorazu narinikeru yori mo hito no kiki-warawamu koto wo hi ni soyete omeitamakereba, tada ni yamishinuru yori mo hitogiki hazukashiku oboyetamō nari keri. Kore wo Kaguya Hime kikite tōrai ni tsukawashikeru uta:

"Toki wo hete, | nami tachi yaranu | Suminoye no | matsu kai nashi to | kiku wa makoto ka?"

To aru wo yonde kikasū. Ito yowaki kokochi ni kashira motagete hito ni kanu wo motasete kurushiki kokochi ni karōjite kakitamō:

"Kai wa kaku | arikeru mono wo | wabi-sutete, | shinuru inochi wo | sukui ya wa senu!"

To kaki hatsuru to taye-iri-tamainu. Kore wo kikite, Kaguya Hime, sukoshi aware to oboshikeri. Sore yori, namn, sukoshi ureshiki koto wo ba "kai ari" to zo iikeru.

MIKARI NO MIYUKI.

Sate Kaguya Hime katachi no yo ni nizu medetaki koto wo Mikado kikoshi-meshite, naishi Nakatomi no Fusako ni notamō, "ōku no hito no mi wo itazura ni nashite awazanaru Kaguya Hime wa, ika bakari no onna zo to makarite mite maire," to notamō. Fusako uketamawarite makareri, Taketori no iye ni kashikomari shōji irite ayeri, onna ni naishi notamo, "ōse goto ni Kaguya Hime no katachi iu ni oyobazu to nari, yoku mite mairubeki yoshi notamawaretsuru ni namu mairitsuru" to iyeba, "saraba kaku to mōshi-haberauu" to iite irinn.

Kaguya Hime ni, "Haya kano mi tsukai ni taimen shi-tamaye" to iyeba, Kaguya Hime, "yoki katachi ni mo arau, ikadeka miyubeki" to iyeba, "utato mo notamo kana! Mikado no mi tsukai wo ba ikadeka oroka ni semu" to iyeba Kaguya Hime no kotayeru yō, "Mikado no meshite notawawamu koto kashikoshi to mo omowazu "to iite, sara ni miyubeku mo arazu. Umeru koto no yō ni wa aredo ito kokoro hazukashige ni orosokanaru yō ni iikereba kokoro uo mama ni mo yesemezu.

Onna naishi no moto ni kayeri idete, "kuchioshiku kono osanaki mono wa kowaku haberu mono nite, taimensumajiki to mōsu." Naishi, "Kanarazu mitatematsurite maire to ōsegoto arit-uru mono wo mitatematsurade wa, ikadeka kayeri mairamu, koku-wō no ōsegoto wo masa ni yo ni sumitamawamu hito no uketamawari tamawado wa ariamu ya iwarcuu koto nashitauai yo!" to kotoba

hajishiku ikereba, kore wo kikite, masbite Kaguya Hime kibunboku mo arazu "Kokuwō no ōsegoto wo somukaba, haya koroshitamaite yokashi" to iu. Kono naishi kayeri-mairite kono yoshi wo sōsu. Mikado kikoshimeshite "ōku no hito koroshitegenu kokoro zo kashi!" to notamawaite yami ni keredo nawo oboshimeshi owashimashite, "Kono ouna no tabakari ni ya makemu" to oboshimeshite Taketori no Okina wo meshite ōsetanuō "Nanji ga motte haberu Kaguya Hime tsukamatsure, kaokatachi yoshi wo kikoshimeshite mi tsukai wo tabishikado kai naku miyezu nari ni keru, kaku taidaishiku ya wa narawashibeki?" to Okina kasbi-koumarite, go henji mōsu yō, "kono me no warawa wa, tayete miyazukaye tsukomatsurubeku mo arazu haberu wo mote, wazurai haberu; saritomo uakarite ōse tamawannu" to sōsu. Kore wo kikoshimeshite, ou idasetamō "Nado ka! Okina no te ni okoshitatetaramu mono wo kokoro ni makasezaramu, kono ouna moshi tate matsuritaru mono uaraba Okina ui kōburi wo nado ka tabasezaranuu."

Okina yorokobite iye ni kayerite, Kaguya Hime ni katarō yō, "Kaku namu Mikado no ōsetamayernu nawo ya wa tsukōmatsuri-tamawannu" to iyeba Kaguya Hime notamawaite iu, "mohara sayō uo miyazukaye tsukōmatsuraji to omō wo shiite tsukōmatsurase-tamawaba kiyense nari, mi zukasa kōburi-tsukōmatsurite shinu bakari uari." Okina irayuru yō, "Na shitamai zo, tsukasa kōburi mo waga ko wo mitatematsurade wa, nani ni ka wa semu, sa wa aritomo nadoka miyazukaye wo shitamawazaramu shiuitamō-beki yō ya wa arubeki" to iu.

"Nawo sora goto ka zo, tsukōmatsurasete shinazu ya aru to mite tamaye, amata no hito no kokorozashi oroka-narazarishi wo munashiku nashite shi koso are. Kinō kiyō Mikado no notamawannu koto ni tsukamu hitogiki yasashi" to iyeba, Okina kotayete iwaku, "amenoshita no koto wa, to aritomo kakaritomo, on inochi no ayōsa koso ōki naru sawari uareba uawo tsukōmatsurumajiki koto wo, mairite mosamu" tote mairite mōsu yō, "ōse uo koto no kashikoki ni kano warawa wo uairasemu tote, tsukōmatsureba miyazukaye ni dashitatenaba shinu. beshi to mōsu. Miyakko Maro ga te ni umasetaru ko nite mo arazu, mukashi yama uite mitsuketaru; kakareba kokoro-base mo yō no hito ni nizu zo haberu" to sō-sesasu. Mikado ōsetamawaku, "Miyakko Maro ga iye wa yama moto chikaku nari, mikari no miyuki shitamawannu yō nite mitemu ya," to notamawasu.

Miyakko Maro ga mōsu yō, "Ito yoki koto nari, nanika kokoro mo nakute aramu ni futo mi-yuki shite go ranzerare uannu" to sōsureba Mikado niwaka ni hi wo sadamete, mi kari ni ide tamaite, Kaguya Hime no iye ni iritauaite, mi-tamō ui, hikari michite, kiyōra nite itaru hito ari, "kore naramu!" to oboshite chikaku yorasetamō ni nigete iru. Sode wo toraye-tamaveba, omote wo futagite sorayedo, hajime yoku go rau-jitsureba, tagui-naku medetaku oboyesasetamaite, 'yurusaji to su' tote iteowashimasamu to suru ni, Kaguya Hime kotayete sōsu, "ouoga mi wa, kono kuni ui umarete haberaba, koso tsuka-itanuwame; ito ite owoshimashigataku ya haberamu" to sōsu. Mikado, nadoka sa aramu, nawo ite owashimasamu tote, on koshi wo yose-tamō ni kono Kaguya Hime kito kage ni narinu; hakanaku kuchi-oshi to oboshite, ge ni tadabito ni wa arazakeri to oboshite, "saraba, on moto ni wa ite-ikaji, moto no on katachi to nari-tamaine, sore wo mite da ni kayeri namu" to ōserarureba, Kaguya Hime moto no katachi ni narinu. Mikado nawo medetaku oboshimesaruru koto sekitome-gatashi, kaku misetsuru Miyakko Maro wo yorokobitamō; sate, tsukamatsuru hiyaku-kuwan hitobito ni aruji ikameshin tsukōmatsuru.

Mikado Kaguya Hime wo todomete kayeri-tamawamu koto wo akazu kuchi-oshiku oboshikeredo, tamashii wo todometaru kokochi shite, namu, kayerasetamaikeru on koshi ni tatematsurite, nochi ni Kaguya Hime ni:

"Kayeru sa no | myuki mono uku | omohoyete; | somukite tomaru | Kaguya Hime yuye!"

Go henji wo:

"Mugura hafu | shimo ni mo toshi wa | henuru mi no | nanika wa tama no | utena wo mo mimu."

Kore wo Mikado goranjite, itodo kayeritamawamu, sora mo naku obosaru, mi kokoro wa sara ni tachi-kayerubeku mo obosarezarikeredo, saritote, ya wo akashitamōbeki ni mo araneba kayerasetamainu.

Tsune ni tsukōmatsuru hito wo mitamō ni Kaguya Hime no katawara ni

yorubeku da ni arazari keru, koto hito yori wa kiyōra nari to oboshikeru hito, kare ni oboshi-awasureba hito ni mo arazu. Kaguya Hime nomi on kokoro ni kakarite tada hitori sugushitamō, yoshinakute on katagata ni mo wataritamawazu. Kaguya Hime no moto ni zo mi fumi wo kakite kayowasase tamō, go henji sasuga ni nikukarazu kikoyekawashitamaite, omoshiroki ki-gusa ni tsukete mo, on uta wo yomite tsukawasu.

AMA NO HAGOROMO.

Kayō nite on kokoro wo tagai ni nagusame tamō hodo ni mi tose bakari arite, haru no hajime yori Kaguya Hime tsuki uo omoshiro idetaru wo mite, tsune yori mo mono omoitaru sama nari. "Aru hito no tsuki no kawo miru wa, imu koto!" to seishikeredomo, tomo sureba hito-ma ni mo tsuki wo mite wa imijiku naki-tamō. Fu-tsuki no mochi no tsuki ni ide-ite, sechi ni mono omyeru keshiki nari. Chikaku tsukawaruru hitobito Taketori no Okina ni tsugete iwaku, "Kaguya Hime rei mo tsuki wo aware gari-tamai keredo, kono goro to narite wa tada-koto ni mo haberazameri imijiku oboshinageku koto arubeshi yoku yoku uitsukamatsurase-tamaye" to in wo kikite, Kaguya Hime ni in yō: "najō kokoehi sureba, kaku mono wo omoitaru sama nite, tsuki wo mitamō zo, umashiki yo ni" to iu. Kaguya Hime "tsuki wo mireba, yo no naka kokoro-bosoku aware ui haberi najō mono wo ka nageki ni haberu beki" to iu. Kaguya Hime uo aru tokoro ni itari mireba nawo mono omyeru keshiki nari. Kore wo mite, "aga hotoke! nani goto omoitamō zo? obosuramu koto nani goto zo?" to iyeaba, "omō koto mo nashi mono, namu, kokoro-bosoku oboyuru" to iyeaba, Okina, "tsuki na mi tamō zo. Kore wo mi-tamayeba mono obosu keshiki wa aru zo!" to iyeaba, "ikade tsuki wo ba mizute wa aramu?" tote, nawo tsuki izureba ide-i-tsutsu, nageki omyeri, yuyami ni wa mono omawanu keshiki nari.

Tsuki no hodo ni narinureba, nawo toki-doki wa uehinageki naki nado su. Kore wo tsukau monodomo nawo mono obosu koto arubeshi to sasayakedo, oya wo hajimete nanigoto to mo shirazu.

Hatsuki no mochi bakari no tsuki ni ideite Kaguya Hime ito itaku naki tamō, hito me mo ima wa tsutsumitamawazu naki tamō. Kore wo mite, oyadomo mo "nani goto zo" toi-sawagu. Kaguya Hime uaku naku in "Saki-zaki mo mōsamu to omoishikadomo, kanarazu kokoro madowashitamawamu mono zo to omoite, ima made sugushi haberitsuru uari. Sa uomi ya wa tote, uehi-ide haberuuru zo onoga mi wa kono kuni no hito ni mo arazu, tsuki no miyako uo hito uari. Sore wo mukashi no ehigiri arikeru ni yorite namu kono sekai ni wa mōdekitarikeru, ima wa kayerubeki ui ki ni kereba, kono tsuki no mochi-hi ni kano moto no kuni yori mukaye ni hitobito mōde komuzu sarazu makariubekereba, oboshi nagekamu ga kanashiki koto wo kono haru yori omoi-nageki haberu uari" to iite imijiu naku. Okina wa, "najō koto wo notamō zo? take no naka yori mitsuke kikoyetarishikado nataue no ōkisa owaseshi wo waga take-dachi narabu made yashinai-tatematsuritaru, waga ko wo nani bito ga mukaye kikoyemu. Masa ni yurnsamu ya" to iite, ware koso shiname tote naki-nonoshiru koto ito tayegatage nari.

Kaguya Hime no iwaku, "Tsuki no miyako no hito nite, ehiehi haha ari; kata toki no ma tote kono kuni yori mōde-koshikadomo, kaku kono kuni ni wa amata no toshi wo henuru ni namu arikeru. Kano kuni no ehiehi haha no koto mo oboyezu, koko ni wa kaku hisashiku asobi-kikoyete narai-tatematsureri, imijikaramu kokoehi mo sezu kauashiku uomi, namu, aru. Saredo ono ga kokoro narazu makari namu to suru" to iite morotomo ni imijiu naku.

Tsukawaruru hito bito mo toshigoro naraite, tachiwakare, namu, koto wo kokorobaye nado ateyaka ni utsukushikaritsuru koto wo minaraite, koishikaramu koto no tayegataku, yumizu mo umarezu onaji kokoro ni nagekashigarikeri.

Kono koto wo Mikado kikoshimeshite Taketori no iye ni on tsukai tsukawasasetamō. On tsukai ni Taketori ideite naku koto kagiri-nashi. Kono koto wo nageku ni, hiye mo shiroku, koshi mo kagawari, me mo tadare ni keru. Okina kotoshi wa isoji bakari narikeredo, mono omoi ni wa kata toki ni namu oi ni nari ni keru to miyu.

On tsukai ōsegoto toto Okina ni iwaku, "Ito kokorogurushiku mono omō naru wa makoto ni ka to ōsetamō?" Taketori nakunaku mōsu, "kono mochi ni, namu, tsuki no yori Kaguya Hime no mukaye ni mōdeku naru; tōtoku towase-

tamō kono mochi ni wa hitobito tamawarite tsuki no miyako no hito mōde koba toraye-sasemu" to mōsu.

On tsukai kayerimairite, Okina no arisama mōshite sōshi-tsuru koto domo mōsu wo kikoshiueshite utamō, "Hito me mitamaishi mi kokoro ni da ni wasuretawannu ni, akegure minaretaru Kaguya Hime wo yarite wa ikaga omōbeki!" Kano mochi no hi tsukasa-zukasa ni ōsete ehokushi ni wa, shōshō Takano no Ōkuni to iu hito wo sashite rokuye no tsukasa awasete ni sen nin no hito wo Taketori no iye ni tsukawasu.

Iye ni makarite tsui-hi-ji no uye ni sen nin, ya no uye ni sen nin, iye no hito-bito ito ōkarikeru ni, awasete, akeru hima mo naku mamorasu. Kono mamoru hitobito mo yumi ya wo taishite ori, moya no uehi ni wa, onna domo wo bau ni suyete mamorasu. Onna nuri-gome no nehi ni Kaguya Hime wo idakayete ori, Okina mo nurigome no to wo sashite tokuchi ni ori; Okina no iu "kabakari mamoru tokoro ni ama no hito ni mo makemu ya "to iite, ya uo uye ni oru hitobito ni iwaku, "Tsuyu mo mono sora ni kakeraba futoi-koroshitan-ye!" Mamoru hitobito no iu "Kabakarishite mamoru tokoro ni kahahori hitotsu da ni araba mazu i-koroshite to ni sarasamu to omoihaberu "to iu; Okina kore wo kikite tanomoshigari ori.

Kore wo kikite, Kaguya Hime wa, "Sashikomete, mamori tatakanbeki shita-kuni wo shitaritomo, ayo kuni no hito wo yetatakawannu nari; yumiya shite irareji, kaku sashikomete aru tomo kono kuni no hito koba mina akiannu to su, aitatakawannu to su tomo kano kuni no hito kiuba takeki kokoro tsukau hito mo yō mo araji." Okina no iu yō "ou mukayeni komu hito wo ba, nagaki tsume shite, manako wo tsukami-tsubasamu, sakagami wo torite, kauaguri otosamu, sagashiri no kaki-idete-kokora no ōyake hito ni misete haji niseniu" to hara-daei oru.

Kaguya Hime iwaku, ukowa-daka ni na notamai zo, ya no uye ni oru hitodomo no kiku ni ito masanashi. Ima sukarizuru kokorozashi domo wo omoi mo shirade-makari namu zuru koto no kuchioshin habekeri, nagaki ehigiri no nakari-kereba, hodonaku makarinubeki nameri to omōga kanashiku haberu nari. Oya tachi no kayeri-mi wo isasaka da ni tsukomatsurade makaramu miehi mo yasuku mo arumajiki ni tsuki goro mo ideite, kotoshi bakari uo itoma wo moshitsuredo, sara ni yurusarenu ni yotte, namu, kaku omoi nageki haberu on kokoro wo nomi madowashte sarinamu koto no kanashiku tayegataku haberu nari. Kano miyako no hito wa ito kiyōra nite oi mo sezu, namu, omō koto mo naku haberu nari. Saru tokoro ye makaramuzuru mo imijiku mo haberazu. Oi otoroye tamayeru sama wo mi tatematsurazaramu koso koishikarame" to iite naku. Okina mune idaki," koto na shi tamō zo, urawashiki sugata shitaru tsukai ni mo sawaraji "to netami ori. Kakaru hodo ni yohi uchisugite ne no toki bakari ni, iye no atari, hiru no akasa ni mo sugite, hikaritari, mochi-tsuki no akasa wo to wo awasetaru bakari nite, aru hito no ke no ana saye miyuru hodo nari.

O-zora yori hito kumo ni norite, orikite, tsuehi yori go shaku bakari agaritaru hodo ni tachitsuraretari; kore wo mite uchi soto naru hito no kokoro tomo mono ni osowaruru yō nite aitatakawannu kokoro mo nakarikeri, karōjite, omoi okoshite, yumi ya toritatemu to suredomo, te ni ehikara mo nakunarite nayekagamaritaru naka ni kokoro sakashiki mono nenjite in to suredomo, hoka zama ye kikereba are mo tatakawade, kokochi tada shire ni shirete mamori ayeri.

Tateru hito-domo wa, sōzoku no kiyōra naru koto mono ni mo nizu, tobu kuruma hitotsu gushitari, rakai sashitari, sono naka ni wō to oboshiki hito iye ni" Miyakko Maro mōde-ko! "to iu ni, takeku omoitsuru Miyakko Maro mo mono ni yētaru k-kochi shite, utsubushi ni fuseri. Iwaku," nanji osanaki hito, isasaka naru kudoku wo Okina tsukurikeru ni yorite, nanji ga taske ni tote, katakoki no hodo tote, kudashishi wo, sokora no toshigoro, sokora no kogane tamaite, mi wo kayetaru ga gotoku nari ni keru. Kaguya Hime wa tsumi wo tsukuri tamayeri kereba, kaku iyashiki onore ga moto ni shibashi owashitsuru nari; tsumi no kagiri hate-nreba, kaku mukōru wo Okina wa naki nageku atawannu koto nari, haya kayeshi tatematsure" to iu. Okina kotayete mōsu; "Kaguya Hime wo yashinai-tatematsuru koto hata tōse amari ni narinu. Kata-toki to notamo ni ayashiku nari haberinu, mata koto tokoro ni Kaguya Hime to mosu hito zo owashimasuramu" to iu "koko ni owasuru Kaguya Hime wa omoki wazurai wo shitamayeba ye-ide owashimasumaji" to mōseba, sono henji wa nakute ya no uye ni tobu kuruma wo

yosete "iza Kaguya Hime kitanaki tokoro ni ikadeka hisashiku owasemu" to ii-tate komataru tokoro no to sunawaehi tada aki ni akinu kōshidomo, mo hito wa nakushite akinu, onna idakite, Kaguya Hime to ni idenu, ye-todomumajikereba, tada sashi-ōgite naki ori. Taketori kokoro madoite naki-fuseru tokoro ni yorite Kaguya Hime iu, "Koko ui mo, kokoro ni mo arade, kaku makaru ni noboramu wo da ni, mi-okuri tamaye" to iyedomo "nani shi ni kauashiki ni mi-okuri tatematsuramu, ware wo ika ni seyo tote, sutete wa, nobori tamō zo gu-shite ite owasene" to uakite fusereba, on kokoro madoinu, fumi wo kaki okite makaramu, koishikaramu ori-ori tori-dashite mi-tamaye, tote uehi-nakite kaku kotoba wa, "kouo kuni ni umarenuru to naraba, nagekase-tatematsuranu hodo made haberubeki wo haberade sugiwakarenuru koto, kayesugayesu ho i naku koso oboye-habere, nugi-oku kinu wo kataui to mi-tamaye, tsuki no idetaramu yo wa mi-okose-tamaye mi-sute-tatema tsurite makaru sora yori mo oehiubeki kokoehi su" to kaki-oku.

Amabito no naka ni motosetaru hako ari; ama no ha-goromo ireri, mata aru wa fushi no kusuri ireri. Hitori no amabito iu "Tsubo uaru on kusuri tatema-tsurre, kitanaki tokoro no mono kikoshimeshitareha on kokoehi ashikaramu mono zo" tote, mote yoritareba, isasaka uame-tamaite, sukoshi katami tote, uugi oku kinu ni tsutsumamu to sureba, aru amabito "tsutsumasezu" ou zo wo tori-idashite kisemu to su.

Sono toki ni Kaguya Hime, "shihashi mate" to iite "kinu kisetsuru hito wa kokoro koto ni naru nari" to iu, "Mono hito goto iikubeki koto ari nari" to iite, fumi kaki; Amabito "ososhi to kokoro moto uagari-tamō" Kaguya Hime "mono shiranu koto na notamai zo" tote, imijiku shidzuka ni ōyake ni mi fumi tatematsuritamō, awatenu sama nari. "Kaku amata uo hito wo tamaite, todomesase-tamayedo yurusauu, mukaye-mōdekite tori-ide makarinureba kuehioshiku kanashiki koto uiyazukaye tsukōmatsurazu narinuru mo, kaku wazurawashiki mi uite habereha, kokoro yezu oboshimeshi-tsuredomo, kokoro tsuyoku uketamawarazu nari ni shi koto namege naru mouo ni ohoshimeshi todomerarenuru namu kokoro ni tomari haberiuu tote.

"Ima wo tote | ama no hagoromo | kiru ori zo | kinu wo aware! to | omoi-idekeru."

Tote tsubo no kusuri soyete tō no chiushō wo yobiyosete tatematsurasu, ehiushō ni amabito torite tsutau, ehiushō toritsureha futo ama no hagoromo uehi-kisereri tsureba, Okina wo ito oshikanashi to oboshitsuru koto mo usenu.

Kono kinu kitsuru hito wa, mono omoi uaku nari ni kereba, kuruma ui norite hiyaku niu bakari amabito gushite noborinu. Sono noehi Okina onna ehi no namida wo nagashite madoyedo ka-i nashi. Auo kaki-okishi fumi wo yomite, kikase keredo "Nani semu ui ka, inoehi mo oshikaramu taga tame ui ka, nanigoto mo yō mo nashi!" tote, kusuri mo kuwazu, yagate oki mo agarazu yami-fuseri.

Chiushō hitohito hikigushite kayeri-mawarite, Kaguya Hime wo ye-tatakaitomezu narinuru wo komagoma to sōsu. Kusuri uo tsubo ni on fumi soyete mairasu. Hirogete goranjite itaku awaregarasetamaite, mono mo kikoshimesezu, ni asobi nado mo makarikeri. Daijin-Kami-daehibe wo meshite izure uo yama ka ama ni chikaki to towase-tamō ui, aru hito sōsu "Suruga uo kuni ui aru yama,¹ namu, kouo miyako chikaku, ama mo chikaku haberu" sōsu: kore wo kikaso-tamaite.

"Au koto mo
uamida ni ukabu
waga mi ni wa;
shinanu kusuri wa
nani ui ka wa semu!"

Kano tatematsurareru shinanu no kusuri no tsubo ni on fumi gushite ni zukaye ni tamawasu, chokunshi ni wa. "Tsuki no Iwakasa to in hito wo meshite, Suruga uo kuni ni a-naru yama no itadaki ni mote-yukubeki yoshi" ōsetamō.

Mine nite subeki yō oshiyasetamō, "on fumi fushi no kusuri no tsubo narabeto, hi wo tsukete moyasubeki yoshi" ōsetamō. Sono yoshi uketamawaite, mononofu mo amata gushite yama ye noborikeru yori, namu, sono yama wo Fuji no yama to wa nazukeru. Sono kehuri imadu kumo uo naka ye tachi-uoboru to zo iitsutayetaru.

¹ Also aru naru yama,

ART. II.—*An Essay on the Brāhūī Grammar, after the German of the late Dr. Trumpp, of Munich University.*

By Dr. THEODORE DUKA, M.R.A.S., Surgeon-Major Bengal Army.

IN the range of philological study and research there is nothing so attractive as the discovery of certain tribes who speak a language unconnected with the languages of the peoples which surround them. In Europe we have the striking example of the Basque language on the French and Spanish frontier, and, on a larger scale, we find the descendants of the ancient conquerors of the upper part of Pannonia — the Hungarians — surrounded by German, Sláv and Latin elements, speaking the Magyar language, a language wholly isolated, whose philological position has not as yet been determined to the satisfaction of all. Such isolated peoples appear like islets on the vast ocean of Languages. Another remarkable example is the language of the Bráhúī in the north of Sindh and on the east of Balúchistan, on the north-west of British India, which is the subject of the present essay. This language is spoken in a region to which much attention has been attracted of late; it is the territory formerly known as the Khánat of Khelat. The writing of the Bráhúī is the Arabic alphabet, and the letters *l* and *t* are pronounced from the roof of the mouth with a strong emission of the breath.

The first notice of this language was given by the late Major Leech, of the Bombay Army, who, in 1838, presented a short sketch of it, with a list of words and sentences, adding a few fables, published in the Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal for 1839.

Professor Christian Lassen, of Bonn, has critically analyzed Major Leech's work in the fifth volume of the "Zeitschrift für

die Kunde des Morgenlandes.” After careful examination, he came to the conclusion that the language of the Brahúi people belongs to the Dravidian family; but the material at Lassen’s disposal was so scanty and so incorrect, being, moreover, overladen by typographical errors, that he could not venture beyond certain general conclusions on the subject. The structure of the speech had to be guessed at rather than fixed with any certainty, in consequence of which suspicion arose that the Brahúi had been wrongly classified as an idiom connected with the southern Dravidian languages.

The monograph of the Italian philologist, Felice Finzi,¹ scarcely deserves serious consideration—he merely copied Leech. His comparisons are far too superficial to be of any value, and his own additions are mostly erroneous.

In 1874 Dr. Bellew published a work entitled “From the Indus to the Tigris” (Trübner and Co.), to which, by way of appendix, he added a short grammar and vocabulary of the Brahúi language. Bellew accompanied Sir Richard Pollock’s mission, traversed that very region which is the home of the Brahúi, and being an industrious observer, he availed himself of his opportunities, and, in the capacity of a medical man, often came in contact with the people; great credit is due to him for having bestowed so much attention on the subject of language, and for having made careful notes of his enquiries. Welcome as this addition to our knowledge was, no important advance was made by it. Bellew did not fully grasp the subject, and, not being previously acquainted with the language, he stated much that was erroneous: he even repeated the mistakes into which Leech fell. In 1877 there appeared at Karachi a “Handbook of the Birouhi Language, by Alla Bux,”² a native of India. His grammar covers barely thirty-nine pages, but it is a considerable stride in the right direction, since the grammatical rules were worked out with the assistance of some of the native Brahúi, who frequently visit Karachi in large numbers. This essay is merely a compendium of elementary grammatical forms;

¹ Bolletino della Società Geografica Italiana, June, 1850.

² The author, الله بخش, thus anglicizes his name, which we have retained.

in many points it is deficient; but in addition to a very valuable list of the most important irregular verbs, the correctness of which has been since verified, we find sixty-three pages of Brahúi text, with an English translation, and the next twenty-two pages contain Brahúi fables with translation into English. From a thorough study of this material, the grammar is capable of being considerably amplified. Dr. Trumpp,¹ an Agent of the Church Missionary Society, who was for some years in Sindh, compiled a Brahúi grammar and presented his important work to the Academy of Sciences of Munich on the 4th December, 1880. The following pages are intended to be an adaptation of his work for English students. Trumpp makes frequent use of Alla Bux's colloquial sentences and stories, since, notwithstanding numerous misprints, what the Maulawi says can be thoroughly depended on.

Leech states that the Persian alphabet had already been adopted for the Brahúi, but it is the Maulawi's merit of having (in a linguistic treatise) for the first time made use of it. In this manner we are better enabled to judge of the language, and also to facilitate the learning of it to the Brahúi themselves. The Hindustáni development of the Arabic alphabet is peculiarly suited to it, as it is capable of noting all the cerebrals. Moreover, as the Brahúi are followers of Muhammad, nothing better could be offered for their acceptance. Some vowel-sounds, however, cannot be indicated with complete precision.

In the same year and place as the Maulawi, Capt. Nicolson published a Brahúi reader, under the title of "Meanee," etc., being a compilation of extracts from Napier's Conquest of Sindh and Grant Duff's Mahratta History, etc., translated into English. The title of this book scarcely corresponds with its contents, as the extracts just mentioned are very short and very few: the work was compiled with the aid of some Brahúi Sepoys, the translation being from English into the vernacular. Capt. Nicolson tells us that the first translation was submitted to a committee of native Brahúi, and

¹ The Reverend Dr. Ernest Trumpp, late Professor of Oriental Languages at Munich, died in 1884. He was the author of Sindhi and Pashtú Grammars, and translator of the *Adi Granth*.

that passages which they could not make out were altered, until the Hindustáni translation made by the committee was made to correspond with the English text. The merit of these Brahúi texts, therefore, is that we can with certainty rely upon idiomatic Brahúi expressions. Unfortunately, we have here only the text, without any vocabulary: the learner, therefore, is obliged to get through his task the best way he can.

The first desideratum now is a dictionary, for which Mr. Masson, the celebrated traveller's, collection of words could very well be utilized. Until a lexicon is obtained, no further progress can naturally be hoped for.

Upon the material mentioned above, and especially on the Brahúi texts of Alla Bux and of Capt. Nicolson, all of which have been carefully examined and collected, Dr. Trumpp compiled his grammar, regarding which he says: "I hope that, by comparing this language with the Dravidian idioms on one hand, and on the other with its neighbours the Baluchi and the Sindhi languages, I may have succeeded in establishing the grammatical structure of the Brahúi language, as well as its position in Philology. With the scanty material at my disposal, I cannot claim for my investigations anything like completeness; they are intended rather as a guide to others who may have the opportunity and advantage of prosecuting the study of the Brahúi, in the country of that people."

Dr. Trumpp is fully convinced that the Brahúi is a language belonging to the Dravidian family. At first he was inclined to class it with the Kolarian group, but further investigations convinced him that this would be an error, especially as the Brahúi knows nothing of the formation of a dual, which is a prominent characteristic of the Kolarian class of languages.

We must admit, nevertheless, that the Brahúi differs in certain points from the South Dravidian dialects, but that is hardly to be wondered at, considering the gap of a thousand years by which it is separated from them. It is, on the contrary, very notable that, notwithstanding its complete separation from its sister-dialects, and absolutely without any literature, the Brahúi should have possessed sufficient vitality

to maintain its linguistic type. As to its neighbours, only the Balúchi language seems to have exerted recently some influence upon its grammatical forms; but even this apparent influence may admit of further explanation.

From the Ját dialect of the Sindhi language on the east the Brahúi has certainly borrowed many words, but its grammatical structure is in no way affected by it.

Of the ancient history of this neglected and cast-away people hardly anything is known. So much, however, may be inferred, that the Brahúi were probably driven away from their ancient abode on the Lower Indus, towards the inhospitable and inclement mountainous regions of Middle Balúchistan, where they hold their own to this day against the encroachments of the Balúchi from the west. The Balúchi are a nomadic tribe. Notwithstanding the high altitude of their domicile and the cold climate in which they live, the Brahúi have retained a dark complexion, which distinguishes them at once from their immediate neighbours, the Ját and the Balúchi. It is true, however, that the Brahúi do not intermarry with other tribes. Many of them live in Sindh, and all retain the distinguishing peculiarities of their race, namely, the olive-coloured skin, a feeble, middle-sized frame, and a dark, thin beard. Their features have nothing of the Mongolian type; on the contrary, they resemble entirely the Caucasian race. The habits of the Brahúi are favourably described not only by Pottinger, but by all the more recent travellers; they bear a favourable comparison with their robber-neighbours the Balúchi. They lead a pastoral life, living on the produce of their herds, and are generally inoffensive, sociable, and given to hospitality. Bellew mentions a laudable instance of gratitude of a wounded Brahúi horseman.

They are divided into several tribes, owing chiefly to the difficulty of access to their mountain-homes: these, as a rule, they abandon in the winter for a warmer climate in the plains. There they live in Tumans, or tent-villages, in the Provinces of Sarawan and Jalawan, penetrating as far as Kúch in Makran, on the south-west. They avoid the heat in the plains, where the Balúchi reside.

The Brahúi consider themselves as the original inhabitants of the country, and probably they are. But, judging from appearances, the Persians from Seistan seem to have preceded them and taken possession of the fertile tracts of Balúchistan, because we find to-day the middle and westerly parts of the Khánat of Kelat occupied by an agricultural tribe, the Tájik, whose mother-tongue is Persian. In the south-east, the province of Las, and the plains extending towards the Indus, and almost the whole province of Kúch Gandává, is the home of the Ját, who speak a dialect of the Sindhi language. The Balúchi, coming from the south-west, were the last settlers. Being unable to dislodge the Brahúi from their mountain slopes, they migrated towards the north-east, and possessed themselves of the tract between Sindh and Kúch Gandává. Thence they pressed into Sindh, under the leadership of the Talpur, and took possession of the most fertile tracts of land.

The first historical record of the Brahúi we find mentioned at the end of the seventeenth century, when Kambar, the head of the Mirvāri tribe, drove away the sovereign of Kelat and took possession of his throne. Ever since, this Brahúi dynasty has reigned in Kelat; the different nationalities, having embraced Islam, formed themselves under it for political reasons into one homogeneous state, although powerful clansmen even yet occasionally disturb the sway of the Khan. It is remarkable, however, that although the sovereign power is now in the hands of a Brahúi dynasty, the language of the Court is Balúchi, or Persian, the Brahúi language being considered as not sufficiently refined for Government purposes.

The national name, Bráhuí, is pronounced in several ways. Nicolson and Maulawi Alla Bux spell it Biruhi (that is, Biroohi or Birouhi); but we must not forget that Birúhi (बिरुही) is a Sindhi word, and it is therefore difficult to say how the people in question call themselves. In Nicolson's Reader the word occurs twice written براھوی, which cannot be pronounced otherwise than Bráhuí or Birāhuí, and this should, therefore, be adopted as the proper pronunciation of the word.

We find also the name Kurdgali given to the language, meaning the speech of the Kurds, evidently from the fact that the Kurds are a tribe of the Brahúi people, having many subdivisions on the northern parts of the Khánat, as far as the Dasht-i-bi-daulat, "the luckless desert."

Notwithstanding the many subdivisions into numerous tribes and subtribes, and the general ignorance of the people, their language has nevertheless, as Dr. Trumpp pointedly declares, proved itself to be the intellectual power which kept up the bond and consciousness of national unity among them to this day. In the absence of all historical records and tradition, the language remains the only means which enables us to assign to the Brahúi people its due place in the great family of nations.

§ 1. THE SYSTEM OF SOUNDS (THE ALPHABET).

The *vowels* in Brahúi are the following :

simple : *a, ā ; e, ē ; i, ī ; o, ō ; u, ū.*

compound : *ai, au.*

The sound of *e* frequently occurs at the end of a word, and is marked by hamza ٔ, sometimes by the letter ى, but it is always short ; *o* has often the sound of *u*. Compound vowels, or diphthongs, occur chiefly in foreign words. To facilitate the exact pronunciation of the long *ē* and *ō*, Trumpp recommends the signs ى and ُ for the use of Europeans.

The *consonants* are as follows :

Gutturals : ك *k*, كه *kh*, گ *g*, گه *gh*, خ *kh*, غ *γ*.¹

Palatals : چ *ch*, چه *chh*, ج *j*, جه *jh*.

Cerebrals : ت *t*, ته *th*, د *d*, ده *dh*, ر *r*.

Dentals : د *t*, ده *tha*, د *d*, ده *dh*.

Labials : پ *p*, په *ph*, ب *b*, به *bh*, ف *f*.

Sibilants : س *s*, ش *sh*, ز *z*.

Nasals : م *m*, ن *n*.

Demi-vowels : ي *y*, ر *r*, ل *l*, و *v*.

Aspirate : ه *h*.

¹ The use of the Greek letter is Dr. Trumpp's.

To these should be added the special Arabic sounds which, however, occur only in foreign words; they are ث pronounced = *s*; ح = *h*; ذ = *z*; ژ = *zhe*; ص = *s*; ض = *z*; ط = *t*; ظ = *z*; ق = *q*; ع = *ain*; غ = *ghain* already mentioned.

From the above we notice that the Brahúi possesses cerebral sounds, but among them there is no cerebral *n*: the ر *r* is a modification of the sound ذ *ḍ*, as in Sindhi and Hindi, and the two are often substituted one for another.

A striking peculiarity in the Brahúi is this, that through all the Vargas the aspirates are identical with those used in the Indo-Arian languages, and the Brahúi would therefore seem to be intimately connected with them; whilst, on the contrary, the Dravidian languages of the South, according to their fundamental type, are, as a rule, wanting in such aspirates. Many words, however, are reducible to a Sindhi origin, such as چھنڱ *chhāṇḍing* 'to shake,' Sindhi छंढण; دھڱي *dhagī* 'a cow,' Sindhi ढगी, etc. Nevertheless, the use of aspirates seems not to be opposed to the spirit of the Brahúi language itself. In words of Persian, Arabic, or Hindi origin, the aspirate occurs as a matter of course; like چھوڪري *chhōkarī* 'a girl'; کوٺي *kōṭhī* 'a room,' etc. Such undoubted Brahúi words as پھڊي *phudēn* 'cold,' پھڊي *phudī* 'coldness,' possess aspirates, and may therefore be taken as a proof of the fact.

The sound خ *kh*, although foreign to Dravidian tongues, occurs in true Brahúi words, and may be considered as a softened *k*. For instance, خَل *khal* 'stone,' in Tamil *kal*; Brahúi خَن *khan* 'eye,' in Tamil *kan*. It also occurs in many Brahui verbs, as خاچنگ *khachīng* 'to lie down,' خلنگ *khaling* 'to strike.'

The sound غ (*ghain*) also occurs in pure Brahúi words, e.g. ديدغ *dīday* 'the pupil (eye),' هورغ *hōray* 'thunder,' اَرغ *iray* 'bread.' The غ is also used, as in Persian, to fill the hiatus between two vowel-sounds, but especially in the declensions, e.g. زغم *zaym* 'sword,' دَغار *ḍayār*, 'land.'

The palatal sounds are fully represented, and are pronounced in

the usual way. Lassen thought that جہ *jḥ* was absent, such, however, is not the case, e.g. جہمر *jḥamar* 'the cloud.'

The *cerebral* ر *r* is one of the accepted sounds : for instance, ریت *rīt* 'sister,' ریتا *gīrā* 'a thing.'

The *labial* ف *f* is peculiar to the language, whilst it is unknown to the Dravidian group in general. For instance, هرفنگ *harafing* 'to ask,' تنگ *tafing* 'to bind.' We shall further see that the formation of the causal verb is effected by the addition of ف to the root; in the negative form, however, the ف changes with پ, in accordance to certain rules. The ف occurring in Brahúi words is sometimes changed into پ, as پلپل *pīlpīl* for فلفل 'pepper.'

Among the *sibilants*, the sound expressed by ز *z* is of especial interest, because it occurs not merely in words borrowed from other sources, but we find it in those of undoubted Brahúi origin : for instance, بیاز *bḥāz* 'much,' زیل *zīl* 'finger-nail.'

As to the *nasal* sounds, the Brahúi does not possess the Anusvāra, and, therefore, these sounds should always be fully pronounced, even when in combination with a consonant. For instance, in the terminal syllable of the infinitive *ing* the *g* is fully sounded.

Of the demi-vowels, the *r* often drops, as we shall notice in the conjugations. In some instances the *r* changes into *s*, as, for example, اس *ase* for ارى = 'he is.' So, likewise, the Brahúi uses sometimes the sound *s*, when in other Dravidian idioms the sound *r* prevails.

The aspirate *s* is soft ; therefore we find indifferently written انت *ant*, and هنت *hant* = 'what ?' ام *am*, and هم *ham* = 'also.'

Dr. Trumpp proposes that when the Hindustáni alphabet is used, the sound of the short final *ä*, in the nouns, should be expressed by *s*, as in Persian, with the view of avoiding mistakes in reading, and also because the Persian words ending in *s* have almost the same inflection as in the Brahúi. In order to recognize the final *a* in the present definite tense, he proposes to discard the long alif (ا) and mark it likewise with *s*, particularly as the accent does not rest on it ; by this practice much confusion would be avoided.

Compounding of consonants is rare in the Brahúi: if it does occur, it is seldom that there are more than two consonants in apposition. Reduplication of consonantal sounds is common enough, as, for instance, پِنّی *pinni* 'the thigh,' لُمّمه *lummah* 'mother,' خَلّی *khalli* 'a jug.'

§ 2. THE NOUN, ITS GENDER AND NUMBER.

The Brahúi, like the whole Dravidian group, makes no distinction of gender in the nouns. Where it is necessary to distinguish sexes, the words نر *nr* 'male,' ماده *mādah* 'female,' are used. *Example*: نر بيش *nr bish* 'male donkey,' ماده بيش *mādah bish* 'female donkey.' The same rule exists in the Malayalam and in the New Persian.

The Brahúi has two numbers, the singular and the plural; the Kolarian group of languages possesses a dual as well.

The *plural number* is formed by an affix, hence, strictly speaking, there is only one type of the plural. But observe that:

1. Nouns ending in a consonant add the affix *āk* to the root; for instance, بامس *bāmas* 'nose,' pl. بامساك *bāmas-āk*; بندغ *banday* 'man,' pl. بندغاك *banday-āk* 'men.' The exceptions to this rule are:

a. Nouns ending in ن, where the preceding vowel is short, the letter *k* alone assists in forming the plural, for instance, خَن *khan* 'eye,' pl. خنك *khan-k* 'eyes'; پِن *pin* 'name,' pl. پِنك *pin-k* 'names.'

b. Nouns ending in ت or ر drop their final-consonant for the sake of euphony, and simply substitute the plural *k* for it, as نَت *nat* 'foot,' pl. نَك *nak* 'feet'; but the difference, with respect to a long penultimate vowel followed by *r*, is this, that the *r* falls off, for instance, مار *mār* 'son,' pl. ماك *māk* 'sons.'

2. Nouns ending with the aspirate take, for the sake of euphony, the sound غ before the plural termination, for instance, لُمّمه *lummah* 'mother,' pl. لُمّمهگ *lumma-γ-āk* 'mothers.' The aspirate of the singular may be disregarded and dropped, as it stands there merely as a diacritical sign.

3. Nouns ending in a long vowel form the plural by the simple addition of *k*, as دانا *dānā* 'a wise man,' pl. داناك *dānā-k*

‘wise men’; دُو *dū* ‘hand,’ pl. دُولُک *dū-k* ‘hands.’ But nouns ending in a long *ī* may form their plural in *iy-āk*.

It often happens that the plural affix is not used at all, its presence can be guessed at from the context. But when a collective noun is the subject of a verb, then the verb must stand in the plural number, for instance, اونا سپاهی است هزار ککڑاتی بسور, ‘his soldiers will cook one thousand fowls;’ here the plural future بسور *basor* indicates that the word سپاهی *sepahy* requires the plural number. But it is incorrect to say, as Leech teaches, that in similar cases the word باز *bāz* ‘much’ is used to indicate the plural. The word *bāz* always retains its own meaning, and is not used as an expletive. Caldwell’s observation, therefore, that the number of the nouns in Brahúi remains as a rule undefined, is applicable to very few instances. Caldwell repeats Leech’s remark as to the use of the words ‘much’ and ‘some,’ which Trumpp declares to be incorrect.

That the plural suffix *āk* and *k* is of Dravidian origin may be assumed with certainty.

This plural sound *k* occurs in what were called the Northern Turanian languages; in Hungarian we have, for instance, *hāz* ‘a house,’ pl. *hāz-ak*; there are even traces in the Turkish of the plural *k*, as, for instance, ایدک *id-ik* ‘we were.’

§ 3. THE DECLENSION.

Declension, properly so called, is unknown in the Brahúi, as in what Trumpp calls the Dravido-Turanian group of languages; the cases are determined by affixes, which, with slight modifications, are the same in both the numbers.

The root of the noun always stands in the nominative, but an interesting point occurs when we closely consider the formation of the Brahúi singular and plural.

The Dravidian languages, in a large number of nouns, add their case-affixes not to the root, but to what is called the formative, and we know such to be the case in languages of Northern India also; this phenomenon, Trumpp tells us, is entirely absent

in the Turanian. In this peculiarity the Brahúi approaches, in a striking manner, the Dravidian idioms, a circumstance which has been overlooked hitherto. The cases of the singular number are formed merely by the addition of the affixes, but in the plural we notice vestiges of the formative, as we shall presently see.

The affixes of the singular number are these :

Nominative	<i>the root</i>
Genitive	<i>nā</i>
Dative	} <i>e</i>
Accusative	
Instrumental	<i>āt</i>
Conjunctive	<i>tō, atō</i>
Ablative	<i>ān</i>
Locative	<i>āe</i> and <i>tī</i> تی

When the nominative ends in a consonant, or in a long vowel, or the short vowel *āh*, the affixes are simply added; not unfrequently we find the letter غ inserted between the final letter and the affix. Supposing the affix commences with a vowel, in such a case the final mute *āh* is dropped; example, Dat. Acc. ضعیفہء *zaiḡfa* or ضعیفہی *zaiḡfa-γ-e* 'to a woman.'

There is an important peculiarity in the use of affixes, as far as the plural number is concerned. The nominative plural, as we saw, ends in *āk* or merely in *k*; we might therefore expect that the affixes would, as in the singular number, be simply added, and Bellew in his Grammar puts it so, that is, he writes *kasarāk* 'the ways,' genitive *kasarāk-na*, dative *kasarāk-e*. Trumpp, however, states that he only found one single instance of such an inflexion. Example: شربندگات نا محبت پدا یا مون تی اس رنگ تی او *shar bandayāk nā mahabbat padā yā mōn, ṭi as rang ṭi ō* 'the love of good men to our face or behind our back is of the same colour' (Nicolson, p. 14, line 1). It is therefore possible that the form may prevail in some of the Brahúi dialects, but it appears to be very rare. Leech and Bux make no mention of it at all. This is a point for further investigation.

The peculiar phenomenon connected with the plural is this: the nominative of the plural ends in *āk* or *k*. We should therefore expect that the affixes will be added to the termination. But such is not the case, because *āk* or *k* changes into *āt* or *t*. The genitive plural should stand as a rule thus: *āt-nā* or *t-na*, but it changes into *āt-ā* or *t-ā*. The affix *e* of the dative-accusative is similarly added to *āt* and *t*, and becomes *āt-e* and *t-e*. It should be here stated that this case serves as a formative for the instrumental, conjunctive, ablative, and the locative, and for some other affixes.

As to the origin of these affixes, we have noticed already that the genitive affixes *nā* and *ā* are found in Dravidian languages; the same happens with the dative-accusative affix *e*, of which there is an equivalent in Tamil in *ai*, and in Malayalam in *-e*.

The vocative is identical with the nominative, but is usually preceded by the interjection *ai*, and occasionally the Persian affix *ai* is added. For instance, *ای باوا* 'O father!'

The inflexions given by Bellew, Leech, and Finzi, appear according to Trumpp to be erroneous.

Here follow examples of nominal inflexions.

I. NOUNS ENDING IN A CONSONANT.

a. *خل* *khal* 'stone.'

	Singular.	Plural.
Nom.	<i>خل</i> <i>khal</i> .	<i>خلاک</i> <i>khal-āk</i> .
Gen.	<i>خا نا</i> <i>khal-nā</i> .	<i>خالاتا</i> <i>khal-āt-ā</i> .
Dat. }	<i>خلی</i> <i>khal-e</i> .	<i>خالاتی</i> <i>khal-āt-e</i> .
Acc. }		
Instr.	<i>خلت</i> <i>khal-aṭ</i> .	<i>خلاتیٔ</i> <i>khal-āt-e-aṭ</i> .
Conjunct.	<i>خل تو</i> <i>khal-tō</i> .	<i>خالاتی تو</i> <i>khal-āt-e-tō</i> .
Abl.	<i>خلان</i> <i>khal-ān</i> .	<i>خالاتیان</i> <i>khal-āt-e-ān</i> .
Loc.	{ <i>خلای</i> <i>khal-āe</i> . <i>خل تی</i> <i>khal-ṭī</i> .	{ <i>خالاتیای</i> <i>khal-āt-e-āe</i> . <i>خالاتی تی</i> <i>khal-āt-e-ṭī</i> .
Voc.	<i>ای خل</i> <i>ai khal</i> .	<i>ای خلاک</i> <i>ai khal-āk</i> .

The orthography of the inflected nouns varies considerably. Nicolson sometimes simply adds them to the root, at others he writes them separately. Trumpp prefers adding simply to the root those affixes which begin with a vowel; but such as commence with a consonant, stand separate. As to the pronunciation, Bux changes the *e* of the plural into *i*, and for euphony's sake inserts *y* between them. For instance, in the ablative and locative cases, *khalatīyān*, *khalatīyāe*. This mode of writing, however, appears to have been borrowed from the Urdu, as the spirit of the Brahúi would prefer using the غ to fill up hiatuses. The *e* of the accusative sing. and plural seems to be short and mute, because the accent appears to fall on the root. For instance, *khal-e*, *khal-āk*, *khal-āt-ā*, *khal-āte-aṭ* (or *khal-ātīyāt*), *khal-ātetō*, *khal-āteān*, (*khal-ātīyān*), *khal-āte-āe* (*khal-ātīyāe*), *khal-āteṭi*.

Concerning the affix *tō*, we find in Bux's examples the following forms: مَسِيرَاتُو *masirāt-tō* and باوغاتیتو *bāva-γ-āt-e-tō*. We see in the first case the *tō* added to the plural *at*, and in the other to the formative of the plural. Trumpp found it mostly in connection with the formative of the plural.

b. Nouns ending in n.

	Singular.		Plural.	
Nom.	خَن	<i>khan</i> 'eye.'	خَنک	<i>khan-k</i> .
Gen.	خَن نا	<i>khan-nā</i> .	خَنتا	<i>khan-t-ā</i> .
Dat.)	خَنی	<i>khan-e</i>	خَنتی	<i>khan-t-e</i> .
Acc.)				
Instr.	خَنت	<i>khan-aṭ</i> .	خَنتیت	<i>khan-t-e-aṭ</i> .
Conjunct.	خَن تو	<i>khan-tō</i> .	خَنتی تو	<i>khan-t-e-tō</i> .
Abl.	خَنان	<i>khan-ān</i> .	خَنتیان	<i>khan-t-e-ān</i> .
Loc.	{ خَنای	<i>khan-āe</i> .	{ خَنتیای	<i>khan-t-e-āe</i> .
	{ خَن تی	<i>khan-ṭi</i> .	{ خَنتی تی	<i>khan-t-e-ṭi</i> .
Voc.	ای خَن	<i>ai khan</i> .	ای خَنک	<i>ai khan-k</i> .

c. Nouns with final t (r).

	Singular.	Plural.
Nom.	نت <i>nat</i> 'foot.'	نک <i>na-k</i> .
Gen.	نتنا <i>nat-nā</i> .	نتا <i>nat-t-ā</i> .
Dat. }		
Acc. }	نتی <i>nat-o</i> .	نتی <i>nat-t-e</i> .
Instr.	نتت <i>nat-aṭ</i> .	نتیت <i>nat-t-e-aṭ</i> .
Conjunct.	نت تو <i>nat-tō</i> .	نتی تو <i>nat-t-e-tō</i> .
Abl.	نتان <i>nat-ān</i> .	نتیان <i>nat-t-e-ān</i> .
Loc. }	نتائی <i>nat-āe</i> .	نتیائی <i>nat-t-e-āe</i> .
	نتتی <i>nat-ṭī</i> .	نتی تی <i>nat-t-e-ṭī</i> .
Voc.	ای نت <i>ai nat</i> .	ای نک <i>ai na-k</i> .

Nouns ending in *r*, preceded by a short vowel, are regular. For instance, کسر *kasar* 'way,' pl. کسراک *kasar-āk*, genitive کسرائا *kasar-āt-ā*, etc. In those nouns on the other hand, in which the final *r* is preceded by a long vowel, the *r* is dropped, and the plural *k* substituted. For instance, مار *mār* 'son,' pl. ماک *mā-k* 'sons.' Trumpp cites only one instance of an oblique case of ماک, viz. اراڙیکو مار تا کتابا *kanā ilum nā mār-t-ā kitābākarāṛēk-o* 'Where are my brother's children's books?'—Bux, p. 53, l. 9.

II. NOUNS ENDING IN *ah*.

	Singular.	Plural.
Nom.	لُمه <i>lummah</i> , 'mother.'	لُمغا <i>lumma-γ-āk</i> .
Gen.	لُمهنا <i>lummah-nā</i> .	لُمغانا <i>lumma-γ-āt-ā</i> .
Dat. }	لُمهء <i>lummah-e</i> .	
Acc. }	لُمهغی <i>lummah-γ-e</i> .	لُمغاتی <i>lumma-γ-āt-e</i> .
Instr.	لُمهت <i>lummah-aṭ</i> .	لُمغاتی <i>lumma-γ-āt-e-aṭ</i> .
Conjunct. }	لُمه تو <i>lummah-tō</i> .	
	لُمغاتو <i>lumma-γ-ātō</i> .	لُمغاتی تو <i>lumma-γ-āt-e-tō</i> .
Abl.	لُمغان <i>lumma-γ-ān</i> .	لُمغاتیان <i>lumma-γ-ate-ān</i> .
Loc. }	لُمغائی <i>lumma-γ-āe</i> .	لُمغاتیائی <i>lumma-γ-āt-e-āe</i> .
	لُمهتی <i>lummah-ṭī</i> .	لُمغاتی تی <i>lumma-γ-āt-e-ṭī</i> .
Voc.	ای لُمه <i>ai lummaḥ</i> .	ای لُمغا <i>ai lumma-γ-āk</i> .

III. NOUNS ENDING IN A LONG VOWEL.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
Nom.	اُرا <i>urā</i> , 'house.'	اراک <i>urā-k</i> .
Gen.	اران <i>urā-nā</i> .	اراتا <i>urā-t-ā</i> .
Dat. } Acc. }	ارائی <i>urā-e</i> .	اراتی <i>urā-t-e</i> .
Instr.	ارائت <i>urā-aṭ</i> .	اراتیت <i>urā-t-e-aṭ</i> .
Conjunct.	ارانو <i>urā-tō</i> .	اراتی تو <i>urā-t-e-tō</i> .
Abl.	{ اراآن <i>urā-ān</i> . اراغان <i>urā-γ-ān</i> . }	اراتیان <i>urā-t-e ān</i> .
Loc.	{ اراغائی <i>urā-γ-āe</i> . ارائی <i>urā-ṭi</i> . }	اراتیائی <i>urā-t-e-āe</i> . اراتی تی <i>urā-t-e-ṭi</i> .
Voc.	ای ارا <i>ai urā</i> .	ای اراک <i>ai urā-k</i> .

Nouns ending in *ī*, *ō*, *ū*, and *ē*, follow the same rule; the words in *ī* form their plural in *i-āk*, *i-āt-ā*, etc. The accusative singular of words ending in *ī*, *ō*, *ū*, *ē*, is marked by a hamzah merely. For instance, سپاهئی *sipāhī-e* 'to the soldiers.'

The ع (ain) is an unknown sound in the Brahúi; therefore, words written with a final ع are considered as ending in a simple long vowel. For instance شروع *shurū-e* 'beginning,' شروعان *shurū-e-γ-ān* 'from the beginning.'

The Articles.

The definite article is unknown in the Brahúi, but there is the indefinite one *as*. If the noun ends in a consonant, *as* (the short form of اسی *asi* 'one') is added thereto; but it often happens that the اسی is used *at the same time* before the noun, for instance, اسی بندگس *asi bandaγ-as* 'one man.'

When the noun ends in a vowel, the اسی, as a rule, is put before; an instance to the contrary is cited by Trumpp in چیٲھیس *chīṭhī-as* (Bux, p. 12, l. 9).

When the noun ends in *ʾ* *ah*, the postposition *as* is written separately, for instance, *پنجرد اس pinjra-as* 'a cage.'

Observe, however, that the *as* can never be put between the root and the inflecting syllable.

§ 4. THE ADJECTIVE AND ITS GRAMMATICAL RELATIONS.

The language of the Brahúi knows only roots of nouns and has no special adjectives; the noun, used in the form of an adjective, has therefore no gender, and is subject to the general rules of inflection given above.

The noun-adjective precedes the subject, and forms with it a grammatical whole; the affixes, therefore, of the number and cases belong to the last noun only. Example: *دانا بندغاتا عقل* 'according to the wise men it is good.'

The noun-adjective remains in the singular, even if the subject to which it relates stand in the plural number. Example: *دا دیتائی همینک حیران مسر* 'over this matter they were perplexed' (Nicolson, p. 22, l. 8).

A peculiarity noticeable here is this, that the descriptive adjectives are capable of assuming a *determinate* or *indeterminate* form, by the addition of a long *ā* ٓ for the former, and, as a rule, of a short *o* ٔ for the latter, for instance, *تینا محل تی بادشاهیا کپتائی توستس* 'thou sittest in thy palace on the royal throne' (Abu'l Hasan, p. 7, l. 9); the adjective here is *بادشاهی bādshāhi*, its determinate form being *bādshāhiā*. Also *کبنا کاریم kabēna karēm* 'the important business' (adj. *کبین*). Adjectives ending in ٓ *ā* or ʾ remain unchanged. Example: *پهلا بندغاٹ نینان بار* (Sindhi *भलो* = *پهلا*) 'honest men like we' (Nicolson, p. 1, l. 5 from below). No examples are forthcoming of adjectives ending in other vowels.

It seems, however, not to be the absolute rule to determinate an adjective by the addition of ٓ *ā*; exception to this we find especially in foreign words. Example: *کمزور رعیتائی میربانی تیخ* 'Show love to weak subjects, that thou mayest not be overcome by a strong enemy' (Nicolson, p. 5, l. 6).

The *indeterminate* form is expressed, as a rule, by affixing *و* *ō*.
Example : *اسی کورو بندغس* 'a blind man' (Bux, p. 116, l. 11),
اسی پورو *asī pīrō are* 'an old man,' *شرو بندغ* 'a good man,'
اسی بدشکلو بندغ 'an ugly man.' Adjectives ending in a long
vowel remain unchanged when the vowel is an *ē*. *Example* : *اسی*
نکشی 'a drunken man' (Nicolson, p. 19, l. 5).

When the ending is in a *ا*, the *و* *ō* may be added or not.
Example : *اسی داناءو بندغس پاری* 'a wise man said,'
هیچ کس *پیرنگا ضعیفه* 'nobody wants an old woman.' A few
adjectives change the terminal *ا ā* into *و* *ō*. *Example* : *بیلو* *bhalō*
'good' (from *بیلا*, Sindhi *भलो*). *Example* : *نی دا ملک نا بیلو*
وزیر اُس 'thou art a great vezir of this kingdom' (Nicolson, p.
23, l. 3).

Adjectives with a terminal *س ah* remain unchanged or assume
an *و* *ō*. *Example* : *دا بیلا کمینه بی شکرو بندغ نا کاریم اری*
' this is a deed of a low and ungrateful man ' (Nicolson, p. 7, l. 7),
اسی گندو گیترا 'a bad thing.'

These affixes have struck Lassen's attention, without being able
to explain their meaning; nor can Trumpp determine from the
scanty materials at his disposal what the original signification
of the above affixes *ا* and *و* *ā* and *ō* may be. They seem to be
traceable to some Dravidian affinity. The affix *anga* 'like' appears
to be of Balúchi origin, e.g. *پیرنگا* *pīr-anga* 'old,' from *پیر* *pīr* 'an old
man.' The affix *aga* seems also to be of Balúchi source, having
converted the Balúchi adjective termination *en* into *ang*, *anga*, e.g.
بیمارغا *بیاز تیزنگا هلیک* 'many swift horses perished,'
لنگنگا بیش تیمنا ستری 'the sick man recovered' *بندغ دُراخ مَس*
'the lame donkey accomplished his journey' (Nicolson,
p. 16, l. 1, 2)

Degrees of comparison there are none in the Brahúi: we find the
same peculiarity in all the Dravidians. The adjective remains
unchanged, and the object with which it is compared is placed in
the ablative case, as *جنگان چپ تُولنگ شرئی* 'It is better

to sit still than to quarrel' (Bux, p. 108, l. 6), همینا اُست بندغ *hamīnā ust banday na ustān sakht āre* 'his heart is harder than the heart of the man' (Bux, p. 116, l. 1).

You may also raise the meaning of the adjective by the use of the words بَیاز *bahāz* 'much,' and بیلو *bhalo* 'great,' or the word زیاستی *ziyāsti* 'addition,' e.g. کنا ایژ کنیان بیاز خوبورت ئی 'my sister is more beautiful than I' (Bux, p. 129, l. 2), دا زیاستی شر *da ziyāsti shar e* 'that is better.'

The superlative is expressed by the word گُل *kul* or دُرست *drust*, e.g. دا تجویر کلان شر ئی *da tajvīz kalān shar e* 'that plan is best' (Bux, p. 86, l. 9).

§ 5. THE NUMERALS.

The Brahúi has words of its own for the first three numbers only; the rest have been probably forgotten and eventually borrowed from the neighbours, especially from the Persian tongue. The CARDINALS are as follows:

اَسِت	<i>asit</i>	}	'one.'
اَسِی	<i>asī</i>		
اِرَت	<i>irat</i>	}	'two.'
اِرَا	<i>irā</i>		
مُسِت	<i>musit</i>	}	'three.'
مُسِی	<i>musī</i>		
etc. چار, پنچ, شش, هفت			

ORDINAL NUMBERS.

مُهِیکو *muhikō* or اَوَلکو *avalkō* 'the first.'
 اِرَتْمیکو *irat-mikō* 'the second.'
 مُسِتْمیکو *musit-mikō* or مُسَویکو *mus-vikō* 'the third.'
 چارویکو *chār-vikō* 'the fourth,' etc., etc.

Instead of مُهِیکو *muhikō*, we find مُنْهَا *munhā* and مُنْهَنَا *mūnhanā*, according to Bux and Nicolson, *mun* or *mōn* meaning the forepart, the same as in the Tamil. The other Ordinal Numbers are

formed in a regular manner by affixing *māko* or *vāko*. The terminal *ko* seems to answer to the Dravidian *agu* (Caldwell, p. 251).

The meaning 'times' is expressed in Brahui as in Baluchi and Persian by وار, for instance, دا مونپنا وار ئی 'this is the first time,' (Nicolson, p. 33, l. 7), دوار پا 'say it a second time.'

The subject numbered stands, after a cardinal number, as a rule, in the singular, for instance, sad sāl 'one hundred years' (Bux, p. 115, l. 4-5), ای ارا بیشنا باریم دھمیت 'I have taken up two asses' burden;' but sometimes the plural also is used. Example: اغ سلطان پنج بیضه غانی زور تو کلنگ کی حکم ایتی اونا 'When the Sultan gives an order to take five eggs by force, then his soldiers will cook a thousand fowls' (Nicolson, p. 8, l. 5 from below). The verb stands in the plural with the numbered subject, even when after a cardinal number the subject be in the singular. Example: چهل هزار پیاده 'forty thousand infantry extended over the plain, fifty big guns accompanied them' (Nicolson, p. 28, l. 2-5 from below).

§ 6. PRONOUNS.

a. PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

The First Person.

	Singular.	Plural.
Nom.	ای <i>ī</i> , <i>I</i> .	نن <i>nan</i> .
Gen.	کنا <i>kanā</i> .	ننا <i>nanā</i> .
Dat. }		
Acc. }	کنی <i>kane</i> .	ننی <i>nane</i> .
Conjunct.	کن تو <i>kan-to</i> .	ننی تو <i>nane-tō</i> .
Abl.	کنیان <i>kane-ān</i> .	ننیان <i>nane-ān</i> .
Loc.	کنیائی <i>kane-āe</i> .	ننیائی <i>nane-āe</i> .
	کنه ^ه <i>kane-ī</i> .	ننی تی <i>nane-ī</i> .

¹ پنجا توپ *sing.* اُسُر 'were' *plur.*

The instrumental case should be *kane-at*, *nane-at*, but Trumpp has not met with an instance of it.

How far *ī* and *kan* are related to the Dravidian forms is still uncertain. The plural *nan* corresponds entirely to the Dravidian analogies (for instance, *nam* in Tamil), and we may therefore conclude, with some certainty, that there must be a Dravidian root for the singular as well.

We might ask, why should not the genitive be written *kan-na* and *nan-na*? Bellew indeed writes "*kanā* and in the plural *nannā*," but this is not admissible. Bux declares that the final *n*, for instance, in *kan* before the genitive affix *na*, should be dropped; hence *kanā*, *nanā* would be preferable.

The Second Person.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
Nom.	نی <i>nī</i> , 'thou.'	نُم <i>num</i> .
Gen.	نَا <i>nā</i> .	نُمَا <i>numā</i> .
Dat. }	نی <i>nē</i> .	نُمِ <i>nume</i> .
Acc. }		
Conjunct.	نی تو <i>nē-tō</i> .	نُمِ تو <i>nume-tō</i> .
Abl.	نیان <i>nī-ān</i> .	نُمیان <i>nume-ān</i> .
Loc.	نیائی <i>nī-āe</i> .	نُمیائی <i>nume-āe</i> .
	نی تئی <i>nē-tī</i> .	نُمِ تئی <i>nume-tī</i> .

Obs.—The root *nī*, *num* (*numā*) is found in all the Dravidian languages (Caldwell, p. 519).

In Brahúi the genitives of pronouns *stand for the* POSSESSIVE pronouns.

The Third Person.

The Brahúi has no pronoun for the third person; such is the case in the Dravidian languages also; but, to supply this defect, it makes use of Demonstrative Pronouns. These are: دا *dā* 'this,' او *ō* 'the same,' ای *ē* 'that.'

b. THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

1. دا *dā* = 'this.'

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
Nom.	دا <i>dā</i> .	دافک <i>dāfk</i> .
Gen.	دانا <i>dā-nā</i> .	دافتا <i>dāftā</i> .
Dat. }	دادی <i>dād-e</i> .	دافتی <i>dāfte</i> .
Acc. }		
Conjunct.	دادتو <i>dād-tō</i> .	دافتی تو <i>dāfte-tō</i> .
Abl.	دادیان <i>dāde-ān</i> .	دافتیان <i>dāfte-ān</i> .
Loc.	دادیائی <i>dāde-āe</i> .	دافتیائی <i>dāft-āe</i> .
	دادی ٿی <i>dāde-ṭī</i> .	دافتی ٿی <i>dāfte-ṭī</i> .

Obs.—دا is very irregular in its inflexion, and must not be confounded with the Pashtu دا 'this,' but is to be referred to the Dravidian demonstrative *adī*, which in Telugu answers to the *dā* in the formative. The demonstrative root *dā* appears in the adverbial formations also, for instance, داری *dā-rē* or دانگی *dā-ngē* 'here,' داسا *dā-sā* 'now.'

To appreciate properly the inflexion of the oblique cases of the singular (with the exception of the genitive), it is necessary to assume that *dād* is the root, the final *d* of which is changed into the cerebral *ḍ* or *r*; and, indeed, such cerebral *ḍ* is to be found in the Telugu word *vāḍu* 'he.' The plural form *daf-k* would show that there exists a singular in *daf* or *dav*; these final letters, however (*f* and *v*), may be used by way of euphony.

We also find that the Brahúi adopts the Persian particle هم *ham* 'that very,' as a preposition to the demonstrative pronoun دا, and says دندا *handā*. Example: ته پا که اگریهت کنڈن اری ته پا که اگریهت کنڈن اری *handā-tō* 'if that matter is so, speak, that I may now go'; *handād-tō* *barām ētē* 'marry me to this man' (Locch, p. 15, l. 5 from below).

The use of هم in connection with the demonstrative pronoun has evidently been borrowed from the Balúchī.

2. او *ō* = 'it, the same.'

This occupies a middle place between the demonstrative pronoun *dā* and *ē*, and corresponds to the Dravidian *u* 'it,' Latin 'is.'

	Singular.	Plural.
Nom.	او <i>ō</i> .	اوفک <i>ōfk</i> .
Gen.	اونا <i>ōn-ā</i> .	اوفتا <i>ōftā</i> .
Dat. }		
Acc. }	اودی <i>ōd-e</i> .	اوفتی <i>ōfte</i> .
Conjunct.	اودتو <i>ōd-tō</i> .	اوفتی تو <i>ōfte-tō</i> .
Abl.	اودان <i>ōd-ān</i> .	اوفتان <i>ōft-ān</i> .
Loc.	{ اودائی <i>ōd-āe</i> .	{ اوفتائی <i>ōft-āe</i> .
	{ اودی تی <i>ōde-ṭī</i> .	{ اوفتی تی <i>ōfte-ṭī</i> .

N.B.—Occasionally the forms اوڈی *ōḍe*, اوڑی *ōṛe*, اوڑان *ōr-ān*, are used instead of the above.

In the singular number the postpositions, beginning with a consonant, are simply added to the form *ōd*, *ōḍ*, *ōṛ*. Example: زبیده اودی دا حال تی خنا—گڑا اوڑکی بیاز هوغا 'Zubaidah saw her in this condition, upon which she wept much for him' (Nicolson, Abu'l Hasan, p. 19, l. 6-9).

The compound form *hamō* is inflected in the same manner as the simple demonstrative, and is in frequent use. Example: هموڑ تو خُشیت گذران کری 'thus he spent his life contentedly' (Abu'l Hasan, p. 2, l. 2).

3. ای *ē*.

	Singular.	Plural.
Nom.	ای <i>ē</i> .	ایفک <i>ēfk</i> .
Gen.	اینا <i>ēnā</i> .	ایفتا <i>ēftā</i> .
Dat. }		
Acc. }	ایدی <i>ēd-e</i> .	ایفتی <i>ēfte</i> .
Conjunct.	اید تو <i>ēd-tō</i> .	ایفتی تو <i>ēfte-tō</i> .
Abl.	ایدان <i>ēd-ān</i> .	ایفتان <i>ēft-ān</i> .
Loc.	{ ایدائی <i>ēd-āe</i> .	{ ایفتائی <i>ēft-āe</i> .
	{ ایدی تی <i>ēde-ṭī</i> .	{ ایفتی تی <i>ēfte-ṭī</i> .

The composite form *ham-ē* *همی* is in frequent use. Instead of *ایدی ēde*, we often find *ایڈی ēḍe* and *ایڑی ēre*, etc. Example: *ایڑان کَرَقَبو کہ دا هلی نا اری یا اف* 'ask that man whether this horse is yours or not?' *ایڑائی خدای مہربانی کرو* *iraī khoda mehrbani karve* 'God will have mercy on him.' In the locative case we meet with the form *hamē ṭi* *همی تی*, as *همی تی غرق مریک* *hame ṭi γark marēk* 'he will be drowned in it.'

These demonstratives are completely inflected only when they stand independently *اریر تمام خرابو آریک* *arēr hamēfak tamam kharabo ārek arēr* 'those are very bad men (husbands)' (Bux. p. 50, l. 9); *ایفتی تی ای تفصیر هیچڑا خٹنوت* 'I saw no fault in them' (Nicolson, p. 3, l. 6). But when the demonstratives refer to a noun, they are looked upon as adjectives, and are not inflected, e.g. *دا موحچریک بینگ نا اریر* *da mōchirīk bīning nā arēr* 'these shoes are there to put on'; *دا همی بئدغاتا لَمہ* 'this is that man's mother' (Bux, p. 96, l. 6); *ای جہل تی* 'are the fish in this river very large' (Bux, p. 52, l. 1 from below).

c. The Reflective Pronoun.

Immediately on the personal pronouns follows the reflective pronoun *تین tīn* or *تینت tīnaṭ*: the latter is used in the nominative only, while all the case-affixes are connected with *تین*. In the Dravidian languages this occurs as *tan* or *tān*, and is there inflected in a regular form.

The form *تین* or *تینت tīn* or *tīnaṭ* has no plural, the number being expressed either by another pronoun or by a verb.

Singular and Plural.

Nom.	<i>تین ten</i> , <i>تینت tīnaṭ</i> , 'self.'
Gen.	<i>تینا tenā</i> .
Dat. }	<i>تینی tīne</i> .
Acc. }	

Conjunct. تین تو *tīn-tō*.

Abl. تینان *tīn-ān*.

Loc. { تینیا *tīni-āe*.
تین تی *tīn-tī*.

The locative seems irregular. It should stand تینا *tīn-āe*; but Nicolson gives the following example : او تینیا *o tīniāe* *hira* 'he looked upon himself.'

An example of how تین is used in the plural form is given by Nicolson : تو تینی مردہ جوڑ کین *nane bahānah-tō tēns murdah jōr kēn* 'we shall by simulation make ourselves dead' (Abu'l-Hasan, p. 18, l. 2).

تین is used in the same manner as خود in Persian, because it expresses not merely the meaning, 'self,' in the nominative (Example : هر کس تینا فکری تینت کی *let every man look out for himself*, Bux, p. 90, l. 9), but in the other cases represents the pronoun referring to the subject of the sentence. Example : او خلی تین تو تخا *o khale tēn to tikhā* 'he took the stone to himself' (Nicolson, p. 9, l. 6 from the bottom).

The genitive تینا represents in Brahúi the possessive also, since it has to follow the subject to which it refers, like the Persian خود following after a noun. Examples : ای نی تینا عزیز نا جگہ *I shall not put thee again, in the place of a friend*, etc. (Nicolson, Abu'l-Hasan, p. 14, l. 3 from below), گُترا *Afterwards he gave the order to his treasurer* (Nicolson, Abu'l Hasan, p. 20, l. 5).

d. Interrogative Pronouns.

1. The interrogative pronoun دیر *dēr* 'who,' refers to living subjects only. It has no plural, and therefore the idea of plurality has to be gathered from the context. It is used as a substantive noun only.

Singular and Plural.

Nom.	دیر	<i>dēr.</i>
Gen.	دټا	<i>din-nā.</i>
Dat.	دیری	<i>dēr-e.</i>
Aec.		
Conjunct.	دیرتو	<i>dēr-tō.</i>
Abl.	دیران	<i>dēr-ān.¹</i>
Loc.	دیرائی	<i>dēr-āe.</i>
	دیرتی	<i>dēr-ṭi.</i>

Dēr is of Dravidian origin. Caldwell, at p. 317, mentions *yēr*, and with a transition from *yē* in *dē* and *dēr*.

For the genitive case we must suppose the existence of *din*, which has been formed by adding the formative *n* to *dē*. There is a corresponding form *dane* 'what,' in the Tuḷu.² Example: دا ماک دیرو *nī dēr-us* 'who are you?' دا ماک دیرو *dā māk dēr-ō* 'who are these boys?' دا ارا دټائی *da urā dinnā-e* 'whose house is this?' Idiomatically we may say, ناپن دیرئی *nā pin dēr-ae* 'what is your name?' (Bux, p. 56, l. 4), because the word *name* refers to a person: on the other hand, دا شهر نا پټی *da shahar nā pin antase* 'what is the name of this town?' (Bux, p. 58, l. 9 from below). Here inquiry is made for the name of a thing.

2. انت *ant* or *hant* refers to inanimate subjects only, whether nouns or adjectives, and is not inflected, e.g. نا حکم انتسی *nā kukm ant-se (ant-ase)* 'what is your command?' (Bux, p. 54, l. 8), انت گنوس *nī ant kunōs* 'what wilt thou eat?' (*ibid.* l. 4), انت کاریم کیسا *nī ant karēm kīsā* 'what business are you doing?' (Bux, p. 56, l. 15). To emphasize the question 'what kind,' the word اس *as* 'a, an' may be affixed to the noun, e.g. انت کناداس گرینی *hame ant gunah-ās karēnī* 'what crime has he committed?' (Bux, p. 56, l. 7).

¹ Bellew gives the case as *dēryān*, which according to Trumpp is incorrect.

² In Telugu *yēmi* is 'what,' of which *yēdi* is the neuter; *dēni* is the inflection of both.

N.B.—*انت* corresponds to the Tamil *enda*, which, according to Caldwell, is an adjective interrogative by changing *e* into *a*.

The Brahúi form *انتی anta-e* 'why?' should be noticed here, *e.g.* *انتی رحم کپیسہ anta-e raham kapēsā* 'why do you not show mercy?' (Nicolson, p. 19, l. 6). This seems to correspond to the Tamil *ennamāy* (Caldwell, p. 321), which is formed in a similar manner.

3. *ارا arā*, both in meaning and in use, is the same as *انت ant*, *e.g.* *او ارا ارا ئی ao ūrā ārā-aē* 'what house is that?' (Bux, p. 62, l. 6), *نی ارا وقت اودی خناس ne ārā vakt aodē kḥanās* 'at what time sawest thou him?' (Bux, p. 64, l. 2).

The etymology of *ارا* is doubtful; perhaps it is related to the Telugu *ēlā* (Caldwell, p. 327).

If *انت* or *ارا* follow the relative pronoun *که kah*, then these interrogatives become demonstrative pronouns, 'that which,' *e.g.* *هر کس که تیمنا کا ئمان دو کئی هنت که اینا آنت بریک پائک* 'he who takes away his hand from his head, speaks that which comes into his heart' (Nicolson, p. 1, ll. 3-4). Should, moreover, 'a, an' be added to *انت* or *ارا*, then the meaning is 'whatever,' *e.g.* *انتس که بندغ کیگ خدا نا پارغان اری* 'whatever a man does, proceeds from God,' (Bux, p. 134, l. 1).

انتسیکه ant-ase-kīh (this is written mostly in this form) signifies 'because that,' 'for that,' literally, 'what is it that,' *e.g.* *انتسیکه ای کرینت خدا کرینی کهمو* 'because that, which I have done, God has done' (Bux, p. 134, l. 5 from below).

e. Relative Pronoun.

In conformity with the true Dravidian dialects, the Brahúi possesses no real relative pronoun. From its neighbour, the Balúchi, it borrows *که kēh* to represent the relative pronoun, which is used entirely in the same manner as in the Balúchi, and in the Persian languages; the case and the number, which, as a matter of course, should belong to the relative, are taken up by a real pronoun. If the relative, logically speaking,

stand in the nominative case: then, the pronoun just alluded to is left out, the same happens as to its accusative case also, e.g. هميفک که خدا نا بندشاگ ارير تينا دشمن نا اُستاتی رنج کيسه 'Such as are God-fearing men do not vex the hearts of their enemies' (Nicolson, p. 13, l. 2 from below), همی بندغ که اودی تُغ 'That man to whom sleep is better than waking, his death is better than his life' (Nicolson, p. 6, l. 2 from below).

که by itself is sufficient to express this relation, especially when it refers to quality, quantity, time, or place, e.g. کمؤن که پارؤس 'as you speak, so will you hear' (Bux, p. 106, l. 17), همی وقت که زاهد تينا اُراغائی کُژسنگا 'at that time when the ascetic returned to his house' (Nicolson, p. 14, l. 5 from below).

f. Indefinite and Adjective Pronouns

are the following, in alphabetical order:

آخَس	<i>aḵhas</i> ,	} 'what number' (how many?)
آخَه (هخه)	<i>aḵhah (hakhah)</i>	
آسَسِي	<i>asasī</i>	'every.'
آسِي	<i>āsī</i>	'one.'
اس ایلو	<i>as-ēlō</i>	'this one, that one.'
آقَدَر	<i>ā-qadr</i>	'so much' (Brahúi and Arab).
آمَر (هَمَر)	<i>āmar (hamar)</i>	'what kind?'
اھُن	<i>uhun</i>	'of that kind.'
ایلو	<i>ēlō</i>	'another.'
باز (بہاز)	<i>bāz (bhāz)</i>	'much' (Balúchi).
پین	<i>pēn</i>	'another.'
پین هیچ گس	<i>pēn hech kas</i>	'not another' (Brah.-Bal.).
توَمَکاک	<i>tūmakāk</i>	'both.'
تین پتین	<i>tēn pā-tēn</i>	'with one another' (Brah.-Bal.).
داخه	<i>dāḵhah</i>	'so much.'
دا قدر	<i>dā-qadr</i>	'so much' (in quantity).

درست	<i>drust</i> 'all, every' (Balúchi).
دُونِ (دَدِن)	<i>dūhun, dūhūn</i> 'on this manner, such.'
کس	<i>kas</i> } 'somebody.'
کَسَس	
کل	<i>kul</i> 'all' (Arab-Bal.)
کُڑا	<i>giṛā</i> } 'something.'
کُڑاس	
مَچِیٔ	<i>māchhiṭ</i> } 'a little.'
مَچِی	
مَن	<i>man</i> } 'a few, some.'
مَنٛتاک	
کَر	<i>har</i> 'every one' (Pers.-Bal.)
هَر اَسِت	<i>har-āsīt</i> 'every one' (Pers.-Bal.)
هَر پِن	<i>har-pīn</i> 'every other' (Brah.-Bal.)
هَر تَوَمَاک	<i>har-tūmāk</i> } 'both' (Brah.-Bal.)
هَر تَوَمَان	
هَر تَوَمَاکَاک	
هَر دَو	<i>har-dō</i> } 'both' (Pers.-Bal.)
هَر دَوَمَاک	
هَر کَس	<i>har-kas</i> 'every person' (Pers.-Bal.)
هَموِخِه	<i>hamōkḥah</i> 'exactly the same.'
هَموِ قَدَر	<i>hamō-qḍr</i> 'so much in quantity.'
هَموِن	<i>hamūn</i> 'such, of that kind.'
هَموِنِ	<i>hamōhun</i> } 'of that kind.'
هَمِیَن	
هَنْدُون	<i>handun,</i> } 'of this kind.'
هَنُون	
هَمِیچ	<i>hēch</i> 'something' (Pers.-Bal.)
هَمِچَرَا	<i>hēch-rā</i> 'a little' (Bal.-Sindhī.)
هَمِیچ کَس	<i>hēch-kas</i> 'somebody' (Pers.-Bal.)

N.B.—1. The subject, following on *اخه* *akhah* ‘what number?’ always stands in the singular, whilst the verb connected with it we find in the plural number, e.g. *اخه بندغ حاضر آسر* *ākhah banday* (masc. sing.) *hāzīr āsur* (pl.) ‘what number of persons were present?’ (Bux, p. 64, l. 7).

2. *تين پتين* *tēn patēn* (literally, ‘self with self’) ‘with each other, between each other,’ e.g. *ارادرهيش تين پتين دوستى تخاصر* *ārā dervīsh tīn patīn dōsti takhāsūr* ‘two dervīshes made friendship with each other’ (Nicolson, p. 22, l. 1). There are examples, also, where *تين پتين* *tīn patīn* occurs as one word, and the locative affix *تي* is added to it, e.g. *همفك تين پتين تي مست واقف آسر* *hamefak tēnpatēn-ṭī mussat vākaf āsur* ‘They were formerly acquainted (with each other)’ (Bux, p. 110, last line).

3. *آمر* *āmar* ‘what kind of’ takes a final *و* *ō*, if used in the form of an adjective, because the subject about which the inquiry is made is naturally undetermined, e.g. *آمرؤ کتاباك ارير* *āmro kitābāk ārir* ‘what kind of books are they?’ (Bux, p. 52, l. 15), *دا آمرؤ* *dā āmrō* ‘What kind of animal is that?’ (Bux, p. 54, l. 8). Yet the following sentence occurs also: *نا طبيعت آمرئي* *nā tabiat āmar-aē* ‘How is your health?’ (Bux, p. 54, l. 9).

4. Regarding *تومكاك* *tūmakāk* or *هرتوماك* *hartumāk* ‘both,’ it is to be noticed that, the ending *āk* is the regular termination of the nominative plural, which in the oblique cases is transformed into *āt*, e.g. *نم هردومات تو آمرؤ جنگ سى* *hartumāk dā dunīa nokrāk arēr* ‘Between you two what fighting is there?’ (Bux, p. 58, l. 3), *هنگ هرک* *hanak hirak tomakātīān dīr kahaskunī* ‘go, see which of both (them) is dead’ (Nicolson, Abu’l Hasan, p. 21, l. 8).

5. *گړا* *girā* ‘something,’ is used both as a substantive noun and as an adjective. In the substantive form it means a ‘thing,’ and is used in the plural as well, e.g. *دا گړاتيا گړاس سنگ آرى*

da girātīāe girās sang āre 'on these goods is there any discount?' (Bux, p. 58, l. 4); *کنی گتراس پړوس* 'will you say something to me?' (Bux, p. 54, l. 16); *اینو گترا خبر نی اری* 'is there any news to-day?' (Bux, p. 60, l. 16).

6. *مشتاک* *mant-āk* 'a few, some,' is, according to its form, a plural, *e.g.* *مشتاک سالان گدای همو وقت دهمشتان بښت* 'after a few years had passed, I came at the same time from Damascus' (Nicolson, p. 20, l. 2 from below).

7. *کس* *kas*, *هیچ* *hech*, and their compounds are, as a rule, used only in a negative or interrogative sentence, in the same manner as in the Balúchi and Persian.

8. Correlatives are formed by adding the relative pronoun *که* to the interrogative adjective of quality or quantity, in consequence of which it obtains the power of a demonstrative pronoun, being a correlative in an adjectival form, answering the question.

آخه که — داخه	}	'as much—so much.'
کنه که — کمونخه		
آقدر که — کمونقدر		
کندن که — کموندن	}	'as—so.'
کمون که — کمون		

e.g. *هکځه که خواډک کمونخه ایټس* *hakha ke khāhak hamokha āitas* 'as much as he wishes, so much you may give' (Bux, p. 90, l. 4); *همون که استاد مړو کمون شاگردان مړو* *hamōn ke āstād marō-e, hamōn shāgirdān marōr* 'as the teacher, so will the pupils be' (Bux, p. 102, l. 11).

§ 7. THE VERB.

The Brahúi language has only one conjugation, which, in accordance with the general type of the Dravidian languages, is inflected in a regular manner by agglutination. It differs, nevertheless, from the more cultivated of the Dravidians, as, for instance, from Tamil, in so far, that it has developed a greater number of tenses,

owing probably to the influence of the neighbouring language, the Balúchi.

As regards the form, there is no difference between transitive and intransitive verbs; both are inflected in the same manner; and so is the causative verb, which in the Brahúi was developed in accordance with the analogy of the Dravidian idioms.

The Brahúi has an *active* as well as a *passive* form, although the latter seems to be seldom used.

But the special *mark*, which characterizes the Brahúi as a Dravidian tongue, is the existence of the negative form, which runs through all the tenses. The negative is formed by adding the negation to the verbal root, before the personal inflection.

The Brahúi has no moods, except the imperative—we find no subjunctive, no optative, no conditional. The manner in which these are expressed we shall notice further on. The development of the participles is likewise very meagre.

§ 8. THE ACTIVE, AFFIRMATIVE FORM OF THE VERB.

All the tenses in the Brahúi language are divided into—

- I. Such as are composed with the infinitive, and
- II. Such as are composed with the past participle.

I. *Tenses which are composed with the Infinitive and the Verbal Root.*

The infinitive of all the Brahúi verbs ends in *ing*, e.g. ہینگ *bin-ing* 'to hear,' ہینگ *hin-ing* 'to go.'

The infinitive is a verbal noun, and can therefore be declined like any other noun, e.g. نی ولایت ہینگ نا ارادہ اری *nī vilāy-tae nā ārādah āre* 'is it your wish to go to Europe?' (Bux. p. 58, l. 7). This ending of the infinitive corresponds to the Tamil infinitive *g-a*, with a nasal pronunciation *ng*, with which the affix *ngei* should be compared (Caldwell, pp. 425, 434). By dropping the terminal syllable *ing*, we obtain not merely the root, but also the second person of the imperative, e.g. ہینگ *bin-ing* 'to hear,' ہن *bin* 'hear thou'; کینگ *kun-ing* 'to eat,' imperative کن 'eat thou.'

The second person plural of the imperative is formed by using the terminal *bō*, e.g. *بڻو bin-bō* 'hear ye,' *کنبو kun-bo* 'eat ye.'

There are a great number of verbs, which, as in the new-Persian, form their imperative in an irregular manner, since they do not derive it from the root inherent in the infinitive, but substitute a different verbal root for it; e.g. *تینگ tin-ing* 'to give,' imper. *ایتی ēte*; *هینگ hin-ing* 'to see,' imper. *هر hir* 'see,' from *هرنگ hir-ing*, which is also in use.

As a rule, verbs whose root in the infinitive ends in *n*, change it in the imperative into *r*, and now and then the syllable *ak* is added, being an affix which seems to emphasize the imperative, e.g. *مینگ man-ing* 'to be,' Imp. *مر mar* 'be thou'; *دینگ dan-ing* 'to take away,' Imp. *دَرَک dārak*¹; *کننگ kan-ing* 'to do,' Imp. *گَرَک kārak*; *بننگ ban-ing* 'to come,' Imp. *بَرَک bārak*; *خننگ khan-ing* 'to see,' Imp. *خنک khān-ak*; *بینگ bin-ing* 'to hear,' Imp. *بِن* or *بِنک bin-ak*.

Other imperatives drop the terminal consonants of the root of the infinitive, e.g. *پاننگ pān-ing* 'to say,' Imp. *پا pā*; or they add *th* to it, e.g. *تولنگ tūl-ing* 'to sit,' Imp. *تولتھ tūl-th*; *خلنگ khal-ing* 'to strike,' Imp. *خلتھ khal-th*; *هالنگ hal-ing* 'to take,' Imp. *هالتھ hal-th*.

Others, again, retain in the imperative the same root as in the infinitive, e.g. *چرنگ char-ing* 'to peregrinate,' Imp. *چرنگ charing*, Sindhi चरण; *ترنگ tar-ing* 'to spin,' Imp. *ترنگ taring*; *رسنگ ras-ing* 'to arrive,' Imp. *رسنگ rasing* (Sindhi रसण, Persian رسیدن *rasidan*).

The affix *ak* is dropped before the plural termination *bō*, e.g. *hin-ak*, plur. *hin-bō*.

If the Imperative ends in *r* or *خه khe*, these letters are also dropped before the plural termination *bo*, e.g. *بَرَک bār-ak*, pl. *بَبَو bā-bō*; *کار kar* 'do,' pl. *کَبَو kábō*; *شاغ shāγ* 'put down,' pl. *شَابَو shā-bō*, etc.

Th will likewise, like *ak*, be dropped in all plural cases, e.g. *خلتھ khal-th* 'strike,' plur. *خلبو khal-bo*. There are, however,

¹ *dārak* دَرَک; the accent is Dr. Trumpp's, as it is, in all the instances, where the | (*alif*) is not apparent.

exceptions, e.g. پلٽيمو دا گد نا ديري *dā gud nā dēre palṭh-bo* 'wring the water from the clothes' (Bux, p. 80, l. 19). The same happens with the final vowel, e.g. ايتي *ēte* 'give,' plur. ايتبو *ēt-bō*.

These peculiarities of the Brahúi imperative require further elucidation, when more material is placed at our disposal.

From the *infinitive* the continuous *present*¹ is formed by adding to the present tense of the substantive verb اٺ *-uṭ*, the post-position ٿي *tī* 'in,' thus: اٺ ٿي تڱڱ *tikhing-tī uṭ*, literally, 'I am placing.' This, however, can hardly be called a tense, as, in fact, it is a complete sentence, in which the infinitive takes the place of a noun, with a case-affix added thereto. Similar formations are to be found in the Balúchi, whence they were borrowed by the Brahúi.

From the VERBAL ROOT OF THE IMPERATIVE, after dropping the emphasized terminal *ak* and *th*, are formed:

a. The *indefinite (simple) present tense* (the aorist of English grammar) defining the time in a general way, and may therefore be used in the subjunctive, potential, and optative mood.

The verb substantive اٺ *uṭ* is added to the root, but its pronunciation becomes soft. Moreover, the terminal *t* (*uṭ*) changes into *v*, but only in the present tense (both definite and indefinite); in the future, in the preterite, and in the perfect tenses, the *t* (of *uṭ*) is retained. In the third person plural, the personal termination *r* is strongly accented, whilst in the substantive verb the *r* is dropped.

The following are the terminations of the *indefinite present tense*. It should, however, be observed here that the Brahúi verbs use no personal pronouns, except when emphasis is to be placed on a special person. Bux uses the personal pronouns, as in English.

Singular.	Plural.
1 Pers. <i>iv</i> (<i>ev</i>)	<i>in</i> (<i>en</i>)
2 „ <i>is</i> (<i>es</i>)	<i>ire</i> (<i>re</i>)
3 „ <i>o</i>	<i>ir</i> (<i>er</i>)

¹ *Praesens continuum* of Dr. Trumpp.

If the root ends in a long vowel, the *i* (above) is dropped, e.g. پاو *pā-(i)v* 'I may say,' plur. پان *pā-n* 'we may say.' The *e* of the 3rd person singular, however, remains, e.g. پائی (or پائی) *pā-e* 'he may say.' The accent falls on the root; therefore, the personal endings are not sounded, e.g. تیکھو *tikh-iv* 'I may place.'

b. The *definite* present tense is formed from the indefinite present tense by adding an *a* to the first and second persons singular, and likewise to the first and third persons plural. The third person singular takes a terminal *k*, whilst the second person plural remains the same as in the indefinite form.

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers. <i>iv-a</i> (<i>eva</i>).	<i>in-a</i> (<i>ena</i>).
2 ,, <i>is-a</i> (<i>esa</i>).	<i>ir-e</i> (<i>ere</i>).
3 ,, <i>e-k</i> .	<i>ir-a</i> (<i>era</i>).

N.B.—To avoid confusion, which is noticed in the writings of Nicolson, Leech, Bux, and Bellew, not to mention Finzi, Dr. Trumpp proposes that the terminal *a* of the conjugations be designated by the aspirate *ṣ*, instead of the *ḷ*, or the diacritical *ṽ* *fath*, because this terminal *ṣ* is not pronounced.

c. *The Simple Future Tense*

is formed by adding the terminal *ō* to the verbal root, and also the verb substantive, which drops its vowel sound, except in the 3rd person singular. Therefore :

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers. <i>ō-t</i> .	<i>ō-n</i> .
2 ,, <i>ō-s</i> .	<i>ō-re</i> .
3 ,, <i>ō-e</i> .	<i>ō-r</i> .

From the imperative ایتى *ēte*, the future will be formed thus : ایتوت *ēt-ō-t* 'I shall give.' From present indefinite ای کاو *kāv* 'I may go,' the future will be ای کاوت *kō-t*, etc.

The Brahúi وَ is derived from the Dravidian *v* by changes through *av*.

d. *The Compound Future.*¹

Is formed by adding to the formative of the future ending *ō*, the past tense of the substantive verb, viz. اَسْتِ etc., and dropping, as in the simple future, the *a*. In the 3rd person singular the preterite of the substantive verb will be *sas* (= *asas*), instead of the usual form of *asak* or *as*. The personal terminations therefore are these :

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Person : <i>ō-suṭ</i> .	<i>ō-sun</i> .
2 ,, <i>ō-sus</i> .	<i>ō-sure</i> .
3 ,, <i>ō-sas</i> .	<i>ō-sur</i> .

N.B.—Bux, Bellew, Leech, and particularly the Italian Finzi, have *entirely* mistaken the composition of this tense.

II. *Tenses compounded with the Past Participle.*

The real difficulty in studying the verbs commences with the formation of the past tenses, all of which proceed from the past participle. The usual way of forming the past participle is by adding *ā* or *ē* to the verbal root, e.g. تِکھ تِکھ-ing, past participle تِکھا *tikhā*; تَمَنگ tam-ing 'to fall,' past participle تَمَا *tam-ā*; تَهَر تَهَر-ing 'to cut,' past participle تَهَرِي *thar-ē*.

If the verbal root end in ف *f*, the past participle terminates with very few exceptions in *ē*; e.g. تَفَنگ taf-ing, past participle تَفِي *taf-ē*.

Some past participles end in a consonant, changing at the same time their infinitive verbal root, like the following :

بَنَنگ <i>ban-ing</i> 'to come,'	past participle	بَس <i>bas</i> .
بِنَنگ <i>bin-ing</i> 'to hear,'	,, ,,	بِنگ <i>bing</i> .
خَلَنگ <i>khal-ing</i> 'to strike,'	,, ,,	خَلگ <i>khalik</i> .
دَنَنگ <i>dan-ing</i> 'to take away,'	,, ,,	دَر دَر <i>dar-ē</i> .

Other verbs retain the infinitive entirely, and form the past participle by simply adding to it the letter ا *ā*; e.g. چَرَنگ *char-ing* 'to wander,' past participle چَرَنگا *charing-ā*; رَسَنگ *ra-sing* 'to arrive at,' past participle رَسَنگا *rasing-ā*.

¹ *Futurum exactum* of Dr. Trumpp.

It is important to note here that the past participles, be they formed by transitive or intransitive verbs, have an active meaning and *never a passive one*, e.g. خَلَكَ *khalk* means 'one that has struck,' and not 'one that was struck.' This is quite contrary to what we find in the Balúchi, and in the North Indian languages.

The following is the formation of those tenses which are effected by composition with the past participle :

1. *The Simple Past Tense.*¹

The present tense of the substantive verb is added to the past participle; the 3rd person of the singular, however, has no such an addition, yet *ak* (*-k*) may be added, especially if the previous syllable end in a vowel.

If the past participle end in a consonant, the personal terminations are added unchanged, except that in the third person plural we find *ur* used instead of *ō*.

The following is the form :

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	خَلَكْتُ اى <i>khálk-ut</i> ² 'I struck,' etc.	نن خَلَكْن <i>khálk-un</i> .
2 "	نِى خَلَكْس <i>khálk-us</i>	نم خَلَكْرِى <i>khálk-ure</i> .
3 "	{ او خَلَك <i>khálk</i> او خَلَكْ <i>khalk-ak</i>	{ افك خَلَكْرِ <i>khálk-ur</i> . افك خَلَكُو <i>khálk-ō</i> .

If the past participle end in a vowel, the initial vowels of the substantive verb are dropped, e.g.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	خَنَات اى <i>khanā-t</i> 'I saw,' etc.	نن خَنان <i>khanā-n</i> .
2 "	نِى خَناس <i>khanā-s</i>	نم خَنارى <i>khanā-re</i> .
3 "	{ او خَنَا <i>khanā</i> او خَنَاك <i>khanā-k</i>	{ افك خَنار <i>khanā-r</i> .

The same happens if the past participle end in *ē*. In the 3rd person plural we always find the personal termination in *-r* if the past participle end in a vowel.

¹ The *praeteritum* of Dr. Trumpp.

² *khálk-ut*. See footnote, page 91. The transliteration of the personal pronoun has been omitted as superfluous.

N.B.—Bellew, Leech, and Finzi have entirely misunderstood this tense, and mixed it up with the imperfect.

b. As the present definite is formed from the present indefinite, by the addition of *a*: in like manner is the *imperfect* from the simple past. It is evident, therefore, that this terminal *a* must be a sign of something definite and permanent. To the third person singular there must invariably be added the personal termination *ak* (-*k*), to distinguish it from the simple past, to which, therefore, is added the *a* of the imperfect. The second person plural does not take up the *a*, and is therefore in appearance identical with the 2nd person plural of the simple past. The following is the scheme of the personal terminations of the *imperfect*. It should be noted, however, that the *a* at the end, be it written with *alif*, *hamza*, or *fateh*, is always mute.

<i>Singular.</i>		<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	<i>t-a</i>	<i>n-a</i>
2	„ <i>s-a</i>	<i>re</i>
3	„ $\begin{cases} ak \cdot a \\ -k-a \end{cases}$	<i>r-a</i>

N.B.—Bellew, Leech, and Finzi are mistaken about the tense.

c. *The Pluperfect*

is formed by adding to the past participle the imperfect of the substantive verb, namely *أسف* *asuf*, and if the past participle end in a vowel, then the initial vowel of the verb substantive is dropped. In the third person singular the verb substantive becomes *أسس* *asa-s* instead of *asak*; and if the past participle terminates in *s*, then *as* only is assumed for the sake of euphony.

The scheme of the *pluperfect*:

<i>Singular.</i>		<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	<i>asuf</i> , <i>-suf</i> .	<i>asun</i> , <i>-sun</i> .
2	„ <i>asus</i> , <i>-sus</i> .	<i>asure</i> , <i>-sure</i> .
3	„ <i>asas</i> , <i>-sas</i> , <i>as</i> .	<i>asur</i> , <i>-sur</i> (<i>sur</i> , <i>so</i>).

N.B.—Bellew and Leech have mistaken this tense for the perfect.

d. *The Formation of the Perfect*

is peculiar, *un* being added to the past participle if it end in a consonant; if in a vowel, merely the letter *-n*. To the past participle thus formed, is added the verb substantive in its present tense.

The scheme of *the perfect* is then :

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	<i>un-ut, -n-ut.</i>	<i>un-un, -n-un.</i>
2 ,,	<i>un-us, -n-us.</i>	<i>un-ure, -n-ure.</i>
3 ,,	<i>un-ē, -n-ē.</i>	<i>un-ō, -n-ō.</i>

N.B.—This formation of participle is entirely of Dravidian character, because even in the Tamil (Caldwell, p. 393) we find *i-in* as the sign of the *past*. Originally, therefore, the terminal *un* was nothing but a past participle; but as the Brahúi has developed other forms for its past participle, it uses this old form for the perfect tense.

The following is the formation of all the tenses of the *affirmative* verb in the *active voice*.

Infinitive : *خَنگَ khan-ing* 'to see.'¹

Imperative: 2nd Person Sing. *خَن khan* or *خَنَكْ khán-ak* 'see thou.'

2nd Person Plur. *خَنبو khan-bō* 'see ye.'

A. Tenses composed with the Infinitive and the Verbal Root.

a. WITH THE INFINITIVE.

1. *Present continuous* (? or *aorist*).*Singular.*

- 1 Pers. *خَنگَ تِي اُتْ khaning-tī ut* 'I am seeing'
 2 ,, *خَنگَ تِي اسْ khaning-tī us.* etc.
 3 ,, *خَنگَ تِي ئِي khaning-tī ē.*

Plural.

- 1 Pers. *خَنگَ تِي اُنْ khaning-tī un.*
 2 ,, *خَنگَ تِي اُرِيْ khaning-tī ure.*
 3 ,, *خَنگَ تِي اُرِاوْ khaning-tī ur, ō.*

¹ There is only one form of the infinitive in the Brahúi.

b. WITH THE VERBAL ROOT.

2. *Present indefinite or Potential.*

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	خَنَوِ <i>khán-iv</i> ¹ 'I may see.'	خَنِنِ <i>khán-in</i> .
2 „	خَنِسِ <i>khán-is</i> .	خَنِرِ <i>khán-ire</i> .
3 „	خَنِیِ <i>khán-e</i> .	خَنِرِ <i>khán-ir</i> .

3. *Present definite.*

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	خَنَوَدِ <i>khán-iva</i> 'I see.'	خَنِئِدِ <i>khán-ina</i> .
2 „	خَنِسَدِ <i>khán-isa</i> .	خَنِرِیِ <i>khán-irē</i> .
3 „	خَنِگِ <i>khán-ik</i> .	خَنِرَدِ <i>khán-ira</i> . ²

4. *Simple Future.*

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1. Pers.	خَنَوَتِ <i>khānō-t</i> ³ 'I shall see.'	خَنَوَنِ <i>khānō-n</i> .
2. „	خَنَوَسِ <i>khānō-s</i> .	خَنَوَرِیِ <i>khānō-rē</i> .
3. „	خَنَوَدِ <i>khānō-e</i> .	خَنَوَرِ <i>khānō-r</i> .

5. *Compound Future.*

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	خَنَوُسَتِ <i>khānō-sut</i> 'I shall have seen.'	خَنَوُسِنِ <i>khānō-sun</i> .
2 „	خَنَوُسَسِ <i>khānō-sus</i>	خَنَوُسَرِیِ <i>khānō-surē</i> .
3 „	خَنَوُسَسِ <i>khānō-sas</i>	خَنَوُسَرِ <i>khānō-sur</i> .

B. Tenses composed with the participle of the Preterite.

6. *The Simple Past Tense.*α. *Ending in a Consonant.*

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	خَلَكْتِ <i>khálk-ut</i> 'I struck.'	خَلَكْنِ <i>khálk-un</i> .
2 „	خَلَكْسِ <i>khálk-us</i>	خَلَكْرِیِ <i>khálk-ure</i> .
3 „	{ خَلَكْ <i>khálk</i> خَلَكْتِ <i>khálk-ak</i>	{ خَلَكْرِ <i>khálk-ur</i> . خَلَكَرِ <i>khálk-ō</i> . }

¹ *khán-iv*, *khálk-ut* etc., the accent is Dr. Trumpp's. See footnote, p. 91.² We find also written خَنِوَا *khán-evā* and pronounced accordingly. Bux, however, gives the above form.³ On Bux's authority.

β. Ending in a Vowel.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	ځناټ <i>khanā-ṭ</i> 'I saw,'	ځنان <i>khanā-n</i>
2 „	ځناس <i>khanā-s</i>	ځناری <i>khanā-re.</i>
3 „	{ ځنا <i>khanā</i> ځناک <i>ḥhanā-k</i>	{ ځنار <i>khanā-r.</i>

7. *The Imperfect.*

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	ځناټه <i>khanā-ṭ-a.</i>	ځنانه <i>khan-ā-n-a.</i>
2 „	ځناسه <i>khanā-s-a.</i>	ځناری <i>khanā-re.</i>
3 „	ځناکه <i>khanā-ka.</i>	ځناره <i>khanā-ra.</i>

8. *Pluperfect.*

α. Ending in a Consonant.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	ځلگست <i>khalk-asuṭ</i> 'I had struck.'	ځلگسڼ <i>khalk-asun.</i>
2 „	ځلگس <i>khalk-asus</i>	ځلگسری <i>khalk-āsūrē.</i>
3 „	ځلگسس <i>khalk-asas</i>	ځلگسر <i>khalk-asur.</i>

β. Ending in a Vowel.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	ځناست <i>khanā-sut.</i>	ځناسڼ <i>khanā-sun.</i>
2 „	ځناس <i>khanā-sus.</i>	ځناسری <i>khanā-surē.</i>
3 „	ځناسس <i>khanā-sas.</i>	ځناسر <i>khanā-sur.</i>

9. *Perfect.*

α. Ending in a Consonant.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	ځلگښت <i>khalk-un-uṭ</i> 'I have struck.'	ځلگښڼ <i>khalk-un-un.</i>
2 „	ځلگښ <i>khalk-un-us</i>	ځلگښری <i>khalk-ūn-urē.</i>
3 „	ځلگښی <i>khalk-un-ē</i>	ځلگښو <i>khalk-un-ō.</i>

β. Ending in a Vowel.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	خَنَانْت <i>khanā-n-ut</i> 'I have seen.'	خَنَانُ <i>khanā-n-un.</i>
2 „	خَنَانْس <i>khanā-n-us</i>	خَنَانَرِي <i>khanā-n-urē.</i>
3 „	خَنَانِي <i>khanā-n-ē</i>	خَنَانَو <i>khanā-n-ō.</i>

From the verbal root two verbal nouns are derived: the one is the participle present declinable, and the other is the indeclinable gerund of the present. In those verbs where the imperative ends in *ak*, or where *th* was added to the root, which addition seems, likewise, to denote an emphasis, these terminals must be dropped.

The declinable present participle is formed by adding *ōk* (sometimes *ōk-ā*, *ok-ō*) to the verbal root, e.g. خَنَوْتُ *khan-ōk* 'seeing,' from خَنَ *khan-ing* 'to see;,' کَنَ *kan-ing* (imperative *kar*), تَوَلَوْتُ *tul-ōk* 'doing;,' تَوَلُ *tul-ing* (imper. *tul-th*), خَلَوْتُ *khal-ōk* 'striking.' Examples: 'A man who will sit in that house;,' اِس دِي اِس نصيحت کروکا پاری 'One day the preacher said' (Bux, p. 127, l. 20); اسی بندغ اِس درخت نا کیرغان تولوک خنا اوژان هَرَف که دا ملک نا بادشاه 'He saw a man sitting under a tree and asked him what like is the king of this country, is he a tyrant or is he just?' (Bux, p. 126, l. 14).

The *second participle* of the present, or rather, the indeclinable gerund, is formed by adding to the verbal root the affixes *esa* or *isa*. Bux, at page 15, says that the affix is simply سی *se*. The terminal *e* seems identical with *ah*. Example: انتی که پِگا صَبَح تو دمو وقت که مَن مَعَل نا سَوَاراک سَنگَرَد نا پارغائی تینا گِلِیتی دودینسه بَسَر وتوار کریسه نغاردتی خَلِیسه 'Because on the morrow, in the morning, at the time when some horsemen of the Mogul came galloping on their horses towards Singarh, and making a noise, beating the drums, swinging their swords, arrived near the fort' (Nicolson, page 33, l. 1-3); فرباد کریسه دوعیسه زبیده نا مَوْنغائی هِنَا 'Complaining, sobbing she went to Zubaidah' (Nicolson, p. 19, l. 5).

§ 9. THE ACTIVE NEGATIVE FORM OF THE VERB.

The special characteristic by which the Brahuī becomes stamped as a Dravido-Turanian language is the *negative form* of its verb. It is formed by adding the negative affix to the verbal root and then inflecting the personal terminations in the usual manner.

The Brahuī, moreover, has this peculiarity that it possesses two negative affixes, namely, one for those tenses which are formed by the past participle, and another for those compounded with the verbal root.

N.B.—The observations made on this point by Bellew, Leech, and Finzi are wrong.

A. Tenses Compounded with the Negative Form of the Verbal Root.

The *infinitive* seems to be absent, being considered as a noun.

The imperative mood and the tenses of the present, future, and of the *futurum exactum*, take up the syllable *pa*. The negative, respectively prohibitive form of the imperative mood, stands therefore thus :

2nd person singular *پا pa*. 2nd person plural *پو pō*.

Example: sing. *خَنِپَه khán-pa* 'see not!' plur. *خَنِپَو khán-pa-bō*.

If in the imperative, the root end in *r* or غ (γ), then the terminal is dropped, e.g. *کَر kar* 'do thou,' prohibitive *کَپَه ká-pa*¹ (instead of *kar-pa*), plural *کَپَو ká-pa-bō*; *شاغ shāγ* 'pour in,' prohibitive *شَپَه shā-pa*.

If *p* is placed between two vowels, it is often changed into *f*, e.g. *بَافَه bá-fa* 'come not' (بَر 'come'), *مَافَه má-fa* 'be not,' instead of *مَپَه mar-pa*.

The imperative affixes *ak* and *th* are always dropped before the negative, e.g. *دَرک dár-ak* 'take,' prohibitive *دَپَه dá-pa*; *خَلتَه khal-th* 'strike,' prohibitive *خَلپَه khál-pa*.

In many verbs an *e* is placed before the negative affix, e.g. *بِس bis* 'boil,' prohibitive *بِسِپَه bīsē-pa*; *بِن bin* 'hear,' prohib. *بِنِپَه binē-pa*; *تولتَه tūl-th* 'sit,' prohibitive *تولِپَه tūlē-pa*.

¹ *Ká-pa*, etc. The accent is Dr. Trumpp's.

Some are quite irregular, e.g. ایتی *ete* 'give' (from تینک), prohibitive تیڤه *tī-fa*

The inflection of the present indefinite is as follows :

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers. <i>pa-r</i>	<i>pa-n</i>
2 „ <i>p-is (-es)</i>	<i>p-ire (ere)</i>
3 „ <i>p (i p)</i>	<i>pa-s</i>

The peculiarities here are : the termination of the first person in *pa-r*, which, in accordance with the general rule, ought to be *p-iv*. The third person singular ends in *p(i-p)*, instead of *p-e*. In the 3rd person plural the *pa-s* is in reality a modification of the original *r* into *s*, in order to avoid confusion with the first person of the singular. We have met with this change of *r* into *s* in other Brahúi words already.

The *present definite* has the same affixes with the addition of terminal *a*, to which, however, in the 3rd person singular, *k* is added. The form is this :

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers. <i>pa-r-a.</i>	<i>pa n-a.</i>
2 „ <i>p-is-a (-es-a).</i>	<i>p-ire (-ere).</i>
3 „ <i>pa-k.</i>	<i>pa-s-a.</i>

The Simple Future.

Here we should expect the ending in *p-ot*, *p-ōs*, etc. ; but it is not so, as we notice by the following form :

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers. <i>pa-r-ō-t.</i>	<i>pa-r-ō-n.</i>
2 „ <i>pa-r-ō-s.</i>	<i>pa-r-ō-re.</i>
3 „ <i>pa-r-ō-e.</i>	<i>pa-r-ō-r.</i>

The *r* here appears as a formative affix of the negative verb.

The Compound Future.

is similar to the simple future, since, instead of the present of the

substantive verb, its past tense is used as in the affirmative form. Therefore :

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	<i>pa-r-ō-suf.</i>	<i>pa-r-ō-sun.</i>
2 „	<i>pa-r-ō-sus.</i>	<i>pa-r-ō-sure.</i>
3 „	<i>pa-r-ō-sas.</i>	<i>pa-r-ō-sur.</i>

CONJUGATION OF THE PROHIBITIVE VERB خَنگ *khan-ing.*

1. Imperative.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
2 Pers.	خَنپَه <i>khan-pa</i> 'see thou not.'	خَنپَو <i>khan-pa-bō.</i> ¹

2. Present indefinite.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	خَنپَر <i>khan-pa-r</i> 'I may not see.'	خَنپَن <i>khan-pa-n.</i>
2 „	خَنپِس <i>khan-p-is.</i>	خَنپِيس <i>khan-p-ire.</i>
3 „	خَنپ <i>khan-p.</i>	خَنپَس <i>khan-p-a-s.</i>

N B.—It should be noticed that the prohibitives *تَغَه*, *بَغَه*, *کِه*, etc., are used in the present tense as well; thus, *کِر* *ka-par* 'I may not, I will not do it.' Example: *ای بِنک کِر* 'I cannot come,' literally, 'I make no coming' (Bux, p. 66, bottom line). The following should also be observed: *تِف* *ti-f* 'he may not give,' *بَف* *ba-f* 'he may not come,' etc.

3. Present definite.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	خَنپَرَد <i>khan-par-a</i> 'I see not.'	خَنپَنَه <i>khan-pan-a.</i>
2 „	خَنپِسَه <i>khan-pis-a.</i>	خَنپِرِی <i>khan-pire.</i>
3 „	خَنپِک <i>khan-pa-k.</i>	خَنپِسَه <i>khan-pas-a.</i>

4. Simple Future.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	خَنپَرَوَت <i>khan-par-ōt</i> 'I shall not see.'	خَنپَرَوَن <i>khan-par-ōn.</i>
2 „	خَنپَرِوس <i>khan-par-ōs.</i>	خَنپَرِوَرِی <i>khan-par-ōre.</i>
3 „	خَنپَرِوَه <i>khan-par-ōe.</i>	خَنپَرِوَر <i>khan-par-ōr.</i>

¹ *khan-pa*, etc. The accent is Dr. Trumpp's, he omits it in the future tenses !

5. Compound Future.

	Singular.	Plural.
1 Pers.	خَنپَرِوَسْتِ <i>khan-par-ōsut</i>	خَنپَرِوَسَن <i>khan-par-ōsun.</i>
	'I shall not have seen.'	
2 „	خَنپَرِوَسَس <i>khan-par-ōsus.</i>	خَنپَرِوَسَرِی <i>khan-par-ōsure.</i>
3 „	خَنپَرِوَسَس <i>khan-par-ōsas.</i>	خَنپَرِوَسَرِی <i>khan-par-ōsur.</i>

N.B.—There is some difficulty in connecting the Brahui negative affix *pa* with the negative affixes used in the South Dravidian dialects, which are *a* and *ka*, *ku* (*da*, *du*), according to Caldwell (pp. 363-365), and therefore require further elucidation.

B. Negative Tenses Compounded with the Past Participle :

They are the *simple past*, the *imperfect*, the *pluperfect*, the *perfect*.

The negative particle here is *ta*, and not *pa*, as above. This leads to the supposition that these two forms are identical in their origin, and also that the Brahui *ta*, *pa* are derived from the Dravidian *ka*, through a change in the pronunciation.

The past participle has a peculiar formation, in taking up the negative affix, which renders the original root almost undistinguishable.

If the past participle end in a vowel, it is dropped and *ta* affixed to the root; then follows the affix of the past participle, which is pronounced *au* or *ao*, instead of simply *a*, e.g. تِکھا *tikh-ā*, negative تِکھا تِا *tikh-t-au*.

Participles ending in *r* or *s* drop these terminals before taking up negative *t*, e.g. کَرِی *kar-ē* 'he did' becomes کَرِو تِا *ka-t-au*; پَارِی *pār-ē* 'he said' پَارِو تِا *pā-t-au*; بَس *bas* 'he came' بَتِو تِا *ba-t-au*.

If the past participle end in a double consonant, the last is dropped, e.g. کِشِک *khask* 'he died,' negative کِشِو تِا *khas-t-au*; هَلِک *halk* (from هَلِگ) 'he took,' negative هَلِو تِا *hal-t-au*.

This is the scheme of the negative tenses connected with the past participle :

The Simple Past Tense.

	Singular.	Plural.
1 Pers.	<i>t-av¹-at.</i>	<i>t-av-an.</i>
2 „	<i>t-av-is (-es).</i>	<i>t-av-ire (-ere).</i>
3 „	<i>t-au.</i>	<i>t-av-as.²</i>

¹ *au* before a vowel becomes *av*.

² *r* changes into *s*.

Imperfect.

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers. <i>t-av-aṭ-a</i>	<i>t-av-an-a</i>
2 „ <i>t-av-is-a</i>	<i>t-av-ire</i>
3 „ <i>t-av-ak-a</i>	<i>t-av-as-a</i>

Pluperfect.

1 Pers. <i>t-av-asuṭ</i>	<i>t-av-asun</i>
2 „ <i>t-av-asus</i>	<i>t-av-asure</i>
3 „ <i>t-av-asas</i>	<i>t-av-asur</i>

Perfect.

1 Pers. <i>ta-n-uṭ</i>	<i>t-an-un</i>
2 „ <i>ta-n-us</i>	<i>ta-n-ure</i>
3 „ <i>t-a-nē</i>	<i>ta-n-o</i>

Here is an example of the conjugation of these *prohibitive tenses* :

6. *The Simple Past Tense.*

1 Pers. <i>khán-t-áv-aṭ</i> خنتوت	<i>khán-t-áv-an</i> ¹ خنتون
‘I saw not,’ ‘I did not see.’	
2 „ <i>khán-t-áv-is (-es)</i> خنتويس	<i>khán-t-áv-ire (-ere)</i> خنتورى
3 „ <i>khán-t-au</i> خنتو	<i>khán-t-av-as</i> خنتوس

Examples : ‘He had said that, yesterday I could not come’ (Bux, p. 70, l. 3 from below), ‘O Father! atest thou nothing at the King’s feast?’ (Nicolson, p. 14, l. 4 from below), ‘All the wise men could not make out its meaning,’ ‘He did not listen to me’ (Bux, 90, bottom line), ‘Nothing came into his hand’ (Nicolson, p. 2, l. 6 from below).

7. *Imperfect.*

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers. <i>khán-t-áv-aṭa</i> خنتوته	<i>khán-t-áv-ana</i> خنتونه
2 „ <i>khán-t-áv-isa</i> خنتويسه	<i>khán-t-áv-ire</i> خنتورى
3 „ <i>khán-t-áv-aka</i> خنتوکه	<i>khán-t-áv-asa</i> خنتوسه

¹ See footnote page 91. Dr. Trumpp omits the accents in the *imperfect* and *pluperfect* tenses.

N.B.—As in the Persian language, the imperfect is used as a conditional as well. Example : اگر نی تینا چہُنکئی یاد کریسہ ‘ If thou wert to remember thy childhood, thou wouldst not do me such violence ’ (Nicolson, p. 24, bottom line).

8. *Pluperfect.**Singular.**Plural.*1 Pers. خنتوست *khan-t-áv-asut*خنتوسن *khan-t-áv-asun.*

‘ I had not seen.’

2 „ خنتوسس *khan-t-áv-asus.*خنتوسری *khan-t-áv-ásure.*3 „ خنتوسس *khan-t-áv-asas.*خنتوسر *khan-t-áv-asur.*9. *Perfect.*1 Pers. خنتنت *khan-ta-n-ut* ‘ I have not seen.’ خنتن *khan-ta-n-un.*2 „ خنتنس *khan-ta-n-us.*خنتنری *khan-ta-n-ure*¹3 „ خنتنی *khan-ta-n-e.*خنتنو *khan-ta-n-o.*

Example : اسکا بٹنی او دا *ō dā iskā batane* ‘ He has not yet come ’ (Bux, p. 84, l. 10); ای تینا کاریمی برابر گئٹت *‘ I have not done my business well ’* (Nicolson, p. 4, l. 4 from below); نیوا کہ او جواب تِس نَزَة الفواد کھَسَسَنی *‘ May it not be that he gave the answer: Nazzat-ul-Fuād is not dead ’* (Nicolson, Abu’l Hasan, p. 21, l. 4 from below).

§ 10. III. THE FORMATION OF THE VERB CAUSATIVE.

The formation of the causative form is, as a rule, effected by the addition of *if* (*ef*) to the verbal root; e.g. کُنگ *kun-ing* ‘ to eat,’ کنیفنگ *kun-ef-ing* ‘ to make eat, to feed,’ Hungarian *enni, et-etni*.

Bellew speaks of a double causative form, for instance, *khuling* ‘ to be afraid,’ *khulfing* ‘ to frighten,’ *khulifing* ‘ to make frightened.’ Dr. Trumpp thinks this a mistake.

The conjugation of the *causative* is otherwise quite regular. It should be observed, however, that the past participle always ends in *ē*, as has been noted already.

¹ Dr. Trumpp transfers the accent to the second syllable, possibly a printer’s error.

THE CONJUGATION.¹*Infinitive.*

رَسِينِڱ *rás-ef-ing* 'to cause to arrive.'

Imperative.

Sing. رَسِينِڱ *rás-ef (-if)* 'cause thou to arrive.'

Plur. رَسِينِڱو *rás-ef-bō (if bō)* 'cause ye to arrive.'

A.

1. *Continuous Present (Aorist).*

رَسِينِڱ تِي اَت *rás-ef-ing tī ut* 'I am causing to arrive.'

2. *Present indefinite (Potential).*

رَسِينِڱو *rás-ef-iv* 'I may cause to arrive.'

3. *Present definite.*

رَسِينِڱو *rás-ef-iva* 'I cause to arrive.'

4. *Simple Future.*

رَسِينِڱوَت *rás-ef-ōt* 'I shall cause to arrive.'

5. *Compound Future.*

رَسِينِڱوَسُوَت *rás-ef-ōsut* 'I shall have caused to arrive.'

B.

THE PAST PARTICIPLE :

رَسِينِڱِي *rás-ef-ē.*

6. *Simple Past Tense.*

رَسِينِڱِيَت *rás-ef-ē-t*, etc. 'I caused to arrive.'

7. *Imperfect.*

رَسِينِڱِيَتِه *rás-ef-ē-t-a*, etc. 'I was causing to arrive.'

8. *Pluperfect.*

رَسِينِڱِيَسُوَت *rás-ef-ē-sut*, etc. 'I had caused to arrive.'

9. *Perfect.*

رَسِينِڱِيَن *rás-ef-ē-n-ut*, etc. 'I have caused to arrive.'

¹ The accents and diacritical marks are Dr. Trumpp's.

Examples.

اودی اَرغ کَنیفَنگ کی دَرِیکَ ‘he took him to give him bread to eat’ (Nicolson, Abu’l-Hasan, p. 2, l. 7).

‘put him on my bed’ (*ibid.* p. 16, l. 2).
 ای تینا کوسی هَرِیو تینا ریشی کَہِسیفِیو ‘I shall tear my shirt, destroy my beard’ (*ibid.* p. 18, l. 2 from below).

‘they give me so much pain that I am tormented by them’ (*ibid.* p. 5, l. 8).

‘I fear that by reason of her fear for her life she will do me damage’ (Nicolson, p. 3, ll. 8, 9).

‘afterwards they lit some torches’ (*ibid.* p. 32, l. 5 from below).

‘the female slaves made him drink much wine’ (Nicolson, Abu’l Hasan, p. 11, l. 1).

The causative also has a past participle in *ōk* (*ōk-ā*, *ōk-ō*) and a gerund in *esa*, *isa*, viz. رَسِیفُول *rās-if-ōk* ‘one who makes to arrive,’ and رَسِیفِيسَ *rās-ef-isa* ‘in the act of making to arrive.’ Example: زَغَمَاتِی چَرِیفِيسَ کُوت نا خُرْک رَسِنگار ‘swinging their swords, they came near the fortress’ (Nicolson, p. 33, l. 3).

That the causative verb has a negative form also cannot be doubted, although no proper example exists among the material at hand. It should, however, be as follows: imperfect, رَسِیفِيسَ *rās-ef-pa*; present indefinite, رَسِیفِر *rās-ef-par*; past, رَسِیفِتَوْت *rās-ef-t-av-at*; perfect, رَسِیفِتَنْت *rās-ef-ta-n-ut*, etc.

§ 11. IV. THE PASSIVE FORM.

The passive is formed by the addition of *ing* to the simple root, which is afterwards inflected regularly through all the tenses. To all appearance the passive root is the same as the infinitive of the active verb, although it has no intimate relation with it.

The Dravidian idioms have no special affixes for the passive voice, and are therefore compelled to define the passive meaning in sundry ways; the Turanian languages, on the contrary, possess many such particles. It seems that the Brahúi terminal *ing* stands nearest to the Turkish reflective affix *i-n*, which, in verbal roots ending in a vowel or in *l*, is used as an affix for the passive voice. This passive formation is a special characteristic of the Brahúi tongue.

Whether an infinitive of the passive form exists or not, is uncertain; but, judging from the existence of a *continuous* present tense, we may assume that there is an infinitive of the passive in the Brahúi language. *Imperative* it has none.

The Passive Form.

Infinitive خَنگَنگ *khan-ing-ing* 'to be seen.'

A.

1. *Continuous Present tense.*

اَتِ خَنگَنگ تى *khan-ing-ing-tī ut* 'I am being seen.'

2. *Present indefinite.*

خَنگَنگ *khan-ing-iv* 'I may be seen,' etc. Examples:

هر وقت كه كَسَس بندخ خون نا تُپَمَت تى تُولَنئى 'When a man is brought up on a charge of murder' (Bux, p. 92, l. 15).

كُنگ نا ساعتِ خواچنگ نا جگهءِ پاك گِنكى 'The bedroom should be cleaned out at breakfast-time' (Bux, p. 74, l. 14).

هندا خاطران كه ايقك حساب تى زياده خننگير 'In order that they may appear beyond their number' (Nicolson, p. 32, l. 5 from below).

3. *Present definite.*

خَنگِيوه *khan-ing-eva* 'I am seen,' etc., *e.g.*

گُترا هراوقت كه دُزاتا رَنَدَت خننگِيوه سرکار نا لشکر ایتا رندت چنار 'Afterwards, as often as the backs of the robbers were seen, the troops of the Government went after them' (Nicolson, Qalāt, p. 3, l. 5).

4. *Simple Future.*

خَننگوت *khan-ing-ōt* 'I shall be seen,' etc., *e.g.*

اگر نی دُوارہ دُوهنو کاریم گروس ته خَلنگو نی 'If you do such a thing again, you shall be beaten' (Bux, p. 82, l. 11).

5. *Compound Future.*

خَننگوست *khan-ing-ōsut* 'I shall have been seen.'

B.

6. *Simple Past Tense.*

خَننگات *khan-ing-ā-t* 'I was seen,' etc., *e.g.*

‘At that time a sword struck his hand, and one of his fingers was cut off’ (Nicolson, p. 32, l. 8).

‘Some great chieftains of Sirāj-ud-daulah were killed’ (Nicolson, p. 29, l. 7 from below).

7. *Imperfect.*

خَننگاتہ *khan-ing-ā-ṭa* 'I was seen,' etc.

8. *Pluperfect.*

خَننگاست *khan-ing-ā-sut* 'I have been seen.'

9. *Perfect.*

خَننگانت *khan-ing-ā-n-ut* 'I had been seen,' *e.g.*

کئدن مَس کہ ایفک اسی شہر نا دروازہ شای چاری مَنگ نا گماہی کَلنگانو 'It so happened that they had been caught at the gate of a city on suspicion of being spies' (Nicolson, p. 22, l. 5).

It should be stated that the Brahúi uses an inflecting passive participle of the preterite form, which coincides with the present participle of the active form. Example: خَنوک *khan-ōk* (-*kā*, *kō*) 'seen,' کُروک 'done'; this was overlooked by Leech, Bellew, and Bux; but the following examples place the fact beyond doubt:

‘The sticks are exposed for sale’
(Bux, p. 110, l. 13).

‘اَسْت زنجير است در پيچان اونا ليخ ٿي تَفُوک اس تُولوک اس
chain was tied to his neck from a window; he was sitting’
(Nicolson, p. 13, l. 2).

‘کمو وقت گِتراس چٿس اونا ليخ ٿي تَفُوک اس يا آها
At that time was there any cord round his neck or not?’ (Bux, p. 94,
l. 14).

اَنٿسِي که کنا نوشته کروکا کاغدی سوا کنیان پين کَسَس خوانيپٿ
‘Because that, by me written letter, nobody can read but my-
self’ (Bux, p. 118, l. 11).

‘اونا خَنٿي تَفُوک خَنا اونا مون پٿيان پَرُوک خَما
She saw his eyes bound, and his face swollen from the bandage’ (Nicolson,
Abu'l-Hasan, p. 23, l. 6).

Since in the forms adduced in the above examples we find no vestige of the passive affix *ing*, there seems to be no doubt that the formation in *ōk*, although used in the passive sense, is really identical with the present participle of the active form. The Brahúi therefore follows, in this respect, the lines of the Dravidian idioms, which employ the participles of the active form in a passive sense.

Whether a gerund, terminating in *isa*, be formed from the passive voice, cannot as yet be proved by an example; but if it exist, it will stand thus: *خَننگيسه khan-ing-ēsa*. Nor has Dr. Trumpp found an example of the negative form in the passive voice, although there is nothing to stand in the way of such a formation. It would appear thus: *خَننگير khan-ing-par*.

Dr. Trumpp draws attention to yet another form, which looks like a gerund; but from the only example he had met, he does not dare to determine its nature, namely the word *کرو* in this sentence ‘ہی دھون کاریم اس اری کہ کرو اری یا نی گتراس خواہیس
have you such business that has to be done, or desirest thou perhaps anything’ (Nicolson, Abu'l-Hasan, p. 5, l. 3).

§ 12. AUXILIARY VERBS.

1. THE SUBSTANTIVE VERB "TO BE."

Imperative (none).1. *Present definite.*

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	اٲ <i>ut</i> (or <i>ot</i> ¹) 'I am.'	اُن <i>un</i> 'we are.'
2 „	اُس <i>us</i> 'thou art.'	اُرى <i>ure</i> 'you are.'
3 „	اى <i>ē</i> 'he is.'	او (اُر) <i>o</i> (<i>ur</i>) 'they are.'

Obs. 1.—When this tense is connected with a noun, then the initial ٲ is dropped, as in the Persian, supposing the noun to end in a consonant; but if the noun end in a vowel, or in & *ah*, in such case, as a rule, the ٲ remains. Example :

Singular.

اى مارٲ *ī mār-ut* 'I am a boy.'
 نى مارُس *nī mār-rus* 'thou art a boy.'
 او ماری *ō mār-e* 'he is a boy.'

Plural.

نن مارن *nan mār-un* 'we are boys.'
 نم مارُرى *nom mār-ure* 'you are boys.'
 اوفک مارو *ōfk mār-o* 'they are boys.'

Example : اى سپاهى اٲ *ī sipāhī ut* 'I am a soldier,' etc.

Obs. 2.—There is another root used in the present tense which differs in so far from اٲ *ut*, etc., that it does not occur as a personal ending of the verbs, nor does it stand as an affix of the nouns, but takes its place independently. It is the root *āre*, which, in its turn, is inflected with the aid of اٲ, being related to the Dravidian *ir*.

*Present definite.**Singular.*

اى اريٲ *ī dre-t* 'I am, I exist.'
 نى اريس *nī dre-s* 'thou existeth.'
 او ارى اسى سى *ō dre, āse, se* 'he exists.'

¹ Bux writes *o* throughout.

Plural.

نن ارین *nan áre-n* 'we are, we exist.'
 نم اریری *nom áre-re* 'you exist.'
 اوڤک اریر *ōfk áre-r* 'they exist.'

Obs. 3.—Leech's and Bellew's present tense and aorist in *asitut* is a mistake : such verbal formation is impossible in the Brahúi.

The *negative* form of اُت and اریٲ is effected with the root اف 'it is not,' to which are added the terminals of the substantive verb اُت *ut*; in the 3rd person singular, however, *ak* is added, as in the past tense, or the root stands by itself. It is evident that *af* stands in relation to the negative *pa*.

*Example of the Negative form.**Singular.*

اُت ای اف *áf-at* 'I am not.'

اُت نی افیس *áf-es* 'thou art not.'

اُت او افک *áf-akoraf* 'he is not.'

Plural.

نن اف *áf-an* 'we are not.'

نم افیری *áf-ere* 'you are not.'

افک اف *áf-as* 'they are not.'

The *simple past* of اُت is formed with the root اس *as*, to which the terminations of the verb substantive are added, except in the 3rd person, which, as in the past tense, stands either by itself, as the root does, or takes the termination *ak* or *as*.

*The Simple Past Tense.**Singular.*

اُسٲ *ás-ut* 'I was.'

اُسٲ *ás-us* 'thou wert.'

اُسک *ás-ak*
 اُس *ás-as*
 اُس *ás*

} 'he was.'

Plural.

اُنن *ás-un* 'we were.'

اُنری *ás-ure* 'you were.'

اُنر *ás-ur* 'they were.'

The *negative form* of the *past tense* appears in two aspects.

a. Bux gives the 3rd person singular as *allau* = *alla-o*, but his inflection is not regular; if it were, it should stand *allav-at*, *allav-as*, etc. Bux's form is this :

*Singular.*ای الانت *ā alla-ot* 'I was not.'نی النس *nā alla-os* 'thou wast not.'او الو *ō alla-o* 'he was not.'*Plural.*نن الان *nan alla-on* 'we were not.'نم الارى *nom alla-ore* 'ye were not.'افک الاور *ofk alla-or* 'they were not.'

N.B.—Here is a discrepancy between the vernacular and the English transcription. If the former be correct, the latter should stand thus : *allav-at*, etc. Trumpp left it undecided.

Nicolson presents us with another regular form of the *past tense*, in which *alla* appears as a participle united to the signification of the present tense, to which the *past* است is joined. The inflexion of this form should stand thus :

*Singular.**Plural.*1 Pers. است الوست *allāv-asut* 'I was not.' الوسن *allāv-asun*.¹2 „ الوسس *allāv-asas* الوسرى *allāv-asure*.3 „ الوسک *allāv-asak* الوسر *allāv-asur*.

Example : *درو ای ابو الحسن است الوست* 'Yesterday I was Abu'l Hasan, was I not?' (Nicolson, p. 8, l. 4); *همیفتک بنگال نا* 'These men were not of the cowards of the Province of Bengal' (Nicolson, p. 29, l. 1-2).

II. THE VERB مَیْنِگ *man-ing* 'TO BECOME.'

All the tenses wanting to the verb substantive are made up from the verb *man-ing*. Its root is *mar*, which in the past tense changes into *mas*, and is inflected in a regular manner.

Infinitive مَیْنِگ 'to become.'*Imperative.*2 Pers. *sing.* مَرک *mar, mār-ak* 'be or become thou.'2 Pers. *plur.* مَبو *mā-bō* 'be or become ye.'¹ See footnote, page 91.

Prohibitive Form.

2 Pers. *sing.* مَنه *má-fa*¹ 'do not be or do not become thou.'

2 Pers. *plur.* مَنبِو *má-fa-bō* 'do not be or do not become ye.'

A.

1. *Presens continuum* (deest).2. *Present indefinite.**Singular.*

1 Pers. اى مَريو *ī mār-ev* 'I may become.'

2 „ نى مَريس *nī mār-es* 'thou mayest become.'

3 „ او مَري *ō mār-e* 'he may become.'

Plural.

1 Pers. نن مَرين *nan mār-en* 'we may become.'

2 „ نم مَريرى *nom mār-ere* 'you may become.'

3 „ افك مَريِر *ofk mār-er* 'they may become.'

N.B.—Misled by Leech, Bellew mistakes this for the simple future.

In the *negative* voice the *r* is dropped before the termination *par*, and the letter *p*, standing between two vowels, changes into *f*.

*Singular.**Plural.*

1 Pers. اى مَنر *ī má-fa-r* 'I may not be or become.' نن مَنن *nan má-fa-n* 'we may not be or become.'

2 „ نى مَنس *nī má-fi-s* نم مَنرى *nom má-f-ire*

3 „ او مَنف *ō maf* افك مَنس *ofk má-fa-s*

3. *Present definite.**Singular.**Plural.*

1 Pers. اى مَريو *ī mār-ev-a*
'I may be or become.'

نن مَرينه *nan mār-en-a*
'we may be or become.'

2 „ نى مَريس *nī mār-es-a*

نم مَريرى *nom mār-ere*

3 „ او مَريك *ō mār-e-k*

افك مَريِر *ofk mār-er-a*

¹ See footnote, page 91.

Negative.

Singular.

- 1 Pers. ای مَفره *ī mā-fa-r-a*¹ 'I become not.'
 2 ,, نی مفسه *nī mā-f-is-a* 'thou becomest not.'
 3 ,, او مفاک *ō mā-fa-k* 'he becomes not.'

Plural.

- 1 Pers. نن مَفنه *nan mā-fa-n-a* 'we become not, etc.'
 2 ,, نم مفری *nom mā-f-ire*
 3 ,, افک مفسه *ofk mā-fa-s-a*

4. *Simple Future.**Singular.**Plural.*

- 1 Pers. ای مَروٲ *ī mar-ōṭ* 'I shall, will be, or I shall become,' etc. نن مرون *nan mar-ōn* 'we shall or will be or we shall become, etc.'
 2 ,, نی مروس *nī mar-ōs* نم مَروری *nom mar-ō-re*
 3 ,, او مَروء *ō mar-ō-e* افک مَروَر *ofk mar-ō-r*

Negative.

*Singular.**Plural.*

- 1 Pers. ای مَفرٲ *ī ma-far-ōṭ* 'I shall be or I shall not become,' etc. نن مَفرٲ *nan ma-far-ōn* 'we shall not be or we shall not become,' etc.
 2 ,, نی مَفرٲس *nī ma-far-ōs* نم مَفرٲری *nom ma-far-ō-re*
 3 ,, او مَفرٲء *ō ma-far-ō-e* افک مَفرٲَر *ofk ma-far-ō-r*

5. *Compound Future.**Singular.**Plural.*

- 1 Pers. ای مَروٲسٲ *ī mar-ō-suṭ* 'I shall have been or I shall become.' نن مَروٲسٲ *nan mar-ō-sun* 'we shall have been or we shall become.'
 2 ,, نی مَروٲسٲس *nī mar-ō-sus* نم مَروٲسٲری *nom mar-ō-surə*
 3 ,, او مَروٲسٲس *ō mar-ō-as* افک مَروٲسٲَر *ofk mar-ō-sur*

¹ See footnote, page 91.

Negative.

Singular.

Plural.

- 1 Pers. *nan má-far-ō-sun* نَن مَفَرُونَن
'I shall not have been or I shall not become,' etc.
- 2 „ *nom má-far-ō-sure* نَم مَفَرُونَرِی
'we shall not have been or we shall not become.'
- 3 „ *ofk má-far-ō-sur* اَفَك مَفَرُونِس
'they shall not have been or they shall not become.'

B.

6. *Simple Past Tense.*

Singular.

Plural.

- 1 Pers. ای مَسْتُت *ī mās-ut* 'I was,
or I became.' نن مَسَن *nan mās-un* 'we
were or we became.'
- 2 ,, نی مَسَس *nī mās-us* نم مَسَری *nom-mās-ure.*
- 3 ,, $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{او مَسَكْ} \\ \text{مَسَس} \\ \text{مَس} \end{array} \right.$ $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{ā mās-ak} \\ \text{mās-as} \\ \text{mās} \end{array} \right\}$ افك مَسَر *ofk mās-ur.*
 مَسو *mās-ō.*

Negative.

Singular.

Plural.

- | | | | | |
|---------|-------------------------------|-------------------------------|----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1 Pers. | آی متوت <i>ī má-t-av-at</i> | 'I was not, or I became not.' | نن متون <i>nan má-t-av-an</i> | 'we were not or we became not.' |
| 2 | نی متویس <i>nī má-t-av-es</i> | | نم متویری <i>nom ma-t-áv-ere</i> | |
| 3 | او متو <i>ō má-t-au</i> | | افک متور <i>ofk má-t-av-ar.</i> | |

7. Imperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

- 1 Pers. ای هسته *ī mās-ut-a* 'I was becoming,' etc. نن هسته *nan mās-un-a* 'we were becoming,' etc.
2 نی هسته *nī mās-us-a* نم هسته *nom mās-ure*
3 او هسته *ō mās-ak-a* افک هسته *ofk mās-ur-a*

Negative.

Singular.

Plural,

- 1 Pers. *āi ma-t-āv-aṭ-a* 'I was not becoming.' *nan ma-t-āv-an-a* 'we were not becoming.'
- 2 „ *nī ma-t-āv-as-a* *nom ma-t-āv-ere*
- 3 „ *ō ma-t-āv-ak-a* *ofk ma-t-āv-ar-a*

¹ See footnote, page 91.

8. *Pluperfect.**Singular.**Plural.*

- 1 Pers. مَسْسُتِ ای ī mās-asuṭ¹ 'I had been, or I had become,' etc. نن مَسْسِن nan mās-as-un 'we had been or we had become,' etc.

- 2 ,, نِی مَسْسِن nī mās-asus نم مَسْسِرِ nom mās-as-ure
 3 ,, { او مَسْسِن ō mās-asas } افک مَسْسِر ofk mās-as-ur
 مَسْس mās-as

Negative.

*Singular.**Plural.*

- 1 Pers. مَتُونِستِ ای ī ma-t-áv-asuṭ 'I had not been, or I had not become,' etc. نن مَتُونِن nan ma-t-áv-asun 'we had not been or we had not become,' etc.

- 2 ,, نِی مَتُونِس nī ma-t-áv-asus نم مَتُونِرِ nom ma-t-áv-ásure
 3 ,, او مَتُونِس ō ma-t-áv-asas افک مَتُونِر ofk ma-t-áv-asur

9. *Perfect.**Singular.**Plural.*

- 1 Pers. مَسْنِستِ ای ī mās-un-uṭ 'I have been, or I have become.' نن مَسْنِن nan mās-un-un 'we have been, or we have become.'

- 2 ,, نِی مَسْنِن nī mās-un-us نم مَسْنِرِ nom mās-un-ure
 3 ,, او مَسْنِن ō mās-un-e افک مَسْنِن ofk mās-un-ō

Negative.

*Singular.**Plural.*

- 1 Pers. مَتَنْتِ ای ī má-t-an-uṭ 'I have not been, or I have not become.' نن مَتَنْن nan má-t-an-un 'we have not been, or we have not become.'

- 2 ,, نِی مَتَنْن nī má-t-an-us نم مَتَنْرِ nom ma-t-án-ure
 3 ,, او مَتَنْن ō má-t-an-ē افک مَتَنْن ofk má-t-an-ō

The present participle is مَرُوك mar-ōk (-ōk-ā, -ōk-ō). The gerund should be مَرِيسه mar-ēsa.

With مانگ man-ing many compound verbs are formed, the same as with شدن shudan in Persian. Example : اوار مانگ arār

¹ See footnote, page 91.

man-ing 'to meet, to gather together' (جمع شدن); *bash man-ing* 'to rise'; *gum man-ing* 'to get lost' (گم شدن) *gum shudan* 'to get lost'), etc.

§ 13. IRREGULAR VERBS.

To conjugate a Brahúi verb it is necessary to know, besides the imperative, the prohibitive form and the past participle. In some instances, however, this is not sufficient, since the definite and indefinite present of the affirmative form are not derived from the imperative, but either the root is changed or another verb substituted. Such are in reality the irregular verbs in the Brahúi.

The following are the irregular verbs we most frequently meet with, i.e. *kan-ing* 'to do,' and *hin-ing* 'to go.'

I. *kan-ing* 'To do.'

Imperat. sing. *kár-ak*¹ 'do thou,' plur. *ká-bō* 'do ye;'
past. part. *kár-ē* 'done;'
prohibitive sing. *ká-pa* 'do not thou,' plur. *ka-pa-bō* 'do not ye.'
The present definite and indefinite are not formed from the root *kar*, but from *kē*.

Present indefinite.

Singular.

Plural.

- | | | |
|---------|---------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1 Pers. | <i>ī kē-v</i> 'I may do.' | <i>nan kē-n</i> 'we may do.' |
| 2 | <i>nī kē-s</i> | <i>nom kē-re</i> |
| 3 | <i>ō kē</i> | <i>ofk kē-r</i> |

Present definite.

Singular.

Plural.

- | | | |
|---------|-------------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1 Pers. | <i>ī kē-va</i> 'I do.' | <i>nan kē-na</i> 'we do.' |
| 2 | <i>nī kē-sa</i> 'thou doest.' | <i>nom kē-re</i> |
| 3 | <i>ō kē-k</i> 'he does.' | <i>ofk kē-ra</i> . |

Obs.—The future and the future exact, on the contrary, are regularly derived from the root *kar*, viz. *kar-ōt* 'I shall do,' and *kar-ō-sut* 'I shall have done.'

Obs. 2.—The tenses of the past are regularly derived from the

¹ See footnote, page 91.

past participle, *i.e.* the simple past, گریټ *kar-ē-ṭ* 'I did; ' imperfect, گریټه *kar-ē-ṭa*; pluperfect, گریټست *kar-ē-suṭ*; perfect, کریټ *kar-ē-n-uṭ*, etc.

The Negative Form

has a regular inflection. Present indefinite, گېر *ká-par*¹ (3rd person sing. كف *ka-f*); present definite, كېره *ká-para* (3rd person sing. كېك *ká-pak*), etc.; future, كېروټ *ka-par-ōṭ*; future exact, كېروسټ *ka-par-ō-suṭ*, etc.; simple past, كتوټ *ká-t-av-aṭ*; imperfect, كتوټه *ka-t-áv-aṭ-a*; pluperfect, كتوست *ka-t-áv-asuṭ*; perfect, کتنټ *ká-ta-n-uṭ*.

Present participle, گروک *kar-ōk*; gerund, کريسه *kár-esa*.

II. هينگ *hin-ing* 'to go.'

Imperative, هين *hin*; prohibitive, هينپه *hínpa*; simple past, هينا *hin-ā*.

This verb is apparently quite regular, but it substitutes in the present and future tenses the root *kā*. Example:

Present indefinite.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	ای کاو <i>ī kā-v</i> 'I may go.'	نن کان <i>nan kā-n</i>
2 „	نی کاس <i>nī kā-s</i>	نم کاری <i>nom kā-re</i>
3 „	او کائی <i>ō kā-e</i>	افک کار <i>ofk kā-r</i>

Present definite.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	ای کاوډ <i>ī kā-v-a</i> 'I go, etc.'	نن کاډه <i>nan kā-n-a</i>
2 „	نی کاډه <i>nī kā-s-a</i>	نم کاری <i>nom kā-re</i>
3 „	او کاډک <i>ō kā-ek</i>	افک کاره <i>ofk kā-r-a</i>

Simple Future.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1 Pers.	ای کوټ <i>ī k-ōṭ</i> 'I shall go, etc.'	نن کون <i>nan k-ōn</i>
2 „	نن کوس <i>nī k-ōs</i>	نم کوری <i>nom k-ōre</i>
3 „	او کوټ <i>ō k-ōe</i>	افک کور <i>ofk k-ōr</i>

¹ See footnote, p. 91.

Compound Future.

Singular.

Plural.

1 Pers. ای کونست *ī k-ō-sut*¹ 'I shall have gone.'
 نن کوسن *nan k-ō-sun*

2 ,, نی کونس *nī k-ō-sus* نم کوسری *nom k-ō-sure*

3 ,, او کونس *ō k-ō-sas* افک کوسر *ofk k-ō-sur*

The tenses of the past are formed in a regular manner from the past participle *هنا hinā*; the present participle is *هنوک hinōk* 'going,' the gerund *هنیسه hin-esa*.

There are probably other verbs of this kind to be found in Brahúi.

§ 14. A LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

The following list, which has no pretension whatever to completeness, contains verbs presenting an irregularity either in the imperative mood, in the prohibitive form, or else in the past participle. It should be noted, again, what has already been said, that the regular past participle ends in *ā*, or if the root terminates in *f*, then the terminal of the past participle will be *ē*. All past participles not formed in this manner are classed as irregulars.

Bellew also has a list of this kind, but it is far from reliable.

Infinitive.	Imperative.	Prohibitive.	Past Participle.
باتنگ <i>bātin-ing</i> 'to lose.'	بائتی <i>bāite</i>	باتغه <i>bātifa</i>	باتس <i>bātis</i>
بسنگ <i>bis-ing</i> 'to cook.'	بس <i>bis</i>	بسپیه <i>bisīpa</i>	بسا <i>bisā</i>
بینگ <i>bin-ing</i> 'to hear.'	نن, بنگ <i>bin-ak, bin</i>	بنپیه <i>binīpa</i>	بنگ <i>bing</i>
بَنگ <i>ban-ing</i> 'to come.'	برک <i>barak</i>	بغه <i>bafa</i>	بس <i>bas</i>
پانگ <i>pān-ing</i> 'to say.'	پا <i>pā</i>	پاپه <i>pāpa</i>	پاری <i>pāre</i>
پترنگ <i>patar-ing</i> 'to enter.'	یترنگ <i>pataring</i>	پترنگپه <i>pataringpa</i>	پترنگا <i>pataringā</i>

¹ See footnote, page 91.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Imperative.</i>	<i>Prohibitive.</i>	<i>Past Participle.</i>
پڻڱ <i>pind-ing</i> 'to ask.'	پڻڱ <i>pind</i>	پڻڱيپه <i>pindīpa</i>	پڻڱا <i>pindā</i>
پڻگ <i>pin-ing</i> 'to be broken.'	پڻ <i>pin</i>	پڻيپه <i>pinīpa</i>	پڻا <i>pinā</i>
ترنگ <i>tar-ing</i> 'to spin.'	ترنگ <i>taring</i>	ترنگپه <i>taringpa</i>	ترنگا <i>taringā</i>
تڻگ <i>tin-ing</i> 'to give.'	ايتي <i>cte</i>	تڻه <i>tifa</i>	تس <i>tis</i>
تورنگ <i>tūr-ing</i> 'to seize.'	تور <i>tūr</i>	توريپه <i>tūrpa</i>	تورير <i>tūrēr</i>
تولنگ <i>tul-ing</i> 'to sit.'	تولته <i>tūlth</i>	توليپه <i>tūlīpa</i>	توس <i>tūs</i>
تونگ <i>tūn-ing</i> 'to prevent.'	تونگ <i>tūning</i>	تونگپه <i>tūningpa</i> , توپه <i>tūpa</i>	تونگا <i>tūningā</i>
تهڙنگ <i>thar-ing</i> 'to cut.'	تهڙ <i>thar</i>	تهڙيپه <i>tharīpa</i>	تهڙي <i>tharē</i>
ٿرهنگ ¹ <i>thā-ing</i> 'to boil.'	ٿرهگ <i>thā</i>	ٿرهگپه <i>thāīpa</i>	ٿرهکا <i>thāēsa</i>
چانگ <i>chā-ing</i> 'to know.'	چا <i>chā</i>	چاپه <i>chāpa</i>	چائسه <i>chā-esa</i>
چرنگ <i>char-ing</i> 'to wander.'	چرنگ <i>charing</i>	چرنکپه <i>charingpa</i>	چرنگا <i>charingā</i>
چهندنگ <i>chhand-ing</i> 'to shake.'	چهند <i>chhand</i>	چهندپه <i>chhandīpa</i>	چهندا <i>chhandā</i>
خوانگ <i>khvā-ing</i> 'to graze.'	خوا <i>khvā</i>	خوابه <i>khvāpa</i>	خوایا <i>khvāyā</i>
خرنگ <i>khar-ing</i> 'to move.'	خرنگ <i>kharing</i>	خرنگپه <i>kharingpa</i>	خرنگا <i>kharingā</i>
خلنگ <i>khal-ing</i> 'to beat.'	خلته <i>khalth</i>	خلیپه <i>khalpa</i>	خلک <i>khalik</i>

¹ Pronunciation uncertain.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Imperative.</i>	<i>Prohibitive.</i>	<i>Past Participle.</i>
خُلنگ <i>khul-ing</i> 'to fear.'	خُلِ <i>khulī</i>	خُلِیپِه <i>khulīpa</i>	خُلِیس <i>khulīs</i>
خَنگ <i>khan-ing</i> 'to see.'	خَنک <i>khanak</i>	خَنپِه <i>khanpa</i>	خَنَا <i>khanā</i>
خَوانَنگ <i>khvānif-ing</i> 'to instruct.'	خَوانَن <i>khvānif</i>	خَوانَنپِه <i>khvānifpa</i>	خَوانَنَا <i>khvānifā</i>
خَواهَنگ <i>khvāh-ing</i> 'to wish.'	خَوَاه <i>khvāh</i>	خَوَاهِیپِه <i>khvāhipa</i>	خَوَاهَا <i>khvāhā</i>
دَسَنگ <i>das-ing</i> 'to sow.'	دَس <i>das</i>	دَسِیپِه <i>dasīpa</i>	دَسَا <i>dasā</i>
دَنگ <i>dan-ing</i> 'to take away.'	دَرَک <i>darak</i>	دِپِه <i>dapa</i>	دَرِدری <i>darē, dar</i>
دُشَاغَنگ <i>dūshāγ-ing</i> 'to interfere.'	دُشَاغ <i>dūshāγ</i>	دُشَاپِه <i>dūshāpa</i>	دُشَاغَا <i>dūshāγā</i>
رَسَنگ <i>ras-ing</i> 'to arrive.'	رَسَنگ <i>rasing</i>	رَسَنکِیپِه <i>rasingpa</i>	رَسَنگَا <i>rasingā</i>
سِلَنگ <i>sil-ing</i> 'to wash.'	سِل <i>sil</i>	سِلِیپِه <i>silīpa</i>	سِلَا <i>silā</i>
سَلَنگ <i>sal-ing</i> 'to stand.'	سَلِی <i>salī</i>	سَلِیپِه <i>salīpa</i>	سَلِیس <i>salīs</i>
شَاغَنگ <i>shāγ-ing</i> 'to throw in.'	شَاغ <i>shāγ</i>	شَاپِه <i>shāpa</i>	شَاغَا <i>shāγā</i>
کَشَنگ <i>kash-ing</i> 'to draw, to pull.'	کَشِی <i>kash</i>	کَشِیپِه <i>kashpa</i>	کَشَا <i>kashā</i>
	کَش <i>kashē</i>	کَشِیپِه <i>kashīpa</i>	
کَنگ <i>kan-ing</i> 'to do.'	کَرَک <i>karak</i>	کَپِه <i>kapa</i>	کَرِی <i>karē</i>
کُنَنگ <i>kun-ing</i> 'to eat.'	کُن <i>kun</i>	کَنپِه <i>kunpa</i>	کَنگ, کُنِی <i>kune, kung</i>

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Imperative.</i>	<i>Prohibitive.</i>	<i>Past Participle.</i>
کھنگ <i>kah-ing</i> 'to die.'	کہ <i>kah</i>	کھیپہ <i>kahīpa</i>	کھسک <i>khask</i>
گدرنگ <i>gidr-ing</i> 'to pass over.'	گدرنگ <i>gidring</i>	گدرنگپہ <i>gidringpa</i>	گدرنگا <i>gidringā</i>
گفنگ <i>gaf-ing</i> 'to weave.'	گف <i>gaf</i>	گفپہ <i>gafpa</i>	گفا <i>gafā</i>
¹ لوڑنگ <i>lōr-ing</i> 'to smart (for anything)'	لوڑ <i>lōr</i>	لوڑپہ <i>lōrīpa</i>	لوڑا <i>lōrā</i>
مننگ <i>man-ing</i> 'to be, to become.'	مر <i>mar</i>	منفہ <i>mafa</i>	مس <i>mas</i>
نرنگ <i>nir-ing</i> 'to flee.'	نر <i>nir</i>	نرپہ <i>nirīpa</i>	نار <i>nirā</i>
ہترنگ <i>hatar-ing</i> ہتنگ <i>hat-ing</i> 'to bring.'	ہت <i>hat</i>	ہتپہ <i>hatpa</i>	ہیس <i>hīs</i>
ہرنگ <i>hir-ing</i> 'to see.'	ہر <i>hir</i>	ہرپہ <i>hirīpa</i>	ہرا <i>hirā</i>
ہارنگ <i>har-ing</i> 'to tear up.'	ہر <i>har</i>	ہرپہ <i>harīpa</i>	ہرا <i>harā</i>
ہڑسنگ <i>hars-ing</i> 'to turn.'	ہڑسنگ <i>harsing</i>	ہڑسنگپہ <i>harsingpa</i>	ہڑسنگا <i>harsingā</i>
ہلنگ <i>hal-ing</i> 'to take.'	ہلثہ <i>halth</i>	ہلپہ <i>halpa</i>	ہلک <i>halk</i>
ہونگ <i>hun-ing</i> 'to show.'	ہر <i>hur</i>	ہنپہ <i>hunpa</i>	ہنا <i>hunā</i>
ہینگ <i>hīn-ing</i> 'to kid.'	ہینک <i>hīnak</i>	ہینپہ <i>hīnpa</i>	ہینس <i>hīnas</i>

§ 15. POSTPOSITIONS.

In addition to the postpositions already mentioned when speaking of the declension, there are others which also are directly joined to the noun. Postpositions, which originally were nouns, require the genitive, or, if they express the idea of separation, division, or distance, the ablative case. Some of the latter class are joined to another postposition, with which they express a combined idea.

N.B.—Bux speaks of *prepositions* only, and mentions a few; they are comprised in this paragraph.

1. *Postpositions which are immediately joined to the Noun.*

Their number is small :

اسکا *iskā* 'until' (usque ad). Example : نیاز دی اسکا سلامت 'May you be spared for many days' (Nieolson, Abu'l-Hasan, p. 20, l. 2).

سیان *sīnān*, سیان *siyān* 'from, with.' Example : دا هیت شر 'That thing is better that thou shouldst eat poison from a good man' (Nieolson, p. 18, l. 6, 7); ای نی هیت سیان خوش کریت 'I have made you also happy with one word' (Nieolson, p. 126, l. 1); اسی پیرواری سیان کرفیر 'They asked from an old man' (Nieolson, p. 18, l. 8).

سیا *siyā* 'to, there.' Example : بنوغ سیا ارغ کنگ کی هنانی 'He has gone to a certain man to dine.'

غا *γā* 'to, up, towards.' Example : هرا وقت که نی مرده کنارغا 'At the time when thou sawest the corpse on the bank' (Bux, p. 94, l. 4 from below).

غان *γān* 'from, up, towards.' Forms a postposition, when joined to a noun, as کیرغان *kīr-γān* 'under,' etc.

کی *kī* 'in order, for the purpose of,' etc. Example : همو وقت 'At the time when, for the purpose of saying prayer, he stood up' (Nieolson, p. 14, l. 8).

2. *Postpositions governing the Genitive.*

These are all nouns having the meaning of adverbs, with or without a postposition, excepting those few derived from the Persian. They are :

باڻغان *bāt-γān*, باڻغائي *bāt-γāe* 'up, on, over.' Example :
 مُعافي نا قلمي کنا تقصير نا باڻغائي کشي 'Draw the pen of forgiveness over my offence' (Nicolson, p. 13, l. 6 from below).

بُڙزا *burzā* 'up, on.'

پارغان *pār-γān* 'on the part of.'

پارغائي *pār-γāe* 'from that side, on the part of towards.' Example :
 اسي درويش همينا پارغان هينا 'A dervish came on the part of ' (Nicolson, p. 19, l. 6). اسي نوکرس خلق نا پارغائي بي 'They sent a servant towards a village to fetch salt' (Nicolson, p. 8, l. 3).

پدا *padā*, پدان *padān*, پدائي *padāe* 'to, behind, at the back.'
 Examples : کسس نا پدان غيبت گپبو 'Behind a man's back slander speak not ' (Bux, p. 68, l. 8); اسي کماشو 'A decrepid man, who came behind the caravan, said ' (Nicolson, p. 17, l. 2).

پدرت *padrat* 'after.' Example : بندغ نا پدرت بندغ مؤن تسکه 'He sent man after man ' (Bux, p. 108, l. 8 from below).

پر *par* 'up, on' (Persian), not used often ; if used, frequently corresponds to *and*.

تهتي *tah̄tī* 'inside, into.' Example : همي وقت اسي سوارس 'Exactly at the time a horseman came to the door ' (Nicolson, p. 3, l. 1 from below).

اي دا ايلم *khātiraṭ* 'for the sake of (to oblige).' Example : اي دا ايلم 'I have done that for the sake of my brother ' (Bux, p. 108, l. 9 from below).

خُرُک *khuruk*, خُرُکائي *khurukāe* 'near, close by, at, by.' Examples :
 همي وقت که او دسترخوان نا خُرُک توس تينا دستوران 'At the time when he sat at table, he

ate less bread than was his habit' (Nicolson, p. 14, l. 6, 7);
 اسکا نی تو گزاس مروء همیفک نا خترکائی برور 'As long as
 there remains anything by you, so long will they come to
 you' (Nicolson, Abu'l-Hasan, p. 1, l. 3 from below).

سرکار نا لشکر ایفتا 'رندت' *randat* 'behind, after.' Example :
 رندت هِنار 'The troops of Government went after them'
 (Nicolson, Qalāt, p. 3, l. 5).

شیف *shēf* 'below, under, down' e.g. شیف منگ, to come down.

کیرغا *kīr-γa*, کیرغان *kīr-γān* 'under, below.' Example :
 دهمی 'Who were the men that had sat under the tree?' (Bux, p. 54, l. 1);
 تینا بد خصلتاک تینا بغل نا کیرغان دهمکسه
 'Thou hidest thy bad qualities under the armpit' (Nicolson, p. 15, l. 2).

نما شریعت نا موجب *mūjib* 'according to.' Example :
 موجب 'How is this matter to be
 settled according to the tenets of your law?' (Bux, p. 94,
 l. 6 from below).

مون *mōnā*, مونغا *mōn-γā*, مونغان *mon-γān* 'before, in the sight
 of, towards.' Examples :
 بندغ کور مسنی قاضی نا مونغا هنا 'The man became blind, he went before the Qazi' (Nicol.
 p. 16, l. 8);
 بادشاه نا مونغا فلانه تدبیر خاطرت هیچڑا گنتوت
 'In the sight of the king I ate nothing, because of a certain
 reason' (Nicol. p. 14, l. 2 from bottom);
 نا پد پشت گله 'Behind thy
 back they blame thee, but before thee they are ready to
 sacrifice their life' (Nicol. p. 14, ll. 2, 3).

نیام *niyām-tī*, یام *yām-tī* 'between, in the midst, under.'
 Examples :
 کندن بندغ وضعیفه نا نیامتی انت فرق اری 'Be-
 tween such a man and such a woman what difference is
 there?' (Nicol. p. 20, l. 4);
 او تینا خوشی کی بندغاتا یامتی
 'He had come forth to amuse himself among the
 people' (Nicol. Abu'l-Hasan, p. 2, l. 5 from bottom).

3. *Postpositions governing the Ablative Case.*

مون تی هیٿان *bār*, یارائی *bārāe* 'like as, so as.' Example: 'Within your sight he is mild like a goat, behind your back hard as a wolf' (Nicol. p. 14, ll. 3, 4); 'خچران بارائی باریم نا کیرغان افٿ' 'I am not like a mule under the burden' (Nicol. p. 15, l. 6).

بغیر خدا نا (Arab.) *bayair* 'without, besides.' Example: 'Without the will of God, I have not beaten him' (Bux, p. 134, l. 4 from bottom).

پدا *padā* 'after.' Example: 'گٽنگان پدا انصاف مروء' 'After death there is judgment' (Bux, p. 110, l. 3).

پیشن *pēshin* 'from, of, out.' Example: 'اُراغان پیشن برٿ' 'Come out of the house' (Bux, p. 80, l. 7).

مثاک سالن گٽ *gud*, گٽا *gudā*, گٽرا *gurā* 'after.' Examples: 'After some years I came at the same time from Damascus' (Nicol. p. 20, l. 2 from bottom); 'ده دیان گٽرا کنی دا اُرا تی مَس سال مروء' 'At the end of (after) ten days I shall have lived three years in this house' (Bux, p. 82, l. 2 from bottom).

تینا حیاتی غنیمت چا *must* 'ere, before.' Example: 'همی دیان مُست که خبر مری که فلانہ کٽسک' 'Look upon your life as a gain before the day when the news may arrive that this or that person is dead' (Nicol. p. 3, ll. 2, 3).

خلیفہ پاری وید خداگان *vēd* 'besides, without.' Example: 'پین خدا اف' 'The khalif said: besides God there is no other God' (Nicol. p. 20, ll. 2, 3).

§ 16. ADVERBS.

Judging even from the few examples at our disposal, it seems that Brahúi is capable of forming adverbs from adjectives by means of the terminal *īkā*, although this seems not quite in accordance with the spirit of the languages of the Dravidian group.¹

¹ Just like Telugu, which forms adverbs from adjectives by adding *gā*: *k* and *g* are frequently interchangeable.

Examples : 'Thou hast not wiped it well' (Bux, p. 74, l. 4 from below); زور اف ای امریکا کاؤ انتی 'How am I to walk when there is no strength in my feet?' (Nicolson, p. 17, l. 4).

Most of the postpositions mentioned above (2, 3), are used as adverbs also, e.g. بُزْزَا *burzā* 'above,' تَهْتِی *tahṭī* 'inside,' خُھُرُک *khuruk* 'near,' etc., to which may be added رَہَا *rahā* 'near,' مُر *mur* 'far.'

Besides these, the Brahui has a number of real adverbs, which we can classify thus :

1. *Adverbs of place*, as دَآرِی *dāre* 'here,' دَندَآرِی *handārē* 'just here,' دَہِیَنگی *hamēnge*, اِہِی *ēre* 'there,' دَہِیَنگی *hamēre* 'just there.' The affix *-nge* corresponds to the Tamil *-ngu*, as *iṅgu* 'here,' and *-re* to the Tamil *-ndu*, Tuḷu *-de* and *ide*.

To this class belong the interrogative adverbs of place, such as اَرَاڻِی *ārā-re* اَرَاڻِک *ārā-ṛik* اَرَاڻِگ *ārā-ng* 'where?' اَرَاڻِگی *ārānge* 'to where?' اَرَاکان *ārā-kān* 'whence?'

2. *Adverbs of time*: viz. اِیَنو *ēnō* 'to-day,' پَڳَا or پَڳَا *phagā* 'to-morrow,' پَہِلَمِی *phalmī* 'day after to-morrow,' چَہِوَا *chhivā* 'when?' چَہِوَتَان *chhivatān* 'how long since?' هَرِچَہِوَا *har-chhivā* 'whenever,' دَاسَا *dāsā* 'now,' هَندَاسَا *han-dāsā* 'just now,' دَرو *darō* 'yesterday,' دَری نَن *dare nan* 'yesternight,' کُومُلْخُدُو *kūmulkhudō* or مُلْخُدُو *mulkhudō* 'two days ago,' لَوَجَارِی *lōjārī* 'again,' نَنیکَان *nanikān* 'by night.' The compounds, such as اَرَاوَقَت *ārūvaqt* 'when?' هَرَوَقَت *harvaqt* 'at all times,' دَوَار *dūvār* 'again,' do not belong here.

2. Pronouns denoting *quality* may be used in a similar sense as adverbs, e.g. هَمَوَدَن *hamōhun* 'in that manner,' دَہُن *dahun* 'in this manner,' اَمَر *amar* 'in what manner?' اَنَتِی *anta-e* 'why?' is in reality the dative of اَنَت *anta*, corresponding to the Persian چَرَا.

Substantive nouns also are used as adverbs, especially when repeated, for instance, مَدَان مَدَان *madān madān* 'slowly;' or the adjective زو *zū* 'quick, quickly' (Persian زود).

§ 17. CONJUNCTIONS.

It is strange that the Brahúi has developed no conjunctions: all are borrowed, though partially formed with Brahúi roots. Examples :

ایسکا *iskā kih* 'so long as' (or simply *iskā*, identical with the postposition). Example: ایسکا کہ حرامزادہ بندغ نیك 'So long as the villain finds himself in circumstances of fortune' (Nicol. p. 10, l. 3).

اغ *ag*, اگر *agar* 'when.' Example: اغ همینا دیوالی خناس 'If thou beholdest its walls, thou wouldest be surprised' (Nicol. Abu'l-Hasan, p. 3, ll. 2, 3).

انتسی کہ *anta-e kih*, انتسی کہ *antas-e kih* 'because, for.' Examples: انتسی کہ ای زو پیشن هنوت 'Because I shall go out early' (Bux, p. 110, l. 10); انتسی کہ کنی نا حال نا هیچ خبر او 'For I did not know of your presence' (Bux, p. 120, ll. 1, 2).

بی *bī* 'also' Sindhi भी or बि. Example: همیڑی کہ گل اری 'Where there is a rose, there is also a thorn' (Bux, p. 102, l. 8).

پر *par* in the sense of 'and.' Example: ارغ پر والتھ ہتبو 'Bring bread and milk.'

تہ *tah* 'then, there' (Sindhi त), especially in sentences which have a conditional meaning. Examples: اگر اودی حکم مسکا تہ کل 'If he had the command, then he would do everything for his good' (Bux, p. 134, ll. 3, 4); او کنی 'خَلَّتْہی نشان انتی تہ ای اودی خدائی نشان ایتو 'If he will show me the pain, then I will show him God' (Bux, p. 134, ll. 6, 7 from below).

کہ *kih* (Persian) 'that, as, since, because.' Examples: کہ ای نی بیاز دقدار تِسْت 'I fear that I have given you much trouble' (Bux, p. 119, l. 2 from below); کہرف کہ اُرا نا 'He asked (that) where the master of the house had gone?' (Bux, p. 120, l. 2 from below).

نوا *navā*, نوا کہ *navā kih* (from the Persian نابوا *nabūva*) 'lest, in

order that not.' Example : خلیوہ کہ نوا دُزاکٔ بریر 'I fear lest the thieves may come' (Bux, p. 132, l. 6).

و 'and,' is seldom used in Brahúi.

یا *yā* or یا-یا *yā-yā* 'whether—or?' Example : او ظالم سی یا انصاف 'He a tyrant is or justice doer is? (Is he a tyrant or is he just?) (Bux, p. 126, l. 5 from below).

TRANSLATIONS FROM THE GULISTĀN INTO BRAHÚI.

I.

(Nicolson, p. 2; see Gulistān, Chap. i. hikāyat 2.)

خراسان نا بادشاهتیاں¹ است سلطان محمودی اونا گینگان اس
صد سال گڈ² تَغ تِی خنا. اینا دُرُست جان دُرد دُرد مَس و مَش³
مَس دا اسکا ہرتوماکٔ⁴، خَن تینا اُرا تِی سُرارد⁵ خَنارد. کل داناکٔ
اینا مطلب نشان تینگ گتوس⁶ گترا اسی درویش اس سلام گری⁷
پاری⁸ او دا اسکا کینگ تِی بی انتی کہ اونا مُلک پین نا دوئی⁹
تِی بی. بیاز پنیو¹⁰ بندغاتِی کِجَد¹¹ کرینو ایفتا زندگانی نا ہیچڑا
نشانی دُغار¹² نا باتغائی¹³ مَتَو¹⁴ او پیرنگا لاشۂ قبر نا نیام¹⁵ تِی
تِخانو اینا مَش دُوکُن خورت¹⁶ مَس کہ اینا است کڈی¹⁷ باقی
مَتَو. نوشیروان بادشاہ نا پین دا اسکا اینا سخاوت نا سببان مشہور
آری اغ کہ¹⁸ بیاز مُدت کدِرنِگا کہ اورامی مَس ہنا. آئی بَدَدَغ
نیکِی کَرکٔ¹⁹ تینا حیاتی غنیمت چا ہمی دیان مُست کہ
خَنر مَری کہ فلانہ کِجَسکٔ ✽

1. Nicolson, بادشاهتیاں.

2. گڈ *gud* 'afterwards'; here an adverb.

3. مَش *mesh*, Persian خاک *dust* 'a mountain,' (Bellew, p. 486).

4. ہرتوماکٔ *hartumakāk*. See page 87.

5. سُرارد *sur-ing* 'to move' is the Sindhi سُرَر; therefore the exact meaning is: 'they moved about, they looked about' (Imperfect).

6. گتوس *ka-t-a-vas*, perfect prohibitive of کنگ *kan-ing* 'to do.'
See page 104, 105.
7. کری *kārē*, past participle of کنگ 'he made.' See page 123.
8. پاری *pārē*, past participle of پانگ *pān-ing*, 'he said.'
9. دو or دوی = 'hand.'
10. پنیو *pinīv* or *pinēv*; پن 'a name;' probably the same as نامور *nāmvar* 'having a name, celebrated.'
11. کپت 'a hole'; کپت کنگ 'to make a hole, to bury.'
12. دغار *ḍayār* 'ground, earth, soil.'
13. باتعائی 'on the surface.' See page 126.
14. متو *matau*. See page 117.
15. نیام = Persian میان.
16. خورت, the same meaning as the Persian بخورد (?).
17. هدی *hadī* 'a bone.'
18. اغ که *aykih*, Persian اگرچه 'although.'
19. گرت *karak*, imperative of کنگ 'to do.' See page 91.
20. چا *chā*, imperative of چانگ *chā-ing* 'to know.' See page 123.
21. کھسک *khask*, preterite of کپنگ *kah-ing* 'dead.' See page 123.

II.

(Nicolson, p. 9; see Gulistān Chap. i. hikāyat 22).

اسی ظالم نا بابت قصہ کرینو کہ درویش نا کاٹمائ خَل
خَلک. درویشی تینا عِوضِ هَلنگ نا قُوتِ مَتَوّ وا خَلی تین
تَوّخا همی وقتِ اسکا کہ بادشاه ناخوش مَس همی بندغ قید
تِی تَخنگ نا حکم تِس. ¹ گترامو درویش بَس ² اونا کاٹمی ³ خَل
تَوّ خَلک. همی بندغ فریاد گری پاری نی دیرُس دا خَلی کنا
کاٹمائ انتہی کہ خَلگنس. او جواب تِس کہ ای فلانہ اُت دا
همی خَلی کہ نی فلانہ ہی، کنا کاٹمائ خَلگنس او پاری دا
اسکا نی آراگ مَسس درویش جواب تِس ای نا دَرَجغان

خَلِيسْت^۱ ای که داسا نی قید تئی خَنِیوہ کنا اُسْت تئی بَس کہ
 تینا عَوَض کَلِیو^۲. ایسکا کہ^۳ حرامزاده بندغ نیک بختی نا حالت
 تئی آری دانا بندغاٹ چائنگ تئی او کہ اودی تعظیم تینگ
 لائق اری. هروقتاء^۴ کہ نی تئی جنگ گینگ نا توفیق اف^۵
 خراب بندغاتی جنگ کپہ^۶. هر کس نا دو کہ چاندیان^{۱۱}
 جوڑ^{۱۲} مَس اغ او پین نا دُو تو کہ فولادان چوڑ مَس جنگ
 کرو^{۱۳} تینا دُوئی نقصان کرو. صبر کرک ایسکا کہ قسمت اونا
 دُوئی بند کپی^{۱۴} گُترا نی تینا دوست نا خوشیان^{۱۵} اونا وِلیشی^{۱۶}
 کشی^{۱۷} ✧

1. Past participle of تینگ 'to give.'
2. Past participle of بَینگ 'to come.'
3. کاتَم 'the head.'
4. دِی *dē* 'day.'
5. Pluperfect of خُلنگ 'to be afraid.' See page 123.
6. Present indefinite of کَلنگ 'to take.' See page 124.
7. 'As long as.'
8. Nicolson writes وقتا, the final *hamzah* having been dropped.
9. اف. See page 113.
10. کپہ. See page 101.
11. چاندی *chāndī* 'silver,' Sindhī चांदी.
12. جوڑ *jōr*, Sindhī जोड़ 'made.'
13. The future of گَینگ. See page 120.
14. See page 119.
15. The Persian text says, بکام دوستان 'to please friends.'
16. وِلی *mili* 'the brain.'
17. کشیدن imperative of گِشنگ, from the Persian کشیدن
 'to draw,' 'to pull.'

POSTSCRIPT.

Never having had an opportunity of visiting the North-West frontier of British India, the writer cannot claim any practical acquaintance with the language of the Brahúi¹ Nation. The preparation of this Essay was suggested to him by the Honorary Secretary of the Royal Asiatic Society, Dr. R. N. Cust, who thought that Dr. Ernest Trumpp's valuable German Monograph² should receive adequate notice in this Journal. He had himself supplied Dr. Trumpp with all the material for the monograph, having obtained the data from Missionaries and from Sir William Merewether. In endeavouring to put this plan into execution, the writer found that a Paper on such a subject as this, to be of any value, must deal with details of every part of the Grammar, and could not therefore be restricted to a few pages.

This Paper is not a mere translation, but rather an abbreviated adaptation of Dr. Trumpp's "Grammatische Untersuchungen," and of the other Brahúi authorities, for the assistance of the English student, who looks for something like a short grammatical compilation on the Brahúi Language. Such a work at the present time may prove of special usefulness, as the language is scarcely known. It will be understood that all the comments and criticisms on preceding writers are Trumpp's, and that the *Examples*, etc., with their translations, are quoted unaltered.

If, aided by such slender linguistic knowledge as he may possess, the writer should in any degree have succeeded in his task, notwithstanding many shortcomings and imperfections, the labour which he has spent on it will have ample reward.

THEODORE DUKA.

55, NEVERN SQUARE,
SOUTH KENSINGTON, S.W.

16th Nov. 1886.

¹ Dr. Trumpp places the accent on all the vowels and writes thus: BRĀHŪĪ. Maulawi Alla Bakhsh uses none.

² See: Sitzungsberichte der k. b. Akademie der Wissenschaften zu München. 1880, Supplement—Heft vi. bei G. Franz.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE
1. Introductory remarks	59
„ Historical data	63
2. The System of Sounds, the Alphabet	65
3. The Noun; its Gender and Number	68
4. Declension of Nouns; the Affixes	69
5. Declension of Nouns ending in Consonants	71
6. Declension of Nouns ending in an Aspirate	73
7. Declension of Nouns ending in a long Vowel	74
8. The Articles.	74
9. The Adjectives, determinate and indeterminate	75
10. Degrees of Comparison	76
11. Numbers; Cardinal and Ordinal	77
12. Pronouns: Personal	78
13. Pronouns: Demonstrative	80
14. Pronouns: Reflective	82
15. Pronouns: Interrogative	83
16. Pronouns: Relative	85
17. Pronouns: Adjective and Indefinite	86
18. The Verb	89
19. The Verb: Active, Affirmative	90
20. The Verb: Composition of Tenses	90
21. The Verb, Negative or Prohibitive	101
22. The Verb: its Conjugation	103
23. Verb Causative	106
24. Verb Causative: its Conjugation	107
25. Verb Passive	108
26. The Auxiliary Verb “I am,” ای ایت	112
27. The Auxiliary Verb: its Negative Form	113
28. The Auxiliary Verb “to become,” مینگ	115
29. The Irregular Verb	119
30. List of Irregular Verbs	121
31. The Postpositions	125
32. The Adverbs... ..	128
33. The Conjunctions... ..	130
34. Brahúi Translations from the “Gulistán”	131
35. Postscript	134

ART. III.—Art. *A Version in Chinese, by the MARQUIS TSENG, of a Poem written in English and Italian by H. W. Freeland, M.A., M.R.A.S., late M.P. Commander of the Order of The Crown of Siam.*

詠技藝

傅禮蘭

雕	藝	性	巴	天	更	流	歌	祇	精	
畫	術	靈	臻	籟	有	傳	詞	緣	能	
聲	功	高	比	初	佳	億	圖	天	技	
歌	深	處	德	從	音	萬	畫	性	藝	
得	意	得	密	管	動	百	與	樂	妙	
勝	自	安	蘭	外	性	千	雕	清	通	
簪	幽	便	顛	聆	靈		鐫	純	神	
	湛		牽		歡		清		美	
	然		引		情		潔		質	
	閨		情		慧		無		姤	
	媛		懷		覺		塵		容	
	愼		上		起		養		牖	
	姤		九		冥		性		性	
	修		天		冥		天		真	
	策		天		此		實		淨	
	勳		上		時		質		掃	
	不		人		雅		高		積	
	藉		間		韻		華		年	
	刀		原		生		同		塵	
	兵		不		豪		不		俗	
	力		閔		興		朽		慮	

ART.

Art hath a holy mission: 'tis to raise
 The soul, through form and beauty, unto things
 More lovely than the sensual thoughts and ways
 Of an old world's corrupt imaginings.

In song, on canvas, or in living stone,
 Art saith unto the soul: "Behold the Pure,
 The True, the Beautiful, for these alone
 I live, by these through unborn time endure."

By sweet sounds, too, Art lifts the soul from earth,
 O'er every sense a nameless rapture steals
 When Harmony to noblest thoughts gives birth,
 With Heaven's own Music, in the organ's peals.

The Parthenon, St. Peter's, Milan's Dome,
 Which souls interpret, eyes with wonder scan,
 Point upwards to the Exile's Heavenly home,
 The spiritual heritage of man.

So doth Art toil, in sweet simplicity
 And virgin chastity, life's paths along,
 Leading to many a bloodless victory,
 Sweet sounds, brush, chisel, and the poet's song.

L'ARTE.

Santa è dell' Arte la mission, la quale
 Conduce, per la forma e la bellezza,
 L'alma, sovra ogni brama sensüale
 D'un invecchiato mondo, alla grandezza.

Nei canti, in marmo, o sulla tela dice
 All' alma l'Arte: "Guarda il Bello, il Puro,
 Il Ver, di questi soli io son cultrice,
 I secoli così trapasso e duro."

Coi suoni l'Arte l'alma al ciel conduce,
 Sovra ogni senso un' estasi si stende
 Quando, ai pensier che l'organo produce,
 Coll' intelletto tutto il cor si rende.

Il Parthenon, San Pietro e di Milano
 Il Duomo, alzando l'alma, il core, il viso,
 Avvian l'uom dall' esilio suo lontano
 Al suo destin celeste in Paradiso.

Casta e vergin così l'Arte rivela,
 Di vita nel cammin, la sua possanza,
 Coi suoni, o canti, in marmo, o sulla tela
 Ai suoi trionfi non cruenti avanza.

ART. IV.—*Hints to Oriental Students: No. 1.*¹ *Some Useful Hindī Books.* By G. A. GRIERSON, M.R.A.S., Bengal Civil Service.

IT has often struck me how helpless European students are when they are in search of books published in India. These books are so cheap, and their demand in Europe is so limited, that it does not pay Indian publishers to have agents for their sale here. In addition to this, students have no means of knowing what works are published in India; and even if they knew their names, that is no criterion of the value of their contents. I therefore put down the following notes regarding books which I myself have found useful in studying Hindī, in the hope that they may be acceptable to my fellow-students.

Munshī Rādhā Lāl, Deputy Inspector of Schools, Gayā,² has long been known as the author of several excellent educational works. His best work is a Hindī Dictionary, with explanations in that language, which I have often found very helpful. It is not scientifically accurate, but it is valuable as containing a good native scholar's explanations of difficult vernacular words. The first edition is out of print, but a second was in preparation when I was leaving India a year and a half ago. Amongst his educational works may be mentioned his *Hindī Kītab*, also called *Bhākhā Bōdhinī*, in four parts, of which the first, second and fourth are published. To the European student they will be found a useful set of Hindī reading-books. The first is very elementary, consisting of short sentences and verses. The latter, being in a

¹ It is hoped that this will be but the forerunner of many similar papers from other correspondents, bearing upon the study of Asiatic Languages and Dialects, in and out of India.

² This address will find him, if he is written to. So for the other names subsequently given. As a rule, in India, authors sell their own books.

colloquial style, would probably be found difficult by the unassisted European student. The prose, however, is easy, and could readily be made out with the help of a good grammar and dictionary. Part II. consists principally of fables in easy narrative prose. Part IV. is adapted for more advanced students, and is well worth their attention. It is principally an anthology from the works of the best Hindī poets. Sanskrit scholars will recognize in the first part an ingenious adaptation of a portion of the first book of the *Hitōpadēṣa*, containing some *Kuṇḍaliyās*, by the well-known *Gir'dhar* the *Kabirāj* (or poet laureate¹). The prices of the three parts are as follows: Part I., $1\frac{1}{2}$ annas (say $2\frac{1}{2}d.$); Part II., 3 annas (say $4\frac{1}{2}d.$); Part IV., 10 annas (say 1s. $3d.$).

Another well-known writer of educational works is Paṇḍit Bihārī Lāl Chaubē, 2nd Sanskrit Teacher at Patna College, Bankipore. His *Bhākhā Bōdh* is very popular and deservedly so. It is well printed on very fair paper, and the four parts form an excellent series of readers for European students. The latter part of Part IV. consists of selections from various poets' works, which will be found very useful. The prices of the four parts are as follows: Parts I. and II. $1\frac{1}{2}$ annas (say $2\frac{1}{2}d.$); Part III. 2 annas (say $3d.$); Part IV. $4\frac{1}{2}$ annas (say $7\frac{1}{2}d.$). *Patra Bōdh*, another work by the same author, is a polite letter-writer in Hindī, and should be studied by any one who has to correspond with natives in the vernacular. No people are more particular about the ceremonial beginnings and endings of letters than Hindūs. Its price is $1\frac{1}{2}$ annas (say $2\frac{1}{2}d.$). The best work by this author is the *Bihārī-Tul'sī-Bhūkhan-Bōdh* (price 12 annas, say 1s. $6d.$), which is a valuable treatise on Hindī rhetoric and poetical conceits, founded on the *Sāhitya Darpaṇa*, with hundreds of examples drawn from all the great vernacular poets. It is a work of considerable research, and is admirably suited to advanced students.

I should advise persons in want of Hindī books to put

¹ Not 'Doctor of Medicine' as the *Saturday Review* maintained when it reviewed a translation of one of this poet's sonnets.

themselves in communication with Bābū Sahib Prasad Sinha, Khadgbilas Press, Bankipore (Patna). This gentleman, and his partner Bābū Ram Din Sinha, are extensive publishers, and can direct the inquirer as to the most likely places for finding printed books. Amongst books published by this firm, I may mention the *Kshatriya Patrikā*, a monthly magazine in Hindī, containing a great deal of original matter by writers of repute. It often contains instructive articles on the Hindī language, and not seldom is very pugnacious on the subject. The subscription to this magazine is Rs. 6 as. 6 per annum. Those who wish to familiarize themselves with the Kaithī¹ character, now much used in Bihār, cannot do better than buy the *Sutā-Prabōdh* (price 4 annas, say 6d.), published by the same. It is a reading-book for girls, in simple Hindī. I would also draw particular attention to a work entitled *Bhākhā Sār* (Part II.), which comes from these publishers. In my opinion it is the best Hindī reader for advanced students extant. Besides the usual and proper extracts from the *Prēm Sāgar* and the *Rāmāyan* of *Tul'sī Dās*, it contains selections from the writings of nearly all the best modern Hindī writers. Chief among the authors laid under tribute is *Harishchandra*, whose late lamented death at an early age has been a severe blow to the progress of Hindī literature. Amongst writings by him here given may be mentioned extracts from the *History of Kāshmīr* (*Kāshmīr Kusum*), founded principally on the *Rāja Tarangīnī*, the *History of Mahārāṣṭra*, the *Nīl Dēvī* (a play, in which the language and customs of Musalmāns and Hindūs are well contrasted), and the *Pūrṇa-Prakāsh-Chandra-Prabhā* (a well-known and much-admired novel). *Harishchandra's* unique and most valuable essay, entitled *Hindī Bhākhā*, on the different dialects of Hindī known to him, is given in full. In this essay, after a note on the various dialects current in the city of Banāras, including that of the thieves, he gives samples of a great

¹ I should mention that many of the above books can also be had in the Kaithī character.

number of local dialects and of various local songs sung to peculiar melodies, with the legends connected with them. He shows how utterly unsuited modern Hindī is for poetry, and vindicates triumphantly the claim of poets to write in their own dialects, till something better is produced as a standard. He then gives examples of the modern style of prose Hindī, written and spoken. Of this he describes six kinds: 1) that full of pure Sanskrit words; 2) that containing a few Sanskrit words; 3) that containing no Sanskrit, and only pure Prakrit words; 4) that in which words from foreign languages are admitted; 5) that which is full of Persian words; and 6) that which admits English words. He states that he himself prefers the second and third styles, and I fancy that in this every European scholar will agree with him. It will be observed that he calls all these, even the fifth style, Hindī. As will be seen hereafter, amongst natives, the true criterion between Hindī and Ūrdū is not vocabulary, but idiom and order of words. I may add that the sixth style is that in general use at the present day amongst educated Hindūs of Hindūstān. English words are used much as the words 'jockey' or 'a shake-hands' are used in French. After some examples of the bad Hindī used in various localities, he winds up this part of his essay, in a grim humour, with samples of three new kinds of Hindī, the Hindī of the Bengālī Bābū, the Hindī of the English Sāhib, and the Hindī of the railway companies. In these, the first two especially, the faults of the nationalities of the speakers are most cleverly hit off. The essay concludes with specimens of the writings of English Hindī scholars. Foremost honour is given to the Christian hymns by Mr. John Christian, lately deceased, *Jān Sāhib*, as he is affectionately called by the natives. He is the only European I have ever met who has achieved any success as a Hindī writer; and the best native scholars admit that many of his hymns are faultless compositions so far as their language goes. Natives of India much admire his works, and they have had a strange fate, for, in addition to being put to their legitimate purposes, they are sung by *nāch* girls all over Bihār, together with

Vaishnava songs of Bidyāpati and Sūr Dās. The expressions in the songs are so truly native, and Mr. Christian has so cleverly caught the style of these old masters, that these girls have no idea that they are singing Christian hymns.

There are also given copies of letters in Hindī, written in England to Native friends in India, by Messrs. Nicholl and Pineott. I suspect that they were hardly intended for publication. I say this, judging from their contents, and not from the Hindī style, which, it is needless to say, I do not criticize here.

The book also contains the well-known “*Kahānī Thēñṭh Hindī mēñ*” (Tales in pure Hindī), which should be studied by every European student for two purposes: *firstly*, to master its wonderfully pure vernacular vocabulary; and *secondly*, to learn what is not Hindī. This set of stories is a veritable *lusus naturæ*. It contains only the purest Hindī vocabulary, *i.e.* words derived only from Prākṛit sources; not a single Arabic or Persian word finds entrance into it, and yet it is not Hindī, but Ūrdū. The work is continually referred to by native Hindī scholars as showing how impossible it is for a Musalmān (for such was its author) to write in that language, and the very first sentence, *sir jhukā kar nāk ragar'tā hūñ us ap'nē banānēwalē kē sāmḥ'nē*, ‘bowing my head, I show my humility before my Creator,’ is often quoted for that purpose. Here the verb is in the middle of the sentence; and in Hindī narrative prose it *must* come at the end. The quotation, in spite of its vocabulary, is very good Ūrdū, but it is very bad Hindī.

The *Kahānī Thēñṭh Hindī mēñ* is followed by an appropriate antidote, extracts from the elegant *Rām-Kathā* of Paṇḍit Chhōṭū Rām Tiwārī, Professor of Sanskrit at Patnā College. In this work the old familiar story of Rām is told again in mingled prose and verse. It is universally recognized as a model of pure Hindī, written in a flowing and not too learned style. So highly appreciated is the book, and so great was the demand for it, that I believe there was actually a large sale of the proof-sheets before it could be completely printed off.

Selections from Baitāl, Kabīr, and other poets make up this really excellent reading-book. I hope that a new edition will soon be called for, and that, encouraged by the sale of the first, the publishers may see their way to printing it with better type, on better paper.

A member of the same firm, Bābū Rām Din Singh, published a useful *Bhākhā Byākaran*, a work written by Gir'dhar Dās, the father of Harishchandra. It is the only native work which deals with the grammar of Tul'sī Dās, and is well worthy of attention. I have myself found it very useful. To the European student, its style may be found difficult, as it is written in verse. As at present published, it only goes down to the end of nouns. I hope the rest will soon be published. It is printed by Paṇḍit Kālī Prasād Tiwārī, at the *Dharm Prakāś* Press, Bankipore (Patna), and its price is one anna (say $1\frac{1}{2}d.$).

The *Dērākshara-Charitra*, printed at the Light Press, Banāras, by Gopeenath Pathak, and priced at 3 annas (say $4\frac{1}{3}d.$), is a "Serio-comic Drama," by Paṇḍit Ravidatta Śukla. It is a play with a purpose, which is to show the tyranny the mass of the people groan under, owing to the use of the Persian character and Ūrdū language, which none of them can understand. The play is based on a number of absurd mistakes made by persons endeavouring to act on Government orders written in an illegible Persian character. It concludes with a prayer for the introduction into Government offices of the Dēvanāgarī character, and of a language "understood of the people." To the European student the work is principally valuable for the examples of the Bhoj'pūrī dialect scattered through its pages, and for the imitation of the faults in Hindī speaking, which are made by Englishmen in office.

A favourite trial of skill amongst native scholars is for one to give another a part of a stanza, which the other has at once to weave into a short impromptu poem. The portion of stanza used as a text is called in Hindī *samasyā* or (sic) *samatsyā*, and the performance of the challenge, *samasyā-pūrti* or *samatsyā-pūrti*. The *Samatsyā-pūrti-pachīsī* (price

1 anna, say $1\frac{1}{2}d.$), by Paṇḍit Kālī Prasād Tiwārī already mentioned, may be interesting as a curiosity of this description. It contains twenty-five of these ingenious impromptu verses by the author. I may add that he has also written an excellent *Bhākhā Rāmāyan* in prose and verse, which adds one more to the many versions of the life of Rām.

In a future paper, I propose to deal especially with some of the works of Bābū Harischandra previously spoken of.

ART. V.—*Original Vocabularies of Five West Caucasian Languages.* Compiled on the spot by Mr. PEACOCK, Vice-Consul of Batúm, Trans-Caucasia, South Russia, at the request of, and communicated by, Dr. R. N. Cusr, Hon. Sec. R.A.S., with a Note.

WHEN I visited Trans-Caucasia in 1882 for the purpose of collecting information regarding the Languages of the Caucasus, the result of which was published in Vol. XVII. of the Journal, I became aware of the scantiness of the Vocabularies, and I mentioned this to Mr. Peacock, the Vice-Consul of H.B.M. at Batúm, who had resided some time at Poti, and had made excursions into regions not often traversed. He was good enough to undertake the duty of collecting Vocabularies, and I forwarded to him a copy of the Standard Form of Words and Sentences prepared by the Bengal Asiatic Society. After some delay, owing to the heavy press of his official duties, and a visit to England, when I had the pleasure of seeing him, and again encouraging him on the subject, he has forwarded to me the subjoined Vocabularies, which are highly important.

ROBERT N. CUST,

Hon. Sec. R.A.S.

INSTRUCTIONS FOR COMPILING VOCABULARIES AND SENTENCES.—The enclosed List of English Words and Sentences has been prepared by the Bengal Asiatic Society to enable persons to compile an exhaustive specimen of Languages spoken in any Region. Each sheet contains Five Languages, and those Languages should be selected for each sheet which are cognate to each other. When the whole is completed and printed, it becomes the basis for a further advance as regards those Languages of which we have no Grammars or Vocabularies. Care should be taken that all loan-words from English, Arabic, Portuguese, etc., are excluded. Only the *pure* words of each language should be entered. One system of transliteration should be adopted: the best is that of Lepsius; but at any rate one system only should be adopted for Languages entered upon the same sheet; and when Lepsius' system is not adopted, explanatory notes should be added, giving the exact value of each symbol, letter, or diacritical mark employed.

ENGLISH.	GEORGIAN.	MINGRELIAN.	LAZ.	SWANETIAN.	ABKHAZIAN.
One	Erti	Arti	Ar	Eshkhvi	Aké
Two	Ori	Jiri	Jūr	Yervi	Ubha
Three	Sami	Sumi	Sum	Semi	Khpa
Four	Otkhi	Otkhi	Otkhu	Voshkhv	Tshba
Five	Khuti	Khuti	Khut	Vokhvishd	Kpa
Six	Ekfsi	Amshvi	Ashi	Usgva	Fba
Seven	Shvidi	Shvitki	Shkit	Tshgvid	Bjba
Eight	Rva	Rua	Orvo	Ara	Ahba
Nine	Tskhra	Tchkhoro	Tchkholo	Tchkhara	Iba
Ten	Ati	Wetti	Vit	Eshd	Iaba
Twenty	Otsi	Etchi	Etchi	Yarveshd	Waja
Fifty	Ormotsi da ati	Jarnetchi da wetty	Jurnetchi da vit	Vokhvishdeshd	Uneujajaba
Hundred	Assi	Oshi	Oshi	Ashir	Shke
I	Me	Ma	Ma	Mi	Sara
Of me	Tehengan	Tchkimisheni	Tchkiminda	Mishgvaji	Saraspe
Mine	Tchemi	Tchkim	Tchkimiran	Mishgvi	Sispu
We	Tchven	Tkwa	Tchku	Na	Khara
Of us	Tchvengan	Etinas	Tchkunda	Nishgveji	Kharakhkant
Our	Tchveni	Tchkhimi	Tchkuniran	Nishgve	Kharakhpu
Thou	Shen	Si	Si	Si	Wuara
Of thee	Shengan	Tkwa	Skandan	Isgvaji	Orokuant
Thine	Sheni	Tkwan	Skani	Isgvi	Wuarayupu
You	Tkven	Tkwa	Tkwa	Sga	Shiera
Of you	Tkvengan	Tchkuende	Tkwanden	Isgveji	Sherashkant
Your	Tkveni	Skani	Skani	Isgve	Sherashpu
He	Ts	Tishi	Kiamushiren	Adja	Abant

ENGLISH.	GEORGIAN.	MINGRELIAN.	LAZ.	SWANETIAN.	ABKHAZIAN.
Of him	Misgan	Tinepishe	He tepeshia	Eteheji	Orokuant (?)
His	Missi	Tineps	He mushian	Atchash	Wayayupu (?)
They	Tssini	Atoneps	He mtepo	Adjar	Abant
Of them	Madgan	Tinepishe	He mteps	Adjiarga	Antirkant
Their	Mati	Tishe	He mteposhia	Adjiarash	Antirpu
Hand	Kheli	Khe	Khe	Tvet-shi	Snapa
Foot	Pekhi	Kutikhke	Kutekhke	Tehishkh	Ashipa
Nose	Tskhviri	Tekkhwindi	Tekkhindi	Nafkhvua	Apindsa
Eye	Tvali	Toli	Toli	Te	Ala
Mouth	Kharkha	Pidji	Nuku	Lakra	Atchi
Tooth	Kbili	Kibiri	Kibiri	Shtig	Khapits
Ear	Kuri	Aldji	Udji	Shtish	Alimha
Hair	Tma	Tuma	Toma	Faty	Akhakhua
Head	Tavi	Dudi	Ti	Tkhvish	Akhi
Tongue	Ena	Nina	Nena	Nin	Abs
Belly	Mutseli	Kwara	Kolba	Khad	Amgua
Back	Zurghi	Otehishi	Shka	Kintekkh	Abgua
Iron	Rkina	Rkina	Demiri	Berej	Eikha
Gold	Okro	Orko	Altuni	Vokr	Akhi
Silver	Vertskhli	Vartekkheli	Ghemtiish	Vortekhlul-Tskilian	Arezn
Father	Mama	Muma	Baba	Mu	Ab
Mother	Deda	Dida	Nana	Di-Dia	An
Brother	Zma	Djima	Djuma	Mukbbe	Asha
Sister	Da	Da	Da	Datchvir	Ashua
Man	Katsi	Kotch	Kotche	{ Gvajmare (vir) Mare (homo) }	Auwe

ENGLISH.	GEORGIAN.	MINGRELIAN.	LAZ.	SWANETIAN.	ABKHAZIAN.
Woman	Rali	Ossuri	Okhordja	Zural	Abhüs
Wife	Tsoli	Tehili	Tehili	Yekhv	Abhüs
Child	Bofshi	Tekhkhitekhka	Berre	Bebsv	A tehkue
Son	Vaji	Skwa	Bidji	Ghezal-Tchkint	Apá
Daughter	Rali	Dzabi	Bozo	Dina	Aphá
Slave	Rma	Rotchi	Rële	Glekh	Akhashala = Apü
Cultivator	Tokhneli	Makhatchkali	Makhatchkali	Mukhni	Adghî-khopshi
Shepherd	Mtskessi	Tekhwishi	Tekhwishi	Muldeg	Akhtchi
God	Ghmerti	Ghoronti	Tanghri	Ghermet	Antcha
Devil	E-kmaki	Mazakwali	Sheitan	Ashma	Aüsta
Sun	Mze	Bja	Mjora	Mlok	Amre
Moon	Mtviri	Tuta	Tuta	Doshdul	Amze
Star	Varsklavi	Muritskhi	Muritskhi	Antgvaek	Eyetsua
Fire	Tsetskhli	Datchkhe	Datchkhuri	Lemesg	Amtsa
Water	Tskali	Tskhari	Tskhari	Lits	Adzë
House	Lakhli	Ude	Okhori	Kor	Aëné
Horse	Tskheni	Tskheni	Tskheni	Tehaj	Atchi
Cow	Dzrokha	Tekho	Pudji	Fir	Aëjv
Dog	Dzaghlî	Djoghori	Djoghori	Jeg	Alla
Cat	Rata	Rato	Rato	Tsits	Atsghua
Cock	Mamali-katami	Mumuli-	Mamuli-	Kvitch	Arpekh
Duck	Tkhvi	Kwata	Ordeghi	Müts	Adzikut
Ass	Viri	Ghirin	Guruni	Tsel	Atcheda
Camel	Aklemi	Arkemi	Deve	Aklem	Amakheteh
Bird	Tchiti	Tchiti	Kintchi	Napr	Absad
Go	Tsadi	Mou	Tkzale	Lizi	Ütsa

ENGLISH.	GEORGIAN.	MINGHELIAN.	LAZ.	SWANETIAN.	ABKHAZIAN.
Eat	Tchami	Tekhum	Tekhum	Lizveb	If
Sit	Dadjeki	Dokhodi	Dokhedi	Lisvye	Upa
Come	Modi	Morti	Mokhti	Likhed	Why
Beat	Tseme	Mioghi	Getchi	Liker	Whiss
Stand	Dadeki	Gatchendi	Missadovi	Ligne	Ughel
Die	Mokdi	Doghuri	Doghuri	Lidgari	Upsi
Give	Mometsi	Rom	Komontchi	Lidhvi	Zak
Run	Gaicketsi	Iruli	Okhudkwatsini	Litchme	Wü
Up	Maghla	Ji	Jin	Ji	Khikh
Near	Akhlo	Kholos	Kholos	Pedias	Whygua
Down	Dabla	Tudo	Tude	Tehu	Tsagha
Far	Shors	Shors	Mendra	Djvedias	Khara
Before	Tsin	Tsokhole	Tsokhle	Sgobin	Lapka
Behind	Ukan	Ukokhole	Okatchkhele	Goshghin	Ashtekh
Who	Vin	Mik	Mik	Yar	Warbe
What	Ra	Muare	Muoren	Ma	Zakuzi
Why	Ratom	Mushene	Mushene	Iuga	Izzi
And	Da	Do	Do	I	Abnik
But	Maghram	Mara	Mara	Yago	Nas
If	Tu	Si	Si	Hessa	Waré
Yes	Diakh	Ko	Ko	Adu	As
No	Ara	Var	Var	Dessa	Kalu
Alas	Why	Akhawhy	Eivakh	Voy	Yauwé
A father	Mama	Muma	Baba	Mu	Ap
Of a father	Mamidgan	Mumashe	Babashi	Muesh	Lapiken
To a father	Mamas	Mumas	Babassi	Mus	Lapit

ENGLISH.	GEORGIAN.	MINGRELIAN.	Laz.	SWANETIAN.	ABKHAZIAN.
From a father	Mamissagan	Mumasho	Babashi	Muga	Lapikant
Two fathers	Ori mama	Jiri muma	Jur baba	Yervi mu	Ubha ap
Fathers	Mamebi	Munepi	Babapo	Mular	Lap
Of fathers	Mamebidgan	Mumalepisho	Babapeshe	Mularesh	
To fathers	Mamebs	Mumaleps	Babaps	Mulars	
From fathers	Mamebidgan	Mumalepisho	Babapeshe	Mularkhanko	
A daughter	Kali	Tsiraskwa	Tsiraskwa	Dina	
Of a daughter	Kalis	Tsiraskwashe	Bososhe(also Bozo)	Dinish	
To a daughter	Kals	Tsiraskwas	Bozos	Dinash	
From a daughter	Kalidgan	Tsiraskwashe	Bozoshe	Diukhan	
Two daughters	Ori kali	Jiri tsiraskwa	Jur bozo	Yervi dina	
Daughters	Kalebi	Tsiraskwalepi	Bozope	Dinal	
Of daughters	Kalebis	Tsiraskwalepisho	Bozopeshe	Dinalto	
To daughters	Kalebs	Tsiraskwaleps	Bozopes	Dinals	
From daughters	Kalebidgan	Tsiraskwalepisho	Bozopeshe	Dinalkhan	
A good man	Kai katsi	Djghiri kotchi	Kai kotchi	Ugunzigh marre	Aoubze
Of a good man	Kai katsis	Djghiri kotchisho	Kai kotchisho	Ugunzigh maru-	Aoubzeikant
				mish	
To a good man	Kai kats's	Djghiri kotchish	Kai kotchish	Ugunzigh marrato	Aoubzeik
From a good man	Kai katsigan	Djghiri kotchishe	Kai kotchishe	Ugunzigha mara-	Aoubzeikant
				khan	
Two good men	Ori kai katsi	Jiri djghiri kot-	Jur kai kotchi	Yervi ugunzigha	Oiabzeikv
		chebi		marre	
Good men	Kaigi katsebi	Djghiri kotchebi	Kai kotchepe	Khotcha(?) marral	Oiabzeika
Of good men	Kargi katsebis	Djghirikotchebshe	Kai kotchpeshe	Ugunzigha mar-	Oiabzeikant
				ralkhan	

ENGLISH.	GEORGIAN.	MINORELIAN.	LAZ.	SWANETIAN.	ABKHAZIAN.
To good men	Kargi katsebs	Djghiri kotehebis	Kai kotehepes	Khotchhash mar- rals	
From good men	Kargi katsebidgan	Djghiri kotehe- bishe	Kai kotehepeshe	Khotchhash marra- lkan	
A good woman	Kargi kali	Djghiri ossuri	Kai okhordja	Khotcha zural	Abhüs bzeik
A bad boy	Glakha bitchi	Glakha tehkitheko	Altchagho berre	Khola befsly	Atchkin bapsi
Good women	Kargi kalebi	Djghiri ossurepi	Kai okhordjalepe	Khotcha zuralar	Alsa bzeikua
A bad girl	Glakha kali	Glakha tsghaba	Altchaghe bozo	Lussoko (?) dino	Abhüzba bapsi
Good	Kargi	Djghiri	Kai	Ezar (?)	Abze
Better	Uketessi	Utelgushi	Uteghishi	Gun ezar	Litskis degu
Best	Upro uketossi	Ardzashi	Iris uteghlin	Mavar gun ezar	Raha bzeo
High	Maghali	Maghali	Maghali	Kiitkhi	Aú
Higher	Upro maghali	Umaghalashi	Demushen maghali	Khosha kiitkhi	Atskis yahow
Highest	Sup upro maghali	Ardzash umossi maghali	Tëi maghali	Gun kiitkhi	Raha yelow
A horse	Tskheni	Tskheni	Tskheni	Tchaj	Tchik
A mare	Tchaki tskheni	Tchaghi	Zura	Tchag	Atchan
Horses	Tskhenebi	Tskhenebi	Tskhenepe	Tchjar	Atchkua
Mares	Tchaki tskhenebi	Tchaghebi	Zurape	Tchagar	Atchankua
A bull	Khari	Khodj	Khodji	Khan	Atshis
A cow	Dzrokhi	Tekhu	Pudji	Fir	Ajvk
Bulls	Kharebi	Khodjebi	Khodjepe	Khanar	Atshkua
Cows	Dzrokhebi	Tchkhulebi	Pudjepe	Firar	Ajvkua
A dog	Dzaghi	Djhoghori	Djoghori	Jeg	Lak
A bitch	Dzwe-dzaghi			Djua	Alaps

ENGLISH.	GEORGIAN.	MINGRELIAN.	LAZ.	SVANETIAN.	ABKHAZIAN.
Dogs	Dzaghlebi	Djoghorebi	Djoghorepe	Jegar	Alakua
Bitches	Dzwe-dzaghlebi	Otch	Botchi	Djual	Alapskua
A he-goat	Tkha	Otchebi	Botchepe	Fikv	Adjma
A female	Dedali	Otcheli skweri	Mskweri	Zura	
Goats	Tkhebi	Dulu skweri	Zura mskweri	Daklar	
A male deer	Mshveli	Mskweri	Mskweri	Natchv-irem	
A female deer	Dedali mshveli	Ma orek	Ma bore	Zura irem	
Deer	Mshveli	Si rek	Sin ore	Irem	
I am	Shen khar	Ti nare	He yaren	Mi khvari	Sara sika
Thou art	Is aris	Tehki oret	Tchku boret	Si khari	Wara woko
He is	Tchwen vart	Tkwa oret	Tkwa ret	Adja ari	Wik toko
We are	Tkven khar	Tinepi re	Hemtepe renan	Na khvarid	Khara shako
You are	Isseni arian	Ma ordi	Ma borti	Sga kharid	Shera shako
They are	Me vikavi	Si ordi	Sin orti	Adjiar arikh	Wirt yiko
I was	Shen ikavi	Tena ordu	He yatv	Mi khvard	Sara sikan
Thou wast	Is iko	Tehki ordit	Tchku bortit	Si khard	Wara wokan
He was	Tchven vikavit	Tkwa ordit	Tkwa tit	Adja arda	Wik token
We were	Tkven ikavit	Tinepi ordes	Hemtepe tes	Na khvardad	Khara hakan
You were	Isseni ikvnen	Orda	Boret	Sga khardad	Shera shakan
They were	Ikave			Adjiar ardakh	Wirt yikan
Be	Ikav			Khard	Ukaz
To be	Kopeli			Lirde (?)	
Being	Khopeli	Borti			
Having been	Ma shemilebu	Ma makhvenen			
I may be	Me shemidzlia viko	borti			
				Mi ere khvarde	Sara izdiruada

ENGLISH.	GEORGIAN.	MINGRELIAN.	LAZ.	SWANETIAN.	ABKHAZIAN.
I shall be	Me viknebi	Ma ipuapub	Ma bortare	Mi khvardi	Sara skalap
I should be	Me viknebodi	Ma kipuapudi	Ma bortaro	Mi metchonol (?)	
Beat	Daartki	Meoghe	Ghetchi	Liker	Whiss
To beat	Daartkma	Meghama	Ghetchi		
Beating					
Having beaten					
I beat	Me vartkam	Ma mivoga	Ma ghebtchare	Mi khvatktsi	Lara sasue
Thou beatest	Shen artkam	Si mioga	Sin ghetchi	Si khatktsi	Wara wasue
We beats	Is artkams	Tina miogans	Hemuk ghetchas	Adja khatktsi	Wik tasue
We beat	Tchven vartkant	Tchki miogat	Tchku ghebtchat	Na khvatktsid	Khara khasue
You beat	Tkven artkant	Tkwa miogant	Tkwan ghetchit	Sga khatktsid	Aghirt (?) asue
They beat		Tenepe miogans	Hentepe ghetcha- man	Adjiar khatktsikh	Antke (?) asuo
I am beating				Mi miker (?)	
I was beating				Mi khvas miker	
I had beaten				Mi khvakhd	
I may beat				Mi ere khvakhidi	
I shall beat		Ma shemilebu mivoghe			
I should beat				Mi khvakhde	
I am beaten				Mi kakhvakhdas	
I was beaten				Mi naker khvi	
I shall be beaten				Mi khvas naker	
I go				Mi khvakhde	
Thou goest	Me mivdivar	Ma urku	Ma bidare	Mi esgvi	Sara stoe
	Shen midkhar	Si urko	Si idi	Si esgvi	Wara utsoe

ENGLISH.	GEORGIAN.	MINORELIAN.	LAZ.	SWANETIAN.	ABKHAZIAN.
He goes	Is midli	Tina urs	Heya idassen	Adja esgri	Wik tsoo
I went	Me tsaveli	Ma midabrti	Man mendabti	Mi esgurdas	Sara tsokan
Thou wentest	Shen tsakhveli	Si midarti	Si mendakhti	Si esgurdas	Wara ukan
He went	Is travida	Tinak midarti	Heya mendakhtas	Adja esghirda	Wik tokan
Go	Tsadi	Meu	Igzalo	Ghird	Utsa
Going	Tsamsleli	Mimalu	Magzalo	Mezi	Yemutsi
Gone	Gaera	Mikulu	Mendakhtu	Atebad	Yies
What is your name?	Tkveni sakbeli ra aris?	Si murdjokhos sakbeli	Li mukiokhons djokho	Ma djashkha si?	Ye wikhi tsuzi?
How old is this horse?	Ra beberia es tskhoni?	Mutchemi rtchivere te tskhoni?	Mutchemperi badi tskhoni?	Vosha liza li al tchaj?	Abri atchi yakhi-tsozi?
How far is it from here to —?	Ra shoria akidan?	Taure mushma shorakore —?	Hakolennakomen-drave —?	Mazum khozi amunesh etehav —?	Abirsi ibjori
How many sons are there in your father's house?	Ramteni shvilebia namishenis takhlshi?	Skani numas ondes muzma skualcpire?	Baba skanish okhoris nako bereven?	Vosha gezil khori isgva mus?	Warawap yina shaka patchimaz?
I have walked a long way to-day	Me fkenis didi gza dghez	Ma pkinini didi shara amodghra	Angha dido gza pi	Mi vobash adgver atzalat ladghi	Sara yakha dara amneretehsua snoko
The son of my uncle is married to his sister	Shvili bidzi tcho missa djvardat-serilia imis daze	Djimadi telkimi-shis skwa (gurgbneliro tishi dasha	Djumadi tehki-mishi berre gamatkvoriren hemush dasha ishte	Mishgva bidzaish gezal litchije li mitcha bidza-	Spa yab yesha spēs abni diasho
In the house is the saddle of the white horse	Lakhishi unaghiri tetri tsakhenisa	Udesse onangheri tehe tsakhenishi	Okhorishi eyeri ktehe tsakhenisheren	Kors avi vungbir tvetna telhajmish	Ayina akuadir ateli large

ENGLISH.	GEORGIAN.	MINGRELIAN.	LAZ.	SWANETIAN.	ABKHAZIAN.
Put the saddle upon his back	Daadghe unaghiri mis zurgze			Jessag vunghir atchas	Yaktsa abni abgha akuadir
I have beaten his son with many stripes	Me davrtki mis shwils bevri	Ma tishi skwasa brehligivashghi	Hemushe beyres dido gebtchi	Mi khivakhd mit-cha gezals vo-bash	Saradaratsepka yera ipa
He is grazing cattle on the top of the hill	Tstskosamsdzvokh opontis zurgze	Tina tilikishins tekuleps go-lash dus	Hemuk pudjepo odjunams sirtis	Adja kheldeg dj-vegs tanghish katskhji	Abni ikhtchve arëkh akhua teha
He is sitting on a horse under that tree	Is djis tskhenzo amkhis dzirshi	Tina gekhe tskhens djash tudo	Hemuk khatch-kunsdjash tudo	Adja khasgur techajs adj me-geshi telukvan	Abni dakhptua atchi adzla antse
His brother is taller than his sister	Imis dzma m-ghalia mis daze	Tishi djima uma-ghalashi ro mushi dashe	Hemushi djuma dannushishenma-ghar firen	Mitcha mukhbe khoklatkha li nitchea dotch-vim	Yera yesha atskis dohu yera yëghsha
The price of that is two pounds and a half	Passi amissi ori mikhevari	Passi teshi djiri da gwerdi	Hemush pakha Ami fas yervi i Abri izipso üba abja	djur da gveri fingsa . . . .	. . . .
My father lives in that small house	Mama tedhemi dghas an patara sakhlshi	Tchikimi muma mukare ate telitche udes	Baba tchikimi ham tchuta okhoris molakhen	Mishgevi mu izge adj kotol ko-risga (?)	Tara sab dinkauet abni ayine kut-chateha
Take those pounds from him	Ganuavti is funti imisgan	Gheitsughi ti funti tishe	Roy tchopi han funti	Ra akhbishd agas tetr	Yimkh abni (funti?) abnikaut
Give this pound to him	Mietsi is imas	Kimetehi ti funti tis	Ra lakho atehas girvintela	It abni (funti?) abni	

ENGLISH.	GEORGIAN.	MINGRELIAN.	LAZ.	SVANETIAN.	ABKHAZIAN.
Beat him well and bind him with ropes	Daartki imas kar-gat da shekare batsrit	Gheashkwi tis dijghro dokeri tokit	Bigazeri getehi koveri tokita	Rhakhol atehas mavar i takvsh akhkultkhan	Darabziadabkha dat-chakhe dareighu-ana ashakhala
Draw water from the well	Amoghe tskhali tehidan	Gheshega tskhari tskushe	tskari Kuishe esheghi	Jakhikol lits kho-sham dipakh-anko	Adzi yaaga atched-zakant
Walk before me	Tsadi tchemtsin	Men tehim tso-kholi	Tsokhle tehkimi igzale	Gird mishgvi sgobin	Sapkha utsala
Whose boy comes behind you?	Vissi bitchi modi shen ukan?	Mishi boshi murza ukan ukokhale?	Mish berre mulun skani okatch khele?	Tshi befsh adjish si goshghin?	Dezuista yüshtana atchkum yaava?
From whom did you buy that?	Visgan ghikidniya es?	Mishi ghiidiru tena?	Mis yutehopi haya?	Ishashkhanakhikd si ala	Abri dskant yao-khada?
From a shopkeeper of the village	Soplis medukhnis-sagan	Sopelische medu-kaneshe	Kedish dukhan-djis	Ashkhv soplish medukhnekhan	Abkanikhicha kant aktirtcha

NOTES OF THE QUARTER¹

(September, October, November).

I. REPORTS OF MEETINGS OF THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY, SESSION
1886-87.

First Meeting, 15th November, 1886.—Col. H. YULE, R.E., C.B., President, in the Chair.

Elections : Louisa, Lady Goldsmid and Surgeon-Major John Anderson, M.D., C.I.E., as Resident Members; Messrs. J. H. Barber, S. M. Burrows, J. K. Birch, Charles A. Cookson, C.B., Hector Van Cuylenberg, Jai Singh Rao Angria, K. Raganathji, C. Venketramana Naidu, J. D. Rees, and G. Stack, as Non-Resident Members.

The following paper was read by the author: The Present State of Education in Egypt, by Mr. H. B. Cunynghame. Starting with the proposition that those who would understand the condition of Muhammadan thought at the present day should revert to the ideas prevalent in Europe before the Renaissance, the lecturer proceeded to relate the results of a personal inspection of Cairo schools, and gave many interesting details illustrative of a system opposed to Western civilization. After treating of defects and shortcomings, he turned to the more favourable side of the question and said, in conclusion, that while Egyptians had much to learn in the matter

¹ Although arrangements are still incomplete for fitly organizing the department of the Journal under the above head, the Secretary has gratefully to acknowledge the promise of assistance received in several quarters to enable him to improve the character of the "Notes," and render them a useful reference to Oriental scholars and students. In furtherance of this last-mentioned object, communications from kindred Societies and Institutions (at home and abroad) that may wish to see their Proceedings summarized and Journals analyzed, or from publishers who may desire to have catalogued or otherwise noticed their latest published works, will meet with ready attention, if sent to the Royal Asiatic Society's rooms in Albemarle Street.

of education, they had lately been making efforts which deserved the highest encouragement. In the face of a deficient revenue, they had to contend with religious prejudice, the enmity of the University, and the interference of foreign powers. Fortunately, the immediate supervision of education in Egypt was now in the hands of Ya'kub Artin Pasha, a most highly cultivated minister, well acquainted with European education. Keen to seize new ideas and yet cautious in applying them, the schools, under his hands, were being slowly moulded into shape, and bid fair in time to become really satisfactory.

No discussion followed; but thanks were given to Mr. Cunyng-hame for his interesting paper, which will be printed *in extenso* in the April number of the *Journal*.

It was notified that the next Meeting would take place on the 20th December.

II. PROCEEDINGS OF ASIATIC OR ORIENTAL SOCIETIES.

Asiatic Society of Bengal, 5th May, 1886.—E. T. Atkinson, Esq., President, in the chair.

Seventeen presentations were announced, two Ordinary Members elected, four candidates proposed for election, and two withdrawals notified.

The Philological Secretary read a report by Dr. Hoernle on an ornament of ancient gold coins found in the Manikyála Tope, and forwarded by the Deputy-Commissioner of Ráwal Pindi. This discovery had formed the subject of "conversation" in the new Department announced in the Proceedings for April. The description of it as a "necklet" was considered of doubtful accuracy. It had rather the appearance of an "armlet," worn on the upper arm; but the identification of the coins as belonging, three to Antoninus Pius and two to his wife Faustina, was confirmed. At Dr. Hoernle's suggestion, the ornament has been deposited in the Imperial Museum in Calcutta. After the disposal of papers in the Natural History Department, and a discussion on Silkworms, Mr. Barton Groves exhibited four illustrated MSS. from the Palace at Mandalay. The last of these, a bark manuscript in ill-spelt Sanskrit, was accompanied by an explanatory note of Dr. Rájendralála Mitra.

2nd June, 1886.—E. T. Atkinson, Esq., in the chair.

Twelve presentations were announced; the election of four

Ordinary Members and two withdrawals notified; and one candidate for election proposed.

One gold and two silver coins found at Bijapur, and copper coins from Oudh, were exhibited; and a report was read by the Philological Secretary on a find of 22 old silver coins in the Jalandhar District. The first were of Aurangzib and Shah Jahan, and the last all round rupees of Akbar.

Among the papers read was one by Dr. Rájendralála Mitra "On the Derivation and Meaning of the Buddhist term *Ekotibháva*"; one "On the Mína Tribe of Jaipur in Mewar," by Káviráj Shyámál Dás; and one "On Coins supplementary to Thomas's Chronicles of the Pathan Kings of Dehli." The second of these was the chosen subject of conversation in the Philological Secretary's Department.

7th July, 1886.—E. T. Atkinson, Esq., in the chair.

Twenty-seven presentations were announced; the election of one Ordinary Member and one withdrawal notified; and two candidates for election proposed.

Two silver coins from the Deputy Commissioner of Hissar were exhibited; and two reports, one on 12 silver coins from the Deputy Commissioner of Hoshiarpur, and one on 69 coins and a silver chain from the Deputy Commissioner of Montgomery, were read by the Philological Secretary. Some Japanese Magic Mirrors were shown, and their character and uses explained by Babu P. Ghosha; and the two following papers were read:—

1. Note on some of the symbols on the coins of Kunanda; by W. Thcobald, Esq., M.R.A.S.

2. Remarks on an Inscription of Mahendrapála Deva of Kanauj; by Dr. Rájendralála Mitra.

Straits Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society, Singapur, 16th January, 1886.—W. A. Pickering, Esq., C.M.G., Vice-President, in the chair.

The Report of the Council for 1885 was read; the Honorary Treasurer's accounts were passed; the officers for 1886 and two new Members were elected. For the Presidential chair the choice of the Society fell upon the Hon. J. F. Dickson, C.M.G.

Among other matters of interest noted in the Report, it was stated that two volumes of Miscellaneous Papers relating to Indo-China and the Malay Peninsula, edited for the Society by Dr. Rost, were completed and approaching publication; and that it was proposed to continue the series by publishing two more volumes in the course of the year. A grant of 500 dollars in aid

of the work had been promised by the Local Government. The preparation of a Statistical Gazetteer for the Colony was, moreover, suggested, to supply an evident want. Reference was made to a serial paper which had appeared in the Journal under the head of "Notes and Queries," and the continuance of which it was hoped to facilitate by an accession of new contributions and correspondents.

China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society, Shanghai, 26th May, 1886.—Dr. R. A. Jamieson, Vice-President, in the chair.

It was announced that seventeen Ordinary Members had been elected since the last previous meeting; and that the Rev. Angelo Zottoli, of the Jesuit Mission, Sienwei, had, in consideration of his distinguished service as a Sinologist, been made an Honorary Member. Regret was expressed at the loss to the Society, by death, of Count Kleczkowski and Mr. Scherzer, both eminent Chinese scholars.

The Chairman adverted to a project that had been started for securing a complete chronological and representative series of Chinese art specimens in porcelain and bronze, especially the former, and invited Members to give their views on the subject. A certain sum would be necessary to commence with—perhaps \$1000—but something might be done with half that amount, and one gentleman offered \$50 if nine others would follow his example. Mr. Kingsmill approved the suggestion, and thought it quite possible that if the Council could show that the community was prepared to erect a substantial addition to the existing Museum, the British Government might listen to proposals regarding the site. A committee of five gentlemen was appointed to consider the question.

Fourteen papers, contributed to the "Symposium," were more or less lengthily noticed, though treated mainly in a collective sense, by Messrs. Kingsmill and Playfair and the Rev. Y. K. Yen; but as these form the first article in the Society's Journal, they will be alluded to under another head.

Société Asiatique, Paris, 18th June, 1886.—M. Ernest Renan, President, in the chair.

After the election of three new Members and ordinary business, the President announced that, owing to the Secretary's absence in India, the Annual Report for 1885 would appear in conjunction with that of 1886. Mr. Rubens Duval read a portion of the Preface to his edition of the Syriac Dictionary of Bar Bahlul, now

in the press of the "Imprimerie Nationale." M. Clermont-Ganneau read a paper on the words "Mane, Thecel, Phares" (noticed among the contents of the Journal). The Abbé Quentin, after explaining to the Society his views on the Assyrian Inscriptions he had recently inspected at the British Museum, read a paper on his translation of an unpublished inscription of Assurbanipal. This would appear in a future number.

III. CORRESPONDENCE.

1. *The Persian for Rouble.*

LONDON, 30th September, 1886.

SIR,

Will it be of interest to any of our readers to be informed that the "Persian name for a rouble," the word *منات*, mentioned in Vol. XVIII. p. 465 of our Journal, is really not Persian, but Russian, and means *money, coin*, not "rouble," in Russian. The word is *Moneta* (*moneta*), which the Persians have made into "manāt." A paper rouble is not *Монета* in Russian, and even the "silver rouble" is called on the coin itself *Монета рубль* (a cash rouble).

Yours, etc.

J. W. REDHOUSE.

The Secretary of the Royal Asiatic Society.

2. *The "Farhang Jahāngirī."*

LONDON, 1st October, 1886.

SIR,

The mention of the "Farhang Jahāngirī" (*read* Ferhengi Jihāngirī) in p. 325 of the July Number of our Journal gives no details; and, consequently, the inclosed extract from that work, text and translation, with a few notes, may be suitable for the "Correspondence" section of the next Part. I submit the same, hoping it may prove of interest.

The Jihāngirī was written in the latter part of Ekber's reign, but not being quite ready by his death, was dedicated to his son and successor Selim Jihāngir, after whom it was named.

Yours, etc.

J. W. REDHOUSE.

The Secretary of the Royal Asiatic Society.

سرخ بت و خنگ بت آن دو بت است که در زمان جاهلیت مشرکان در موضع بامیان از مضافات کابل که در سرحد بدخشان واقع است از سنگ تراشیده و از کوه انگیکته آنرا می پرستیده اند بتازی آنرا یعوق و یغوث خوانند بعضی منات ولات گفته اند و قریب باین دو صورت صورتی دیگرست بشکل پیسرزنی از آن دو صورت خوردتر که نام آن نسرم باشد و بعضی نستوا خوانند و این صور از عجایب و غرایب روزگارند که بلندی هریک از آن پنجاه و دو گز بود و میان این صورتها مجوف است چنانچه از کف پایشان راه است و به نردبان پایینا کرده اند که بجمیع جوف آنها توان گشت حتی سرانگشتان دستها و پایینا و در فرهنگها مرقوم است که سرخ بت عاشق خنگ بت بوده

The Red Idol and the White Idol.—These are two idols which the syntheists have hewn out of the rock and raised in relief out of the mountain, in the time of Ignorance, in the locality of Bāmiyān, of the dependencies of Kābul, which is on the frontier of Badakhshān, and which they worshipped. In Arabic they are called Ya'ūq and Yagūth; some have said Menāt and Lāt.

Near those two effigies is another effigy in the form of an old woman, smaller than those two effigies, the name of which is Nesrem, though some say Nestwā.

These effigies are among the wonders and curiosities of the world; for the height of each of them is fifty-two cubits. The interior of these effigies is hollow, so that there is a way from the soles of their feet. And they have formed the steps of a staircase, by which one can pass through all the cavities of them, to the tips of their fingers and toes.

In some dictionaries it is said that the Red Idol was the lover of the White Idol.

Notes.

By "Red Idol" may probably have been originally meant the Golden or Gilt Idol, since gold is commonly called *Zerī Surkh* زر سرخ 'red gold' in Persian.

The "White Idol" may then have been overlaid with silver or some other white metal.

The Arabic names are of course a mere supposition, dating from the times of Islām.

The smaller "old woman" effigy is perhaps what is now called the "baby." What its names of "Nesrem" or "Nestwā" may be is an enigma for scholarly solution.

"Fifty-two cubits" is a very vague measurement, as the cubit is, and always has been, of several lengths. Probably cubits could be suggested, fifty-two of which would make 173 feet and 120 feet respectively. But legendary Oriental measurements must not be too critically examined.

The "staircase" turns out true; but not so the detail as to all parts of the effigies being reachable "to the tips of their fingers and toes."

N.B.—The above two letters were received too late for insertion in the October Number.

Accompanying a letter dated Tehrān, 27th October, Mr. Sidney Churchill has kindly favoured the Secretary with the following:

3. Note on "*A Modern Contributor to Persian Literature. Rezā Qulī Khān and his Works.*"

Since writing the above (vide Vol. XVIII. Part II. p. 196) I have secured two of Rezā Qulī Khān's works mentioned by me, but which I had not yet seen. The one is a Dīvān, consisting of a collection of ghazels, qat'ahs, tarjī'bands and rubá'is; altogether about 12,000 distichs, beginning:

ای درد تو در میان جان شیدا
وی وصل تو نایاب ترز عنقا

This MS. is now in the British Museum.

The other MS. is entitled "Miftāh ul-Kunúz" (vide Schefer, *Chrestomathie Persane*, vii. p. 79, note 2). It is a commentary on the Poems of Khāqānī Shīrvānī.

Begins: مفتاح ابواب کمال وکلام ومصباح ضلال وظلام

The author also proposed, in the preface, after the completion of this work, composing a commentary on the poet's "Tuhfah ul-'Irāqain."

A third volume of the Matla' ush-Shams (vide *Academy*, Dec. 19, 1885) has just been issued from the Government Press at Tehrán by the Saní' ud-Dauleh. This volume is concerned with the description of the towns, villages, and notabilia connected with them, which are passed on the road from Meshhed to Tehrán. In it, moreover, has been inserted a valuable note of a score of pages or more on Níshápúr, by General Schindler, the well-known authority on Persian geography. Nearly all the inscriptions to be met with along the road have been noted and given by the Saní' ud-Dauleh. The text is very clearly lithographed. This same distinguished author has begun in the *Court Journal*, as a feuilleton, another of his important geographical memoirs. Up till now he had published a memoir on Tálaqán by himself; an anonymous history of Sístán; and a memoir on Isfahán by Agá Muhammed Mehdí, Arbáb, Isfahání: now he has commenced a memoir on the District of Núr of the Province of Mázanderán.

4. *The Idols of Bamian.*

November, 1886.

DEAR SIR,

I enclose an extract from a book published about a quarter of a century ago¹ by Messrs. Smith and Elder, Cornhill, which may be interesting to the readers of the Asiatic Society's Journal. Though it may not throw any new light on the subject so exhaustively treated in the leading paper of the July Number, a comparison of it with that article will, perhaps, tend to show that the volume from which it has been taken is authentic.

Yours faithfully,

ALFRED HAGGARD.

The Secretary of the Royal Asiatic Society.

"Between Afghanistan and Balkh, about six miles from Bamecan, is the city of Gulguleh (City of Confusion). It was the town of Jellaladeen, a great king who lived eight hundred years ago, and was also the founder of Jellalabad.

"In Bamecan I saw the great images of Subsál and Shamona, otherwise called Surkbut and Konuckbut, or, in Arabic, Yaouek and Yasouek (*sic*). These figures are supposed to represent the first

¹ "Lost among the Afghans," being the adventures of John Campbell (otherwise Faringhee Basha) amongst the wild tribes of Central Asia. Related by himself to Oswald Fry. London, 1862.

teachers of the Buddhist religion who, when they died, left their images for the people to worship.

"I fell in with the army of Afghanistan going to take taxes from Hazara; and it was whilst travelling in their company that I came in sight of the images. We could see their immenso forms from a great distance, and all the horses shied on approaching them.

"When we arrived close to them, we were all looking up, bewildered by the amazing height, and I proposed that some one should climb up and get on the head of one of them. The soldiers declared that it would be impossible; but I said, 'If you give me some money, I will do it.'

"They dared me to fulfil my promise, and offered me a small sum from each one of them if I should succeed in performing the feat; but they made me sign a paper to say that if I perished by my temerity they were not guilty of my blood.

"I went to a cave, where was a poor woman, and asked her to show me the way up. The images are placed in enormous niches made for them in the face of the rock which shelters them, and between them is the entrance to the cave. The woman lighted a candle, so we entered the narrow cavern, and began ascending some steps. We were an immense time going up, but at last we came out opposite the shoulders of the image on the inside of the niche.

"I was within reasonable jumping distance to get on to the shoulder of the figure, but oh! the thought of missing my foot made me shudder! I looked across at the image and down far below me at the army, the soldiers looking like little children playing beneath me. If I slipped I must inevitably be dashed to pieces.

"It was a fearful thing to do. I shut my eyes and took the leap, and in a moment was clinging with a beating heart on the broad shoulder of the image. I walked across to the opposite shoulder and all the people shouted and clapped their hands from below me. Then came the return. I had fulfilled my promise, and did not care to risk my life for nothing. So I told the woman to bring a rope, one end of which she flung across to me and I made it fast on the image; she secured the other end on the rock, and I soon got safely back into the cave. I ran down the steps and hastened to collect my money from the soldiers, and altogether it amounted to a considerable sum."—pp. 108 and 110–112.

5. *The Pre-Akkadian Writing.*

BRITISH MUSEUM, LONDON, 9th Nov., 1886.

DEAR SIR,

In answer to Prof. Terrien de Lacouperie's note in the last part of the Society's Journal, I will merely state—

1. A reference to the Journal of the Society of Arts, vol. xxviii. p. 791, and to the *Academy* of November 6th, 1886, p. 313, will show that several scholars have brought forward, before him, the theory which he advances; and

2. I entirely disagree with him on the question.

Yours very truly,

G. BERTIN.

IV. OBITUARY NOTICES.

During the past quarter the Society has had to regret the loss of one of its lately-named Vice-Presidents, James Gibbs, Esq., of H.M. Bombay Civil Service, a Companion of the Star of India and Indian Empire, and late Senior Member of the Viceroy's Council in India.

Mr. Gibbs entered the service of the Hon. East India Company on the 7th December, 1846, but, within a year after his arrival in Bombay, was obliged to return to England on medical certificate for two years. Again landing in India in 1850, he passed examinations in the native languages, and was appointed Assistant Judge and Sessions Judge at Surat in April, 1851. During the month of November of the following year he was appointed Senior Assistant Judge and Sessions Judge at the detached station of Broach, and, in December, 1853, Judicial Assistant to the Commissioner in Sind, then the lamented Sir Bartle Frere. In 1855, on the departure of Mr. (now Sir Barrow) Ellis, Mr. Gibbs received charge of the office of Political Assistant to the Commissioner, and from that period continued to perform the work which it entailed, in addition to that of Judicial Assistant. Throughout the Mutinies of 1857–58, he assisted Sir Bartle Frere in those exceptional and highly important duties which the circumstances of the day threw upon that distinguished statesman. At the close of the said crucial epoch in 1859, Mr. Gibbs was appointed, under a special Commission, to try rebel chiefs of the Nagar Parkar districts for high treason, being invested with extraordinary powers to pass such sentences as he might consider necessary, without previous reference; and the “great care and intelligence” shown by him in the conduct of the

trial were acknowledged in a Resolution of the Bombay Government approving the sentences so passed.

Mr. Gibbs remained in Sind until September, 1860, when he was ordered to the Presidency on special duty connected with the Income Tax Act, then just passed through the Legislative Council of India. First appointed Special Commissioner, he subsequently became President of the Commission and Collector of the Tax; thus having, for the town and island of Bombay, the entire management of that unpopular measure. He took leave to England in 1862, and while on furlough was called to the Bar by the Honourable Society of the Inner Temple. On return to India in January, 1865, after resuming for a few weeks his former duties, and acting as Collector of Bombay, he was appointed Judge of Púna and Agent for the Governor for the Sirdars in the Dakhan. These appointments he held until the beginning of 1866, when, having been named by her Majesty one of the Judges of the High Court of Judicature at Bombay, he left Púna for the Presidency. Here he continued at his post until April, 1874, and was the first civilian judge, selected by the Chief Justice to sit on the "Original Side" of the Court, which represented the former "Supreme" or "Queen's," in contradistinction to the "Sadr" or "E.I. Company's Court," and on which up to that time, Barrister Judges alone had sat. During a year and a half he took his share with his Barrister colleagues in every branch of the duties—civil, criminal, and chambers on that side of the Court, while he had already for some years presided over the insolvent business. On resigning his seat on the Bench to become a member of the Government of Bombay, he was addressed by the senior Barrister in behalf of the Bar in very complimentary terms, and also by the Native Pleaders on the Appellate Side.

Mr. Gibbs was from May to October, 1873, a temporary member of the Bombay Government, and in April, 1874, succeeded permanently to that office, holding charge of the Political, Judicial, and Railway Departments, and for a time that of the Public Works; he brought in and passed several important measures through the Legislative Council, including Acts for Mufassil Municipalities, Compulsory Vaccination, Jails, the amendment of the Municipality of the City of Bombay, and lastly the purchase of the entire foreshore of the island and reconstitution of the Port Trust, a measure of the greatest importance to the trade of the city. He took a prominent part in the arrangements for meeting and dealing with the famine

in the Bombay Presidency in 1876-78, and in the preparation of rules which have since been approved of for future general guidance in the event of such a calamity recurring; and for the personal part he had taken in the initiation and support of these measures, he was admitted to the third class of the Order of the 'Star of India.'

In 1870 Mr. Gibbs was first appointed Vice-Chancellor of the University of Bombay, and continued by four re-appointments to hold that office until his departure from India in 1879. On his resignation a meeting of the Fellows was held, an address voted, and a subscription for a testimonial opened, to which the public were invited to join. The fund raised has been divided to defray the cost of a bust placed in the University Library and procure a large addition to the books. In addition to this, Jahangir Cowasji Jahangir Readymoney gave Rs. 1000 to found a prize of books, value Rs. 40 every year, to be called "The Gibbs Prize," at the University; while the Kach Darbar gave Rs. 2500, and the Junagarh Darbar Rs. 2000 for Vernacular Prize Essays in Mr. Gibbs's name, making a total Testimonial of Rs. 22,100, being one of the largest testimonials raised in Bombay in honour of a departing public servant. Before he resigned, Mr. Gibbs had the satisfaction of bringing the scheme for conferring degrees in science to a completion, and it received the approval of the Senate about a month after he had left India. During the last few weeks of his residence in Bombay, he received several other public recognitions of his services, and his departure was witnessed by one of the largest assemblies of Natives and Europeans assembled for such a purpose. Not a few of the former, including several Chiefs, had travelled long distances for the sole purpose of bidding him farewell.

Mr. Gibbs, who had returned from India in 1885, died at his London residence, after a long illness, on the 30th October, in his sixty-second year, much regretted by those who appreciated his kindliness of heart, and amiable qualities. His remains were attended to the Brompton Cemetery by many friends and old companions.

Arthur Grote, son of George Grote and brother of the historian, was born on the 29th November, 1814, at Beckenham in Kent. Nominated by Mr. George Lyall, Director of the East India Company, on the recommendation of Mr. James Pattison, he entered Haileybury College early in 1832, and passed out in December, 1833, as 'highly distinguished,' having obtained prizes

in Classics, Bengali, Persian, Hindustani and Arabic. He arrived in India on the 14th June following, admitted a Writer on the Bengal establishment, and shortly afterwards was placed under the Commissioner of Revenue and Circuit in the Aligarh Division, then appointed Assistant to the Magistrate and Collector of Jessor. In 1836 he was transferred as Assistant to the Commissioner of Revenue and Circuit in Bauliah and Murshidabad respectively, exercising the power of Magistrate at Hugli. Next year he was placed in charge of the Civil and Sessions Judge's Office at Hugli; and in 1838 he conducted the duties of the Collector's Office at Midnapur, subsequently officiating as Deputy-Collector of that place and of Hijili. In 1839, appointed Superintendent of Settlement Duties at Midnapur, he conducted at the same time the duties of the Judge's Office there, and those of the Special Deputy-Collector—being confirmed in the latter post (including Hijili) in 1840. Magistrate of Champaran in 1845, he proceeded to Europe on furlough in 1846, and returned to India in 1849, to be nominated Superintendent of Revenue Survey in the 24 Parganahs. In 1852 he held a similar appointment in Bhagalpur, afterwards becoming Collector of Sylhet. The following year he was made Junior Secretary, and in 1855 promoted to Senior Secretary to the Revenue Board of the Lower Provinces of Bengal. In 1857–61, Commissioner of Revenue and Circuit, first in the Naddia and secondly in the Chittagong Divisions, he was, in 1862, appointed a Member of the Revenue Board in the Lower Provinces of Bengal. He resigned the service in July, 1868, and became an Annuitant on the Fund.¹

When in India, Mr. Grote had taken an active part in furthering the interests of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, and, among other functions performed on their behalf, had occupied the President's chair for four successive years (1859–62), and again for one detached year (1865). On return to England, he joined the London Royal Asiatic Society, and at the period of his decease had been on its List of Members for 17 years—for a great part of the time one of its Vice-Presidents or Conncillors. He was, moreover, a Fellow of the Zoological Society and a contributor to its Journal; also a Fellow of the Linnæan Society. At all these, as at the Athenæum Club, his presence will be missed and loss regretted: and the

¹ The above information has been, for the most part, kindly supplied by Mr. C. Prinsep, of the India Office, to whom the Journal is also indebted for the brief obituary notice of Mr. J. H. Batten in the October Number.

number of mourners who attended his funeral at Kensal Green on the 9th December, bear testimony to the high esteem and regard in which his memory is held by a large circle of friends.

V. EXCERPTA ORIENTALIA.

No. 2 of the first part, vol. lv., *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, contains an article by Mr. E. E. Oliver on "the decline of the Sámánis and rise of the Ghaznavis in Máwaráu-n-Nahr and part of Khurásán." It is gratifying to find the younger officers of the Indian Government—now no longer restricted to the covenanted circle—devote their leisure and opportunities to the advancement of the knowledge of Indian History, not only checking dates, but creating data by the light of coins. The substantial aid supplied to the Historian by the Numismatist is well illustrated in Mr. Oliver's useful paper, prepared with evident care and industry. Mr. Whiteway's "Place-Names in Marwára" is suggestive of the improvement which might be effected in our Gazetteers by the compulsory record of the meaning or origin of every name entered. Captain Tufnell, of the Madras Staff Corps, supplies the third and last article in an analysis of a collection of South Indian coins.

Journal Asiatique, huitième série, tome viii. No. 1 (Juillet-Août, 1886), contains a Report of the General Meeting of the 18th June, with a list of the Society's officers and members, and the following articles:—Mané, Thecel, Pharès, et le Festin de Balthasar, in which M. Clermont Gaucneau discusses the interpretation given to the three mysterious words of the fifth chapter of Daniel; M. Sénart's continuation of his study of the Piyadasi Inscriptions; a new instalment of M. Sauvaire's materials for a history of Muhammadan Numismatics and Metrology; and the usual "Nouvelles et Mélanges." The last paper reviews at length a recent edition of the "Poésies Gastronomiques" or parodies of Abu Ishak Halláj Shirázi, who flourished early in the fifteenth century, and supplements the notice of the same work and the same author, which appeared some time ago in the British Museum Catalogue of Persian MSS. (vol. ii. p. 634). M. Rieu's MS. of the كنز الشهية "treasure of appetite," is of A.D. 1685; whereas the present edition, published at Constantinople, and said to do honour to the Turkish printing press, is hailed as a sign of revival of a taste for Persian literature among Ottoman readers of the day. The editor, Mirza Habib Isfaháni, has already attained local repute as the author of a Persian Grammar and translator of Molière's "Misanthrope." No. 2 of the same volume of the *Journal* (Septembre-Octobre, 1886), besides a continuation of the respective articles of MM Sénart and Sauvaire, and the "Nouvelles et Mélanges," has a contribution by M. Abel Bergaigne on the "Samhita primitive du Rig Veda," and another by M. J. Halévy on "L'étoile nommée Kakkab Mesri en Assyrien."

German Oriental Society, vol. xl. part 3, contains: 1. David Kaufmann's "Das Wörterbuch Menachens Ibn Saruk's;" 2. L. Morales, "Aus dem Buch der ergötzenden Erzählungen der Bar Hebräus;" 3. Adolf Baumgartner "Ueber das Buch die Chrie"; 4. M. Heidenheim on "Die neue Ausgabe der Vers. Sam. zur Genesis" (Bibl. Sam. I.); papers respectively involving acquaintance with the Hebrew, Syriac, Armenian, and Samaritan languages. 5. Adolf Stenzler's "Das Schweitklingen-Gelübde der Inder"; 6. Böhlingk's Supplement to Vasishita; 7. Bühler's Observations on Böhlingk's article on Apastamba—these papers are Indian themes, the last an elaborate contribution by a Sanskrit scholar well known in the East; 8. Kuhnert's "Midas in Sage und Knust"; and Ign. Guidi's "Die Kirchengeschichte der Catholicos Sabkriso."

The number for December, 1885, of the *Journal of the Straits Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society*, in addition to its Lists of Council and Members, a Meteorological Report and Occasional Notes, has the following seven articles:—Plan for a Volunteer Force in the Muda Districts, Province Wellesley; a Description of the Chinese Lottery known as "Hua Hoey;" a paper translated from the Dutch on the Roots in the Malay Language; Klieug's War Raid to the Skies, a Dyak Myth; a continuation of Valentine's account of Malacca, translated from the Dutch; on Mines and Miners in Kinta, Perak; and an English, Sulu, and Malay Vocabulary. Among these the essay on Malay Roots and the Vocabulary are of undoubted utility: the first, by Dr. Pijnappel, was read in the Polynesian Section of the Oriental Congress held at Leyden in September, 1883. "Hua Hoey" supplies a curious and an entertaining subject of consideration, and is illustrated with numerous drawings. Printed separately from the *Journal*, are "Notes and Queries," edited by the Hon. Secretary. These contain Local memoranda of interest, original and selected. *En passant*, some kind of answer may be given to the question as to the existence of any biography of Captain T. J. Newbold, of the 23rd Madras Light Infantry. A list of that officer's writings will be found in a book published at Madras in 1874, and bearing on the title-page, "Men whom India has Known, Biographies of Eminent Indian Characters, by J. J. Higginbottom, F.R.A.S.," and at the close of that list, reference is made to a Biographical Notice of the deceased in the "Bombay Times, May, 1850."

Issued at Shanghai, August, 1886, are Nos. 1 and 2, Vol. xxi. of the *Journal of the China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society*. Exclusive of Notes and Queries, and Literary Notes, its articles are thus designated:—1. The Advisability, or the Reverse, of endeavouring to convey Western knowledge to the Chinese through the Medium of their own Language. 2. Histrionic Notes. 3. The Seaports of India and Ceylon, Part II. 4. Roadside Religion in Manchuria. 5. Alphabetical List of the Dynastic and Reign Titles of the Chinese Emperors. 6. Where was Ta-ts'in? a question

replied to by No. 6. In "Notes and Queries" the signatures of Dr. Edkins and Messrs. Playfair and Giles, are guarantees of matter worthy the reader's attention.

Archæology.—Vol. iv. of the *Archæological Survey of Southern India*, lately issued from the Madras Government Press, and No. ii. of the *Archæological Survey of Western India*, both do honour to Mr. Burgess, the Department in his charge, and the many Assistants thrown in his way, and are full of instructive and interesting information. In the first—which deals with Tamil and Sanskrit Inscriptions and village Antiquities—may be specially indicated the admirable care and method with which the record of the Copper-plate Grants is carried out. The volume is divided into three parts respectively designated:—Notes and Inscriptions from Temples in the Madura district; copied Tamil Inscriptions from Temples in the Rámnád Zamíndári; and Copper-plate Grants in the Madras Museum and elsewhere. A note by Mr. Robert Sewell, communicated to the *Athenæum* (11th September), refers to the identification by Mr. Burgess, of the Hindu Temple at Srisailam, amongst the mountains south of the Krishna river, with the Buddhist Monastery described by Fah-Hien (A.D. 400) as the "Po-lo-yu," and by Hiouen Tshang as on the mountains of Po-lo-mo-lo-ki-li. Western India's archæology is illustrated in the other volume by Lists of Antiquarian Remains in the Bombay Presidency, with an Appendix for Gujrát Inscriptions. Mr. Burgess explains the practical use of this arrangement to be in affording data for the ready preparation of classified monuments for conservation; and when it is observed that such utilization of his material applies to no less than fifteen Provinces, States, Territories or Districts, and sixteen so-called "Zillas," it will be admitted that an important object has been attained. Apart from these considerations, however, the book will be valuable on its own intrinsic merits.

Mr. Burgess writes in the *Academy* of October 9, that when at the site of the Amarávati Stupa, he discovered an inscription of the Andhra king Pulumávi, belonging to the second century A.D. It commemorates the gift of "a Dharmaehakra to the great Chaitya belonging to the school of the Chaitikáyas." The Chaityehas and Púrvasailas being one and the same, and the Avarasailas a different division of the Mahásamghikas, it is suggested that the assumption, from Hiouen Tshang's reference to the latter, that the Avarasaila Sanghâsâma was identical with the Amrávati Stûpa may be unfounded. Burgess contends that, in any case, the inscriptions appear to prove Amrávati the site of the great Púrvasaila Stûpa.

The Quarterly statement for November of the *Palestine Exploration Fund* is full of interesting details obtained from Capt. Conder and other contributors. A paper by Herr Schumacher, giving the results of a recent visit to Southern Palestine, is notable for its description of a singular brick building excavated at Askalan; a second by the Rev. H. G. Tomkies on "Gath and its Worthies" may possibly provoke some new discussion; and another by Herr Schick on further investigations at the Pool of Siloam, relates to

the important discovery referred to in the Annual Report of this Society for July, 1886. Mention is made in the "Notes and News" that a new and corrected edition of the "Memoir of Twenty-one Years Work" (well reviewed in the *Athenæum* of October 2) is now available to subscribers and the public, and that the Palestine Pilgrims' Text Society has issued the "Mukaddasi," translated by Mr. Guy Le Strange, and annotated by himself with Sir Charles Wilson. The Report of the Public Meeting held on June 28th, at the Royal Institution, has been deferred for detailed notice until January.

Under the head of "A New Reading of the Moabite Stone," the *Academy* of Nov. 27 gives an interesting notice of a publication issued by Professors Lind and Socin, entitled *Die Inschrift des Königs Mesa von Moab*. This report is the result of a minute examination of the squeeze of the monument preserved in the Louvre by the aforesaid two *savants*. The subject had been, however, treated by Neubauer two months before in an article in the *Athenæum*, September 25, which brought forth a valuable note on "Ariel" a fortnight later, from Professor Sayce.

The *Indian Antiquary* for September opens with Mr. Fleet's paper on "The History and Date of Mihirakula," followed by No. 164 of the same indefatigable Epigraphist's researches into Sanskrit and Old Kanarese Inscriptions, the special subject being the Mandasor Pillar Inscriptions of Yasodharman. Mr. Rehatsek continues his translation from the *Tārikh Sultāni* of Sultān Muḥammad Khan Bārakzāi already noticed; Sir Walter Elliot discourses on "Ancient Tenures of Land in the Maratha country"; and, together with a small instalment of Mrs. Grierson's Gipsy Index, there is a third contribution by Mr. Fleet under the designation of "The meaning of Bappa and Bava." The natural inference that the first is the old Prakṛit form of the modern *bāp* 'a father,' and the second the older Prakṛit word from which come the *bābā*, *bāwā* and *bārā* of Western India, is supported by that kind of argument which could only be applied by an adept in Indian antiquarian research. In the 'Miscellanea' are notes on the origin of the Gupta Era, the latest translation of the Upanishads, and the reason why the name *Bṛihacharana* has been given to a certain set of Brahmans; also Yudhishtira's answer to four questions of a water demon, devourer of those who failed to supply them. Among the Book Notices, Capt. Temple reviews the late Arthur Burnell's translation of the Ordinances of Manu, and Mr. V. A. Smith analyses vols. xxi. parts 1 and 2, of the Archæological Survey of India. The October number of the *Indian Antiquary* contains the concluding portion of Mr. Rehatsek's paper on Shah Shuja'a's Last Years; the Four Princes, a Kashmiri tale by the Rev. J. Hinton Knowles; Dr. Hultzsich's analysis of the Bhagatpur Plate of Narayanapala, and more of the Gipsy Index; also some interesting contributions to the "Miscellanea," among which is a letter from the late Sir Arthur Phayre to Sir Walter Elliot touching

the ancient settlements from Telingana on the coast of Pegu. In No. 189 of the same journal, for November, will be found a continuation of Mr. Murray-Aynsley's articles on the Comparative Study of Asiatic Symbolism, the conclusion of Mr. Knowles' Kashmiri tale, a new contribution by Dr. Bühler on Valabhi Inscriptions, the Gipsy Index, and the instructive "Miscellanea," in which Mr. Grierson's practised pen plays a conspicuous part.

The *Athenæum* of September 25 reports that M. Guillaume of the Institut de France had been placed in charge of an archæological mission to Greece and Asia Minor.

Hebrew and Semitic Languages.—Professor Nöldeke's valuable contribution to part 84, vol. xxi. of the *Encyclopædia Britannica* lately issued, defines the "Semitic" as Hebrew and Phœnician, Aramaic, Assyrian, Arabic, Æthiopic (Geez and Amharic). It would be interesting to compare his definition and general argument with Renan's, but that thirty years of progress in this, as in other branches of scientific study, have effected marvellous changes in thought and theory—a fact on which the learned German writer significantly dwells. Acknowledging the charm and brilliancy of the "*Histoire Générale des Langues Sémitiques*," he says, "A work upon the subject which realizes for the present state of science what Renan endeavoured to realize for his own time unfortunately does not exist."

The *Academy* of 11th September reports that the 18th Annual Session of the American Philological Association began at Ithaca on July 13th, under the Presidency of Professor Tracy Pack of Yale. Mr. Cyrus Adler of Philadelphia read a paper "on the Hebrew Words in the Latin Glossary, Codex Sangallensis 912"—intended to be a contribution towards the collection and explanation of Hebrew words found in late and mediæval glossaries; Professor Blackwell of Missouri proposed a new etymology for Ashtoreth the Canaanitish Goddess, which he referred to the Akkadian Ishtar, Ishtar, whereas the common assumption was to identify it with Asherah. The latter he "referred to a root *asher* 'to go before,' not substantiated in Hebrew, but found in Assyrian and Arabic."

Strack's Hebrew Grammar, a continuation of Petermann's series, is noticed in some detail by the Rev. C. J. Ball, who sees in it "a marvel of compression but hardly of expression;" yet allows that advanced students will find it "both interesting and, to a certain extent, edifying." He himself acknowledges having read the book "with much pleasure and some profit." The English translation is by the Rev. A. R. S. Kennedy of Glasgow.

An elaborate notice of Dr. Cornill's revised Hebrew text and translation of the Book of the Prophet Ezekiel, published at Leipzig, is contained in the *Academy* of the 9th October.

We learn from the *Athenæum* that the Delegates of the Clarendon Press have undertaken the publication of a new and much needed Hebrew dictionary, in preparation by Canon Driver of Oxford, and Professors Brown and Briggs in America.

Among new publications may be mentioned:—

Die Aramäischen Fremdwörter in Arabischen von Siegmund Fraenkel (Brill, Leipzig, 1886).

Chwolson, D.—Syrische Grabenschriften aus Semirjetschie Ureg. n. erklärt (St. Petersburg, 2 m.).

Bondi, J. H.—Dem Hebräisch-Phönizischen Sprach-zweige angehörige Lehrnwörter in hieroglyphischen u. hieratischen Teuton (Leipsic, Breitkopf und Härtel, 3 m.).

Levy, J.—Neu hebräisches und Chaldäisches Wörterbnch, part 20 (6 m.).

Derenbourg, J.—Le livre des parterres fleuries : Grammaire Hebraïque en Arabe, d'Aboul Walid Merwan ibn Djanah de Cordone (Paris, Viewig, 25 fr.).

Gasselin, E.—Dictionnaire Français-Arabe, tome i. (Paris, Challamel aîné, 120 fr.).

Assyriology.—In the *Zeitschrift für Assyriologie* for August, M. J. Oppert reverts to his revised interpretation of the word *napah*, and discusses the question in a separate article of some ten pages, whereas his former notice on the subject was confined to a passage in the "Sprechsaal." Contenting himself in the first instance with stating his proposition, he now shows cause for its assertion by argument and illustration. The second paper by M. Jensen, on the "Kakkab Mesri," carries on the contest already begun by M. Schrader in respect of M. Oppert's interpretations. To those interested in this learned discussion, a further argument still will be found in M. Halévy's dissertation on the Star above mentioned in the French Journal Asiatique for September-October. This writer considers the key of the disputed passage to be the word *kaššu*, commonly translated "earthquake;" but which M. Oppert renders by "wind-tempest," M. Jensen by "cold," and M. Halévy by "heat." The remaining articles in the number under notice are by Nöldeke on the term "Assyria;" M. Amiaud on Hittite Inscriptions, and notably the "bulle de Iovanoff"; M. Reber on old Chaldæan art (painting); the Sprechsaal, in which are communications by Messrs. Oppert and Jensen and Professor Sayce; the "Recensiones," in which are reviewed Tiele's *Babylonisch-Assyrische Geschichte*, Pinches' *Assyrian Antiquities*, and Brünengo's *Impero di Babylonia*; and the Bibliographie.

The *Academy* of the 20th November announces that Professor Paul Haupt was to deliver a course of Lectures on Assyriology at the Johns Hopkins University during January, 1887, beginning on the 3rd and ending on the 29th id. Individual instruction would be given at the same time in the Semitic Languages.

Two numbers of a new periodical designated "The Babylonian and Oriental Record," edited by Messrs. de Lacouperie, Pinches and Capper, have appeared. No. 1 for October contains "Sumerian and Akkadian in Comparative Philology" by Prof. T. de Lacouperie; Singasid's gift to the Temple Ê-ana, by Mr. Pinches; and the Plague Legends of Chaldæa, by a writer who signs himself 'B. W.'

No. 2 for November has the Burning Fiery Furnace, by Mr. Bertin; the Ereehite's lament over the desolation of his Fatherland, by Mr. Pinches; Gleanings (I.) from Clay Commentaries, by Mr. Boscawen; and the Kushites, who were they? by M. de Lacouperie. Each number has critical notices of appropriate books and "Notes, News and Queries." From the last it appears that two very interesting courses of lectures on Cuneiform Inscriptions and the Ancient Civilization of the East have been delivered at the British Museum in November by Mr. Bertin and Mr. Boscawen.

Hittite.—Professor Sayce contributes to the *Academy* of the 23rd October an interesting letter on a Hittite Inscription discovered by Professor Sokolouski, between Ikonium and Ilgin, and reported on last year by Prof. Perrot. The localities had been visited last summer by Prof. Ramsay, from whose careful drawing of the text new conclusions have been reached. Prof. Sayce finds that the characters and their combinations are the same as those found in the monuments of Carhemish and Hamath, and infers that "the Hittite monuments of Central and Western Asia Minor cannot be the work of the inhabitants of the country, but of invaders from Syria and Kappadocia. They confirm the Egyptian inscriptions in indicating the existence of a Hittite Empire in Asia Minor." But the whole letter in which, among other questions, the association between the Hittite and Amorite names is treated, is full of that high interest which attaches to Biblical archæology. It may here be added that in the *Academy* immediately succeeding the number noticed, Profs. Cheyne and Neubauer both resume discussions of the last-mentioned subject, the correspondence being further continued to the reader's advantage for three successive weeks.

Arabic.—A noteworthy attempt to simplify the grammatical study of Arabic has been made in an octavo volume published at Chicago under the title of *An Arabic Manual* by Dr. Lansing, Professor of Old Testament Languages and Exegesis in the Theological Seminary of the Reformed Church at New Brunswick. Its four main divisions are under the respective heads of Orthography, Etymology, Paradigms and Chrestomathy.

The first of a series of Memoirs on Oriental Geography and History, published at Leyden, in a neatly-printed, handy volume, is entitled *Memoires sur les Carmathes du Bahrein et les Fatimides*. It is, in fact, a new edition of M. J. de Goeje's publications of 1862, intended as a serial, but continued for three issues only; and both the writer and readers may be congratulated on the revival of the project.

Brill of Leyden has published *Primeurs Arabes*, présentées par le Comte de Lundberg, fascicule i., and *Ibn Anbârî's Asrâr al 'Arabiya*, edited by C. F. Seybold.

Among the gift books of the season is one published by Unwin, bearing the emblem of the Crescent and Star, and the title of "Tales of the Caliph." They profess to relate certain noteworthy occurrences in the life of the Khalif Harunu-r-Rashîd, and to be written by "Al Arawiyah."

The *Academy* of October 2nd, reviewing Messrs. Trübner's Oriental publications, places first in importance the *Indica* of Al Berūni, Arabic text and English translation, both by Professor Sachau of Berlin.

The Lord Almoner's Professorship of Arabic, vacant by the resignation of Professor Robertson Smith, the University Librarian, has been conferred upon the Hon. I. G. N. Keith-Falconer, M.A., of Trinity College, Cambridge.

Syriac.—The Syriac text of the "Book of the Bee," with an English translation by Mr. Ernest Budge, has been issued from the Clarendon Press, Oxford. It is edited from four MSS.: two in London—one from the Library of the Royal Asiatic Society, and one from the British Museum; one from the Royal Library at Munich, and one from the Bodleian at Oxford. Irrespective of intrinsic worth, the publication deserves high praise for clearness of type, whether Syriac or Roman.

Aryan Languages.—*Sanskrit*.—At the meeting of the American Philological Association before mentioned, Professor Whitney read corrected translations of part of the "Katha Upanishad," remarking that the Buddhistic system of pessimism was possibly rather the product of some special school, than of popular growth.

The *Academy*, 18th September, learns that Professor Petersen of Bombay had nearly finished a third report on the search for Sanskrit MSS. in Western India, also a new edition of the *Hitopadesa*—publication having hitherto been delayed from failing eye-sight. These were to be followed by a catalogue of Sanskrit MSS. at Ulwar for the Maharāja of that place.

"Selected Vedic Hymns," by Professor Cowell, and "Sanskrit Grammar," by Mr. Neil, form, according to the list published in the *Academy* of Oct. 16, two of a course of five lectures on Philology to be given at Cambridge.

The issue of the same paper of Nov. 20 contains a letter from Dr. Rājendralāla Mitra to Mr. Maedonell of Oxford, in which he explains the delay in publishing his *Bṛihaddevatā*, but expresses his opinion that a month's leisure would enable him to do the needful. In the paragraph immediately following, it is stated that Prof. C. R. Lanman of Harvard contemplates bringing out a critical edition of the same work, and that Professor Kuhn of Munich had offered to place at his disposal some of his father's essays on it.

Mr. C. Bendall's *Journey of Literary and Archaeological Research in Nepal and Northern India during the Winter of 1884-5* is analysed in the *Athenæum* of the 23rd October, and is spoken of as "a welcome addition" to the writer's "excellent Catalogue of the Buddhist-Sanskrit MSS. in the University of Cambridge."

The high estimate of Mr. Boxwell's powers of metrical translation, recorded in our Annual Report for the past year, has been more than confirmed by the same ready writer's Latin version of a Sanskrit poem which appears in the *Academy* of the 20th November.

Among Messrs. Trübner's new publications may be noticed the text of the *Manava-Dharma-Çastra*, edited with critical notes by Professor Jolly of Würzburg. There is also procurable at the same publishers the second part of Capeller's "Sanskrit-Wörterbuch, nach den Petersburger Wörterbüchern bearbeitet" (Karl Trübner: Strassburg, 3 M.). The fourth book of the *Māitrayani Samhitā*, edited by Schroeder, and printed at the cost of the German Oriental Society, has appeared at Leipzig (Brockhaus, 12 M. 25 Pr.).

The second, third, fourth and fifth parts of Panini's Grammar, by Otto Böhtlingk, have been published at Leipzig; and, at Brussels, the "troisième notice" of M. Van den Gheyn's "Nouvelles Recherches sur la Huitième Classe des Verbes Sanscrits."

The Clarendon Press has again done itself honour in the issue of Katyayana's Sarvanukramani of the Rig Veda, with extracts from Shadgurusishya's Commentary, entitled Vedārthadipikā, edited with Notes and Appendices by Mr. A. A. Macdonell.

Persian.—*Persia, the Land of the Imams*, is noticed by Mr. C. E. Wilson in the *Academy* of the 15th November, as containing many interesting details, but showing want of system in its transliteration of proper names. Its author is Mr. James Basset, a Missionary of the Presbyterian Board. The book was more briefly referred to in the *Athenæum* of the preceding month (October 23rd), and a conclusion arrived at much to the same effect.

Mr. Pincott's letter to the *Academy*, in the issue of the 20th November, states that an Urdú book of much interest had reached the India Office from the Panjáb, entitled the Kuwá'iyid-i-Baragstá, or grammar of the Baragstá, by Ghulám Muhammad Khán Popalzái. The language in question is shown to be "the dialect of the people named Ormar, a colony of whom resides near Pesháwar, and another cluster is found at Logur, near Kábul; but the principal seat of the tribe is at Káni-Karam in the Wazírí district of Afghanistan." It is Aryan in character, of the Pashtú type, though inclining to Persian. Mr. Pincott enters into some particulars regarding it, and notes the author's promise to prepare a dictionary and an exercise book.

"Persia and the Persians" is a handsomely got-up volume with superior illustrations, published by Murray. It relates the experience of Mr. S. G. W. Benjamin, late United States' Minister at the Shah's Court, and is rather a general survey of the country in which the author passed the year or two of his diplomatic career than a record of daily occurrences.

"A Sketch of Persian History, Literature, and Politics," entitled *Persian Portraits*, by Mr. F. F. Arbuthnot, formerly of the Bombay Civil Service, has appeared as the Journal is going to press, and is reserved for notice in the ensuing number.

Turkish.—Sir Richard Burton takes up the well-translated "History of the Forty Viziers" in the *Academy* of the 20th November, and pronounces upon it an opinion which cannot but be satisfactory to the translator. As regards the final short *a* being

used at the end of a word instead of *ah*, the reviewer mentions in a special footnote that he has joined issue with Mr. Gibb. The latter would write *Záda* and *Fátima*; Burton prefers *Zádeh* (or possibly *Zádah*) and *Fátiméh*. Perhaps, if it were understood that an *unaccented final a* always represented, in transcription, *ah*, some trouble might be saved, and mistakes could not well be made in the meaning of words. When the *alif* is expressed, as in *Aghá*, the English *á* would carry the accent.

M. Van den Gheyn, of Louvain, has republished from the *Revue des Questions Scientifiques*, of July last, his paper of ethnographie and linguistic interest on *Le peuple et la langue des Cumanes*; treating of a section of the Turkish race which entered Europe prior to the Othmanlis, in the seventh or eighth century, but has now disappeared.

Chinese.—Messrs. Trübner & Co. are about to publish Professor Beal's translation of the *Life of Hsuen Tsiang*, written by his disciples Hwui Li and Yen-tsung, a sequel to the *Si-yu-ki*.

La Chine Inconnue of M. Maurice Jametel has reached a fourth edition.

Prof. Beal has written a long and interesting review of Prof. Legge's *Record of Buddhist Kingdoms*, a work which was noticed in the last number of the Journal.

The Department of Oriental MSS. at the British Museum has been enriched within the last few days by the addition of two curious MSS. from China, of which a description is given in the *Academy* of the 30th October.

According to the *Academy* of Nov. 20, Sir Thomas Wade, late H.M. Envoy Extraordinary in China, had agreed to present his valuable collection of Chinese books to the Library of the Cambridge University, on the sole condition that he should be its Curator. This offer has, it appears, been readily accepted.

The *Histoire de l'Empire de Kin ou Empire d'Or*, being a French translation from the Manchú by M. C. de Harlez, furnishes a new proof of the usefulness and activity of the learned Professor of Louvain in the field of Oriental research.

A remark made some seven years ago by Mr. A. W. Franks, in his Catalogue of Oriental Porcelain and Pottery, to the effect that we require enlightenment in the science, as it were, of the subject he had in hand, is the *raison d'être* of a paper from Dr. Bushell in the Journal of the Peking Oriental Society, which has been reproduced in pamphlet form by the Pei-T'ang Press of Peking. *Chinese Porcelain at the Present Day* may be commended as an instructive manual of a popular manufacture.

Japanese.—*Japanese Names and their Surroundings*, by Edward L. Morse, is pleasantly noticed in the *Academy* of the 11th Sept. by Mr. Cosmo Monkhouse, who seems to trace "that universal feeling of something more than friendliness which Europe entertains for the Japanese alone of all the nations of the East," from the fact of "their direct unsophisticated naturalness." In the

next issue of the same paper, Mr. Frank Dillon points out that a complete Japanese Room, in accordance with Mr. Morse's description, had been transported at his, the writer's, request to England, and can now be seen at the Bethnal Green Museum.

Messrs. Trübner have announced the publication of a *Romanized Japanese Reader*, with English translation by Mr. Basil Hall Chamberlain, of Tokyo. This gentleman's *Simplified Grammar of the Japanese Language* is, according to the critic in the *Athenæum* (October 16th), not simple enough, and should be recast, as an easy method of making it a most useful book.

Mr. G. A. Andsley's "splendidly illustrated" two volumes on the *Ornamental Arts of Japan* meet with fitting attention in the *Athenæum* of the 16th October. The details of the various crafts discussed are pronounced "instructive, and in many places rich in anecdote, and calculated to give an adequate idea of the surprising ability of the Japanese as artificers."

A short statement of the aim and method of the Japanese Roman Alphabet Association has, at the suggestion of H. B. M. Minister in Japan, been drawn up in English for all foreigners who may be interested in the subject. This is printed in pamphlet form at the Tokyo press, and bears the signatures of the Hon. Secretaries of the Romaji Kai. Three numbers of the Society's Monthly Journal, the Romaji Zanki, which have been forwarded to the London Royal Asiatic Society, are good specimens of the application of the principle of transcription involved. Whether the disuse of the native character is a desirable end or not, is a question on which an opinion is not here put forward.

An illustrated article by F. Kakenberg, on "Dance and Song in Japan," is among the contents of the 15th October number of the *Oesterreichische Monatsschrift für den Orient*.

Armenian.—Professor Nève, who has rendered such good service as a Professor and writer in the field of Asiatic research, has just published an interesting volume on Christian Armenia and its Literature. It is in a great measure a reproduction of essays on a subject which has engaged his attention for the last forty years; and well merits a place in the library of serious students of Oriental history. Many will echo the sentiment expressed in the following eloquent passage of his Preface: "Le peuple arménien, fort d'une admirable fidélité à son caractère comme à sa foi, survit aux guerres et aux révolutions qui l'ont en quelque sorte décimé: il possède dans son idiome littéraire et liturgique un signe de sa vitalité et un gage de sa perpétuité. On croirait qu'il est appelé à prendre part quelque jour à la régénération de l'Asie."

Egypt.—For the three months September, October, and November, the *Academy* contains, as usual, interesting accounts of the work done by the Egypt Exploration Fund. Sept. 4th has a description of the exhibition of antiquities from Tell Nebesheh and Tell Defenneh (Tahpanhes) at the Royal Archaeological Institute. As the *Academy* states, this exhibition was in many respects the most generally

interesting yet shown, containing as it did "Egyptian antiquities for the Egyptologist, Græco-Egyptian antiquities for the classical archæologist, relics from a famous Biblical site for the Bible student, and an abundance of those domestic curiosities which especially delight the general public." In Sept. 11th Miss A. B. Edwards writes a pleasant review of Sir J. W. Dawson's little book "Egypt and Syria"; and in the same *Academy* is a letter from Mr. H. G. Tomkins on the name "Takhpankhes." In the *Academy* for Sept. 25th this writer has "Original Verse" on "Jeremiah at Takhpankhes." Sept. 18th has a long review by Mr J. H. Middleton of Mr. Petrie's *Naukratis*, Part I., with its chapters on pottery, inscriptions, and coins by Messrs. Cecil Smith, Ernest Gardner, and Barclay V. Head. In the following *Academy* it is stated that second editions of "*Naukratis*" I. as well as of "*Tanis*" I. are in preparation. Oct. 9th and 16th contain some account of the Egypto-African section of the Orientalist Congress at Vienna. M. Naville presided over this section, and at the conclusion he laid before the meeting his recent edition of the "Book of the Dead," giving a most interesting account of the origin, progress, and completion of his work. Amongst papers read was one by Miss A. B. Edwards on "The Dispersion of Antiquities consequent upon the recent discovery of certain ancient Egyptian Cemeteries in Upper Egypt." Miss Edwards strongly urged the identification and registration of historical antiquities in private collections and provincial museums in Europe and America. A resolution was passed in furtherance of this—taking the practical shape of a wide dissemination of Miss Edwards's paper, M. Guimet undertaking to publish it in French in his *Annales*. Oct. 30th gives a notice of Lectures given at the British Museum by Mrs. Tirard (Miss Helen Beloe) on "Life in Ancient Egypt"—the Egyptians at home, at work, at play. These interesting Lectures do much to popularize Egyptology. They are illustrated by admirable diagrams.

In Nov. 6th is a letter from J. Goldziher on the influence of the Egyptian "Voice of Memnon" upon the development of legends in the East. In the same Number Miss A. B. Edwards gives a glowing account of M. Maspéro's forthcoming "*L'Archéologie Egyptienne*." Nov. 13th has Mr. Gardner's Report of his winter's work at Naukratis, where he was left to carry on the excavations begun in the previous season by Mr. Petrie.

The *Athenæum* has also a review of Mr. Petrie's interesting volume—*Naukratis*, Part I.

In the *Oesterreichische Monatsschrift für den Orient* for Sept. is an article by Julius Wiesner on the "Microscopical Examination of the Faiyum Papyri"; and in the Number for Oct. J. Karabacek writes on "New Discoveries from the Archduke Rainer's Papyrus."

The *Revue Critique* for Sept. 13th gives a review of J. Lieblein's "Gammelaegyptisk Religion, populært fremstillet," by K. Piehl. At the meeting of the Académie des Inscriptions et Belles-Lettres

Oct. 29, M. Maspéro presented M. Victor Loret's work, "The Tomb of an Ancient Egyptian." Amongst other studies, M. Loret had spent some time in tracing the composition of perfumes used by ancient Egyptians. Two of these, *Kyphi* and *tasi*, had been made under his direction by MM. Rimmel and Domère. M. Maspéro submitted specimens to the meeting.

Of books published we may note: The Sarcophagus of Ānch-nesrānferāb Queen of Ahmes II. (about B.C. 564—526), by E. A. Wallis Budge, M.A.; *Reise Erinnerungen aus Egypten und Arabia Petrea*, by A. Dulk.

Also an article by Andrew Lang in the Sept. Number of the *Nineteenth Century*, on "Egyptian Divine Myths."

And a brochure entitled "Zophnat Paneach" by D. Paulus Cassel, dedicated to the Oriental Congress at Vienna.

Mr. Stanley Lane Poole's *Art of the Saracens in Egypt* is reviewed in the *Athenæum* of the 27th November. High praise is accorded to its "excellent" chapter on woodwork, while that on "textile fabrics" is considered "one of the best in the volume." The author asserts that the present form of Saracenic art is to be seen in Egypt, and points to the mosques in Cairo as giving its normal character.

India.—Miscellaneous.—In the *Academy* of September 4, Mr. H. C. Keene, C.I.E., favourably reviews Mr. H. C. Irvine's collection of "Rhymes and Readings," calling it "a bright and scholarly little volume," and "a welcome contribution to the not large body of Anglo-Indian imaginative literature." Mr. A. N. Wollaston, C.I.E., in the next issue of the same journal, writes an appreciative notice of the late Sir E. Clive Bayley's *History of India as told by its own Historians*, and in the *Athenæum* of 18th September, Mr. Keene's *History of Hindustan from the first Muslim Conquest to the Fall of the Mughal Empire* is called a "useful and instructive volume," and "exceedingly readable." The *Academy* of the 23rd October states that Sir Edward Colebrooke, "who wrote an admirable life of Elphinstone two years ago," has resolved to place in Mr. John Murray's hands a continuation of the distinguished statesman's *History of India*. Mr. Edwin Arnold's "India Revisited," noticed in the *Academy* of the 30th October, naturally obtains a verdict of approval. A review of Dr. George Smith's *Biography of "William Carey, D.D., Shoemaker and Missionary,"* contained in the *Athenæum* of October 2nd, is clearly the work of one well-qualified to deal with the subject.

Part i. of the *Comparative Dictionary of the Bihari Language*, by Messrs. Hoernle and Grierson, is reviewed by Mr. E. Kuhn, in his *Literatur-Blatt für Orientalische Philologie*.

From the September number, the periodical hitherto known as *Panjab Notes and Queries*, under the able editorship of Capt. Temple and Mr. Longworth Dames, was issued as *Indian Notes and Queries*, conducted by Capt. Temple, with the assistance of eleven gentlemen whose names are sufficient guarantee for competent representa-

tion of the departments or localities to which they are officially attached. Messrs. W. Crooke (N.W.P.); M. L. Dames (Paujáb); K. Douglas (British Museum, China); D. M. Ferguson (Ceylon); J. F. Fleet, C.I.E. (Sanskrit, Bombay); G. A. Grierson (Bengal); Rev. J. H. Knowles (Kashmir); D. F. A. Hervey (Malacca); E. H. Man (Andaman Islands); R. Sewell (Madras); and G. Watt, C.I.E. (Economic Products), are all more or less known to the reading public, especially that portion of it connected by taste or association with the Indian Empire. The prospectus explains the reason of modification to be that the old title was found too restricted, and the new one admits of an extension of the periodical's sphere of usefulness. Otherwise there will be no change of arrangement or character, and the monthly will be conducted on precisely the same lines as before.

The following works have been recently issued, and treat of weighty subjects:—History of India under Queen Victoria, by Capt. Lionel Trotter (Allen), and India under British Rule, by Mr. Talboys Wheeler.

Messrs. Allen have also published a Memoir of Capt. Dalton, the defender of Trichinopoly, and the Defence of Kahun, which should interest military readers.

Calcutta Review.—In the October number, Mr. H. G. Keene leads the way with an article on the Norman Archipelago: and is followed by the Reverend Dr. Scott, with Lives of the Twelve Cæsars as written by a contemporary. The question "Is Hindu Music Scientific?" forms an appropriate one for discussion, and its treatment is brought to a close with the sensible assertion that if this particular art, or whatever it is called, "is to be improved scientifically . . . then that improvement can only come from native musicians who have mastered the science of European music and especially of European harmony." A paper by Mr. H. A. D. Phillips on Comparative Criminal Procedure is succeeded by Mr. Dawson's important survey of the influence and position of Englishwomen in India, which, though in two parts, is to all intents and purposes a single contribution. Then follow articles on Imprisonment for Debt, by Mr. Stephen; on Bi-Metallism by Mr. Hibbert; on Simla, Calcutta and Darjeeling as Government Centres, by Mr. C. J. O'Donnell, and two short poems by Mr. Spencer and T. H. T. The Quarter, Summary of Annual Reports, and Critical Notices are the last items of a liberal *menu*. Among the vernacular works reviewed it is worthy of notice that one is called "an outcome of the movement now going on in Bengali Society for the revival of Hinduism"; while another is entitled "A Contribution to the Literature of the Brahmo Samaj."

Among the forthcoming publications of the *Clarendon Press* are noted the Thesaurus Syriacus, edited by Dean Payne Smith, fasc. viii.; a catalogue of Persian MSS. in the Bodleian Library by Dr. H. Ethé, and one on the Muhammadan coins there by Mr. Stanley Lane Poole; and four volumes of the Sacred Books of the East, in

addition to those already mentioned in the R.A.S.J., viz. vol. xxxi. The Zend Avesta, part iii.; the Yasna, Vispurad, Afrinayân, and Gâhs, translated by the Rev. L. H. Mills: xxxii. Vedic Hymns, translated by F. Max Müller, part 1: xxxiii. Nârada, and minor law books by Julius Jolly: xxxiv. the Vedânta Sûtras, with Sankara's Commentary, translated by G. Thibaut.

Vol. xxi. of the *Encyclopædia Britannica* is full of sound and choice reading. The articles Holy Sepulchre, Septuagint, Samaritans, as well as Sa'di, Samarkand, Sanskrit, Seljuks, Semitic Languages, Shanghai and Siam, should be exceptionally interesting to Asiatic Societies.

African Philology (communicated by the Hon. Secretary).—

1. Prof. Reinisch of Vienna has conducted through the press a translation of the Gospel of St. Matthew in the Ittu Dialect of the Galla Language of the Hamitic Group.

2. Dr. Fred Müller of Vienna has published a Grammatical Note and Vocabulary of the Musgu, or Musuk Language of the Negro Group in Central Africa North of the Equator, based upon information collected by G. A. Krause in Africa.

3. Missionary Brincker, of the Rhenish Society, is carrying through the Press a Dictionary and Grammar of the Herero and Yambo Languages of the Southern Branch of the Bantu Family.

4. Dr. Sims, of the Livingstone Mission, has published a Vocabulary of the Teke Language of the Western Branch of the Bantu Family, spoken on the Kongo, North of Stanley Falls.

5. The same author is carrying through the Press a Vocabulary of the Yansi Language, also of the Bantu Family, spoken higher up the bed of the River Kongo.

6. Mr. Holman Bentley, of the English Baptist Mission, has completed his magnificent Kongo Dictionary with a valuable Grammatical Note. This book renders the important language of the Kongo perfectly accessible to scholars.

Among the "Selected Foreign Books" in the *Academy* of November 6, is "Manuel de la langue Tigrâi parlée au Centre et dans le Nord de l'Abyssinie," by J. Schreiber, Vienna, Hölder, 6m.

One word of welcome may be added for the newly-formed Italian Asiatic Society, of which the distinguished Signor Angelo de Gubernatis is President.

N.B.—Owing to the press of other matter, the heads "Epigraphy" and "Numismatics" are not separately considered for the current quarter.

VI. SEVENTH INTERNATIONAL ORIENTAL CONGRESS.

[Communicated by the Honorary Secretary.]

The Meetings were held at Vienna from Monday, Sept. 27, to Saturday, October 2. His Imperial and Royal Highness the Archduke Rainier was Patron, and Baron von Kremer President, with a strong Committee of Management. The meetings were held in the hall and lecture rooms of the magnificent new University. Hospitality was shown to the foreign members by the Archduke, the Minister of Public Instruction, the Municipality, and the Committee of Management. The attendance was very large, and the arrangements of every kind perfect. Ladies were admitted as Members of the Congress, and took part in the business.

An opening meeting and a closing meeting of the whole body were held in the Great Hall; the actual discussions took place in the rooms set apart for the Sections, of which there were six. I. Modern Semitic; II. Ancient Semitic; III. Aryan; IV. African, Egyptian; V. Central Asia, East Asia, and Polynesia. The assembled Members divided themselves according to their predilections into Sections, and elected their Presidents, Vice-Presidents, and Secretaries. The use of four languages was permitted, English, French, German, and Italian; as a fact, only the three former were made use of.

All the countries of Europe were represented, with the exception of Spain and Portugal. Egypt in Africa, and India and China in Asia were fully represented by Natives, who took their share in the discussions. America also sent representatives. The Royal Asiatic Society sent five Delegates: Dr. Duka, Professor Lacouperie, Mr. Bendall, Mr. Grierson, and Dr. R. N. Cust, the Honorary Secretary. British India was represented by Dr. Hoernle and Dr. Bhandarkar, a Marahta of Bombay. Tscheng Kitong, the accomplished Secretary of the Chinese Embassy at Paris, in his native dress, but in the language of France, ably represented his country. Other English Members were present, Capt. Temple, Miss Amelia B. Edwards, Mr. MacAuliff, Dr. Ginsburg, Professor Platts of Oxford, the Rev. C. Ball of Lincoln's Inn, Dr. R. Rost of the India Office Library.

In the Semitic Sections Dr. Bezold brought forward a Prolegomena to a Babylonist-Assyrian Grammar, and the Rev. C. Ball broached a theory on the formal element in Hebrew lyrics; discussions took place on both. Baron von Kremer read a paper on the Yearly Budget of Harún-er-Rashid. Professor Guidi spoke

about Arabic Lexicography. Professor Ethe spoke on the Poem of Firdúsi's Yusuf and Zulikha.

In the Aryan Section Mr. Grierson explained his practical scheme for a systematic inquiry into the actually existing Dialects of India, and the collection of specimens of handwriting. Hopes were expressed that the Government of India would carry this scheme out. Mr. Bendall commented on a newly-discovered Indian Alphabet. Dr. Bhandarkar explained in accurate and well-pronounced English, and in a scholarlike manner, the results of his examination of the Libraries of the Bombay Presidency. Dr. Hoernle exhibited and explained some Bakháli Manuscripts. Professor Legnána of Rome read a paper on a portion of the Rig Veda. Professor Hunfalvy of Buda Pesth raised a discussion on the origin of the Language of Romania, on which a discussion ensued. Capt. Temple alluded to his edition of Hindustáni Proverbs collected by the late Mr. Fallon.

In the African-Egyptian Section Professors Eisenlohr and Lieblein read papers of great importance on the contents of Papyri. Captain Grimal de Guirandon described the Fulah of Senegambia in West Africa; but the feature of these Congresses is that scores assemble to discuss a question of Semitic Grammar, or the curved stroke of an Indian Alphabet, while their ears are closed to any other subject. As for an Egyptologist, he would let the whole world be consumed while he was unrolling his mummy and deciphering his Book of the Dead.

In the united Sections Central and East Asia and Polynesia, in the presence of about a score of hearers, Dr. R. N. Cust read a paper in the German language on our present knowledge of the Languages of Oceania. Great progress had been made and scores of languages brought to book, languages exhibiting wonderful features of structure, and entirely isolated word store, leading the student back to the origin of Human Speech, but few can escape from the fascination of the well-worn tracks of the highly elaborated Sanskrit and Arabic and the stunted Hebrew. M. Feer followed with a paper on the origin of the word Tibet, and in the discussion which followed Tsekeng hi Kitong took a part, and displayed the power of an educated Chinese.

In the Ancient Semitic Section Professor D. Müller gave a history of the sound of the letter S; in the discussion of this minute though important question, several scholars took a part. Herr Strassmeyer made communications on the subject of the Inscrip-

tions of Nabonid. Mr. Smith, of America, described a translation of the Inscriptions of Assur-bani-pal. Dr. Ginsburg read a paper on the Fragments of a Targum, newly discovered, of Isaiah.

In the Aryan Section discussion took place on the texts of a Jaina book, and the Jaina Religion. Mr. Grierson followed with a really important paper on the Mediæval Vernacular Literature of Northern India, of the nature of which he gave a résumé from 1200 B.C. to 1000 A.D. A resolution was framed, and carried by acclamation, urging upon the Government of India the importance of carrying out a general and detailed survey of the Dialects of India. The search for Manuscripts and inquiry into the Vernaculars might be carried on simultaneously.

In the East Asian Section Professor Lacouperie handed in his treatises on the old numerals of China and the beginning of writing in Tibet. He also pointed out the trace of alphabetic writing in China, and explained the Inscriptions in Easter Island in Polynesia.

In the second meeting of the African Egyptian Section, Miss Amelia B. Edwards read a most interesting and important paper "On the dispersion of the Antiquities found in newly-discovered Cemeteries in Upper Egypt." Large collections have been dispersed in country houses and local Museums, and it is most desirable that descriptive Catalogues should be made of all such collections and sent to the British Museum. Prof. Dumichen and Lieblein and Dr. Krall also read papers, but the chief interest centred round M. Naville's report of the completion of his great work, the Edition of the Book of the Dead. He had been commissioned to this task at the Congress held in London in 1874, and the work was only now thoroughly completed.

In the second meeting of the Modern Semitic Section, Dr. C. Snoucke Hurgonje, of Leyden, read a paper on the Proverbs and Sayings of Mecca. Yakúb Artin Pasha read a paper on the work of the Egyptian Institute from the date of its foundation. He was followed by Rashad Effendi, with a report upon Public Instruction in Egypt from the conquest of the Arabs to the present time. Shaikh Fateh Allah read an Arabic communication upon the great influence which Arabic had exerted upon general Education. This was a notable paper, being by an Egyptian in the Arabic language on a technical Arabic subject.

In the second meeting of the Aryan Section Capt. Temple made a communication upon the value of a book called *Hir Ranjha* by Waris Shah, as a specimen of the Panjábí Language. After

some technical papers Prof. Bühler exhibited a specimen of Mr. Fleet's third volume of *Corpus Inscriptionum Indicarum*. Capt. Temple followed with remarks upon the great importance of the office of Epigrapher of British India, and an earnest appeal to the Government of British India to renew the appointment. After remarks by other Members, a motion was proposed by Professor Kielhorn, and seconded by Mr. Bendall, to memorialize the Government in this sense, on the grounds that a real history of India cannot be written until we have a systematic record of the numerous Inscriptions, which are to be found on all sides. Dr. Stein of Buda Pesth gave a summary of the traditions attached to the Plateau of the Pamír, and suggested Geographical identifications. Professor Ernest Kuhn read a most interesting paper on the affinity to each other of the Languages and Dialects of the Hindu-Kush. He had been supplied by Dr. R. N. Cust with certain Vocabularies collected during the last Afghan war, and had made a serious study of these and other available material. Mr. Leland of the United States, so well known as a Romany Scholar, read a paper on the origin of the Gypsies. His remark that he had been informed that there was a wandering tribe still in the Panjáb to this day, whose Vernacular was Romany, brought four Members of the Indian Civil Service, all employed in North India, on their legs, and none of them, notwithstanding their intimate knowledge of the people, their interest in this special subject and acquaintance with the details of the late Census of 1882, could in the least way support this assertion.

In the Second Meeting of the Section of North and East Asia and Polynesia Dr. Heller made remarks on the subject of a copy of the Si-ngan-fu Inscription in China. Professor Kamori of Presburg broached the very deep subject of the affinities of the Aryan, Semitic, and Altaic Family of Languages. Professor Lacouperie read a paper on the languages of China before the immigration of the great Nation which bears that name.

In the Second Meeting of the Ancient Semitic Section Professor Noldeke urged the necessity of a critical Edition of the Talmud: after some discussion the suggestion was accepted. Prof. D. Müller recommended in his own and in the name of Prof. Patkauoff that a memorial be addressed to the Russian Government to urge the expediency of preparing a methodical collection of the Cuneiform Inscriptions in Trans-Caucasia, and supporting the attempt to collect similar inscriptions in Turkish-Armenia. This proposition was

accepted. Prof. Chwolson described the Syrio-Nestorian monumental inscriptions lately found in Fergana alias Kokand. Professor Oppert read a most important paper on the juridical texts of Chaldæa from the remotest times down to the most recent. Dr. Heckler, Chaplain to the English Embassy, explained his Chronological Chart of Biblical History specially prepared for the Congress, in which all the latest researches of Assyriologists was incorporated.

In the last meeting of the Aryan Section Prof. F. Müller explained some passages in the Avesta. Mr. Macauliffe, of the Indian Civil Service, exhibited a lithographed facsimile of an original life of Baba Nānak, and made some interesting remarks.

A great many works were presented in the different Sections, with remarks by their authors, which sometimes elicited comments. Dr. R. N. Cust presented to the Congress translations of portions of the Bible in one hundred and four languages of Asia, Africa, America, and Oceania.

Nothing could be more courteous, and yet more thorough, than the Proceedings of this Congress. Nothing interrupted the harmony and the interest from the opening to the close. In the early Congresses, owing to the novelty of the circumstances, there had been hitches and unpleasantnesses, but experience had made the way quite smooth.

The next Congress was announced to be held at Stockholm in 1890, after an interval of four years. One sad feature of these gatherings is the disappearance of well-known and honoured faces, which mark the flight of time. Warm friendships are formed on these occasions, kept alive by correspondence until the next meeting.

CONTENTS OF VOL. XIX. PART II.

[NEW SERIES.]

ORIGINAL COMMUNICATIONS.

	PAGE
ART. VI.—Some Remarks on the Narrative of Fâ-hien. By the Rev. S. BEAL, M.R.A.S.	191
ART. VII.—Priority of Labial Letters illustrated in Chinese Phonetics. By the Rev. J. EDKINS, D.D., Peking, Hon. Member R.A.S.	207
ART. VIII.—The Present State of Education in Egypt. By H. CUNYNGHAME, Esq. (Communicated through Mr. Habib Anthony Salmoné, M.R.A.S.)	223
ART. IX.—The Tri-Ratna. By FREDERIC PINCOTT, M.R.A.S.	238
ART. X.—Description of the Noble Sanctuary at Jerusalem in 1470 A.D., by Kamâl (or Shams) ad Dîn as Suyûti. Extracts Re-translated by GUY LE STRANGE, M.R.A.S.	247

NOTES OF THE QUARTER

1. Reports of Meetings of the Royal Asiatic Society, Session 1886-7	306
2. Proceedings of Asiatic or Oriental Societies	313
3. Correspondence—(1) The Persian for Rouble, by Alexander Finn. (2) Notes on Persian Litera- ture from Tehran, by Sidney J. A. Churchill. (3) Assyrian Names for Domestic Animals, by Theo. G. Pinches	317
4. Obituary Notices	320
5. Excerpta Orientalia	321
6. Special Committee, Royal Asiatic Society.....	342

JOURNAL

OF

THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY.

ART. VI.—*Some Remarks on the Narrative of Fâ-hien.*¹ By
the Rev. S. BEAL, M.R.A.S.

FA-HIEN, the Chinese Buddhist Pilgrim to India (A.D. 400), has left an interesting narrative of his travels, in a little volume known as the *Fô-kuô-ki*. This was first translated by MM. Rémusat, Klaproth, and Landresse into French (A.D. 1836). Their version, being accompanied by valuable notes, was found of great use in the study of the Buddhist Religion by those who took up the subject, after Mr. Hodgson's discovery of the Nepalese Sanskrit texts. Other translations have been produced since the time of Rémusat to the present date. The last of these versions is by Dr. J. Legge, of Oxford.

Having myself had occasion to go over the Chinese text afresh, I have made a few notes on some doubtful or obscure passages, which I take this opportunity of reproducing.

I. I find in the account of India, or of "the Buddhist regions,"² written by Taou Sün (K. 下 p. 12. b), that *Pao-Yun*, one of Fâ-hien's companions, also wrote a work which he called "Narrative of travels in the West;" this may possibly be the volume which is sometimes referred to as the "Narrative of Fâ-hien's travels, in one book;" but of this there is at present no proof, and I only suggest it as a possible explanation of the reference made in the catalogues to two, or even three, works, written by Fâ-hien, or one of his companions, and relating to India.

II. We find it stated that at Chang-yeh the King acted as Patron or *Dânapati* to the Pilgrims. The Chinese expression *Tan-yue* is the phonetic form for the Sanskrit *Dânapati*; the

¹ Read at the Monthly Meeting, 20th December, 1886.

² The work is called "*Shih-kia-fang-chi*," No. 1470, *Nanjio's Catalogue*. Taou Sün lived A.D. 650.

symbol *yue* 越 being frequently used for the termination *ra*, *pa*, and *pati* in proper names. We cannot, therefore, accept the statement that the character *yue* is here employed in its literal sense. Hence I think we may explain the compound *Tin-yüt*, or *Tin-yue*, referred to by Mr. Kingsmill in his paper on "The Intercourse of China with Eastern Turkestan." He tells us (on p. 83) that the agents of Chang-kien, in their efforts to open up relationship with the West through Sze-chuen, heard that there was a country where elephant carriages were used some 1000 *li* to the West of Yunnan, called *Tin-yüt*. Mr. Kingsmill suggests that this may refer to the ancient Sthânesvara. But I think this improbable. It is more likely that the symbol *tin* has here the alternative sound of *chin*, and that Chin-yüt is Champâ, which corresponds in situation to the Chinese requirements, and is celebrated for its elephants and elephant carriages. In this case the symbol "*yüt*" or "*yue*" would be equivalent to *pâ*.¹

III. There is another instance of the power of this symbol at the beginning of the fifth chapter of the narrative, where we read that the King of Kie-ch'a was holding "the great quinquennial assembly," known as the *Pañcha varsha parishad*. In this passage the symbol for *ra*, in *varsha*, is *yue* (as before). But there is no symbol for *parishad* (*hwui*).

With reference to this assembly, of which we read so much in Fa-hien and Hiuen Tsiang, I think it is incorrect to say that it was first *instituted* by King Aśoka for religious purposes; the third Edict seems to imply that the assembly or meeting (*anusam̐yāna*) held every five years was already an established custom in India, and that Aśoka ordained that the Rājuka and district governor should repair, on duty, to this assembly, for the purpose of making known certain religious precepts. This corresponds with the duties of the "heralds" at the Greek games. It seems likely that these assemblies were held principally for the purpose of commemorating the intercalary year, but were turned to a religious purpose by Aśoka when he became a follower of the priesthood. We are told by Censorinus (*De die Natali*, c. xv.),

¹ So also in Chap. 35 *Po-lo-yue* is for Parvatî; for the interchange of *vatt* and *pati* cf. Oldenberg, *Buddha* (English Translation), p. 94 n.

that this, too, was the object of the Pythian and Olympic games [viz. to commemorate the intercalary year].¹

Whilst alluding to this *Mahâparishad*, or great quinquennial meeting, in India, I may suggest that it might have originated the custom of the *Mahâprasâd*, still known in the Central Provinces, and especially in Orissa. This custom, which is connected with the absolute equality of all those engaged, or taking a part in the meeting, is illustrated by the account given in Hiuen Tsiang of the assembly convoked by Silâditya, to which Brahmans, Buddhists and Nirgranthas, were all alike invited, and whilst assembled were on perfect terms of equality.

IV. In the first chapter of the Narrative we meet with the expression "*hea-tso*," which certainly refers to "*the Rest-season*," observed as a primitive ordinance by the Buddhists, during the rainy period in India. The reason given for this ordinance in the Vinaya is that the mendicants by travelling here and there when the young crops were growing trod them down and did damage. So Buddha, in agreement with the rules of other mendicant societies (as we are told), decreed that during the three months of the rainy season the mendicants should live in "fixed abodes."

There has been a great deal of bewilderment in explanation of the Chinese equivalents for this season of religious Retreat. The entire Sanskrit expression is *Varsha-râsana*, which simply means "rain-dwelling." This has been translated into Chinese by symbols denoting *rain-rest* 雨安居, or explained by a hybrid compound as *hea-tso* 夏坐, or *la-tso* 臘坐; in these compounds the symbol *hea* is the phonetic equivalent for *va*, the first portion of the Sanskrit *varsha*; in the other case *la* is the phonetic equivalent for the middle syllable of *varsha*, which is written, more *Sinico*, as *Va-la-sha*. So that the three phrases *yu-'an-ku*, *hea-tso*, *la-tso*, denote the same thing, viz. the Rest during the rain-months. The symbol *tso* (which literally means "to sit" or "remain") may perhaps be the equivalent for the symbols *'an-kü* which represent *râsana*. Hence we sometimes have in Fâ-hien's narrative the

¹ For the reference to Censorinus I am indebted to Mr. J. R. Anderson, an accomplished scholar, well known by his discoveries at Tarentum.

expression *hea-tso*, and sometimes *'an-ku*, and sometimes the symbol *la* is used for *varsha* in the sense of "years" or period after ordination. But in all cases there can be no reference to "*summer*" retreat or "*winter*" retreat, or "Decembers."

There is an expression in the 16th chapter of the Narrative which bears on this point, and deserves notice; Fâ-hien is speaking from hearsay about the customs of South India. Amongst other remarks he says: "In the *latter month* of the Religious rest the most religious families urge one another to prepare the festival for the priests." The *latter month* in this passage is *heou-yih-yueh* 後一月, which probably refers to the last month of the second partition of the Rest-season. As Hsien Tsiang explains the matter (and his account agrees with the notice in the *Dîpavaṃsa* v. 5, and *Mahāvagga* iii. 2), there were *two* periods of Rest, "the former three months" and the "latter three months"—that is, the priests who were not able to arrive in time to keep the three months from the full moon *Ashâdha*, were permitted to keep their *rest* from the full moon next to that of *Ashâdha*. It was in the last month of this second division that the *parârâna* (Ch. *ts'z, tsz* 自恣) festival was held, and I take it that to this month the expression in Fâ-hien's text quoted above refers. At any rate, I know no authority for the statement that there are *three* terms applied to the months of the Rest Season, viz. the first, middle, and last. Such a division, I believe, is not known in Buddhism. These remarks will explain my reason for differing from M. Julien on p. 64 of the first volume of the *Si-yu-ki*, where he would alter the symbol for "two" or "double" 兩, (*liang*), into the symbol for rain 雨 (*yu*), and translate the passage "the priests of India retire into fixed residences during the seasons of the Rains." But relying on the fact of a double retreat, as described in the *Mahāvagga*, and referred to in the *Dîpavaṃsa*, I have retained the symbol "*liang*," and rendered the passage "the priestly fraternity have a double resting time."

V. There can be little doubt as to Fâ-hien's route from Tun-hwang to Shen-Shen: this district is to the south of Lake Lob, and not up at Pidshan, as Mr. Mayers¹ and others have supposed.

¹ Chinese Reader's Manual, p. 536.

In confirmation of this we refer to a short account of the three routes from China to India in a work called *Shih-kia-fang-chi* (written by Taou-Sün). These routes are called the Eastern, the Middle, and the Northern. In speaking of the Middle route the author (Taou-Sün) has the following passage: "From *Shen-chau*¹ going through the Eastern valley about 100 *li*, and then turning North 600 *li*, we arrive at *Liang-chau*, and Eastward from this 2000 *li* we reach the capital (Loyang).

From *Liang-chau* going West a little North 470 *li*, we come to *Kau-chau*; West of this 400 *li* is *Su-chau*. Going West a little North from this 75 *li* we come to the old Yuh-mên barrier, between the North and South Mountain range. West of this, less than 400 *li*, we reach *Kwa-chau*, and then going South-West through a sandy and stony district 300 *li*, we come to *Sha-chau*; South-West from this, going through a similar district, after 700 *li* or so, we come to the old kingdom of *Na-pu-po*, which is the same as the territory of *Lu-lau*, also called *Shen-Shen*.

According to this account the district of *Shen-chau* is S.W. from *Liang-chau* about 700 *li*, whilst *Shen-Shen* is upwards of 2000 *li* from the same place, and about 700 *li* S.W. from *Sha-chau*. The situation of *Sha-chau*, according to Prejevalsky, is 40° 8' N. and 94° 30' E., and according to A—K. 40° 12' N. and 94° 2' E.; and from this place Lake Lob lies about 3 degrees of longitude W. by S. So that the Chinese account dating back to the Tang dynasty is tolerably correct. This at any rate seems to fix the position of *Shen-Shen*. *Tun-hwang* is considerably to the north of *Sha-chau*, which will account for Fâ-hien's greater distance of 1700 *li* to *Shen-shen*; and probably this is more correct than Taou-sün's account.

VI. From *Shen-shen* our traveller proceeded N.W. for fifteen days, and came to *Wu-i*. This corresponds with the *Wu-k'i* (or, as M. Julien writes it, *Yen-k'i*) of Hiuen Tsiang; and so with the old Turki word *Yaughî*; there is a district *Yaughî* still marked on the maps extending to Kara-shahr. It was probably to this district of *Yaughî* Fâ-hien

¹ Si-ning.

proceeded from Shen-shen. The situation of Yanghi-shahr is about 42° N. and 85° E.

VII. I may here call attention to the statement of Fâ-hien in Chapter II. relating to the clothing of the people of *Shen-shen*, viz. that the difference between them is marked by "serge and felt," *i.e.* that some use "serge" or "hair-cloth," and others "felt." No doubt this refers to the distinction still noticed by A—K. in his Report, recently published, "that the Mongolians use white felt, and the Tibetans black stuff made of Yak's hair." The distinction, then, observed by Fâ-hien, was that between the Mongolians and the Tibetans, who dwelt in common about the district of *Shen-shen*.

VIII. Leaving Yanghi, Fâ-hien now toiled for a month and five days into a south-westerly direction to Khotan, crossing with difficulty the numerous streams that here intersect the country.

It is interesting to find that Buddhism was so thoroughly established in Khotan at this time. Fâ-hien tells us that there were several 10,000 priests and fourteen large convents there, besides smaller ones, and he says moreover that most of the priests, including those of the principal monastery of Gomati, were given to the study of the Great Vehicle. This is an interesting fact, as it shows that at this early date the system, known as the Mahâyâna, had become so well established as to reach Khotan. It probably came to this place from Turkestan, and not from India Proper: ¹ and I think that this alone would tend to show that the principles of the Great Vehicle, mixed up, as they were, with philosophical speculations, and doctrines strange to Primitive Buddhism, were chiefly derived from foreign sources.

There is an expression used by Fâ-hien, in his account of the priests of this place, which has been variously translated, "the priests take their food in common," or "the priests receive their food from a common store," or "the priests have their food provided for them, *i.e.* receive commons." The Chinese phrase is *Chung-sih*, which is a literal translation of the Pâli *sāṅgha-bhāttam*, and refers to the food belonging to the

¹ I have given reasons for this opinion in the *Introduction* to "Records of the Western World," p. xiv.

community as distinguished from the food obtained by begging. This again indicates a departure from the primitive rule, by which the monks were ordered to beg their food from door to door, in agreement with the example of the Founder of their religion.

IX. Leaving Khotan the pilgrims travelled for twenty-five days, and reached *Tseu-ho*, a term which I take to refer to the meeting of the streams,¹ probably at Kugiar, which is west of Khotan about 200 miles, but would be reached by a circuitous route, probably through Karghalik by a caravan route as laid down in the map of Turkestan, Sheet No. 4 of the Indian Survey.

Due south four days from Kugiar would bring them to the point of junction with the southern route towards Ladak, along the course of the Karakásh River. It would seem more probable that the travellers did not follow this route, nor reach so far south as Skardo; but turning west among the mountains (as the Corean Text happily gives it), toiled on for twenty-five days to *Kie-cha*.

X. *Kie-cha* must, I think, represent *Kash*, or "the river region," the *Cassia Regio* of Ptolemy.² It was, in fact, the region about the Sir-i-kúl Lake, from which the four rivers of the earth were supposed to proceed; this region has been famous in all time as "the roof of the world."

There is a note in Taou-sün's account of this place, which tells us that *Kie-cha* is the same as *Su-li*, i.e. as *Syr*, which possibly connects it with the Syr-daryâ: the Syr-daryâ, or "the yellow river," is so named, I should suppose, from an old idea that *yellow* was the colour of the water which was fabled to exist at the earth's bottom; there is a well-known phrase in Chinese, "the yellow springs," as in Cap. xvii. of the Narrative before us, to denote the part below the earth where water is found; so that in primitive times the great rivers, being supposed to come from the earth's reservoir, were called "Yellow Rivers." Hence the name *Syr-daryâ* and the *Hoang-ho* in China.

XI. From *Kie-cha* they went on towards North India in a westerly direction, and crossed the *Tsung-Ling*. This name

¹ At *Do* in Tibetan.

² This has already been suggested by M. V. St.-Martin and others.

is of wide application; the Northern *Tsung-Ling*, corresponding with Belôr Tagh, reaches up to the Muzart Pass; the Southern *Tsung-Ling* includes the mountain ranges of the Hindu Kûsh and Wakhan, forming the southern walls of the Pamir Valley. The traveller tells us in Cap. VI. that by the *Tsung-Ling* he means the Snowy Mountains. It was probably through one of the passes opening into the valley of *Ta-li-lo* that Fâ-hien penetrated into North India, and finally struck the Indus.

XII. I think there is no evidence in the narrative that Fâ-hien himself *crossed* the Indus. Hiuen Tsiang, in his corresponding account of this region (Bk. III. p. 134, *Records*), says, that going N.E. from *Mung-kia-li* we ascend the course of the Indus, using foot-bridges, and suspended ropes across the chasms, etc.; but he says nothing about crossing the great river. Nor does Fâ-hien. He tells us that men in former years bored the rocks, and cut the steps and placed the ladders, and that at the bottom there was a hanging-bridge by which they crossed, but he does not imply that he used it.

It seems plain to me that Fâ-hien, after passing the Snowy Mountains, entered the *Ta-li-lo* Valley, which was decidedly, according to Hiuen Tsiang, on the *right* bank of the Indus. He could not have passed the Snowy Mountains into this valley if he had been at Skardo or Ladak, nor can we place *Kie-cha* by any manipulation in that district. If it be objected that at the beginning of Cap. VIII. it is said, "after crossing the River we come to Udyâna," I reply that the river they passed was not the one alluded to in the previous chapter, for they had now gone through the valley of *Ta-li-lo*, and were travelling in a S.W. direction corresponding with the contrary course of Hiuen Tsiang from Udyâna, which he tells us was N.E.;¹ they would thus come to the Swat River, on the other side of which was the pleasant country of Udyâna, or, the "Parkland."

XIII. Before passing on to remark upon Fâ-hien's account of this country, I should like to notice his record about the figure of Maitreya set up in the kingdom of *To-li* or *Ta-li-lo*, i.e.

¹ In my version of the *Records* I have accidentally made the direction N.W. instead of N.E., vol. i. p. 133.

Dardisthán. This figure is described as being made of wood, and seated with its legs crossed. In this position the feet are upturned, and from the length of the foot the height of the entire figure is calculated, being ten times that of the foot. But writers on this passage have concluded that the measurement denoted by the expression *T'suh kea* is the entire width at the base from knee to knee, and so have fallen into the difficulty of making a human figure ninety feet in height and nine feet at the base when sitting with its legs crossed. Of course this is impossible. I would also call attention to the similar proportion of the figure set up by Nebuchadnezzar in the plain of Dura.

XIV. Crossing the River Swat (as we assume), the pilgrim reached the country of Udyâna, with which so many Buddhist legends are connected in *Sung-yun* and *Hsien Tsiang*.

We need not allude to these, but pass on to some observations about Mihirakula. It is recorded of this monarch that he slew the last Buddhist patriarch Simha, and, as the record found in "The History of the Patriarchs" says, this occurred in the country called *Ki-pan*, which may be either Kaśmir or the region about the Kabul River. Mr. Fleet has asked¹ how the date 472 A.D. is fixed for the Chinese work *Fu-fa-tsang-yin-ün*, in which the record of Simha's death is found. The reply is that such is the date given for the translator *Kakaya's* arrival in China. But it is quite possible that he may have lived for many years after this period, even down to the time of Mihirakula, as fixed by Mr. Fleet, viz. 515 A.D., and that the work he completed, which closes with the murder of Simha, was published at his death. If Mr. Fleet's date is correct, it would seem to follow that the arrival of Bodhidharma in China was immediately subsequent to Simha's death, and that the three Patriarchs, generally named after that event and before Bodhidharma, were living at the same time with him, and were not in the succession, and this is probably the case.

The legend found in Wong Puh about "the flowing milk" (Wong Puh, § 179), and which I supposed, when translating his account, referred to the Swat River, I now

¹ *Indian Antiquary*, Sept. 1886.

find relates to a story told of Simha, that when his head was cut off by Mihirakula during the persecution, instead of blood, a torrent of white milk gushed from his body, which rose several feet in height. This strange story accounts for Wong Puh's ambiguous, and otherwise unintelligible record, § 179. But although there is no reference to the Swat River in connection with Simha, I do not doubt that the persecution of Mihirakula was the cause of the desolation of this district after the time of Fâ-hien and before Hiuen Tsiang. I am inclined to think that the persecution occurred just after the visit of Sung Yun, for this reason: we find in his Record that in the year 520 A.D., when he went to Gandhâra, there was a cruel and vindictive monarch fighting against the country, who received him with ill-concealed hatred. Now, it was about this time, if Mr. Fleet's date is correct, that Mihirakula, whose atrocious cruelty was proverbial, was engaged in subduing Gandhâra and the neighbourhood. It is possible, then, I think, that Sung Yun had an interview with this very monarch. His name, Mr. Fleet tells us, was Mihirakula, or Mihiragula, and Cosmas also mentions a cruel potentate called *Gollas*, who was at this time engaged in warfare in Western India.

The Mlleelhas, of whom the Raja Taranginî speaks (in connection with Mihirakula), were probably the Ephthalitæ of Procopius, who were engaged in war with Perozes and Cabades just before Mihirakula's date, *i.e.* at the end of the fifth century A.D. Procopius, in describing their appearance, says, "that these alone, of all the Huns, are white-skinned and not bad-looking," οὐκ ἀμόρφοι τὰς ὀφθαλμοῖς εἶσιν, and he says that they came from a region at the extreme north of Persia, the capital city of which was Gorgo. Now Gorgo was the capital of the Chorasmii, the present Urgheng, and the country of the Chorasmii is Khwârazm, lying on the banks of the Oxus towards the Caspian. Of this people we have notices in Arrian, Pliny, and other writers.¹ But of their power and treachery Procopius gives us the best account in

¹ King Pharasmanês came to Alexander with 1500 horsemen, and said that his kingdom extended to the nation of the Kolkhi and the Amazon women.—*Arrian*.

the third chapter of the first book, *De Bello Persico*. The Ye-tha, whom Sung-yun encountered in the neighbourhood of Dardisthán, in this case, would be nomads from this region of the Oxus, and they answer, in many particulars, to the notices we have left on record about these people, in respect of their persons and habits.

Of these notices I shall only refer to two ; the first as to the external appearance of this people. Procopius tells us that they were “*οὐκ ἀμόρφοι τὰς ὀψείς*,” and of white skin. This, I think, may explain the account given us by Hiuen Tsiang of the interview of Mihirakula with the mother of Balâditya, who persuaded him to uncover his face that she might see his well-favoured features.¹ His white skin, and so on, would naturally impress her, and she got him his freedom. Then we read that his brother had meanwhile gone back to his country, and taken his army with him, and usurped the government. This answers precisely to the account of Sung-yun, who tells us that just on the borders of the Snowy Mountains they entered the territory of the Ye-tha, whose king did them honour, and received their message from the Empress with politeness. This King (if the dates proposed are accurate) would be the brother of Mihirakula, who had retired to his territories after that monarch's capture. And the allusion of Sung-yun to the reception afforded him by this king, contrasted with the behaviour of the monarch lording it in Gandhâra, would correspond with the history and the character of these respective rulers.²

Again, we are told by Procopius of a curious custom prevalent among the Ephthalites. He says, in the third chapter, that the richer class amongst them were accustomed to take as friends and sharers of their private estates any of their neighbours or others to whom they felt an attachment. But, he adds, when he who was their patron died, it was customary for the clients to be thrown alive into the same tomb with him, even whilst in full health and strength.

We may compare with this a singular record about Mihira-

¹ *Records of the Western World*, vol. i. p. 169.

² Vide *Records of the Western World*, vol. i. p. ci.

kula, who, when returning to Kaśmir, found an elephant entombed in a chasm, and uttering fearful cries. On this, says the author of the *Rajataranginî*, the cries of the tortured beast gave him such delight, that he ordered a hundred others to be entombed with him, and to perish together. But if we suppose Mihirakula to be an Ephthal, and to be influenced by the rules of his tribe, this transaction would admit of another explanation.

Another circumstance may be noticed with regard to these Ye-tha, or Ephthalitæ. The head-dress of the ladies is noticed by Sung-yun as remarkable for its singularity. They wore horns, with veils attached, that cover their persons like canopies. Sung-yun tells us that these horns are eight feet in length, but I think there must be here a mistake in his not very accurate text, and the right measurement should be eight inches or more; but anyhow this curious custom has been compared with that of the women of the Druse tribe, who occupy the northern slopes of the Libanus in Syria. It is a curious fact that the Khwârazm people were driven from their original home into Syria, as noted in the Jesuit edition of Pliny, vol. i. p. 314, and having driven the Franks thence, occupied it as their own territory. Doubtless they carried their customs with them.

From these notices I think we may safely conclude that the Ye-thas, who were opposed to Buddhism, and whose chief Mihirakula destroyed the temples and slew the priests in the neighbourhood of the Câbul River, were nomads from Chorasmia, the Ephthalites of the Byzantine writers.

XV. Fâ-hien does not seem to have visited Takshasila, or the spot where the Bodhisattva threw himself down from an eminence to feed the tiger-cat, but he refers to these spots, using the symbol "*yu*" instead of "*hing*," to show that he spoke from hearsay. I may observe that the history of Buddha's sacrifice for the Tiger is the first of the Jâtakas in the Jâtakamâlâ written by Âryasûtra, who is the same as Aśvaghosha. In the Jâtaka the transaction is said to have taken place in the neighbourhood of the large village of Panchâla. The account of the miraculous Stûpa which Buddha caused to appear corresponds with the Manikyâla Tope in

some particulars, especially with respect to the caskets with the seven precious substances, inside which were deposited the relics of the Bodhisattva's body. If this be so, it would appear probable that Āśvaghosha, who compiled the Jâtaka, and who was a follower of Kanishka, witnessed the erection of this important Stûpa.

XVI. Fà-hien, in the 12th chapter, speaks of a king of the Yue-shis, or Yue-chis, who wished to carry off the alms bowl of Buddha from Gandhâra. I have already remarked that the symbol "Yue" is used for the Sanskrit *ra*; so that the Yue-chis are really the Vajjis, or Vrijjis, who at an early date had penetrated to Vaisâli. Another body of these people seem to have wandered away towards the borders of China, whence they were driven by the Hiung-nu, in the second century B.C. Whoever they were, it appears improbable that they had anything to do with the Ephthalites. It is more likely from the account given of their dress and equipages that they came from the neighbourhood of Media. Whether the Guzanas and the Minni, of whom we read in the Assyrian Eponym Canon, have anything to do with the Kushans and Minni of India, I leave others to determine.¹

XVII. There is mention made in the 17th chapter of the Narrative of the monarch styled a Chakravartti. He is generally styled a Holy Chakravartti. He is described as "one who flies as he goes." Also, "as the most distinguished for religious merit among all the men of Jambudvîpa." Also, "as a king in whom dwells the holy spirit of the Supreme Ruler of Heaven (Wong-ti)." In numerous works met with in China, and translated from foreign originals, the birth of Buddha is said to have resulted from the descent of a holy spirit on his mother.² I take it that this constitutes the claim of Buddha to the title of a spiritual Chakravartti; he himself directed that his funeral obsequies should be those of a Chakravartti monarch.

¹ But at any rate the Vrijjis are identified with the Lichchhavis who, after their expulsion from India, appear to have conquered Nepâl about the beginning of the Christian era.

² The works referred to are named in my *Catalogue* of the Buddhist Tripitaka, *Appendix*; and also in my Introduction to vol. xix. *Sacred Books of the East*.

I trace back this description of the Chakravartti to the Fravartish, which, according to Haug, corresponds to "the idea" of Plato, *the ideal* in fact of every being in the good creation. Hence, Ahuramazda himself has his Fravashi, and it appears to me that the "Winged Circle" in which resides the truncated human figure, standing over Darius in the Behistun sculpture, really represents the spirit of Ahuramazda (*i.e.* the All-wise or the All-beneficent Spirit), which that monarch ever claimed as his special guide and counsellor. Hence we may understand such a passage as this (Vendidad, Fargard xix., Haug's Essay, p. 334, (Trübner's Edition). § 14):—"Do thou invoke, O Zarathushtra, the spirit (fravashi) of me who am Ahuramazda, that which is the greatest and best and most excellent, and strongest and wisest and most beautiful and most pervaded by righteousness." This description of the spirit of Ahuramazda corresponds to the Chinese definition of a Chakravartti, and I observe also that Sir Henry Rawlinson defines the word *Fravartish* as "the very celebrated" (J. R. A. S. Vol. X. p. 121).

So that it seems to me, if we are to account for the statement so often met with, that a holy spirit descended on the mother of Buddha, and that he himself claimed to have the character of a Holy Chakravartti, we must explain it in this way, as derived from the representation of a winged deity found on most of the monuments of the Achæmenian Kings at Behistun, Persepolis, and other places, and which is said to have originated in Assyria, and to have been copied by the Persians (Journ. Roy. Asiat. Soc. Vol. XV. p. 338). So that "Assur, my lord," of the Assyrian tablets, which led those monarchs to conquest, is *the spirit* that constituted Buddha not a conqueror as they were, but a true Jina over the world of evil. Whether the terms *Chakravartti*, which Wilson defines as he who dwells within the Chakra, and *Fravartish* are not identical (*Fra* being equal to *Chakra*), I again leave to others better qualified than myself to determine.¹

XVIII. I was glad to find that a suggestion made in

¹ This explanation will appear (perhaps) absurd, to those who believe that Buddhism is a purely Indian product. I have long given up that belief.

a paper read before this Society, that the term found in Hiuen Tsiang as equivalent to the "black peak" in connection with the Pigeon Monastery (cap. 35) was really a mistake for "the black bee," is confirmed by Taou-Sün's corresponding account of the locality in his history of India (second part, p. 2. b), where he has the character "*fung*," a bee, instead of "*fung*," a peak. The site of the Pigeon Monastery has been placed by Dr. Burgess at Srî Sâilam, and I presume that Bhramarâmba, to whom the priests of this shrine still sacrifice, is indeed another form of Mother Dûrga, under the title of the "black bee."

XIX. May I briefly refer to the singular legend respecting the origin of the word Sinhala for Ceylon? This legend is given fully by Hiuen Tsiang, and refers to the cohabitation of a lion and a captured woman of India. Now it is well known that the Vajjians who invaded India at an early date were called "Lions"; this has been shown from the translation of the Buddha-charita, which forms the 19th Vol. of the *Sacred Books of the East*.¹ It would appear therefore that the story of the Lion and his captive wife is merely a corrupt form of a Vajjian invader, intermarrying with a native woman, probably carried off in a raid to Ceylon. Perhaps the singular sculptures found in the Râni Kâ Nûr, and the Ganeśa Gumphas caves, may refer to this rape of an Indian woman by a Northerner; the figure too of the Yavana warrior from the Râni Kâ Nûr cave, whose appearance so much resembles that of the Vajjians at Vaisâlî, is a further corroboration of the argument, that the Vajjians were the Lion tribe that emigrated to Ceylon.

XX. Whether Fâ-hien really touched at Java or at Palembang (the Chinese Śribhoja) in Sumatra, on his return voyage to his native country, is not yet certain. I am strongly inclined to think he stopped at Sumatra, and that "Yava" was a term applied to all the fertile lands of Sumatra and Java, corresponding in fact to "Bhôja," and that Śribhôja was the central point of these districts, corresponding as I have lately² endeavoured to show with the neighbourhood of Palembang—where we ought to seek for and find many Buddhist remains.

¹ vv. 1788, 1789.

² Viz. in *Trübner's Record*, Nov. 1886.

XXI. I should have referred in my previous notes to a remark made by Fa-hien as to Śakra-deva, who came to Buddha with Pañchaśikha, the celestial musician, and proposed to him forty-two questions, respecting forty-two subjects. (Cap. xxviii.) These subjects, with the tracings left on the rock, are very probably connected with the forty-two combinations of the Sanskrit roots, which are detailed in many Chinese works, and of which I give here a copy from a translation of Amogha-siddha made into Chinese in the eighth century (A.D. 719).

XXII. Lastly let me call attention to the phrase 一心 (*one heart*) found in Chapter 40 of the Narrative. This phrase means more than "all the heart"; it corresponds to the Pāli *ekodi* or *ekaggacitta* (vid. a letter from Dr. Morris in the *Academy*, No. 725), and to the Greek *ἑνωσις*, as used by Plotinus for mystic union, or identity, with the object of contemplation. This statement may be verified by any Chinese student who will take the trouble to consult the second part of the Kwan-yin Liturgy, which I have named and translated in the *Catena*, etc.¹

I would also add that the symbol 念 in the same phrase means much more than "to think on"; it is used in Buddhist formularies in the sense of "recite," or "repeat" the name of, the object contemplated.

NOTES.

In reference to § XIII., Professor Douglas has pointed out that the Chinese symbol *kea* is equivalent to *fu*h 'the instep,' and therefore the passage may simply mean that the figure was an erect one, and the length of the foot (instep) $\frac{1}{16}$ th that of the entire height.

In reference to § XIX., I would refer to the fabled origin of the Turkish tribes from the cohabitation of a woman and a wolf. Vid. *Etruscan Researches*, by Isaac Taylor, p. 370, also *Indian Antiquary*, April, 1880, p. 93.

¹ *Catena of Buddhist Scriptures*, etc., p. 401, n. 2.

An account taken from the "Yih-fa-kiai" section of the *Avatamsaka Sūtra* as to the value of some Sanskrit root-combinations,
 42 in number, probably referred to by Fa-Hien, Cap. 28, in his account of Śākya's visit to Buddha.

ग	स	क	ख	ख	त	व	ष	ण	म	न	ल	न	च	य	र	म
ga	sha	Sa	ka	Shta	ya	ta	va	Ṣa	ṇa	ma	nya	la	na	cha	Pa	Ra A

ध	ख	ल	क्ष	क	र	ष	म	स	क्ष	प्र	क्ष	क्ष	क्ष	क्ष	क्ष	क्ष
dha	ga	sta	Sma	chha	ba	tra	shta	pri	kha	sha	dha	jha	ja	tha	sva	tha

乙 乙 乙 乙 乙 乙 乙 乙 乙 乙 乙 乙 乙 乙 乙 乙 乙

Da Tha Tcha dju ska pha nan

Some of these restorations are doubtful. The original dates from 719 A.D.

ART. VII.—*Priority of Labial Letters illustrated in Chinese Phonetics*.¹ By the Rev. J. EDKINS, D.D., Peking, Hon. Member R.A.S.

PANINI made gutturals precede labials; but this was because, having given to *a* precedence among vowels, it was natural to place gutturals in the first position among consonants; for *a* is allied to *k* as *o* (or *u*) is allied to *p*, and *i* to *t*.

In tracing the primitive evolution of letters, however, we have not so much to follow the current of vocal air as it issues from the lungs and passes through the throat and mouth, nor shall we find here the key to the order in which the letters were evolved. What we have to do is to consider what circumstances would, in the time when language was first made, be favourable to particular groups of letters, so as to give them priority over other letters.

The group of letters which would be most favourably received, and most easily imitated, by the men who were for the first time making a language, would be the labials. The lips in forming these letters are visible to the eye. The gutturals have not this advantage, and those made with the help of the teeth have it only in a limited degree. This circumstance would be sufficient to give priority to the labials, so that *p*, *b*, *m* would be used in word-making earlier than *t*, *d*, *n* and *k*, *g*, *ng*.

Among labial letters we may count *p*, *b*, *m*, *f*, *v*, *o*, *u*, *ü*, and some others. These letters do not all, in regard to priority, stand on the same platform. Some are differentiated by the drawing-in of the under lip to the upper teeth. This complex act is fatal to the claim of *f* and *v* to any very early

¹ [Sir Thomas Wade, with reference to this paper, writes: "The subject that has occupied Dr. Edkins belongs, perhaps, more properly to the department of anthropology, or to general, as distinct from Oriental, linguism; but it has thus much of claim upon the Orientalist, that Dr. Edkins's theory of the evolution of certain sounds is illustrated almost exclusively from the Chinese phonetical systems, consideration of which cannot be ignored by the compiler of any serious lexicon of Chinese."—ED.]

use in language. They would not compare in antiquity with the more simply formed letters *p*, *b*, *m*. As to the relative age of *p*, *b*, and *m*, something is to be said in favour of *m* as first claimant, because the nose passage is left open in ordinary breathing, and remains so when *m* is pronounced. This letter among all the letters has the most of gesture, and is the most sonorous. The shutting of the nose passage to pronounce *p*, *b*, requires an additional muscular effort. Hence *b* and *p* would scarcely be in use so early as *m*. Then, as to the relative priority of *p* and *b*, the letter with the loudest sound would be the earlier. Hence *b* would precede *p*, as being more audible to the unaccustomed ear. Two forms of *p* dispute the claim to priority, the aspirated and the not-aspirated. The Sanskrit aspirated *p* exists in very few words. In the Mongol and Manchu languages the aspirated *p* is uniform. There is no unaspirated *p* in these languages. In Chinese the aspirated and unaspirated *p* exist side by side as letters, each having full powers to occupy an independent place in the alphabet, and both are developed from *b*. In these circumstances we may assign the priority to the aspirated *p*, on the ground that it is by the added breathing made more audible, which would give it a better chance of survival. In regard to the labial vowels, *a* ought to be counted as one of them, because this vowel requires the lips to be wide open. Then we have *o* and *u*. The law of least exertion will help us here. *A* would be first (the *a* in father). *O* would be second. As to other vowels, such as *i*, *u*, *ü*, they would be later, because there is not so much opportunity to distinguish them in the mere act of watching the movements of the lips. In primitive times every help was needed to give words a ready currency. The imitative instinct of man is often held in control by a wilful spirit of contrariety. If words are to endure, they must be clothed with attractions and facilities for imitation. This necessity is in the instance of labial letters met by the visible movements of the lips.

Take as an example the nasals *m*, *n*, *ng*. Of these, *ng* is by far the least common in early language. It is much used

as a final in modern Chinese, but it is evolved from *m*. Thus *tam* 'to carry a load,' is also *tang*. *Feng* 'wind' was anciently *bam*. The reason why *ng* does not appear in ancient roots with the same prominence as *m* is that *m* was favoured originally by the circumstance of its visibility to the person whom the speaker was addressing. *Ng* has come to be very much a mere substitute for *m*, because it was from the first invisible. The case of *n* is similar. It also occurs in Chinese as a substitute for *m*. In Mandarin speech *sin* 'heart' is for *sim*. *Lan* 'blue' is for *lam*. These belong to recent changes. An older stratum of changes includes those which occurred in the age when the ancient poetry was made, so that *jen* 'patient,' 'hard,' is in old authorities *nin* (B.C. 1000), while in Amoy and Swatow, which are very old dialects, it is *jim*, down to the present time. So *hcam* in the Tiechiu dialect stands for what is elsewhere *hwan* 'calamity.' There is no doubt that the final *m* is truly primitive, although in North China, where the poems were made, the sound had changed to *nin* 2800 years ago, for the phonetic 𠂔 *nim* used in 忍 *nim* 'patient' proves it. This phonetic is used in several other words, which all have in the same two dialects the final *m*. Consequently *m* should have been in the pronunciation when the characters were made 4300 years ago. We conclude from the fact that this phonetic was pronounced with final *m* 4300 years ago, and from the greater fact that far the greater part of the phonetics kept their finals, whether *m*, *n* or *ng*, unchanged till recently, that the evolution of final *n* out of *m*, of which this is an instance, had at that time nearly concluded its course. We have also instances of the evolution of *ng* out of *n*. Thus *ming* 'decree,' *ling* 'command,' had formerly final *n*, but now they have *ng*. They rhymed with final *n* in the Odes 2800 years ago. The change has been in each case from the more visible nasal to the less visible. When the aid of the eye was no longer required to comprehend the meaning of the word, the special configuration of the lips was abandoned. Probably less exertion is needed in pronouncing *n* and *ng* than *m*. At any rate, whether the

cause be the law of least exertion or not, the final *m* has in China been abandoned more and more each century with steady perseverance in favour of *n* and *ng*. This being the order of echange, it follows that, in the first stages of the language, *m*, as a final, had a great preponderance over *n* and *ng*; and this shows that visibility of the action of the lips held really an important place in fixing the pronunciation of Chinese words before the echaracters were made. When we remember also that a large number of Chinese words now beginning with *w* once had *m*—so that *wu* ‘military’ was *mo*; *wen* ‘civil,’ ‘refined,’ ‘literary,’ was *mun*; *wan* ‘10,000,’ was *man*; *wei* ‘flavour’ was *mi*, we gain additional evidence to show that *m* has greatly lost ground in Chinese, the reason being that the watching of the lips in speaking was abandoned, and men were able to understand what was meant by the help of the ear alone without the eye’s assistance.

But it is not only among the nasal letters that the lips had priority in early Chinese usage. The same is true of *p* and *b*, as compared with *t*, *d* and *k*, *g*. Facts show that *p*, as final and initial, has lost ground, and that it has been changed for *t* and *k*. The character 法 *fa* ‘law,’ is in old dialects, and in the tonic dictionaries of a thousand years ago, called *pap*. In Amoy it is *hwat*, while at Tiechiu in Canton province it is *hwap*. Here we see that *h* takes the place of *p* to begin the word, and *t* appears instead of *p* to finish it. Change from a labial letter to a throat-letter and a tooth-letter meets us at once in our examination of old dialects. The physiological cause is that when the special action of the lips is found to be no longer required for intelligibility, the muscles cease to make the necessary effort in that part of the mouth which is visible to the person addressed, and muscular action of diminished force takes place instead in the interior of the mouth. A very common change in Chinese is from *k* to *h*. Whenever this occurs, there is a saving in muscular action. So also *p* and *f* become *h* in dialects. There is in this change also a saving in muscular energy, rendered possible because the meaning can be conveyed successfully with less amount of energy. In a Fukien dictionary all words normally

in *f* will be found written with *h*, if not with *p*. The region where final *p* has been changed, partially or wholly, for *t* embraces South Fukien, Canton, and parts of Kiangsi; that is, the Amoy, the Tiechiu, and the Punti dialects. The indisputable antiquity of these dialects renders this fact respecting final *p* of very great importance in the history of the language. If, then, we find that the finals *k* and *ng* have a great extension in modern times in Fuchow and in the Shanghai and Ningpo dialects, this must be interpreted as indicating that the people of those parts have, to a large extent, fallen back recently on the throat-letters in place of the lip-letters, as when *fa* 'law,' *fa* 'destitute,' both having final *p* in ancient Chinese, are pronounced *hwak* in the city of Fuchow.

The direction of change in letters is not always from lips to throat, but it is quite enough so to prove the rule. An exception is found in Canton, where initial *f* occurs sometimes for *h*, and for the aspirated *k*. Thus, *huo* 'fire' is *fo*; this is a local irregularity. The change from final *t* to *k*, which we find in Fuchow, serves to show that the proper course of change is from the outer parts of the mouth towards the throat. Yet we meet with a dialect, the Hakka, in which final *k* has become final *t*. In Kiangsi also there is a dialect, that of Nankangfu, in which *p* is retained, while the finals *k* and *t* are both lost. We do not know enough of that dialect at present to allow of the reason of this peculiarity being fully explained. Yet this may be said, that in South China, Nankang is the city which retains the old labial initials and finals with the greatest persistence, but there is no one dialect where all the peculiarities of the old Chinese pronunciation are retained with exact uniformity. If any dialect preserves the finals well, it falls short in the initials. If its initials are old, its finals will be deficient in antiquity. Nankang comes under the same law that rules everywhere else in South China, namely, that dialects and cities which preserve the old pronunciation in some points, are deficient in others.

The priority of labials to other letters may be illustrated by the upgrowth of *f* and *v*. Many words used to write

Sanskrit names, commencing with *p* and *b* seventeen centuries ago, are now pronounced with *f*. The word *Fo* for 'Buddha,' is one of these. The tonic dictionaries show that this was once pronounced in China *But*, as it is by the Japanese still. But in China now it is *Fo*, *Fu*, *Veh*, or *Put*. That is to say, *b* has changed to *v* and to *f*. There is no known instance of change in an opposite direction, so far as I am aware. Many hundreds of words exist which can be proved by the native syllabic spelling to have changed *p* and *b* to *f* and *v*. The old tonic dictionaries show this with superabundant clearness and certainty.

The labial initials appear to have changed, not only into *f* and *v*, but into tooth-letters and gutturals, and the time when they made these changes seems to have been for the most part earlier than the formation of the characters. To illustrate this it will be well first to give examples of synonymous words in these three groups. *Ping*, *ming*, *c'hang* (*t'ang*), *kwang* all mean 'bright.' *Pim*, *tim*, *kim* mean 'stone lancet,' 'lancet,' and 'sword.' *Pang*, *siang*, *kwang* all mean 'assist.' *Feng*, *teng*, *hing* all mean 'abundant.' *Ping*, *ling* both mean 'ice,' and *ngang* or *ying* means 'hard.' *Pok* is 'full,' 'satisfied,' while *tsok*, *kok*,¹ mean 'enough.' *Po*, *c'lä*, *kü*, shortened from *pak*, *dik*, *kok*, all mean 'hold in the hand.' *Pit*, *shwat*, *hut* all mean 'brush.' *Fam* is a 'frame,' and *fang* 'square,' while *c'hwang* and *k'wang* both mean 'rectangular frames.' Cases like these are so numerous that it becomes necessary to suppose that *p* and *m* have by evolution originated the other forms. There can be no reason for omitting the nasal *m* in stating the law, thereby limiting this evolution to *p*. Thus, we find *feng*, *mang*, both meaning 'a sharp edge.' *Meng* 'to grow,' 'to bud,' is correlate with *chang* 'to grow,' with *sheng* 'to be born,' and with *ging* 'rise,' and *hing* also 'to rise.' Such changes may take place in initials, just as the dialects show them taking place in finals. The difference is in the fact that the finals have changed recently, while the initials appear to have changed mostly before the invention of the characters.

¹ *Tsu* and *keu* in Mandarin, which has dropped final *k*.

Probably it happened in this way. Just as with little children there is first a time when they become familiar with labial letters, and the other sounds are beyond their powers, so it was with man. Man first made use of syllables such as *ba*, *ma*, *map*, *bap* to express his ideas. He had very few roots, and very few letters with which to construct those roots. The sounds increased in number, and the roots multiplied by derivation. Ninety-nine roots in a hundred, viewed from a physiological standpoint, were probably at first derivatives. The hand that points and strikes, itself a derivative, is the fruitful source from which hundreds of words have been derived. So with the foot, that takes its name from the sound of stepping or stamping, and may be a derivative in a family of many hundreds of words. In the creation of derivatives, material assistance was given by changes in letters. The two processes went on side by side. Philology is safe when it is based on the correct physiology of the vocal organs. The more we can reduce letter-changes in all their complexity to a few simple laws, the more assured will be our progress in understanding the history of language. The Chinese language seems to show that at first there was a labial period, slowly followed by an age in which tooth-letters prevailed with labials, and this again was precursor of a time when gutturals grew into extensive use. When the age of the invention of writing arrived, men had already formed a fairly complete system of letters, among which *m*, *n*, *ng*, *k*, *t*, *p*, *g*, *d*, *b*, with *s*, *sh*, *a*, *i*, *u*, are all found. We cannot feel sure that we can read out with certainty all these letters in the old phonetics, but they seem to be indisputable, except the *s* and *sh*.

There is a fact of great importance for the proof of the evolution of the gutturals from the tooth-letters. It is that in many phonetics the initial letter is variable. Thus it may be either *k* or *l*. Now the letter *l* is derived from *d*, and *k* from *g*. For instance, *kam* 'to see,' is also *lam*, with the same 監 as phonetic. *Liang* 'cold,' is written with a phonetic which is called *king*, and *king* also sometimes means 'cold,' when it takes the form *kiang* 'frozen hard.' *Kien* 東 'pick

up' is also *lien*. There are several tens of such phonetics. The best explanation of this circumstance is that *d* changed to *g*, and that this change was not yet completed when the characters were being made. We do not find fewer than fourteen phonetics where the initial may be *k* or *l*. There are thirty-four phonetics where the guttural *k* or *h* stands as initial on equal terms with *s*, *sh* or *ts*, and there are eight more where the initial is either *k* or *t*. These facts mean something, and what they mean is that there has been a metamorphosis of the initial. But, more than this, not only has *k* or *g* or *ng* been formed out of *t*, *d*, *s* or *ts*; the initials *p*, *b* and *m* have changed in phonetics in a similar way. For example, *pok*, 'a spoon,' has become *tok*, *chok* and *shau*, which it is at present. Four phonetics present the spectacle of *p* changing to *k*, and four more of *p* changing to *h*. There are five instances of *p* becoming *ts*, four of *p* becoming *l*, and two of *p* becoming *j*. The letter *m* changes to *sh* in one instance, to *h* in four instances, and to *l* in one instance. In an appendix to this paper I give the necessary references to Callery's *Systema Phoneticum*, so that any one who desires to know on what facts precisely I rest this doctrine of the metamorphosis of the lip-initials into tooth- and throat-initials, and of tooth-initials into throat-initials, may see readily how the case stands. There are 1040 phonetics in Callery, and eighty of these show by the variety of their initials that since the characters were made there has been a metamorphosis, not only of *k* into *h*, which is extremely common, nor of *t* into *s*, or *sh*, or *l*, or *ts*, all of which are also very common, but of *p* and *m* into *j*, *l*, *h*, *ts*, *sh* and *k*. Probably some of the instances are delusive. The cause of difference in initial may be sometimes exclusively ideographic, and not phonetic at all. But the greater part of the eighty phonetics will be found to present a solid phalanx of proof contributed to the support that there has been the metamorphosis for which I am contending.

The force of this proof for the change of lip-initial to tooth- and throat-initial may be much increased if we consider the general direction and increasing complexity of recent

letter-changes in Chinese. The change of *d* to *l* was already fully established in the Tang dynasty. This means that a part of the words once commencing with *d* took *l* in place of *d*, and that when the early tonic dictionaries were made, about A.D. 600, this change was complete. At that time many words now commencing with *ch* had *t* instead of *ch*. But *ch* is a compound of *t* and *sh*. From a Chinese standpoint, *t* is the base from which *ch* has proceeded. Before *t* threw off a large section of its words that they might take *ch* instead of their old initial, it had done the same with another large detachment which took *ts*. Previous to this time *t* appears to have thrown off two other detachments in succession, which took *sh* and *s* for their initials. While *t* was thus employed in subdividing into subordinate branches, *d* was not idle. *D* also threw off in succession four detachments of words, which took for their initials *z*, *zh*, *dz*, *dzh*. We find that *dzh* and *ch* were not yet complete in A.D. 600, and on this ground we deduce the order of origination to have been *z*, *zh*, *dz*, *dzh* in the sonant series, and *s*, *sh*, *ts*, *tsh* (*ch*) in the surd series. There is here a change from simplicity to complexity. *T* changed to *s* before it changed to *ch*. The direction of change was from without inwards. The tongue was induced by the ruling mind to do more and more varied work for the improvement of language and the multiplication of words. To use Mr. Melville Bell's definitions, in *t* the point of the tongue touches the upper gum, in *sh* the point and front of the tongue are both raised, and the front approaches the rim of the palatal arch. This is a change from without inwards, as is the case also in the evolution of *h* from *k*¹ and from *g*, a process which was also completed in A.D. 600, as the tonic dictionaries show. Thus, while Chinese philology teaches that compound initials come from a simple base, it also teaches that the law of change is ordinarily from without inward. It is, therefore, not in the least likely that the lip, tooth, and throat letters were introduced into language at the same time. There was an

¹ *H* is described in Bell's Visible Speech as emission of breath with the throat wide. This is quite behind the point where *k* and *g* are formed.

order of evolution in these also, and in that order the lip letters must have stood first.

As a conclusion to this argument I add that the labial letters having been first evolved, the earliest roots must have had forms such as *ba*, *bo*, *ma*, *mo*, *map*, *mam*, *bap*, *p'a*, *pap*, *bam*. That is, they would be biliteral or triliteral combinations of *a*, *o*, *b*, *m*, *p*, and aspirated *p*. From these first syllables the others would all be evolved very gradually as those who used the language required them.

Polysyllabism seems to be not easily conceivable in the earliest stages of language. Assuming that monosyllabic structure was the rule in human speech during its primitive development, any law of progress true in Chinese ought, so far as it is physiological, to be true in the history of any other linguistic stems.

NOTE I.

Callery's *Systema Phoneticum* must always be useful, because its arrangement allows of a large number of instances of the use of the same phonetic being seen together. But Chalmers' *Concise Kanghi*, while it does not translate the meanings of words, is much fuller than Callery. I first give the reference to Callery, and afterwards add from Chalmers as an example the whole of his article on one of the phonetics *pok* or *tok*, but rearranged by myself in the order of evolution. The principle of arrangement is to proceed from labials to *t*, *d*, *ts* and *ch*. From them the order proceeds to the upper and lower *y* and *w*, afterwards reaching *h*, *k*, and *k* aspirated, and finishing with *j* and *l*. It is extremely curious and interesting to trace the development from *b* in this way from a time long preceding the invention of writing 4300 years ago down to the present day. If writing had been invented much earlier, the descent down the ladder could have been represented in a more complete form. As it is, we cannot trace in an orderly way the development of meanings in their actual succession. We can only roughly represent the development of sounds. The evolution of meanings was always independent of the

勺部

杓又引也 **皮消斗** 杓也

兪
 兪
 又以足鉤之交也

彗為一約

衿
衿也
衿衣
衿

也雷流
筠並電一箕
牽帶也

皴
皴
起又皮破
並電肉肤

同
也又草

杓 又引也繫也 **兵** 斗柄也

攸 兵部
 擊也 兵部
 筋 兵部
 昨 兵部

兵部
節鳴也

豹
虎園
文
又
姓

嘒
誇也

躡上象擊也又足躡七

鳥鵠別名獨

鵠
鵠
能飛食虎

參 聆 兵 昨 同

破皮又皮破同穀

瓜也又草名

同曝

勺 楚也 竹橫木

水也
个約也

又同

衣
豹
丁的
与

的蓮
丁的

也 行
的
丁的
白

遠也明見也實也端

也射質也

10
的
丁的
腹
下

丁的 丁的

也
的
丁的

𦉳 丁的魚繫網

射

葯丁的蓮

12
韉
馬韉
也

丁的
韉也

丁的魚名又繫
丁笑同釣
魚也
馬

有[的]駿也
白毛也
馬一
也顙

以
黔
人
面
飾
又
婦
丁
的
黑
子
著

又龍須曰一又婦
以點頰上也

鹿名 丁的
怖 丁小
垂心

也也
夢
杓
取也

擊也 換
帛 丁山
絹布頭 續

也
約丁小和
穗垂貌

15
物也
釣也

也又姓
韻聲也又

釣竹也

characters, and when each new meaning had been evolved, it was the scribe's duty to find a character to represent it. This would be a long time after the new word first appeared.

References to Callery's Systema Phoneticum.

Change of *p*, *f* to *k*, *ch*, page 16, 20, 34, 70, 218, 459; *p* to *sh*, *t*, *ts*, *s*, p. 36, 131, 472, 133, 185, 359, 196; *p* to *h*, p. 56, 141, 154, 398; *p* to *l*, p. 240, 131, 279, 459, 472; *p* to *j*, p. 146, 172; change of *m* to *h*, p. 44, 174, 237, 406; *m* to *k*, p. 187; change of *ts*, *s*, *sh*, *ch* to *h*, *k*, p. 30, 45, 48, 50, 56, 135, 157, 173, 310, 323, 347, 265, 278, 432; change of *l* to *k*, p. 62, 141, 190, 200, 233, 244, 261, 331, 361, 426, 442, 412; change of *t*, *ch* to *k*, *h*, p. 36, 42, 48, 96, 108, 164, 233, 406; change of *s*, *sh* to *h*, p. 43, 84, 122, 128, 137, 146, 158, 199, 235, 257, 348, 355, 387, 390, 430, 434; change of *m* to *sh*, p. 59, 431; change of *m* to *l*, p. 187.

Remark.—There are misprints in Callery, as of *hiuen* for *siuen*.

NOTE II. (See the accompanying Plate).

The accompanying article in Chinese from Dr. Chalmers' Kanghi is headed *pau pu*, or the *Pau* section. *Pau* is here shortened from *pok*.

1. *Pok*, the first word in col. 1 is to be spelled *biau*. The two characters in the first cartouche are chosen in an old tonic dictionary for *b*, *iau*. Meanings Handle of the Great Bear viewed as a ladle; spoon, or peck measure; lead; tie.

Second word, *biau*, to meet any one walking by a cross road.

Third word, *biau*, falling star. Also in col. 2.

2. *Bau* 'lappet of robe'; *bau* 'falling star'; *bau* 'dust pan,' called *po ki* 'band to make fast the rain screen of a cart'; *bau* 7 (same as *fu*, *bok* 'abdomen') 'swelling or broken flesh.'

3. *Bau* 'a melon,' 'a grass'; *piau* 'handle of the 7 stars in Ursa Major,' 'lead,' 'tie'; *pok* 'strike'; *pok* 'cracking joints of fingers and toes.'

4. *Piau* 'wind beating'; *pau* 'panther' (so named from its spots, root *pok*); *pau* 'boast.'

5. *Pau*, *pok* 'to leap,' 'strike,' 'sound of feet striking';

pau 'a bird'; *pau* 'a flying rat or bat, which attacks and eats tigers and panthers.'

6. *Pok*, same as 4th of 3; *pok*, same as 4th of 2; *p'au*, same as 1st of 3.

7. *P'au* 2, same as *pau* 'angry'; *pau*, same as *p'au* 'cannon'; *p'au* 'thorns'; *dik* 'a single beam, plank to cross a stream'; *dik* 'to tie.'

8. *Tik* 'unwadded robe, cool clothing'; *tik*, same as *kut* 'a rat'; *tik* 'lotus seeds'; *tik* 'wrap round.'

9. *Tik* 'white, distant, see clearly, real, mark in archery,' etc.

10. *Tik* 'flesh in the lower part of the abdomen,' 'ribs'; *tik* 'brilliance of pearls'; *tik* 'bright'; *tik* 'heap of stones.'

11. *Tik* 'to string fish,' 'drag'; *tik* 'target'; *tik* 'cut'; *tik* 'lotus seeds.'

12. *Tik* 'loop of leather over the back of a carriage horse for holding the reins together,' 'reins,' 'bridle'; *tik* 'a fish,' 'tie fish,' 'to angle'; *tik* 'high,' 'horse with white spot on his forehead.'

13. *Tik* 'face with black spots,' 'dragon's beard,' i.e. 'a sort of asparagus,' 'black spots in women's cheeks, placed there for ornament,' 'a rat'; *tiau* 'become low-spirited, sad.'

14. *Tiau* 'strike quickly,' 'take furtively,' 'strike on the side'; *tiau* 'head of a piece of silk'; *tiau* 'ears of corn hanging,' 'anything hanging.'

15. *Tiau* 3 'catch fish by angling with a bait,' 'to take,' 'a name'; *tiau* 'to take,' 'sound,' 'a name'; *tiau* 'a bamboo.'

16. *Tiau* 'a grass'; *tiau* 'mad,' 'a child's disease'; *tiau* 2 'thus'; *tiau* 'handle of peck measure in Ursa Major,' 'lead,' 'tie'; *tik*, *tiau* 3 'archery mark.'

17. *Djok* 'noise of water dashing,' 'take away,' 'think about,' 'name of place'; *zhok* 'elevate,' 'name of place.'

18. *Zhok* 'a family name'; *zhok* 'take up or bale out'; *zhok*, same as 2nd of 17.

19. *Zhok* 'falling star'; *zhok* 'wooden spoon used with a wooden cup'; *dzok*, *dzok*, same as 2 in 13; *t'sak* (aspirated) 'break in the level.'

20. *Tsak* 'mouse'; *chok* (*tok*) 'take away,' 'name of music,'

same as 2 of 18; *chok* 'go-between'; *chok* 'pour wine into a goblet,' 'pour from a jar into a pot for use,' 'add,' 'help on the good side,' 'or help in what may be beneficial,' 'consult about what is best to do,' 'name of place,' 'when pouring wine let it be the clear.'

21. *Chok* 'tracks on the ground'; *chok* 'plank to cross water.'

22. *Chok* 'marks on a panther's skin'; *chok* 'to scorch,' 'roast,' 'make bright,' 'warn,' 'fearing fire,' 'bright appearance of flowers.'

23. *Chok*, same as 1 in 8; *chok* 'name of stars in Ursa Major'; *chok*, *chok* 'wind squirrel of western countries'; *chok* 'Paeonia albiflora,' 'vegetation abundant.'

24. *Chok* 'peony,' 'Paeonia albiflora'; *chok* 'a plant' (probably same as last); *chok* 'strong'; *chok* 'take out by baling,' 'to pour'; *cho ling* 'name of place.'

25. *Chok*, same as 3 in 2; *chok*, same as 1 in 13.

26. *Chok* 'strike from one side'; *chok* 'tree laid as a bridge across a stream'; *chok* 'traces'; *chok* 'sound of water'; *chok*, same as 3 in 2.

27. *Yak* (upper pitch as in all surd initials) 'tie up,' 'abridged and comprehensive,' 'check,' 'limit,' 'beautiful,' 'bent,' 'ended,' 'secretly bring under control,' 'tender and graceful'; *yau*, same as *yau* 'important' (that is to say, *yau* 'important' is evolved from *yak*).

28. *Yak* 4, 'white Iris florentina,' the leaf is called *yak*; *yak* 'moderation in diet'; *yak* 'lines at the finger-joints'; *yak* 'small fife' (same as *dik* 'flute').

29. *Yau* 'bent'; *yau* 'joints in bamboo'; *yau* or *au*, same as 27.

30. *Au* 4, same as 1 in 28; *yak*, *yau* 8, 'name of a sacrifice,' 'sacrifice of spring'; *yak* 8 'a white kind of silk.'

31. *Yak* 8, same as 2 in 17, and 4 in 24; *hik* 8, 'a call to war from the sovereign'; *hiau* 6 'a plant which grows like asparagus,' it has a thin root like a finger, which is black, and can be eaten; it is named *fu t'si*, and is a variety of the water chestnut, *Eleocharis*.

32. *Tik* 'lotus seeds'; *hiau* 2 'lotus seeds'; *hiau* 6, same as 3 in 31, and a colloquial name of this plant is *p'u tsi*, the

last of these characters being 'Shepherd's purse, *Capsula bursa pastoris*, (Williams); *hiu* 'spear.'

33. *Kik* 'wrap,' same as 1 in 24; *kit* 'a certain rat or squirrel'; *k'ik* 'spear'; *niak* 'Paeonia albiflora.'

34. *Lik* 'to touch,' 'to place'; *lian* 'meet any one passing by a cross road,' 'to hook anything with the foot.'

NOTE III.

Evolution of ideas in foregoing example.

The first in the series should be *bok*, but *bau* is found because the word was so pronounced about A.D. 1600, when the dictionary from which it is taken was made.

The name of a 'baling ladle' was *bok* at a very early period. It was a scoop of wood, a gourd, or a coeoa-nut shell with a handle attached to it. This is found in astronomy as the name of the seven stars of Ursa Major. The sound heard when water is baled would give the name. The cracking of the knuckles is also called *pok*, as, too, the sound of wind (4), of stepping, of beating (3, 5), of striking with the feet (5), of leaping (5), of an arrow striking a target (11). The influence of astronomy on the formation of words is not likely to be long anterior to the invention of writing.

This variety of sounds imitated shows that in inventing words primitive men made use of very few letters. A noise heard, whether that of breaking, of the dashing of water, of striking, or of jumping, was called *bok*, or more probably, if we go back a stage, *bop*. It was the work of the mind afterwards gradually to apply a convenient diversity of sound to each modification in sense by means of the vocal organs. Here lies that union of the metaphysical with the physical which constitutes the basis of language.

Resemblance to familiar objects led to an extension of words. A water ladle gave a name to the seven stars of the Great Bear. A winnowing implement, shaped like a dust-pan, received the same name. The loud crack of wood when burnt, though not here mentioned, was the cause of a name for sparks, for bright spots, and hence for any spots. From some of these sources came *pok*, the name of the spotted

panther, the bull's-eye of an archer's target, and the white corolla of certain flowers.

The verb 'to tie' deserves attention. It is *bau* and *dik* in columns 1, 7. In 8 it is *tik* 'to wrap,' and in 12 it means 'to tie fish.' It is *tiau* in col. 16, where the final *k* is dropped. It is *yak* in col. 27, with various derived meanings, and lastly *yau*. Here we have five forms of the verb 'to tie.' But outside of this phonetic we may also readily find the derivatives *shok*, *rok* and *fok*, with *shu* and *fu*, and these, though written with different phonetics, may be regarded as forms from the same root, the words being independent of the writing.

Pok appears to be the ultimate root for to lead, to beat, to cross a stream, to swell, to ladle, to take, to pour, a white colour, a spot, thin, to roast. The sound of all seems to have been the same when each began its career, but probably not at the same time. In the course of their history all these words became differentiated in pronunciation. For this abundant opportunity was given by variations in the movements of the organs of speech. Any given configuration of the organs becomes wearisome after a time, and is slightly modified. Words in want of a distinctive utterance take advantage of this, and adopt either the old or the new configuration. 'To lead' occurs four times in the example given, and should be compared with the common verb *tau* 'to lead.' 'To beat' or the sound of 'beating,' occurs seven times, and may be compared with *chai* or *tsek* 'to beat,' and *p'ai* or *p'ak* 'to beat.' The five examples of white colour, and the two flowers named, may be compared with *pai* or *bak* 'white.' The idea of thinness in clothing should be compared with the common adjective *bok*, *pau* 'thin.'

This and other phonetics plainly show how, while initials vary from age to age, the final consonant (in this case *k*) may remain firm for many centuries, till it is dropped in favour of a long vowel or of a diphthong. But the modifications of the ideas inherent in words refuse to be restrained by the trammels of the written characters. They proceed independently on their perpetual career of progress. We must, therefore, compare the words given under any one

phonetic, with those embraced by other phonetics. We then find that the final consonants of roots are in the long run just as variable as the initials, and the vowels that come between them not less so.

Roots without a clear cut shape in sound and in sense were, on the whole, always impossible. If indistinctness enters, it can be but temporary. The efforts of language will be employed incessantly till distinctness is restored. When derivation takes place, there will be indistinctness for a time, but that time will not be long. The senses of primitive man were clear, and gave him distinct information. His roots then must have been correspondingly clear in their shape.

NOTE IV.

Reserved evidence.

In order to be brief, nothing scarcely has in the foregoing paper been said of the Kwang Yün. This dictionary gives valuable evidence in the point argued in this paper. Its date is about A.D. 600. In it we find the following proportions of space occupied by the six final letters known to ancient Chinese:—

<i>M</i> pages	33	<i>P</i> pages	16
<i>N</i> „	102	<i>T</i> „	33
<i>NG</i> „	81	<i>K</i> „	51

From all the facts open to us, the proportion here is to be explained only on the hypothesis of change from *m* to *n* and *ng*, and of *p* to *t* and *k*. The proportion assigned here to *ng*, *n*, *t*, *k* is much greater, without doubt, than it was in the time of Confucius.

Notwithstanding this, many words which are now heard with *ng* have *m* in the Kwang Yün, and similar facts occur under other finals. To some minds this circumstance, the secular contraction of the area of *m* and *p*, and the corresponding expansion of the area of the other finals, will constitute a proof of considerable force for the thesis of this paper.

I have omitted the space occupied by words ending in vowels. This would require amplification.

ART. VIII.—*The Present State of Education in Egypt.*¹ By
II. CUNYNGHAME, Esq.

(Communicated through Mr. Habib Anthony Salmoné, M.R.A.S.)

VOLUMES have been written about the political and financial state of Egypt, but little attention has been directed to the present condition of education in that country. Therefore the results of a personal inspection of the schools in Cairo may not be uninteresting, especially since the importance of the subject has been strongly emphasized in Lord Dufferin's celebrated despatch (Feb. 6th, Egypt, No. 6, 1883).

Education in Egypt is not the simple matter that it may at first sight appear; it is surrounded with difficulties, most of them arising out of the wide difference between Oriental ideas and those of Christian countries.

The present condition of Muhammadan thought may best be understood by calling to mind the ideas prevalent in Europe before the Renaissance. When we open a philosophical or theological work of the middle ages, our chief feeling is one of astonishment, both at the ideas expressed and the reasoning by which they are supported, and we are inclined to wonder how any one in his senses can possibly have possessed them, and more still at how they can have influenced the age.

Take, for example, the reasoning of St. Thomas Aquinas upon the question whether Angels are many or one. He shows that scripture has clearly declared the existence of many angels. But, again, not being material, they must be forms—but a form means that which is, so to speak, typical or ideal only; it lacks content. Now multifoldness can only be given by content, that is, can only exist where there is materiality. Hence then, on the other hand, reason

¹ Read at the Monthly Meeting, 15th November, 1886.

requires us to conclude that the existence of many angels is impossible. Here arises a difficulty, which however the writer solves by pronouncing angels to be a genus—not a species; and thus capable of being manifold, without being material. We should call all this metaphysical jargon resting on a series of unproved assumptions. Yet the seraphic Doctor was the acutest intellect of his time, and the writer whose works were considered the most ingenious, convincing, and philosophical. The reason is that we have lost the key by which to read his works. The key can be found, but only with the aid of much archæological groping in dark corners.

The spirit of the middle ages was a spirit of authority in matters mental as well as in things political. The ideal of a true knight was unreasoning loyal allegiance, that of a true saint unhesitating faith and obedience; and the knight and the saint then formed the two ideals of holy human life. As a result, science was paralyzed. Men were taught to exclaim with St. Anselm, “Credo ut intelligam.” Doubt was proscribed, it was looked upon as unholy, and those who expressed it openly were censured or burned. The chief field of faith was in theology, but even in scientific matters, blind belief was no less demanded. To a young student who alleged he had discovered some new facts in natural history, his teacher replied, “Young man, this is not in Aristotle; I counsel you to leave these vain inquiries and waste no more time in the foolish pursuit of experiments. Read Aristotle and become wise.”

And the studies of the middle ages were all of this tendency. They are well described in Hallam’s *Middle Ages*. Theology, Logic, Rhetoric, and Law were the principal, but those studies which are based on observation or experiment hardly existed. Magic and witchcraft were firmly believed in; and pilgrimage to shrines and beggary were considered as the road to piety. Heretics were burned, and science discouraged.

But by degrees the renaissance came to dethrone the principle of authority, to make the human conscience and reason supreme; the study of natural science was placed by

Bacon on its present experimental basis. Descartes founded philosophy on a critical examination of the reason. Protestantism dethroned the principle of authority in religious matters. And in politics, a series of revolutions, sometimes violent, sometimes peaceful, asserted the individual rights of man. These considerations render most interesting a study of Muhammadan life and thought. For to the Muhammadan world the renaissance movement has never come, and therefore learning in the East is now almost exactly in the same condition in which it was in Europe five or six hundred years ago. To the Muhammadan doctor the highest and noblest effort of the human mind is an uncritical and unscientific study of the complicated rules of Arabic grammar, rhetoric, and poetry. He commits to memory thousands of precepts from the Koran, and thousands of sentences from the poets. His speech abounds in parables and elegant similes, involving the most subtle and delicate verbal distinctions.

But all this is conducted in an entirely unscientific manner. For instance, although knowledge of Arabic is prized far above all other learning, and although, of all living tongues, there is none that illustrates so splendidly the laws of development of language, yet Arabic grammar is taught without even a suspicion that such a science as etymology exists. Indeed, to inquire into such matters would savour of impiety, seeing that the great oracle of the language is the Koran, which not only fixes the articles of belief, but also decides all disputed grammatical questions. The most authentic copy of this work is said to exist at Mecca, written out on ancient skins of parchment. It is asserted not to contain one single grammatical mistake, to be absolutely inimitable by any human pen, and to be the standing miraculous proof of the truth of the religion of Islam. It is not unnatural that he who believes in the verbal inspiration of the Koran should conclude that the grammar must be absolutely perfect. Next in importance to the Koran are the Commentaries upon it, which contain the precepts of the Muhammadan Fathers, the traditionary sayings of the Prophet, and the lives and miracles of Saints. In these commentaries there

is much which is not in the Koran, and which is yet tenaciously believed. In fact, very many of the most important ceremonial and religious beliefs and observances rest solely upon tradition.

At one time the study of philosophy and logic threatened to produce on the doctrines of Islam an effect somewhat similar to that of the scholastic philosophy in Europe upon the doctrines of the church. Thus the question was raised whether the Koran was uncreate and eternal, subsisting in the essence of God from all time, or whether it was created by Him; a controversy which Al Ghazili attempted to reconcile by saying that the word of God was in His mind from eternity, but that the transcription thereof was an act of creation. The matter appears finally to have been left to the discretion of believers, but not before great numbers on both sides had been imprisoned, whipped, and executed for heresy. Again, the questions with what body believers shall be raised up; whether angels and animals will be raised up as well as men; whether a perfectly sinless being could be the author of evil; whether punishment after death shall be eternal; and like matters were the subjects of active dispute. Had this tendency of thought prevailed, it might have prepared the Oriental mind for the advent of something corresponding to our renaissance movement, which raised conscience to the position of a fountain of knowledge and supreme guide in spiritual matters, and made the reason the ultimate judge in the domain of science. But it bore no fruit and died away. The philosophical sects were branded as unorthodox, and philosophy itself was regarded as impious. In Spain, indeed, there were not wanting signs of a coming change of thought, but the fall of the power of the Moors put an end to it.

The only movement which in any way resembled the change of thought in Europe was the rise of the Wahabees, a sect of violent puritans, who forbade luxury and destroyed shrines, not respecting even that of the Prophet.

And thus it happens that although in the East learning is regarded with the highest veneration, yet it has never

attained to a scientific altitude. The learned Hakim considers a knowledge of thousands of precepts from the Koran and the Commentaries as the highest form that theology can take, and the dry rules of Arabic grammar as the principal department of secular learning. Modern science, physics, and chemistry, are looked upon partly as a series of childish conjuring tricks, and partly as the result of intercourse with evil spirits. Educated Europeans coming into contact with a temper of mind like this are usually at first quite unable to believe or comprehend the contempt in which they and their learning are held, a contempt not perhaps wholly unmixed with a sort of awe, but a contempt deeply embittered by religious hatred.

In Egypt the struggle between the old and the new ideas is most actively going on, and therefore the education question affords the interesting spectacle of a battle-ground, in which the ancient Arabian learning is brought face to face with the knowledge of the West. And this struggle is all the more intense because Cairo has always been considered the fountain-head of Arabic literature, and therefore the war is, as it were, being waged in the very capital of the enemy. It is on this account that a short survey of the schools at Cairo is so interesting, and so instructive.

Before the advent of Europeans to Egypt, the education of the natives depended on two institutions, the Kuttab or writing schools, and the University. The Kuttab schools were frequented by boys from the earliest age up to puberty, and still remain the primary schools of the country. The little children are collected in some dirty shop or room which would at once be condemned by a sanitary inspector. Here they are placed under the care of a teacher at a cost of about threepence per month per head, and provided with sheets of tinned iron, such as are used to make kitchen utensils. On these, passages from the Koran are written out in ink, and the children learn the verses by rote, and to read by repeating the passages over and over again, while they look or pretend to look at the slate. It is a curious sight to see the little things clothed in long shirts of brightly coloured cotton,

squatting on the floor and rapidly swinging their bodies backwards and forwards, while they patter away at the lesson that not one of them understands ; for even men are unable to understand the Koran without a commentary. The instructor, a peaceful, gentle-looking man, who is generally incapable of explaining a single word to the children, corrects the exercise in a dreamy way until one of those periods of energy comes to him that generally interrupt the indolent repose of Orientals, and then the children are smacked and thumped for a time until things relapse into their original quiet.

The boys are also taught to sing in a manner reminding one of Gregorian chants. They use no desks to write at, holding their slate or paper inclined in their hands. It is impossible to write on paper in any other way. For as they use the right hand to write from right to left, a steel pen is inadmissible, for its point, driven forwards like a plough, would penetrate the paper. This therefore requires the use of a soft reed. But ink will not remain in a reed without flowing to the point and making blots, unless the reed is held nearly horizontal, which therefore necessitates the paper being inclined to the horizontal nearly at an angle of 45° . This is the reason why Arabs always hold up a piece of paper in the hollow of their hands when they wish to write. The difficulty can be surmounted by the use of a small sliding metal tongue, placed in the hollow of the reed to retain the ink, but I could not find that such a device had ever been used.

Most of the Kuttab schools are dirty in the extreme, clusters of flies hang round the eyes of the children, and in many the smell is intolerable. In some of the school-rooms, even where the children were under seven years of age, I observed that the *falaka* was used,—a thick stick with a loop of cord in it, to which their feet are strapped down while they are being bastinadoed. It is found that a free use of the rod is a wonderful stimulator of the memory, if it does not much assist the reason. The children appear happy, and there are altogether about 130,000 of them in the Kuttab

schools. If the rooms are dirty and unhealthy, it must be remembered that so also are most of the peasants' houses throughout Egypt.

As soon as boys have reached about the age of fourteen years, they cease to attend the Kuttab schools, and then, if they are to become learned men, they go to the University at the Mosque al Azhar, situated in the centre of the native quarter in Cairo. If the scholar is poor, a pittance is doled out to him to live upon, and he sleeps on the floor of the Mosque, an example how little the true student requires. His education is completed in from three to seven years. He is taught commentaries on the Koran, a further mass of undigested tradition is committed to his memory, and then he commences the study called law, but which mostly consists of a knowledge of ceremonial observances. This education is then completed by a short course of logic, rhetoric and the art of constructing verses, and behold our young professor now equipped with all the learning of his ancestors, prepared for each point of controversy with a perfect armoury of wise saws and ancient instances, looking down from his pinnacle on the hateful heresies and foolish learning of the West. The similarity of this course of instruction with those of the Universities in the middle ages is too striking to escape the most cursory view.

To correct the defects of this method of study has been the chief task of the modern Egyptian Educational Department. They have, however, been strenuously opposed by the Wakf, or body of Muhammadan Ecclesiastical Endowment Commissioners, who are exceedingly jealous of any interference with the old system, and whose efforts have hitherto been completely successful in preventing any changes being made. Thus, while the Education Department has on paper the power of inspecting the Kuttab schools, it has never been exercised, for fear of the storm which would be raised, and any attempt to interfere in the slightest degree with the hotbed of fanaticism in the Al Azhar would be out of the question.

The efforts of the department have therefore been confined to the foundation of an improved system of primary and

secondary schools of their own, at which attendance is voluntary. They have thus erected a series of new institutions side by side with the old ones, and which are so far recognized by the Al Azhar, that sheiks or holy teachers of religion and Arabic are sent from the University to the various Government Schools, wherever they are required. But religion is not made compulsory. The Government has not attempted the formation of elementary schools on a wide scale, therefore their primary schools are still mainly recruited from the Kuttab. The primary school destined to serve as a model to the others is the "Nassiret," and is a very excellent institution.

It contains 400 day boys and 300 boarders. It is exceedingly clean, and the boys look very happy. They are taught English, French, arithmetic, and drawing, and in fact the elements of a primary education. The age of twelve is the upper limit. I saw some very good elementary Arabic text-books for teaching English. They had been printed in Cairo. The fee for board and lodging and teaching is £14 a year. Day boys pay less, and some are admitted gratis. Of these schools there are twenty-nine in Egypt, I was informed, with a total of about 4000 scholars.

Next in ascending order after the primary schools comes the preparatory school, mainly designed for those who intend to follow the learned professions, or to enter the service of the state. It is situated close to the Khedivial Library at Cairo, in which is contained perhaps the most magnificent collection of Arabic manuscripts in the world. In the preparatory school instruction is given in modern languages, Arabic, arithmetic, a little chemistry, geography and drawing.

The school-house is a good one, being an ancient palace (as is the case with most of the public buildings in Cairo). It contains hot and cold bath sheds, a rough gymnasium, and two playgrounds, in which it is attempted to make the boys speak French and English during play-hours. About one-third of the pupils sleep in the school, in clean, airy dormitories. The food looks nice and well cooked. They sit, of course, Arab fashion, eating with the right hand out of the

dish (being the hand destined for all cleanly purposes). The store-room and kitchen are guarded all day by sentries selected from among the boys, who see the food weighed out, cooked, and watch it till it is brought up to table. No corporal punishment is allowed, but offenders are imprisoned in small cells. This prohibition of moderate corporal punishment is a decided mistake. Boys of spirit are sometimes obliged to be removed from the school, who could easily be dealt with if the cane were allowed. The management of the school is in the French manner, the boys being more watched than would be the case under an English system.

On entering the class-rooms, several characteristic traits of the Egyptian boy present themselves at once, even to the most casual observer. The first is their extraordinary docility and desire to learn. An English schoolmaster could hardly believe such angelic boys existed out of Paradise. This is no mere pretence, it is the fact, and is attested by all engaged in teaching here. Again, the absence of mischief is remarkable. They are being taught in an old palace, the walls of which are still decorated with Arabic paintings, and yet I could nowhere see one trace of wilful damage. English boys would have put pipes into the mouths of all the peacocks, and scratched their names everywhere. The next characteristic is their extraordinary self-confidence. If a boy is selected to do a sum before the class, he steps up at once, without a trace of embarrassment, and goes on in a firm decided tone. No mistake abashes him, and he rarely pauses to think.

But, on the other hand, the boys are tiresome to teach on this very account. They are so glib, so easily satisfied, and so quick, that they float over the surface of a subject without sounding its depths, and constantly mistake a knowledge of words for a knowledge of things. This fault is mostly due to the pernicious system adopted in the Kuttab schools. I do not for a moment suggest that a knowledge of the Koran is not most desirable for Muhammadans. Too great inroads are being made already on their religion. Wine-drinking, the eating of prohibited food, and unlawful pleasures of all

kinds, are unfortunately only becoming too common in Egypt; and a class of men has arisen in Cairo who have imitated Parisian vices, without acquiring European virtues; who are neither good Muhammadans, good Christians, nor even good Infidels.

It is the spectacle of these effeminate luxurious young men, who come back from Paris with the airs of the monkey who had seen the world, that excites the scorn of the strict and self-denying devotees of the Muhammadan religion, and greatly retards the progress of civilization and improvement. Fortunately there are bright exceptions, but the Egyptian nature is so keenly susceptible to the allurements of pleasure, that great care ought to be taken to place those students who go to Europe in positions where they will not be too much exposed to temptations. But while religious instruction in the Kuttab schools ought by all means to be encouraged, yet the Koran might be made, like the Bible, a means of imparting moral truth combined with instructive history. This is not done, the poor little children's nascent powers are warped and stunted, and the results appear when their higher education is attempted.

Although the Egyptian boy is deficient in inventive capacity, acts from impulse, is wayward and changeable in mind, and, as I have endeavoured to show, is stunted as to his reasoning faculties, he is not without other compensating advantages. He has a vivid imagination, quick perception, and a power of intuitively sympathizing with others. He is therefore by nature more or less of an artist, and this is shown by the most cursory inspection of the drawings done at any of these schools.

Difficulties, it is true, formerly presented themselves, owing to the Koranic precept against images, which had been interpreted to mean all representations of things which have life. This difficulty has been surmounted; for the sheiks of the mosques who teach in the government schools have lately decided that the word "image" must be restricted to sculpture. As a result, the boys have all begun to copy heads from the flat, and that with the most remarkable ability. I

was so incredulous that the boys had actually done unassisted the drawings shown to me, that I watched them at work. The result left no doubt whatever as to their powers. Unfortunately they were badly provided with copies. There were a few good crayons from the antique, but for the most part the boys were set to work on lithographs of heads such as were in vogue for books of beauty half a century ago; of languishing females with braided hair in loops, and holding nosegays of flowers or baskets of fruit, or perhaps a captive bird. Nevertheless, the real appreciation of form and the combined delicacy and spirit in handling were surprising for boys so young, and would bear comparison with any drawing school in England or France.

After the preparatory school come the applied schools of languages, law, engineering, medicine, arts and manufactures, and military science. I do not propose to weary you with a detailed account of them all, but only to notice a few of their salient characteristics.

In the school of languages I found the young men rather backward, in spite of the pains taken to teach them and the evident trouble they take to learn. The fault, I think, proceeds from the want of good text-books. I found the French master translating a French grammar into Arabic for the boys to copy out, which, of course, caused a great waste of time. In the English class I dictated a few sentences to one of the boys selected at random, who wrote them out remarkably well. I then entered into conversation with the class, choosing the subject of astronomy, in order to see what their ideas were on this point. Some of the better instructed told me that the earth was 455 miles from the sun and revolved in 44 hours, which I think was a mistake for 24 hours. On further interrogation, it appeared that these boys had learned this from Europeans or from other boys in the engineering school; but the ignorance of the class in general on these simple matters was really disgraceful. It showed that they had never had even the most elementary scientific instruction. Not one boy in the class knew the names of the planets, nor how many there were, and on my telling them

that the planets were named by the Europeans after certain ancient gods, I was amused at the face of horror with which one of the boys asked if Englishmen believed in those gods. He appeared greatly relieved when he learned that the English were not polytheists. An obstacle formerly in the way of astronomical studies has been removed by the recent discovery of no less than nineteen texts in the Koran which show that the earth goes round the sun. The interpretations of certain other passages which had suggested a contrary opinion are therefore now discredited.

The Polytechnic, or Engineering school, is mostly taught by French professors. From this school came the late Astronomer-Royal of Egypt, a man of remarkable scientific knowledge. Here, again, the defects of early education glaringly appear, a strong tendency being exhibited to imitate those persons who learn Euclid by rote, without understanding it. The drawing in this school was quite remarkable; nothing better could be desired as far as artistic execution was concerned. A black boy from the Soudan, who had been about three years under instruction, had shaded and coloured a drawing of an engine in a manner that would bear comparison with the best work done in England.

The school of medicine is being largely extended. It is situated close to a hospital, and here, also, the manipulative power of the young men was exhibited by the delicacy of their skill in dissection. The great difficulty is that there are no good medical text-books in Arabic. A law is shortly to be proposed making it compulsory on all medical students to be able to read with facility one European language—an excellent regulation, which, as the Arabs are very expert at languages, will not entail much hardship.

The *Ecole des Arts et Métiers* presents the usual features of a technical workshop on the French system. The boys are being well taught. One of the difficulties with them is that they greatly dislike the European fashion of standing up to their work instead of squatting. Here were being made every conceivable kind of machinery and furniture.

I saw agricultural machines, patent American wringing machines, models of all kinds, and some very well-executed chairs, tables, and wardrobes. But by far the most striking sight was the beautiful decoration of the walls and ceilings in Old Arabian and Moorish patterns. Nothing better could have been desired than these elaborate traceries in gold and colours. They had mostly been taken from the illuminations in the magnificent collections at the Khedivial Library. The walls of many of the rooms were painted in oil with maps of various countries, in which the most delicate sense of the harmony of colour was apparent.

How much it is to be regretted that the moneyed classes in Cairo prefer to ornament their houses and public buildings with a poor imitation of modern French and Italian decorations, instead of the beautiful designs of their own country. I have seen palace after palace, which the folly of the past rulers of Egypt has crected, enormous piles of stucco and plaster, covered with rococco ornament and painted to imitate marble. Many millions must have been spent on these palaces, filled as they are with badly-made furniture of the style of Louis XV., and yet I do not recollect having seen in any one of them a sign that the native artists of Egypt have been employed. Their foundations are crumbling, and most of them will soon be heaps of ruins, to be remembered only by the part they have borne in producing that gigantic debt, which still, like an incubus, weighs down the prosperity of Egypt. Let us hope that if the aspirations of the Egyptians towards freedom from foreign intervention are ever realized, they will mark its advent by a return to their own architecture. They have two styles to choose from, both indigenous to the soil, and both suitable to the climate, viz. the ancient Egyptian and the mediæval Arabian. Of both they possess the finest specimens which exist. What a pity it is, that they, from whom the world has learnt so much in the arts of decoration and architecture, should neglect their own native art and allow their own native artists to starve, while they introduce foreigners from abroad to supply them with an article of a poor and degraded character. The chief

defect in Cairo at present is the absence of general technical instruction for the craftsmen, and their repugnance to learn. The handicrafts in Egypt are in a very bad condition. For instance, the work done by the jewellers is simply disgraceful. Slovenly, careless ornament is patched on gold and silver, which only the sharpest vigilance of the purchaser can prevent from being recklessly adulterated, and the tools employed in the jewellers' bazaar would disgrace the Kaffirs. Considering the present cheap price of English and American tools, and the excellent manipulative power of Egyptians, they ought to be exporting jewelry, instead of seeing all the best work taken before their eyes by foreigners.

Nor is the artistic skill of the Egyptian inferior to that of any other race. At Thebes such wonderful forgeries of Egyptian antiquities are made, that even experienced persons are deceived by them. It is not only the things that are imitated, but the very spirit of the ancient workman that has been reproduced. A good collection of such forgeries would be quite an acquisition to any museum. At Luxor, a donkey-boy taken at random, and provided with my knife and some limestone, did a series of excellent miniature copies of the cartouches of the principal kings. The pottery all along the river is justly admired for its graceful form, and yet the bazaars are full of French and English crockery, to the exclusion of native work. The clay is to be had, the men exist, but unfortunately the education and the enterprise as yet are wanting.

No more interesting effort could be made than a wise attempt under suitable guidance to revive and restore the dying Arabian industries.

In conclusion, it may be remembered, that while the Egyptians have much to learn in the matter of education, they have been making efforts which demand the highest praise and encouragement. They have to contend with religious prejudice, the enmity of the University, and the indifference of foreign powers, and this too in the face of a deficient revenue. If we condemn some of the faults of their educational system, is it not true that our own is also full of

defects, and that too with far less excuse for them? It is a fortunate thing for the country that the immediate supervision of education in Egypt is now in the hands of one who is probably the most highly cultivated of all the ministers, and the most thoroughly acquainted of all with European education. Yacoub Artin Pasha is a man who has travelled widely, and has not travelled in vain. Keen to seize new ideas, and yet cautious in applying them, under his hands and with the interest which the Khedive (a sincere and pious Muhammadan) has always taken in education, the schools are slowly being moulded into shape, and bid fair, in time, to become really satisfactory.

Above all, it ought to be recognized that in order to improve the Muhammadans, we must learn to understand them. In former days they showed themselves keenly susceptible to the Greek learning. If they now persecute heretics, is it more than Europeans were doing not so very long ago? They are capable of being deeply influenced by Europeans; but such influence, to be permanent and salutary, ought to work from within through the medium of ideas, rather than be exerted by means of external force.

Note as to Arabic pens.—The difficulty of writing Arabic on paper placed horizontally may be surmounted by the device which I here exhibit, and which consists of an elastic tongue of metal placed under the pen. I have tried a great many experiments, but none succeeds so well as this. These pens may also be used for writing in Gothic characters, and the peculiar nature of Gothic alphabets, combined with the fact that in old pictures the monks are always represented writing with very inclined desks, makes it not unlikely that they used reed pens. Nor would it be surprising that the mediæval art of illumination in Europe was got from the Arabs, from whom almost all mediæval learning was derived.

A further advantage of this pen is that it holds so much ink that a great many words may be written without dipping it again in the inkstand.

ART. IX.—*The Tri-Ratna*. By FREDERIC PINCOTT, M.R.A.S.

IN the very valuable paper on "Early Buddhist Symbolism" contributed to the July issue of the Journal by Mr. Sewell, we have many interesting statements showing the possible influence of the West upon Indian symbolism. These, however, do not, to my mind, lead to the conclusion Mr. Sewell desires to establish; and, in fact, he contents himself with the assertion that the *swastika* is emblematic of sun-motion, that the *chakra* represents the sun, and that the *triśula* "is nothing more nor less than a conventionalized scarab—a sun-emblem." The first two assertions seem to have been considered self-evident; but, in support of the last, several remarkable coincidences are brought together.

In my opinion, the difficulty in understanding these symbols arises from looking too far afield for an explanation. We may take it as a rule that all old symbols were intended to represent simple ideas, which in the course of time lost their original meaning, and assumed technical or mystical import. It is safe to conclude that Buddhistic emblems form no exception to this general rule. It is needful to bear in mind, also, that there are two Buddhas and two Buddhisms,—the one is the real reformer and the doctrines which he preached; and the other is the imaginary pre-existent omnipotent being, with his endless co-equal repetitions, and the complicated speculations to which he and they stand sponsor. Enquirers who rest entirely upon the ideas of modern Buddhists, and on the Vaipulya-Sûtras, will be carried into the realms of imaginary antiquity with its cycles of Buddhas and Bodhisattwas, inculcating crudities and profundities, that may as well be deduced from the sun, or the moon, or from any other equally remote source. We should steadily keep before our minds the fact that the Buddha who gave rise to all this wonderment was a Rationalist of very pronounced type, who set his face against metaphysical speculation. His object was to draw his countrymen away from idle dreaming, and to teach

them to concentrate their efforts on the practical duties of life. This is clearly seen by the authoritative words of the rock-cut and pillar inscriptions, by the incidental statements of old Hindû plays, by the express assertion of the Vishṇu-Purâṇa, and even by a discriminative reading of Buddhist literature itself. This being so, we may be sure that all really Buddhistic emblems originated in simple, rational, and practical ideas.

This historical Buddha, as is well known, accepted the prevailing opinions of his compatriots on a variety of subjects which did not conflict with his own leading ideas. He seems to have held the Agnostic view of personal Deity, which left his followers to branch off into two sects, one theistic, the other atheistic. He accepted the notion of a future state, but left its nature undefined; deeming it sufficient that mankind should know how the lamp of life was to be blown out (*Nirvâṇa*). His reticence on this point has caused all the curious inquiries of succeeding generations as to what he desired us to understand by *Nirvâṇa*. He did not invent, he accepted the theory of metempsychosis. He saw that births and deaths were continually taking place; and as "misery" arising from "desire" reigns supreme in life, the only way to attain beatitude seemed to be to strip the living principle of "desire," until perfect apathy stopped its vital functions. Buddha seems to have wished to induce his countrymen to abandon traditional dogmas based on revelation, and to accept instead thereof *reason* as the efficient guide in matters of faith. Reason, he held, teaches us that a pure moral life produces happiness in this world; and, by subjugating desire, destroys all wish for life and the things of sense, and thus accomplishes the *Nirvâṇa* or cessation of transmigratory births. The *Parinirvâṇa-Sûtra* shows that Buddhism carefully abstained from describing *Nirvâṇa* with any definiteness; and the same book makes Buddha say that he "entangles himself with no such questions What I deal with are the questions of sorrow, accumulation, extinction, and the way. I explain and analyse these truths: here is my field

of speculation; therefore I exclude and ignore all other questions, all preferences, or questions about transmigrations or idle and vain questions. I devote myself wholly to moral culture, so as to arrive at the highest condition of Moral Rest."¹ A man whose purpose in life can be thus stated by his disciples is not likely to be connected with solar myths.

Starting from a rational basis, it is not difficult to explain the emblems found in Buddhist sculpture. And the very first remark I have to make destroys all chance of connecting the Triśula with the sacred scarab. The Triśula is the three-pronged object on the top of the illustrations in the paper of Mr. Sewell on which I am commenting. It is a term never applied to the circular object found underneath it. The two objects are totally distinct, and are often represented separately in different places, and for different purposes. This could never be the case if they formed parts of one object; for there is no sense in depicting the front claws of a scarab on one building, and his headless trunk on another. Furthermore, when the two objects are placed together, they are seen to be two separate things one over the other, and not always in the same order, for sometimes the Circle is above the Triśula. This annihilates the scarab theory, but leaves the origin of the symbol still open to question; I, therefore, add my explanation of the symbols to which Mr. Sewell has called attention.

The *Chakra* is the "circle" or "wheel," symbolizing the endless revolutions of births and deaths; also the eternity of truth, the complete "circle" of the law, the progressive character of the faith, and the universal predominance of its power. The *Chakra* was a well-known symbol expressing universal sovereignty, and was applied to many Indian Rājās who were styled *chakrarārtin* under the assumption that the "wheels" of their chariots could revolve everywhere without obstruction. Nothing could be more apt than to speak of Buddha (who was of royal race) and his Law as

¹ Rev. S. Beal's *Catena*, p. 183.

chakravârtî or universal, and to depict it in sculpture as a wheel. The common Buddhist expression for prayer and preaching is "to turn the wheel of the Law," that is to say, to spread the truth, and to give currency to the views of the Tathâgata. This expression is sufficient of itself to explain the symbol, and to strip it of all allusion to the Sun.

A circular object was also a very complete symbol for Buddhism from another point of view; because, when filled with petals instead of spokes, it represented the Lotos, a flower which, from its calmly reposing on the water and from peculiarities in its growth, beautifully symbolizes both the endless cycle of births and deaths, and the still repose of Nirvâṇa. This, indeed, is the most common form which the circular emblem assumes in Buddhism; and the special connection of the Lotos with this creed is expressed in the sacred formula "*Om! mani padme hûm!*" "The jewel (is) the lotos," a phrase of special significance in all ages and in all lands professing Buddhism. This object, as was long ago pointed out in the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal* (vol. iv. p. 131), was "the emblem always borne by a Chakravârtî Râjâ, and *à fortiori* by Buddha." Thus, whether we regard the circular symbol as a Wheel or as a Lotos, it is equally expressive of the well-known dogmas of Buddhism.

The *Trisûla* is an emblem of enormous importance to Buddhism, as is seen by its universal diffusion in all ages and in all places, and by the remarkable prominence always given to it. Look where we will on Buddhistic work, there we find this seal impressed. It caps pillars, it sits on thrones, it is carried aloft on standards, it is impressed on coins, and it adorns monuments in the greatest profusion. At Sâncî this singular device forms the most striking object in the whole building; and at Amrâvati countless representations of it are adorned with the richest ornamentation. It is clear, therefore, that it must represent some idea of universal acceptance among Buddhists; and some

idea, also, of pre-eminent importance to the professor of that religion.

If we examine this symbol apart from the circular object on which it is so often mounted, we shall see that it is shaped exactly like the old Indian letter J y . No amount of floriation materially alters its shape; the two arms arc, at times, forked, or tridentated, or floriated; the central stem may be shortened or almost disappear; but, in despite of all such changes, its original character is never lost, it remains a *Y* throughout.

We have now to see whether the history of Buddhism furnishes us with any watchword or expression which might fairly be held to render the letter *Y* a recognizable sign of that faith, sufficiently distinctive to stamp anything on which it might be found as Buddhistic. There is such a formula in the celebrated phrase beginning *Ye Dharmâ*. This formula is now, and always has been, the *shibboleth* of Buddhism, the great confession of faith, daily and hourly repeated by every member of that community. The sentence *Ye Dharmâ*, etc., was considered the quintessence of all doctrine, the expression of the four truths, the perfect exposition of the faith, the recognition of the saving power of Dharma, and of the exalted wisdom of the Tathâgata. These facts seem to me naturally and satisfactorily to explain why the letter *Y* was used to symbolize Dharma, or the doctrines of Buddha, and why it so frequently recurs on all Buddhistic monuments. There being no personal Deity in early Buddhism, and Dharma, or the Law, being a life of virtue and benevolence, it is clearly impossible to invest it with outward shape for the purpose of depicting it in plastic art. When, therefore, it became desirable to represent the Faith in sculpture, what could better serve the purpose than the first, or most prominent, word of the sacred formula which was held to give full expression to it, more especially when that word consisted of a single consonant?

But we need not depend solely on reasoning for the ultimate decision; because the sculptures at Anrâvati have representations of wheels with the letter *Y* attached round the

periphery. These can only be intended to represent praying-wheels, with the *Ye Dharmā* attached to them, in the way now daily practised in all parts of the present Buddhistic area. One example in illustration is here given, in which a devotee is standing by, evidently receiving the benefit of the revolving prayers, indicated by the *Ye Dharmā* on slips of paper attached to the edge of the wheel.



Another discovery results from the recognition of this letter *Y* as the *Ye Dharmā* and the emblem of the Law; for it enables us to recognize the object so frequently spoken of in Buddhist literature as the *Tri-Ratna*. This is known to mean Buddha, Dharma, and Sangha conjoined; but the command to “worship the Chaitya and the Tri-Ratna” implies that the latter had some sculptural form to which adoration could be paid. Just such an object is met with in great profusion in all Buddhist remains, consisting of the *Trisūla*, the *Chakra*, and a supporting stem or stand, often terminating in an impression of the Sacred Feet of Buddha. Any student of Buddhism will instantly recognize the object of which I am speaking, and will be aware of the prominence accorded to it in Buddhistic art. It is constantly found on both sides of doorways, or mounted on thrones as a special object of adoration. The stem on which the *Chakra* and *Trisūla* rest is often represented as the trunk of a tree, from which protrude short branches from top to bottom, on which are conventional leaves, and, at times, also necklaces of jewels.




This combination is certainly intended to represent the Tri-Ratna—the Triśūla representing Dharma, the Chakra representing Buddha, and the stem with its leaves representing Sangha, the congregation of the faithful—the whole blended into one figure, of which Dharma is the head, Buddha is the body and heart, and Sangha is the limbs, terminating in the Sacred Feet.

But I must here point out another circumstance, viz. that, instead of a tree-like stem, the Chakra and Triśūla at times rest upon parallelograms, as may be seen in Mr. Sewell's illustrations, Figures 1 and 15; and it is not a little remarkable that these parallelograms are, I believe, always *four* in number, almost obviously intended to symbolize the Four Castes. The Sangha, or congregation, consisted of members of each of the castes; for all caste distinctions were abrogated by the Law of Buddha. A curious confirmation of this explanation is found in the figures of Jagannâth, the bodies of which rest upon *four* upright stems, as though intended to symbolize that, under that form of the faith, the castes are co-ordinate, none being superior or inferior to the others.

From the foregoing facts it seems to me clear that the Triśūla is simply the letter *Y*, symbolizing the formula *Ye Dharma*, or the Buddhistic faith; and that, in combination with the Chakra (symbolical of Buddha, and the universality of his dominion), supported by the objects representing the four castes, or Sangha, constituted the *Tri-Ratna* so constantly spoken of in Buddhist books. This gives a precise and natural explanation of the figure on the gateways at Sânehî, shown by Mr. Sewell in his Fig. 15. It is, in reality, the Tri-Ratna, or combination of Dharma, Buddha, and Sangha, so passionately extolled by ancient Buddhists as an object of adoration, and hence placed in the most conspicuous position by the architects of the building.

The emblem which remains to be spoken of is the *Swastika*; and it will strip this of much superstition to remark that it is so called from the Sanskrit prefix *su* 'good,'

‘excellent,’ and the verbal form *asti* ‘existing,’ followed by the adjectival affix *ka*. It may be taken to mean, literally, “excellently-existent,” or “what exists perfectly”; and is used as a substantive implying benediction or good fortune. It is a kind of antithet to *nāstika* ‘non-existent,’ which, as a substantive, means an atheist. The Swastika was impressed upon objects as a mark of good fortune; but it was a symbol of special sanctity in the estimation of Buddhists, for it is not infrequently represented in the position of greatest honour on the seat of a throne, with, in some cases, adoring devotees around.

It deserves notice that the arms of the Swastika symbol do not always point in the same direction. They point to the right or left with seeming indifference, many being shaped thus , and others in the reverse direction, thus . The lines are not always angular, sometimes they are rounded; others again consist of a plain cross with four added ornaments; while others consist of a complicated arrangement of intertwining lines, departing widely from what is taken to be the primitive type. When resting on a throne it is constantly depicted as a kind of cake, like our “hot-cross-buns,” thus . These peculiarities, to which attention has never, that I am aware, been drawn, militate against the idea that this symbol represents the motion of the Sun; for the sun is not likely to have been depicted as revolving in opposite directions, or as getting into a complicated whirl.

This curious object, in reality, represents simply a given space divided into four equal parts, united in the centre; and this suggests a metaphorical combination of the four castes united in a common society, the bent divisional arms of which appear to indicate revolution or recurrence, *i.e.* the endless revolution of recurring births and deaths. When looked at carefully, each side, as it revolves, suggests the figure of the *Trisula*, the emblem of *Dharma*, while the whole circulating object represents the *Chakra* or *Buddha*; and the four compartments depict the four castes or *Sangha*. Thus this venerated symbol presents us with the most

condensed form of the *Tri-Ratna*; and ascribing to it that meaning, we have a full and satisfactory explanation of its wide diffusion over every district to which Buddhism penetrated. It is quite possible that this distinctly Buddhist emblem may have an accidental resemblance to some other object venerated by other nations; but before any real relationship can be claimed, the various distinguishing features of each should be carefully noted and compared, and the probability of borrowing should be reasonably ascertained. The figure is a very simple one, not requiring much skill to invent, and might well have suggested itself to many people to represent many different ideas. I may mention that the old Indian letters SUSTK, the essential characters of *Sustaka*, the Pâli form of the word, when superposed as a monogram, form a symbol exactly like the Swastika emblem. It may, therefore, like the *Trisûla*, be merely a monogram.

Whatever may be thought of my attempt to rationalize the Swastika mark, it seems to me perfectly clear (from an examination of hundreds of specimens, and after considering all that Maissey, Cunningham, Prinsep, Wilson, Burnouf, and Fergusson have said on the subject) that the *Trisûla* is the letter *Y*, monogramatically depicting the *Ye Dharmâ*; and that the *Chakra* symbolized the revolutions of birth and death, and the universality of the dominion of Buddha's religion. Such explanations are not only reasonable in themselves, and in precise accord with the ideas ascribed to Sakya Muni, but they fully account for the important positions accorded to these emblems in sculpture, and for their combination as the so-called *Tri-Ratna*, or their separation into individual symbols on coins, etc.

Although differing from Mr. Sewell in the powers I would ascribe to the symbols of Buddhism, I gladly recognize the value and research of Mr. Sewell's paper. The sincerity and modesty his paper exhibits lead me to think that he will welcome any suggestions tending to elucidate a subject in which he evidently takes deep interest.

ART. X.—*Description of the Noble Sanctuary at Jerusalem*
in 1470 A.D., by Kamâl (or Shams) ad Dîn as Suyûti.
 Extracts Re-translated by GUY LE STRANGE, M.R.A.S.

PRELIMINARY REMARKS.

‘Traduttore traditore.’—*Italian Proverb.*

AMONG the many useful works that have appeared under the auspices of ‘The Oriental Translation Fund of Great Britain and Ireland,’ none is perhaps more palpably open to criticism than the Rev. J. Reynolds’ *History of the Temple of Jerusalem*.¹ To judge from the translation, Mr. Reynolds had, to begin with, but a very imperfect knowledge of Arabic, and, in the second place, from the extraordinary blunders he makes, he can have put himself to no pains whatever to become acquainted, by means of plans, and the descriptions of modern travellers, with the localities of which the Arab author speaks. It is not my present purpose to re-edit and correct Mr. Reynolds’ work, for the book runs to some 556 pages, large 8vo., and it may safely be asserted that there is not a single one of his pages that would not require considerable alteration, to make it a tolerably exact rendering of his author’s text. Moreover, the pages of the Royal Asiatic Society’s *Journal* hardly afford room for so lengthy a work. I must therefore content myself with giving the headings of each of the seventeen chapters, and shall only translate such passages in the text as have seemed to me of most importance from an archæological or architectural point of view, and for throwing light on the vexed question of the sites of the Holy Places.

¹ The *History of the Temple of Jerusalem*, translated from the Arabic MS. of the Imâm Jalâl ad Dîn as Siûtî, with notes and dissertations by the Rev. J. Reynolds, B.A., etc. London, 1836.

It is necessary, however, before passing on to the book itself, to point out that Mr. Reynolds has made a first mistake in ascribing the work to the Imâm *Jalâl ad Dîn* as Suyûtî. *Jalâl ad Dîn* as Suyûtî is an extremely well known personage to any one who has turned over the pages of Sale's "Koran," and is principally known by his numberless exegetical works on the Kuran and the traditions, his "History of the Caliphs" (translated by H. S. Jarrett, 1881), with various dictionaries, etc., etc.; for, according to the catalogue he himself gives of his writings, their number exceeded 300, and they treat of every subject that came under the cognizance of the learned in Islâm. The details of *Jalâl ad Dîn* as Suyûtî's life are perfectly well known. He was born in A.H. 849 at Asiût, in Upper Egypt, and he died in A.H. 911 as a recluse in his garden on the Island of Roda above Cairo. With this most learned personage *Shams ad Dîn* as Sûyutî, the author of the book Mr. Reynolds took in hand, has only in common that both were born at Asiût. *Shams ad Dîn* as Suyûtî gives a full account of himself in the preface to the work which is now occupying us. The date of his birth is not given, but he states that after completing his education in the schools of Cairo, he set out on the Pilgrimage to the Holy Cities, and reached Mekka in A.H. 848 (A.D. 1444; that is to say, a year before *Jalâl ad Dîn*, the other Suyûtî, was born). After spending a year at Mekka, he became tired of the place and returned to Cairo. However, a year later he sets out with his household, and paying a flying visit to the Tomb of the Prophet at Medina, he proceeds on to Mekka once more, and takes up his quarters for the next nine years in the precincts of the Ka'abah.

In the beginning of A.H. 857 we find him back in Cairo, occupying a position of trust in the household of one of the nobles who attended the court of the Mamlûk Sultans. It had always been Suyûtî's wish to visit Jerusalem, and thus complete his acquaintance with the Holy Cities of Islâm; when, therefore, his patron was sent on a diplomatic mission to Aleppo, he agreed to accompany him, in the hopes that

from Aleppo they might return to Egypt, taking the Holy City on their way. Matters, however, fell out differently, and it was only many years later, in A.H. 874, when he again found himself at Damaseus, that he was able to carry out his long-deferred purpose of joining the caravan that was going south to Jerusalem; he reached the Holy City in the month of Ramadan of that same year (A.D. 1470). At Jerusalem he wrote the work which is the subject of the present paper, the title of which, *Ithâf al Akhissâ fi fadâil al Masjid al Aksâ*, may be rendered 'A Gift for Intimates concerning the Merits of the Aksâ Mosque.'

Although there is no manner of doubt as to our author's identity, his age, and the salient incidents of his biography, some confusion, it must be allowed, exists as to his precise name. One of the British Museum MSS.¹ calls him Shaikh Ibrahim, while in another² he is Muhammad as Suyûtî; and to render this matter still more puzzling, Hajji Khalfa, in his *Bibliographical Dictionary* (ed. by Fluegel, No. 42), gives the name of the author of the *Ithâf* as "Kamâl ad Dîn Muhammad ibn Abu Sharîf," while the title-page of one of the Paris MSS.³ calls him Al Minhâjî as Suyûtî. The point, however, is after all of no great importance, the notable fact being that our Suyûtî has nothing whatever to do with the great commentator Jalâl ad Dîn 'Abd ar Rahman as Suyûtî, who was only born a year after our author, already of man's estate, was making his pilgrimage to Mekka.

Turning now from the man to his work, which, as before noted, Suyûtî compiled during his sojourn in the Holy City, the MSS. all coincide in dividing it into seventeen chapters preceded by an introduction, in which the author recounts the main incidents of his life, and, in conclusion, notes the names of the books on which he has mainly depended for his materials. The most frequently quoted are the following:

¹ B.M. Add. 7326.

² Add. 7327.

³ Suppl. Arabe, 919. In the two other Paris MSS. (Arabe, 836, 838) he is called Kamâl ad Dîn Muhammad ibn Abi Sharîf.

I. Muthîr al Gharâm ilâ Ziyârat al Kuds wa ash Shâm (*The Exciter of Desire for Visitation of the Holy City and Syria*), by Jamâl ad Dîn Abu Mahmûd Ahmad al Makdisi (the Hierosolymite). Of this work I was happy to find three excellent MSS. in the collection of the Bibliothèque Nationale at Paris.¹ From the author's own statement in his preface, we learn that the Muthîr was written at Jerusalem in A.H. 752 (A.D. 1351). Of the writer's personal history all we know is that he was born in A.H. 714 (A.D. 1314), that he gave lectures in the Tenkezieh College at Jerusalem, and that he died at Cairo in A.H. 765 (A.D. 1364).²

On comparing the Muthîr with Suyûtî's work, I found that what were, to me, the most interesting portions of the latter, namely those relating to points of archæological, topographical, and historical interest, had been simply copied verbatim et literatim by Suyûtî (A.D. 1470) from the Muthîr (A.D. 1351), and further that Mujîr ad Dîn (whose description of Jerusalem was written in A.D. 1494) had to all appearance merely copied these same sections of the Muthîr from Suyûtî. The Muthîr, therefore, as the earliest authority I have come upon for many of the more remarkable accounts in Suyûtî, has seemed to me worthy of special attention, and as the MSS. of the Muthîr are rare, I have not hesitated to print the text of certain chapters or portions of chapters of the Muthîr which Suyûtî has taken. Before, however, passing on to other authorities quoted by Suyûtî, it may be worth while to give in briefest summary the contents of the Paris MSS. of the Muthîr. The work is divided into two parts.

¹ Anciens fonds, Nos. 716, 841, 842. I may here take occasion to express my grateful thanks to the authorities of the Bibliothèque Nationale, and to Monsieur Delisle, the Director, in particular, for the liberal manner in which, under a guarantee from our Embassy, he allowed me to borrow MSS. and carry them off to my own house for copying. I must also add my cordial acknowledgment of the favour extended to me by the Director of the Royal Library of Munich, who during the vacation, when the library is generally closed to the public, gave me free use of the many treasures that are stored on its shelves.

² Wüstenfeld, *Geschichtschreiber der Araber*, No. 425. Hajji Khalfa, No. 11372.

The first treats of the many excellences of Syria, the limits of the province, the origin of the name, the political division into districts, and is followed by a quotation of those verses of the Kurân which celebrate its praise. The second part treats of the many excellences of the Aksa Mosque and what pertains thereto, in particular and in general, from the date of its first foundation. An account is given of its building, and what may be found therein of wonders and remains of former days. It is from this portion of the work that I have printed the extracts relating to Omar's visit to the Noble Sanctuary, when it was yet covered by an enormous dung-hill of refuse thrown here by the Christians; also the chapter giving an account of the building of the Dome of the Rock by 'Abd al Malik, and the service for the same instituted by him. These accounts, as they now stand, date from A.D. 1350, fully six centuries from 'Abd al Malik's days, and over seven hundred years from those of Omar; also, I must confess, that they seem to me extremely apocryphal. The source from which they are derived is to me quite unknown. I have given the text as found in the Muthîr—which, as before noted, has been copied in turn by both Suyûti and Mujîr ad Dîn—it being the earliest version with which I am acquainted. The story of Omar's conquest and visit, and 'Abd al Malik's building of the Dome of the Rock, as given by the Muslim Annalists, from Tabari down to Ibn al Athîr, is confined to a simple statement of the facts, and is devoid of all the details which abound in the present text. Possibly in the Muthîr we have another specimen of the romantic history-books which Islâm produced during the age of the Crusade, and of which the pseudo-Wâkidi set so agreeable an example.¹ The Muthîr concludes by a section filled with short biographical notices of the various Prophets, Saints, Patriarchs, and following them the most notable of

¹ The Byzantine historian George Theophanes (died A.D. 818) is generally quoted as the authority for what may be called 'the Christian tradition' of the events of Omar's conquest. Is it possible that his work, translated into Arabic, may have been the source, direct or indirect, of the very circumstantial account furnished by the Muthîr, which agrees in many points with the narrative of Theophanes.

the Muslim worthies, who visited the Holy City. I may add that from this section Mujîr ad Dîn has also freely plagiarised, and most of the biographical notices found in his work are taken verbatim from the Muthîr.

II. A second work, also bearing the name of *Muthîr al Gharâm*, is bound up with the first Muthîr in the MSS. 716 and 842 of the Bibiothèque Nationale. It is the 'Muthîr al Gharâm li ziyârat al Khalîl,' The Exciter of Desire to the Visitation of (the city of) the Friend (of Allah, that is, Hebron). It was written by Abu'l Fidâ Ishâk al Khalîli (of Hebron), whose family had originally come from Tadmur (Palmyra), and hence Suyûtî, who states in his preface that this work is his chief authority for all that relates to Hebron and the Tombs of the Patriarchs, quotes him under the name of Tadmurî. He died in A.H. 833 (A.D. 1430). The account he gives of an alleged visit to the Sepulchres of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob in the Cave of Machpelah, is copied by both Suyûtî and Mujîr ad Dîn, and though legendary enough in its present form, is perhaps founded on fact. I have therefore thought it worth while to translate the account in full, more especially as Mr. Reynolds' version leaves much to be desired in point of accuracy.

III. An authority whose name occurs on every other of Suyûtî's pages is Ibn 'Asâkir. This is not the celebrated 'Ali ibn 'Asâkir who wrote the 'Chronicle of Damaseus,'¹ but his son Bahâ ad Dîn.² The latter spent most of his literary lifetime editing his father's works, and died in A.H. 600 (A.D. 1204) at Damaseus. His book 'On the Excellences of the Aksâ Mosque' (Kitâb al Uns fi fadâil al Kuds),³ which Suyûtî speaks of in his preface, and frequently quotes, contains, in collected form, the lectures which he gave in the Mosque at Jerusalem during the year 596 A.H. Unfortunately I have not been able to learn that any MSS. of this work exist in our libraries.

¹ Wüst. *op. cit.* No. 267.

² Wüst. No. 292.

³ See also Hajji Khalfa, No. 3964, for the Jâmi' al Mustaksâ, by the same.

Of other, but less important, books spoken of by Suyûtî in his preface as authorities from which he quotes, I shall need only to give the list of titles with the reference to the numbers of Hajji Khalfa's great Bibliographical Dictionary, and the pages of Professor Wüstenfeld's "*Geschichtschreiber der Araber*." In Mr. Reynolds' translation (pp. xiv-xx), the names of the authors and their works are unfortunately rendered in a way to be perfectly unintelligible; apparently the translator did not trouble even to write out the proper names correctly.

IV. 'Ar Raud al Mugharras fî fadâil Bait al Mukaddas' (*Hortus plantatus de prestantiis Hierosolymorum*), by Tâj ad Dîn 'Abd al Wahâb.¹

V. 'Abd ar Rahman ibn al Jauzî's Compendium called 'Fadâil al Kuds'—The Excellences of the Holy City.²

VI. Sibî ibn al Jausî's 'Mirât az Zamân' (Mirror of the Times).³

VII. Burhân ad Dîn al Farâzî, whose work 'Kitâb bâ'ith an Nufûs ilâ ziyârat al Kuds al Mahrûs' (*Liber animos ad Hierosolyma bene servata visitanda excitans*), is often quoted by Tâj ad Dîn 'Abd al Wahab above mentioned.

VIII. The work of Abu'l Ma'âli al Musharraf ibn al Murajâ, called 'The Excellences of the Holy City and of Syria' (Fadâil Kuds wa ash Shâm),⁴ Suyûtî also quotes very frequently.

IX. Badr ad Dîn Muhammad az Zarkashî, who wrote the 'Kitâb al Islâm as Sâjid' (*Institutio procumbentis*).⁵

X. And, lastly, the 'Juzw latif fî fadâil as Shâm wa Dimashk'—The Sweet Booklet on the Excellences of Syria and Damascus—by the Shaikh Abu'l Hasan 'Ali ibn Muhammad ibn Shuja' ar Rabi'î⁷ the Malikite. Suyûtî

¹ Wüst. op. cit., No. 431. Hajji Khalfa, No. 6599.

² Wüst. No. 287.

³ Wüst, No. 340. Hajji Khalfa, No. 11,723.

⁴ Hajji Khalfa, No. 1610.

⁵ Hajji Khalfa, No. 9139.

⁶ Hajji Khalfa, No. 939.

⁷ Hajji Khalfa, No. 952.

adds: "Of this work the Shaikh Burhân ad Dîn (No. VI.) has made an abridgment by leaving out the Isnâds" (or authorities).

Before passing on to the translation of Suyûtî's text, or rather of those passages which have appeared to me of interest archæologically, I must devote a few paragraphs to put my readers in mind of what is the technical signification in Arab writings of the word 'Masjid.'

In order to turn to our profit the Arab description of the Noble Sanctuary or Haram area of Jerusalem, it is necessary to remember that the term Masjid (whence, through the Spanish *Mezquita*, our word Mosque) denotes the *whole* of the sacred edifice, comprising the main building and the court, with its lateral arcades and minor chapels. The earliest specimen of the Arab mosque consisted of an open courtyard, within which, round its four walls, run colonades or cloisters to give shelter to the worshippers. On the side of the court towards the Kiblah (in the direction of Mekka), and facing which the worshipper must stand, the colonade, instead of being single, is, for the convenience of the increased numbers of the congregation, widened out to form the Jâmi' or place of assembly. Three rows of columns with the boundary wall will here form three transverse aisles. In the centre of the boundary wall on the Mekka side is set the great Mihrâb of the mosque, indicating the direction of the Kiblah; and in all descriptions of a mosque it is taken for granted that the visitor is facing the Kiblah, and is standing in the court (Sahn) of the mosque. Fronting him therefore is what is called the covered part (al Mughattâ) or the fore part (al Mukaddamah) of the mosque; while in his rear is the colonade against the wall of the courtyard, furthest from the Mekka side, and this is called the hinder part of the mosque (al Mu-âkhirah). Bearing these points in mind, and coming now to the Noble Sanctuary at Jerusalem, we must remember that the term 'Masjid' belongs not only to the Aksa mosque (more properly the Jâmi' or place of assembly for prayer), but to the whole enclosure with the Dome of the Rock in the middle, and all the other minor domes and

chapels. As M. de Vogüé has pointed out, the Domo of the Rock is not itself a mosque or place for public prayer, but merely the largest of the many cupolas in the court of the mosque, intended merely to cover and do honour to the Holy Rock which lies beneath it.

Great confusion is introduced into the Arab descriptions of the Noble Sanctuary by the loose manner in which they apply the terms *al Masjid* or *Masjid al Aksá*, *Jâmi'* or *Jâmi' al Aksá*. The late Professor Palmer laid down what is the rule with great clearness, and I cannot do better than quote his words, premising that in point of fact nothing but an intimate acquaintance with the locality described will prevent a translator ever and again misunderstanding the text he has before him, since the native authorities use the technical terms in an extraordinarily inexact manner, confounding the whole, and its part, under a single denomination. Professor Palmer writes¹: "When the *Masjid el Aksa* is mentioned, that name is usually supposed to refer to the well-known mosque on the south side of the Haram, but such is not really the case. The latter building is called *El Jâmi' el Aksa*, or simply *El Aksa*, and the substructures are called *El Aksa el Kadimeh* (the ancient *Aksa*), while the title *El Masjid el Aksa* is applied to the whole Sanctuary. The word *Jâmi'* is exactly equivalent in sense to the Greek *συναγωγή*, and is applied only to the church or building in which the worshippers congregate. *Masjid*, on the other hand, is a much more general term; it is derived from the verb *sejada* 'to adore,' and is applied to any spot the sacred character of which would especially incite the visitor to an act of devotion."

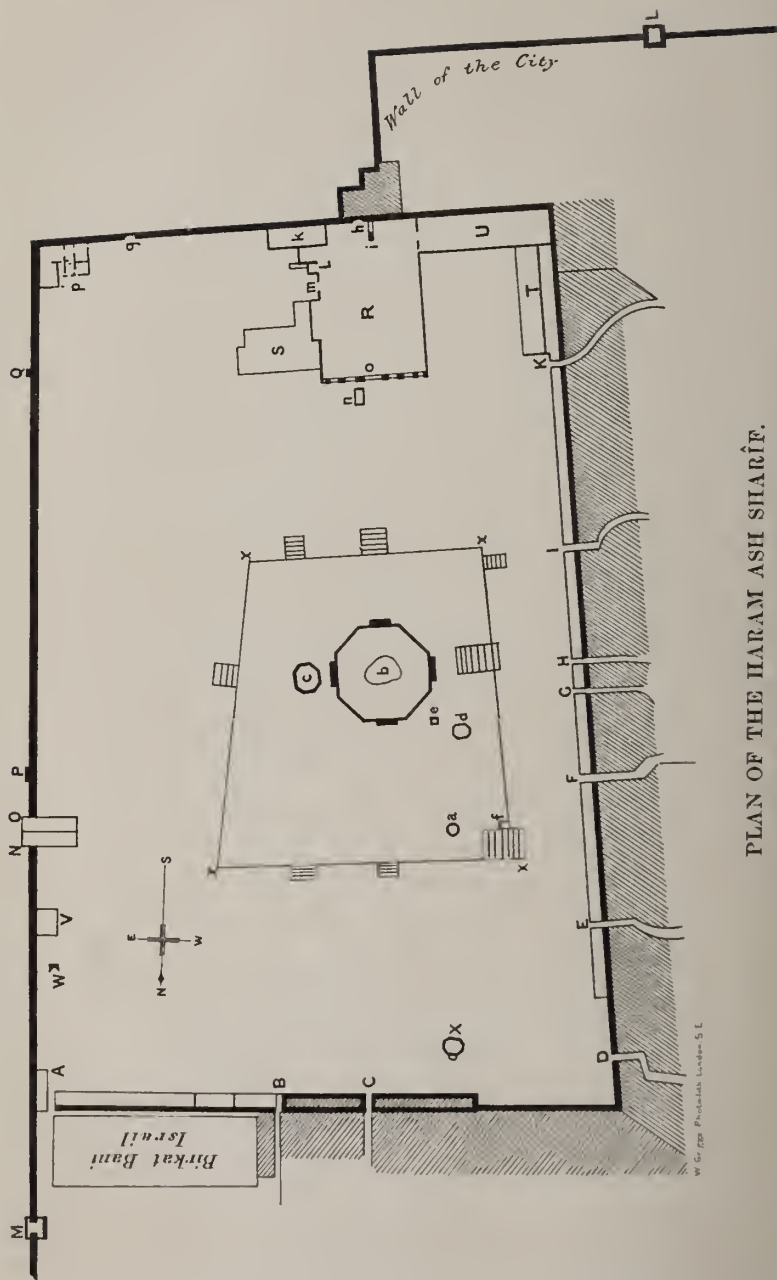
In the present texts, however, the word *Masjid* is so constantly used to denote not only the whole Haram area, but also the main building or covered part, the *Jâmi'* or *Aksa* Mosque proper, at its southern extremity, that I have thought it better to translate *al Masjid* by 'the Haram Area,' or 'the

¹ p. 84 of *Jerusalem, the City of Herod and Saladin*, by W. Besant and E. H. Palmer. London, 1871.

Noble Sanctuary,' in the one case, and by 'the Aksa Mosque' in the other, that the matter might be perfectly clear to European readers. It may at the same time be added that Muslim authorities speak in the same loose way of "the Rock," when they mean "*the Dome of the Rock*" (*Kubbat as Sakhrāh*), which covers the same; but this, after all, is only as we speak of the "Holy Sepulchre," meaning "the Church," which is built to cover it.

In concluding these preliminary remarks, which I regret have taken up more space than I had originally intended, I would add that I have given a few quotations from Mr. Reynolds' translation in my notes, from no motives of self-glorification, or invidious comparison, but only since I deemed it necessary to show cause for undertaking to re-translate the passages which it seemed to me were of greater importance. That my own new translation will be found incorrect and imperfect in many parts, by those who, being better scholars than I am, will take the trouble to examine the texts, is a matter on which I am under no illusion; but Mr. Reynolds' translation is too incorrect to stand unchallenged, and unfortunately many passages from his rendering of the misnamed 'Jalāl ad Dīn' have been quoted in standard works and books of reference, notably in M. de Vogüé's most excellent work, '*Le Temple de Jérusalem*,' and in the useful compilation called '*The Dictionary of Islām*' (Allen & Co.) written by Mr. Hughes. The late Professor Palmer was, I believe, one of the first to draw attention to the very incorrect nature of Mr. Reynolds' work, but how much this is the case readers may now judge of for themselves by looking through the quotations which I have given at the foot of many of the pages of my translation. After all, I fear that in so thorny a matter I had best quote, as applying to my own work, the proverb *Traduttore traditore*.

WÂDÎ JAHANNUM. VALLEY OF KEDRON OR JEIOSHAPHAT.



PLAN OF THE HARAM ASH SHARÎF.
AT JERUSALEM, WITH THE EXISTING BUILDINGS.
From the Pal. Expl. Fund Survey.

REFERENCES TO THE PLAN.¹

- A. Bâb al Asbât (Gate of the Tribes).
- B. Bâb Hittah (of Remission).
- C. Bâb Sharaf al Anbiyâ (of the Glory of the Prophets) or Ad Dawâdariyyah (of the Secretariat).
- D. Bâb al Ghawânimah.
- E. Bâb an Nâthir (of the Inspector) or of 'Alâ ad Dîn al Busirî.
- F. Bâb al Hadîd (of Iron).
- G. Bâb al Kattânîn (of the Cotton Merchants).
- H. Bâb al Mutawaddâ (of the Place for Ablution).
- I. Bâb as Silsilah (of the Chain) or as Sakinah (of the Shechinah).
- K. Bâb al Maghâribah or an Nabî (of the Mogrebins, or of the Prophet).
- L. City Gate, called Bâb al Maghâribah; and by the Franks the Dung Gate.
- M. City Gate, Bâb Sitti Maryam, and by the Franks the Gate of St. Stephen.
- N. Bâb at Taubah (of Repentance) } Golden Gate.
- O. Bâb ar Rahmah (of Mercy) }
- P. Bâb al Burâk or Al Janâiz (of the Funerals).
- Q. Pillar in the Wall, marking the place of the Bridge as Sirât.
- R. Jâmi' al Aksâ.
- S. Madrasah al Farsiyyah.
- T. Jâmi' al Maghâribah.
- U. Aksa al Kadimah (ancient Aksa).
- V. Kursi Sulaimân (Solomon's Throne).
- W. Makâm (Station of) Iliyâs or Khidr (Elias or St. George).
- X. Kursi 'Isâ (Throne of Jesus).
- x, x, x, x. Platform of the Rock.
- a. Kubbat al Alwâh (Dome of the Tablets).
- b. The Rock.
- c. Kubbat as Silsilah (D. of the Chain).
- d. Kubbat al Mirâj (of the Ascension).
- e. Kubbat Jibrail (Gabriel).
- f. Kubbat al Khidr (St. George).
- g. Mihrâb Daûd (David's Prayer-niche).
- h. Great Mihrâb of the Aksa Mosque.
- i. Mimbar (Pulpit).
- k. Jâmi' 'Omar.
- l. Mihrâb Zakariyyah (Prayer-niche of Zachariah).
- m. Eastern Door of Mosque.
- n. Well of the Leaves.
- o. Great Gate of the Mosque.
- p. Mahd 'Isâ (Cradle of Jesus).

¹ This represents the Haram Area as it exists at the present day; and is reduced from the Plan of the Ordnance Survey (Pal. Expl. Fund) and the work of M. de Vogüé.

CHAPTER I.

*On the names of the Mâsjid al Aksá, its excellences, the advantages of visitation thereunto and what may be noted thereon in general and in particular, in individual and in cases common to all.*¹

CHAPTER II.

*On the original foundation and beginning of the Masjid by David, and the building thereof by Solomon after the manner that was a wonder unto the world. Of the prayer that he prayed after the completion of the building for the sakes of all who should enter therein, and also of the place of his praying.*²

It is also related that Solomon³—God's prophet—when he had finished the building (of the Temple) sacrificed 3000 heifers and 7000 ewes at the place which is in the after (or northern) part of the Haram area, in the vicinity of the Bâb al Asbât (the Gate of the Tribes). This is the spot which now goes by the name of the Throne of Solomon.⁴

CHAPTER III.

*On the excellence of the noble Rock, and of the virtues that it possessed during the days of Solomon. Also the height of the dome that was built over the same in those days, and how the Rock is a portion of Paradise, and how on the day of Resurrection it will be turned into white coral, and the meaning of all this.*⁵

The place of the Noble Footprint⁶ may be seen at this day on a stone that is separate from the Rock, and opposite to it, on the further side, which is to the south-west. This stone is supported on a column. The Rock, at this present day, forms the walls enclosing the Cave (that is beneath it) on all sides, except only the part which lies to the south, where is the opening into the Cave; the Rock here does not come up to the south side of the Cave, for between the two is an open

¹ Reynolds, p. 1. These headings give a very exact summary of the contents of each chapter. If the reader will take the trouble to compare any one of the MSS. and my translation with the headings given by Mr. Reynolds, he will see how it was necessary even in this minor matter to do the work over again.

² Reynolds, p. 26.

³ Reynolds, p. 40.

⁴ See Plan, V.

⁵ Reynolds, p. 44.

⁶ Reynolds, p. 52.

space. From the entrance down into the Cave lead stone steps descending. On these stairs is a small shelf, near where the pilgrims stop to visit the Tongue of the Rock. At this spot is a marble column, the lower part of which rests on the south portion of the shelf aforesaid, while its upper part abuts against the Rock, as though to prevent its giving way towards the south,—or may be it is for some other purpose,—and the Rock that lies below supports it. The Place of the Angel's Fingers is on the western side of the Rock, and is distinct from the Place of the Noble Footstep mentioned above. It lies close to, and over against, the western gate of the Sakhrah (or Dome of the Rock).¹

CHAPTER IV.

On the excellence of prayer in the Holy City and its counting for double there. And whether or not this doubling of the effect of prayer extends to the obligatory prayers as well as to those of supererogation. Also whether this doubling of the effect would include good actions as well as bad. Also of the excellence of almsgiving, and of fasting in Jerusalem; and of the calling to prayer, and of watching there for the new moon of the months of the greater and the lesser Pilgrimage. Also the excellence of providing oil for the illumination of the Mâsjid, and how so doing may stand in the place of actual visitation thereunto for those to whom even intention so to do is an impossibility.²

¹ How Mr. Reynolds has translated this curious, though not very important, passage may be seen by those who care to refer to his pages. Suyûti's description corresponds exactly with what is shown at the present day. The "Foot-print" is that of the Prophet (in Crusading times it was called "Christ's Foot-print"), when he mounted the steed Al Burâk to ascend into heaven. The "Tongue" was given to the rock when it addressed the Khalif Omar in welcome; and the marks of the angel Gabriel's "Fingers" are those left when the Rock, wishing to accompany the Prophet to heaven, had to be pushed down and kept in its place. All this is of course only interesting as showing how early these legends took their rise.

² Reynolds, p. 54. As a specimen of how Mr. Reynolds does work, his version of the above heading may be quoted: *Upon the surpassing efficacy of Prayer in the Baitu-l-Mukaddas, and how it becomes double. Also upon the New Moon of Reduplication, when by prayer the Sacred Precept, and the merits of Works of Supererogation may be diffused to the public. Also the New Moon of Reduplication, when blessings and cursings may be communicated. Also the marvellous effect of pious donations, and fastings and listening to preaching therein. Also the New Moons of the Sacred Pilgrimage and the Sacred Visitation. Also the marvellous efficacy of supplying Oil for the Lamps, and how by this the rank and merit of pilgrimage may be made to exist for those who are unable to undertake the journey.*

CHAPTER V.

An account of the water which flows out from the foundation of the Rock, and how the same is a river of the rivers of Paradise, and how it is cut short in the midst of the Mâsjid on every side, whereby none may draw of this water except such as the heavens draw up—by His permission—to pour down again on the earth. And of the good of entering this place, and how he who prays there is answered, and how he who would enter thereto should proceed, and what prayers are to be avoided by him who prays over that place. Also an account of the Chain which hung there in early times, and the cause of its removal, and description of the Black Slab of rock which is over the Gate of Paradise, and how prayer thereon is answered, and the invocation of the prayer that brings aid.¹

CHAPTER VI.

Account of the night journey of the Prophet to the Holy City, and his ascension into Heaven therefrom. Concerning the excellence of the five prayers. Concerning the excellence of the Dome of the Ascension and of prayer therein; and in the Prayer Station of the Prophet and the excellence of the Dome over the same; and of the Prophet Muhammad's praying therein with former Prophets and Angels on the night of his Night Journey. And of the great worth of both these noble Domes and of prayer therein and of continual adoration there. Also of the great worthiness of almsgiving in the place wherefrom the Prophet ascended, and in his Prayer Station, and of the invocation of the prayer that brings aid.²

The³ Dome named the Dome of the Prophet is, as I understand it, the one which lies to the east of the Sakhrâh, being also called the Dome of the Chain.⁴ It was built by the Khalif 'Abd al Malik, as will be described later on. . . . Now⁵ I would point out that in the Haram area, beside the Dome of the Ascension, there are but two domes. One, a small dome, stands at the edge of the Sakhrâh terrace, on the right-hand side of the northernmost of

¹ Reynolds, p. 70.² Reynolds, p. 84.³ Reynolds, p. 91.⁴ Plan, c.⁵ Reynolds, p. 96.

the steps, leading up to the Sakhrâh terrace, from the west.¹ I think that at the present day this is in the hands of certain of the servants of the mosque, and is put to some use on their part; certainly no one in the Holy City considers that this is the Dome of the Prophet. The other dome stands back at the Gate of the Noble Sanctuary, on the northern side, near the Gate of the Glory of the Prophets,² called also the Bâb ad Dawâdâriyah. It is called the Dome of Sulaimân,—not after the Prophet Solomon,—but perhaps after the Khalif Sulaimân, the son of 'Abd al Malik. As to the Dome of the Ascension, it is, as everybody knows, on the Terrace of the Sakhrâh, and much visited by the pilgrims.³ Hence, therefore, it is likely that what Al Musharraf, and the author of the Mustaksâ, and of the Bâ'ith an Nufus⁴ refer to when speaking of the Dome of the Prophet is that now known as the Dome of the Chain, which was built by the Khalif 'Abd al Malik. Now as to the place where the Prophet prayed in the company of Prophets and Angels, it is said that the spot is beside the Dome of the Ascension where, on the Terrace of the Sakhrâh, there used to stand a beautiful Dome. When, however, they flagged the court (Sahn) of the Sakhrâh, they did away with this Dome, and set in its place a handsome Mihrâb,⁵ the floor of which is laid in a circle with red marble flags after the manner of other parts of the Sakhrâh Court. This, then, as it is said, in the place occupied by this Mihrâb, is where the Prophet made his prayer with the Angels and Prophets. He then advanced a step forward from that place, and there rose before him a ladder of gold and a ladder of silver, and thereby was the Ascent into Heaven, as will be found described elsewhere.

¹ At f. on the Plan.

² See Plan, C. and X. This Dome is now called Kursî 'Isâ, the Throne of Jesus.

³ Plan, d.

⁴ See above, p. 253, VII. and VIII.

⁵ Or Prayer Niche, showing the direction of Mekka. At e. of the Plan.

CHAPTER VII.

Account of the walls surrounding the Noble Sanctuary; and what is found within the same of Mihrâbs, that are objects of visitation and wherein prayer should be said: such as the Mihrâb Dâûd, and the Mihrâb Zakariyyâ and the Mihrâb Maryam—upon her be peace—and the Mihrâbs (of the Khalifs) Omar ibn al Khattâb and Mu'âwiyah. Also what pertains to the gates, and what is their number. Also an account of the stones that are at the gate of the Haram Area. Also the measurement of the Haram Area in its length and breadth, and the Tradition of the Leaves, and an account of the Wâdî Jahannum which lies beyond the wall on the eastern side thereof, and what is found therein. Also the dwellings of Al Khidr and of Iliyâs near that spot.¹

Now as regards the wall that surrounds the Noble Sanctuary of the Akṣa Mosque, and compasses it on all sides, verily its foundations were laid by David when he built the Temple. . . .

The Mihrâbs² worthy of visitation, which lie within the the Noble Sanctuary, are the following, and in them prayer should be said.

The Mihrâb Dâûd (of David).—There is diversity of opinion as to its identification. Some say it is the great Mihrâb,³ which is in the south wall of the Haram area; others, that it is the great Mihrâb in the neighbourhood of the Mimbar (or pulpit of the Akṣa mosque).⁴ The author of the work called 'al Fath al Kudṣî'⁵ asserts that the Mihrâb of David is in the castle (Hiṣn) of the Holy City, in the place where David stood to pray. For his dwelling being in the castle, there also was his place of worship. Now the Mihrâb, whereof mention, by Allah, is made in the Kurân in the words (xxxviii. 20), "When they mounted the wall of the

¹ Reynolds, p. 120.

² Reynolds, p. 122. A *Mihrâb* is a prayer niche: the mihrâb of a mosque is the special niche which indicates the direction of Mekka (the Kiblah), towards which the Muslim faces when saying his prayers. Besides the great mihrâb, there may be numerous other prayer niches, or chapels, in other parts of the sacred precincts, dedicated to the memory of individual saints and prophets, whose intercession is deemed of efficacy in the granting of prayers.

³ See Plan, q.

⁴ See Plan, i.

⁵ 'The Conquest of Jerusalem,' a name common to many works.

Mihrâb," is generally admitted to be the Mihrâb of David, where he prayed, and it was situated in the Castle, that being his place of worship; while the spot known as the great Mihrâb, which is inside the Haram area,¹ is looked upon as the place where he prayed when he came into the Haram. When Omar came thither, he followed in David's steps, and made his prayer in the place where David had prayed. Hence the place came to be called the Mihrâb of Omar, from the fact of his having prayed there, for the first time, on the day of the capitulation of Jerusalem; but originally it had been named the Mihrâb of David. In confirmation of this is the fact of Omar's veneration of this spot. For when he asked of Ka'ab,² "Which place wishest thou that we should institute as the place of our prayer in this Sacred Area?"—and Ka'ab had answered, "In the hinder part thereof, where it may be near the Sakhrâh, so that the two Kiblahs³ be united,"—Omar had said, "O Abu Ishâk, so thou wouldst act still in Jew fashion? Are we not the people to whom the fore part of the Holy Area belongs as of right?" Then Omar marked out the Mihrâb, which had been that of David, and where had been his place of worship in the Haram Area. Thus Omar's opinion, and his veneration for this spot, both confirm the view that David in ancient times

¹ At q or h.

² "Ka'ab al Ahbar (or al Hibr), surnamed Abu Ishâk ibn Mâni' al Himyari, was originally a Jew, and became a Muslim during the Caliphate of Abu Bakr (some say during that of Omar). He is a celebrated authority for traditions, and is noted as having been a very learned man. He died at Hims in A.H. 32." So says the author of the Muthir, who devotes a few lines to his biography when enumerating the eminent persons who visited or lived at Jerusalem. In point of fact, Ka'ab (like his co-religionist the celebrated Jew Wahb ibn Munabbih, who also embraced Islâm, both of them becoming the great authorities among the early Muslims in all matters of ancient history), was in time discovered to have been a great liar.

³ The two Kiblahs are the Kiblah of Moses, the Rock on which was placed the Ark of the Covenant, and the Muslim Kiblah, which is Mekka. In the early days of the Hijra, after the Prophet had fled to Medina, and for a time had thoughts of abandoning Mekka and its Kaaba, he directed his followers to pray facing in the direction of Jerusalem. The Kiblah of Islam had therefore been for seventeen months (*i.e.* down to Rajab A.H. 2) identical with that of the Jews. Had Omar accepted the suggestion of Ka'ab, and placed the mosque on the *northern* side of the Haram area, the Muslim Kiblah, which in Jerusalem points south, would in the mosque have faced the Rock, which thus would have been in front of the Muslim who was turning towards Mekka. As the Aksa Mosque now stands, those who pray there turn their back on the Rock.

had fixed on this place and had chosen the same as his place of prayer.

The Mihrâb of Zakariyyâ (Zacharias).—Most agree that it is that within the (Aḳṣâ) mosque in the aisle (riwâḳ), near the eastern door.¹

The Mihrâb of Maryam (Mary).—This is the place where she was wont to worship. It is now called the Cradle of Jesus (Mahd 'Isâ).² It is notorious how prayer offered up here is granted. . . .

The Mihrâb of Omar.—People differ as to which this may be. Some say it is the great Mihrâb, close to which now stands the Noble Pulpit (mimbar), and fronting the Great Gate, through which you enter the Aḳṣâ Mosque.³ Others say that it is the Mihrâb in the eastern aisle of the Aḳṣâ Mosque, being in the (south) wall of the mosque,⁴ seeing this said aisle with its adjacent parts is called the Jami' of Omar, and that this is the very place which he cleared of filth, he and those who were with him of the Companions, and swept clean before they prayed thereon. Whence it is called the Jami' of Omar. Most, however, are of the opinion before mentioned, namely, that the Mihrâb of Omar is the great Mihrâb near the Mimbar (Pulpit). Further mention of all this and explanation will be given later on, in Chapter IX., relating the conquest of the Holy City, and Omar's entry therein on the day of the capitulation.

The Mihrâb of Mu'âwiyah.—This is said to be the beautiful Mihrâb, which is, at the present time, enclosed within the Maksûrah (the part railed off) for the preacher of the Khutbah (or Friday sermon).⁵ Between it and the great Mihrâb comes the beautiful pulpit aforementioned.

Within the Aksa Mosque, and also without the same in

¹ In the Muslim legend "Zacharias, the son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar" (Math. xxiv. 35), and Zachariah, the son of Jehoiada, the priest who was "stoned with stones at the commandment of the king in the court of the house of the Lord" (II. Chron. xxiv. 22), and Zacharias, the father of John the Baptist, are all one. The Mihrâb Zakariyyâ is still pointed out at l. on the Plan.

² See Plan, p.

³ See Plan, h.

⁴ See Plan, k.

⁵ That is to the west of i. on the Plan.

the Haram Area, but still within the boundary-wall, are many other Mihrâbs. These have been erected by people of various ranks, to mark venerated spots. As, for example, where a certain person may have seen in his dream that one of the Prophets had made his prayer, or where perchance some one of the Saints had appeared. All these are worthy of visit. Among them is the spot eleft by the angel Gabriel, and where he tied up the steed Al Burâk. It lies outside the Bâb an Nabî (the Prophet's Gate).¹ . . . There are, too, the stones which lie in the after (or northern) part of the Haram Area, in the neighbourhood of the Bâb al Asbât (the Gate of the Tribes); and near these is the place called Solomon's Throne, where he prayed when he had brought to completion the building of the Temple—as has been described in a former chapter²—and Allah there was wont to grant his prayers. Verily it is very worthy to make visitation of all these Mihrâbs and places.

Now as regards the gates in the walls of the Noble Sanctuary.

The *Bâb ar Rahmah* (the Gate of Mercy).—This lies to the east of the Aksa Mosque, and is in the wall of which Allah has made mention in the words³—"But between them (the Hypocrites and the Believers on the judgment day) shall be set a wall with a gateway, within which shall be the Mercy, and in front, without it, the Torment." The valley which lies beyond this gate is the Wâdî Jahannum.⁴ The Gate of Mercy itself is inside the wall which encloses the Haram Area;⁵ and the gate referred to in the above verse of the Kuran, as on the Wâdî Jahannum, is now closed,⁶ and will only be opened at some future time and by the will of Allah—be He exalted.

¹ Plan, K.

² Plan, V, and see above, p. 253, Chapter II.

³ Kurân lvii. 13.

⁴ The Muslim Wâdî Jahannum is not the Jewish Valley of Hinnon, or Gehenna, for that is the valley to the south-east of Jerusalem, which the Arabs call Wâdî ar Rabâbî. The Wâdî Jahannum is the Kêdron or Valley of Jehoshaphat, and according to Muslim tradition will be the place of the Last Judgment. This agrees with the Jewish traditions about the Valley of Jehoshaphat derived from Joel iii. 2.

⁵ Plan, O.

⁶ Plan, P.

And as to *Bab at Taubah* (the Gate of Repentance), it joins and makes one with the Gate of Mercy,¹ but through neither of them at the present day do men pass. Near the Gate of Repentance, and thus between the Gate of Mercy and the Gate of the Tribes, is the House (Maskin) of Al Khidr and Ilyâs.² . . .

Bab al Asbât (the Gate of the Tribes) is in the hinder (or northern) part of the Haram Area, not far from the House of Al Khidr and Ilyâs. In the work called *Faḍâil Bait al Mukaddas* (The Excellences of the Holy City) by the Hâfid Abu Bakr al Wâsiti, the Khatîb, there is mention made of the Bâb Maskin al Khidr (the Gate of Al Khidr's House), as standing here, but the author of the *Muthîr al Gharâm* gives no indication of any such gate having existed, although he mentions the House of Al Khidr when enumerating the saints who entered and dwelt in the Holy City. The author of the *Kitâb al Uns*, on the authority of Shahr ibn Jaushab, states that the House of Al Khidr is in the Holy City at a spot between the Gate of Mercy and the Gate of the Tribes; and he continues that Al Khidr was wont to pray every Friday in five different mosques, namely, in the Mosque of Mekka, and the Mosque of Medina, and the Mosque of Jerusalem, and the Mosque of Kûbâ, and on every Friday night in the Mosque of Sinai.³ . . .

¹ The two Gates of Mercy and Repentance together form the great tower in the east wall of the Haram Area, generally known as the Golden Gate (Plan, N. and O.). According to M. de Vogüé (*Le Temple de Jérusalem*, p. 68), the architecture of this building shows it to date from Byzantine times only, in fact probably as late as the sixth century A.D. The denomination of the Golden Gate does not occur apparently before the thirteenth century (Sæwulf), and the name *Porta Aurea* is due to a misunderstanding by mediæval pilgrims whose knowledge of Greek was rudimentary of *Θύρα ὡραία*, the gate called "Beautiful," mentioned in Acts iii. 2, as the spot where St. Peter healed the lame man. The site of this miracle, which must in point of fact have taken place at one of the inner gates of the Temple, the early pilgrims and the Crusaders, proceeding in their usual arbitrary manner, saw fit to locate at this Byzantine structure.

² St. George and Elias. Plan, W.

³ Kûbâ is the name of a village two miles distant from Medina, on the road towards Mecca, where there is a mosque celebrated as being the first in Islâm to have been called *Masjid at Takwâ*, the *Mosque of Piety*. Reynolds (p. 127) translates "and the Mosque of Kissa (near Larissa) and the Mosque of Tyre." Kissa is certainly a false reading, all the MSS. giving *Kubâ*, and though *Masjid at Tûr* may be taken to mean either the Mosque of Sinai or the Mosque of Kefr Tûr, the village crowning the Mount of Olives, 'Tûr' is certainly *not* 'Tyre,' which is called 'Sûr' by the Arabs.

*Bâb Hittah*¹ (the Gate of Remission), so called because the Children of Israel were directed to enter their House of Prayer thereby, saying, 'Remission, O Lord, for our sins.' . . . The following is given on the authority of 'Ali ibn Sallâm ibn 'Abd as Sallâm,—who was told by his father that he had heard Abu Muhammad ibn 'Abd as Sallâm state as follows, namely, that the brazen gate (al bâb an nahâs), which is in the (Akṣa) Mosque, is the Bâb al Hamal al Ausat (the middle Ram Gate), and is of the workmanship of the Chosroes; and that the brazen gate which closes the (main) gateway² of the Haram Area is the Gate of David through which he was wont to go from Sion to Solomon's Market Place; while the gate of the gateway known as the Bâb Hittah (Gate of Remission) was formerly at Jericho, which city having come to ruin, the gate was transported thence to the Noble Sanctuary. . . .

*Bab Sharaf al Anbiyâ*³ (the Gate of the Glory of the Prophets) is that now called Bâb ad Dawîdâriyyah.⁴ It opens from the northern side of the Haram Area.

Bâb al Ghawânimah (the Gate of the men of the family of Ghânim),⁵ is that adjoining the Lieutenant's Palace (the Dâr an Niyâbah). It is the first (or northernmost) on the western side of the Haram Area. Anciently, it is said, this gate was called Bâb al Khalîl (the Gate of Abraham).

Bab an Nâthîr (the Gate of the Inspector).⁶—This is a gate that is said never to have been restored. Anciently it was called Bâb Mikâil (the Gate of Michael), and according to report it is the gate to which Gabriel tied the steed Al Burâḳ on the occasion of the night journey.⁷

¹ Reynolds, p. 132. Plan, B.

² Plan, I?

³ Reynolds, p. 134.

⁴ Plan, C. The Dawîdâriyyah is the house of the Dawîdâr, or Secretary, a Persian word meaning literally 'He who carries the inkstand.'

⁵ Plan, D. Descendants of Shaikh Ghânim ibn 'Ali, who was born near Nablûs in A.H. 562 (A.D. 1167), and died in A.H. 632 at Damascus. Saladin made him chief of the Khânkah Salâhiyyah, the Derwish house founded by him at Jerusalem.

⁶ Plan, E.

⁷ See, however, above, p. 265.

Bâb al Hadîd (the Iron Gate).¹—This is one that has been restored. Anciently it was called after Arghûn al Kâmilî,² who founded the Madrasah (College) of the Arghûniyyah, which lies on the left hand as you go out through it.

Bâb al Kaṭṭânîn (the Gate of the Cotton Merchants).³—It is one of those that has been restored. Al Malik an Nâsir ibn Kalâûn was the prince who first built it, but it afterwards fell into complete ruin and disuse. When the late Nâib (Lieutenant) of Syria, Tankiz an Nâsiri,⁴ built the Colonnade (riwâk) which runs all along the western wall of the Noble Sanctuary, and the Sûk al Kaṭṭânîn (the Cotton Market), he rebuilt at the same time this gate with the high portal seen here at the present day.

Bâb as Sikkâyah (the Gate of the Reservoir).⁵—It is said to be an ancient gate, but it had come to be destroyed. When the late 'Alâ ad dîn Al Buṣîrî constructed the Tank of Absolution, which he gave the people, he rebuilt too this gate. May it not be allowed to fall again into ruin !

Bâb as Sakînah (the Gate of the Shechinah or Divine Presence).—This lies near the Gate of the Madrasah (College), called Al Baladiyyah;⁶ and close by it also is the Southern Minaret. The royal College, called Al Madrasah al Ashrafiyyah,⁷ lies to the north of it.

Bâb as Silsilah (the Gate of the Chain) and the *Bâb as Sakînah* are side by side.⁸ The *Bâb as Silsilah* was anciently called the *Bâb Dâûd* (David's Gate).

¹ Plan, F.

² Arghûn al Kâmilî was Lieutenant of Syria. He died in A.H. 758 (A.D. 1357).

³ Plan, G.

⁴ Tankiz al Hisâmi or an Nâsiri was Lieutenant of Syria under An Nâsir Muḥammad ibn Kalâûn, Mamlûk Sultan of Egypt. Tankiz died in A.H. 741 (A.D. 1340).

⁵ Plan, II ?

⁶ The Madrasah al Baladiyyah was founded by the Amir Mankali Bughâ al Almadi, Governor of Aleppo. He died in A.H. 782 (A.D. 1380).

⁷ The Madrasah Ashrafiyyah was founded by the Mamlûk Sultân Kait Bey in A.H. 885 (A.D. 1491). It stood apparently within the wall of the Haram Area.

⁸ *Muttahidân*, some MSS. may read *Mustajiddân*, which would mean 'restored.' It would appear, however, that the first is the better reading, and that the two portals, that of the Chain and that of the Shechinah, were so close to one another as to form but a single gateway; as is the case at the present day at I. in the Plan.

Bâb al Maghâribeh (the Gate of the Mogrebins or Westerns).¹—So called from its being in the neighbourhood of the gate of the Mosque of the Mogrebins,² where they have their prayers. And the quarter named from this gate lies at the south-eastern corner of the Haram Area. This gate is also called *Bâb an Nabî* (the Gate of the Prophet).³

Now as to what has been said on the subject of the Noble Sanctuary, and its length and its breadth, the author of the *Muthîr al Gharâm* has devoted thereto one of his chapters, giving therein all that is known as to what the Khalif 'Abd al Mâlik and others built in the Haram Area, and the same is his seventh chapter.⁴ 'It is stated by Ibn 'Asâkir that the length of the Haram Area is 755 ells (*dhirâ'*), and its breadth 465 ells, the ell being the royal ell (*dhirâ' al Malik*).⁵ And,' continues the author of the *Muthîr al Gharâm*, 'so also writes Abu'l Ma'âlî al Musharraf⁶ in his book. Now I myself, in old times, have seen in the northern wall of the Haram Area, above the gateway⁷ which adjoins the Dawîdâriyyah, and on the inner side of the wall, a slab on which was inscribed the length and the breadth of the Haram Area, and it differed from what these two have stated. And what was inscribed on it

¹ Plan, K.

² Plan, T.

³ These paragraphs, showing how the gates of the Noble Sanctuary stood in the middle of the fifteenth century A.D., are not without interest, and Surûfî's account has been copied by subsequent compilers; as, for instance, Mujîr ad Dîn. To show how little Mr. Reynolds' translation can be relied on, I copy his version of the foregoing paragraphs (p. 134): "The Gate of the Glorious Prophets is now called the Gate al Dawidârî (the Gate of the Templars); it is on the western side, but itself is in a northern direction. The Gate of the Sheep is west of the Gate of the Guard, on the front side of the Mosque. This gate is called the Antechapel of Abraham. The Gate of the Conqueror is said to be the same as the Gate of the Jealousy-search; it is now called Angel's Gate, because Gabriel is said to have bound Al Burâk there." And in a note to this farrago of nonsense he adds: "Several gates are enumerated in the original, which, as possessing no interest, are omitted."

⁴ The text of this chapter of the *Muthîr* is given in extenso, p. 303.

⁵ The *Dhirâ'* al Mâlik, the royal ell or cubit, differs from the *Dhirâ'* al 'Amm or common ell, in that the latter contains six *Kabdah* (or fists), while the royal ell contains seven. The royal ell was instituted by one of the ancient Chosroes of Persia (Lane, s.v. *Dhirâ'*).

⁶ See p. 253.

⁷ Plan, at C.

was: length 784 ells, breadth 455 ells.' The author of the Muthîr continues: 'it gives in the inscription the indication of the ell used, but I am not sure whether this is the ell mentioned above (*i.e.* the royal ell) or some other, for the inscription has become indistinct.' The author of the Muthîr further states that 'the Haram Area was measured in his days with a rope, and that along the eastern wall it measured 683 ells, and along the western wall 650 ells, while in the breadth (*i.e.* along the northern and the southern walls) it measured 438 ells. These measurements being exclusive of the width of the outer walls.' So ends the account of the author of the Muthîr.¹

Now as to the Tradition about the Leaves (of Paradise), there are many and various accounts thereof. In the first place from Abu Bakr ibn Abi Maryam, through 'Utayyah ibn Kais, comes the tradition that the Prophet said, "Verily a man from among my people shall enter Paradise, walking upon his two feet (and come back again), and yet shall live."

¹ The text of this passage from the Paris MSS. of the Muthîr will be found on p. 305. Reynolds (p. 134), has given us a translation that reads nonsense. The identical slab, with the inscription mentioned by the author of the Muthîr, was discovered by Mons. Clermont-Ganneau in 1874, in the north wall of the Haram Area. Part of the inscription, however (as noted also by our author), has become damaged. It runs as follows: "In the name of Allah the Compassionate, the Merciful; the length of the Masjid is seven hundred and four and . . . ty ells, and its breadth four hundred and five-and-fifty ells, the ell being the ell of . . ." According to Mons. Ganneau's view, the space for the word representing the tens in the enumeration of the length, will only allow of the word being either 'eighty' or 'thirty.' The Persian traveller, Nâsir-i-Khusrau, who visited Jerusalem in A.H. 438 (A.D. 1047), states that he saw the inscription and read it thus, "length 704 gez, breadth 455; the gez (ell = dhîrâ') being the royal gez." Ali of Herât, who wrote about the year A.D. 1200, read the numbers of the inscription as "700 and 455." The earliest notice of this measurement, however, that I have met with in Arab writers is that given in the work of the Spanish traveller, Ibn 'Abd Rabbih (who died in A.H. 328 = A.D. 940). Without any mention of the inscription on the slab, he states the length and breadth of the Haram Area to be respectively 784 and 455 ells, the ell used being the *Imâm* ell. Thus in his figures he agrees with the author of the Muthîr; and his 'Imâm' ell, which is probably that of the Imâm Ali, is possibly the same as the Malik or royal ell. Lastly, and without any reference to Mons. C. Ganneau's discovery, Mons. Schefer, on the authority of M. Abrie Chancelier du Consulat de France à Jerusalem (p. 72 of his edition of Nâsir-i-Khusrau's Travels), states that on the stone which may still be seen in the northern wall of the Haram Area, may be read quite clearly, "length 750 ells, breadth 455 ells, of the royal ell." Mons. Ganneau, however, is of opinion, that whatever else it be, the designation of the 'ell' in the inscription cannot be read, as the word 'al Malik' or royal, on account of the space and also of the number of strokes, yet distinguishable. So much then is the diversity of opinion, ancient and modern, about this very simple matter.

Now during the Caliphate of Omar a caravan of men arrived at the Holy City to make their prayers there. And one of them, a man of the Bani Tamîm, named Shuraik ibn Habâshah, went off to get water (from the well). And his bucket falling down into the well, he descended to get it up. In the well he found a door opening into gardens, and passing through the door into the gardens, he walked therein. Then he plucked a leaf from one of the trees, and placing it behind his ear, he returned to the well and mounted up again. And the man went to the Governor of the Holy City and related to him of what he had seen in these gardens, and how he had come to enter therein. So the Governor sent men with him to the well and they descended, many people accompanying them, but they found not the door, neither did they attain to the gardens. And the Governor wrote to the Caliph Omar concerning it all, recalling how it was reported on tradition that one of the people of Islâm should enter the Garden of Paradise and walk therein on his two feet and yet live. Omar wrote in answer: "Look ye to the leaf; whether it be green and do not wither. If this be so, verily it is a leaf of Paradise, for naught of Paradise can wither or change; and it is recorded in the aforesaid Tradition of the Prophet that the leaf shall not suffer change."

Another version of the tradition runs as follows: Shuraik ibn Habâshah al Tamîmî came into the Holy City to get water for his companions, and his bucket slipped from his hand, so he descended (into the well) to fetch it up. And a person called to him in the well saying, "Come thou with me," and, taking him by the hand, he brought him into the Garden of Paradise. Shuraik plucked two leaves, and the person then brought him back to where he had first found him. Then Shuraik mounted up out of the well, and when he rejoined his companions, he told them of all that had happened. The affair reached the ears of the Caliph Omar, and it was Ka'ab who remarked how it had been said (by the Prophet) *A man of this people of Islâm shall enter the Garden of Paradise and yet live*, adding, "Look ye to the

leaves; if they suffer change, then are they not of the leaves of Paradise, and if they change not, then must they verily be of the leaves of Paradise." And 'Utayyah asserts that the said leaves never after did suffer change.

According to another tradition (coming from Al Walid), Abu-n-Najm, who was Imâm (leader of prayer) to the people of Salamiyyah (Salaminias), and their Muezzin in the year 140, and died in the year 150, related that the people of Salamiyyah, many of whom were of the desert tribes, told him how they had themselves been well acquainted with Shuraik ibn Habâshah when he was living at Salamiyyah. And they were wont to inquire of him concerning his entrance into the Garden of Paradise, and what he saw therein, and of how he had brought leaves therefrom. And these people continued: We inquired further whether there yet remained by him any one of the leaves which he had plucked there; and when he answered us affirmatively, we asked to see the leaf, and the man called for his Kurân, and took from between its pages a leaf that was entirely green and gave it into our hands. When we had returned it to him, after laying it over his eyes, he placed it back again between the pages of his Kurân. And when he was at the point of death, he enjoined that we should put this leaf on his breast under the shroud, and his last words were to conjure us that this should exactly be done. Al Walid continues: I inquired of Abu-n-Najm whether he had heard a description given of the leaf; he replied 'yes, that it was like the leaf of a peach tree (*Durâkin*), of the size of the palm of a hand, and pointed at the tip . . .'¹ Now the mouth of the Well of the Leaf is by the Aksa Mosque, on the left hand as you enter by the door facing the Mihrâb.²

¹ Many other similar accounts of the same tradition follow, for a mass of legendary story has gathered round all that relates to the great water tanks excavated in the rock which underlies the Haram Area.

² Plan, n. I quote the last sentence as translated by Mr. Reynolds (p. 138), as a specimen of his method: "This well of the Leaves is situated at the entrance of the Mosque al Aksa, on the left of the gate of the courtyard of the towers." Mr. Reynolds always translates *Mihrâb* by "Tower."

CHAPTER VIII.

Account of the Spring of Silwân (Siloam) and of the other spring that was near thereto, and the Well which is called after our lord Job, and concerning the Pools. Also an account of the wonderful events which have taken place in the Holy City, and of what happened there at the time of the murder of 'Ali ibn Abu Tâlib and his son Al Husain, and of him who said that it was a place of refuge, and how he yearned for the people thereof. Also a description of the Talisman against serpents. Also the Mount of Olives, and the Plain called As Sâhirah, and the Holy Mountains, with an account of Jabal Kâsiyân in particular, and what is to be met with there.¹

. . .² The author of the *Kitab al Uns* gives the following account of the Well (Bir) which goes by the name of the Prophet Job;—‘I have read a paper in the handwriting of my cousin Abu Muhammad al Kâsim,—who gave me permission to make use thereof—which states that he read in a certain book of history how once the water ran scarce among the people of the Holy City, and in their need they went to a well in the neighbourhood, which they descended to a depth of eighty ells. At its mouth the well was ten or more ells, by four ells across, and its sides were lined with masonry of large stones, some of which might measure even five ells, but most of those in the depth of the well were one or two ells only in length. A wonder was it how these stones had been set in their places. The water of the well was cold and wholesome to drink, and the people used thereof during all that year, getting it at a depth of eighty ells. But when the winter was come, the water rose abundantly in the well, till it overflowed the brink, and ran over the ground in the bed of the Wâdî, and turned mills for grinding flour. Now once (says Abu Muhammad), when there was scarcity of this water and of that in the 'Ain Silwân, I descended with some workmen to the bottom of the

¹ Reynolds, p. 139. The chapter opens with an account of the various traditions connecting the Virgin Mary with the 'Ain Silwân.

² Reynolds, p. 141, and see above, p. 252.

well to dig there, and I saw the water flowing out from under a rock the size of which was a couple of ells by the like in height, and there was a cavern the entrance of which was three ells high by an ell and a half across. From this cavern there rushed out an extremely cold wind, which made the lights nearly go out, and I perceived that the roof of the cavern was lined with masonry. On entering a short distance within it, the torches could not be kept alight by reason of the force of the wind which blew therefrom. This well is in the bed of the Wâdî, and the cave is in its bed too, and above and all around are high steep hills, which a man cannot climb except with much fatigue. This also is the well of which He spake to His prophet Job, saying, “‘Stamp,’ said we, ‘with thy foot. This (fountain) is to wash with; cool and to drink.’”¹ And so the account ends. . . .

Regarding now the pools that are in the Holy City.² On the report of Damrah from Ibn Abi Sûdah, it is related that a certain king of the Kings of the Children of Israel named Hazkîl (Hezekiah) constructed six pools for the Holy City, namely, three within the city which are the Birkat Bani Israîl, the Birkat Sulaimân, and the Birkat 'Iyâd; and three without the city which are the Birkat Mâmilâ and the two Birkats of Al Marjî'. And these he made to store the water for the people of the city.³

¹ Kurân xxxviii. 41. The overflowing of the waters of Job's Well, down the Kedron Valley, is of yearly occurrence. Whether this Well be the Fuller's Spring, En Rogel,—mentioned by Joshua (xi. 7) as on the boundary-line between the Tribes of Judah and Benjamin,—is still a matter of dispute. Robinson (*Biblical Researches*, 2nd ed. i. 332) asserts this to be the case without doubt; while Conder (*Handbook to the Bible*, p. 335) advocates the identification of En Rogel with Virgin's Fountains, higher up the Valley under the walls of Jerusalem.

² Reynolds, p. 145.

³ The Birkat (Pool) of the Children of Israel lies to the north of the Haram Area. Which the Birkat of Solomon may be, is matter of question, as also is the identification of the Pool of 'Iyâd. This last takes its name from 'Iyâd ibn Ghanam, a celebrated Companion of the Prophet (who died in A.H. 20 = A.D. 641), and has nothing to do with “Gad,” as writes Mr. Reynolds (p. 145). The Pool of Mamilla lies a short distance west of the Jaffa Gate of Jerusalem. The Pools of Al Marjî' are those known as Solomon's Pools, some miles from Hebron; from these Pilate's Aqueduct brought the water to the city.

CHAPTER IX.

*Account of the Conquest of the Holy City by the Commander of the Faithful 'Omar ibn al Khattáb, and what he did there in uncovering the Noble Rock from the dirt and dung thrown thereon. An account also of 'Abd al Malik ibn Marwán's building, and what he accomplished there. Also an account of the unique pearl that was hung over the middle of the Rock, and the two horns of Abraham's ram, and the crown of the Chosroes, all of which were transported thence to the Noble Kā'abah, at the time when the Caliphate passed to the House of 'Abbas. Also an account of the Conquest of the Holy City by the Franks, whereby it was taken from the hands of the Muslims, after 'Omar's Conquest; and how long it remained in the hands of the Christians. Further, the account of the Conquest thereof by the Sultan, the victorious king, Salāh ad Dīn Yūsūf ibn Ayyūb, whereby it was taken back out of the hands of the Franks, and how he obliterated all trace of their sojourn there, and how he restored the Masjid to what it had been before, and to the condition in which it has remained even unto this day, and please Allah will so remain to the Day of Resurrection.*¹

. . . ² The following is related as coming from Shadād ibn Aus, who accompanied Omar when he entered the Noble Sanctuary of the Holy City on the day when Allah caused it to be reduced by capitulation. And Omar entered by the Gate of Muhammad,³ crawling on his hands and knees, he and all those who were with him, until he came up to the Court (of the Sanctuary). There he looked around to right

¹ Reynolds, p. 154.

² Reynolds, p. 174. Suyûti has copied the whole of this part verbatim out of the Muthir, the text of which, from the Paris MSS., will be found on p. 297. From what sources this very curious account of Omar's proceedings in the Holy City was taken, I am unable to state. But I must repeat that there is nothing of all this in the works of the older annalists, from Tabari to Ibn al Athir. The greater portion of this chapter has already been given in English by the late Professor Palmer in the fourth chapter of his and Mr. Besant's joint work on "Jerusalem—the City of Herod and Saladin." I make no apology, however, for giving it again, for I am able to supply a better text than that on which Professor Palmer worked. Extracts from Suyûti's text, with a Latin version, had previously appeared, edited by P. Lemming, under the title *Commentatio philologica. Specimen libri Ithāf etc., auctore Kemāloddīno Muhammede etc. Havnæ M.D.CCCXVII.*

³ Plan, K.

and to left, and, glorifying Allah, said, "By Allah, verily this, by Him in whose hands is my soul! must be the Mosque of David, of which the Apostle spake to us saying, 'I was conducted thither in the night journey.'" Then Omar advanced to the fore (or southern) part of the Haram Area and to the western side thereof, and said, "Let us make this the place for the Mosque."

On the authority of Al Walîd ibn Muslim,¹ it is reported as coming from a Shaikh of the sons of Shadâd ibn Aus, who had heard it from his father, who held it of his grandfather, that Omar, as soon as he was at leisure from the writing of the Treaty of Capitulation made between him and the people of the Holy City, said to the Patriarch of Jerusalem, "Conduct us to the Mosque of David." And the Patriarch agreed thereto. Then Omar went forth girt with his sword, and with him 4000 of the Companions who had come to Jerusalem with him, all begirt likewise with their swords, and a crowd of us Arabs, who had come up to the Holy City, followed them, none of us bearing any weapons except our swords. And the Patriarch walked before Omar among the Companions, and we all behind the Khalif. Thus we entered the Holy City. And the Patriarch took us to the Church which goes by the name of the Kumâmah,² and said he, "This is David's Mosque." And Omar looked around and pondered, then he answered the Patriarch, "Thou liest, for the Apostle described to me the Mosque of David, and by his description this is not it." Then the Patriarch went on with us to a Church called that of (Sihyûn) Sion, and again he said, "This is the Mosque of David." But the Khalif replied to him, "Thou liest." So the Patriarch went on with him till he came to the Noble Sanctuary of the Holy City, and reached the gate thereof, called the Gate of Muhammad. Now the dung which was

¹ Al Walîd ibn Muslim, the celebrated traditionist, was a freedman of the Omeyyads, and a native of Damascus. According to Nawâwi (ed. by Wüstenfeld, text, p. 618), he died in A.H. 194 or 195, aged 73.

² Al Kumâmah, literally, 'the Dughill.' This is a designed corruption on the part of the Muslims of 'Al Kayâmah,' 'Anastasis,' the name given to the Church of the Resurrection (the Holy Sepulchre) by the Christian Arabs.

then all about the Noble Sanctuary had settled on the steps of this gate, so that it even came out into the street in which the gate opened, and it had accumulated so greatly on the steps as almost to reach up to the ceiling of the gateway. The Patriarch said to Omar, "It is impossible to proceed and enter except crawling on hands and knees." Said Omar, "Even on hands and knees be it." So the Patriarch went down on hands and knees, preceding Omar, and we all crawled after him, until he had brought us out into the Court of the Noble Sanctuary of the Holy City. Then we arose off our knees and stood upright. And Omar looked around, pondering for a long time. Then said he, "By Him in whose hands is my soul! this is the place described to us by the Apostle of Allah."

And it is reported on other authority to the last, namely, from Hishâm ibn 'Ammâr, who had it from Al Haitham ibn Omar ibn al 'Abbâsi, who related that he had heard his grandfather, 'Abd Allah ibn Abu Abd Allah, tell how, when Omar was Khalif, he went to visit the people of Syria. Omar halted first at the village of Al Jâbiyah,¹ while he despatched a man of Jadilah to the Holy City, but shortly after he became possessed thereof by capitulation. Then Omar himself went thither, and Ka'ab was with him. Said Omar to Ka'ab, "O Abu Ishak, knowest thou the position of the Rock?" and he answered, "Measure from the wall which is on the Wâdî Jahannum so and so many ells; there dig and ye shall discover it," adding, "At this present day it is a dunghcap." So they dug there, and the Rock was laid bare. Then said Omar to Ka'ab, "Where sayest thou we should place the Mosque, or rather the Kiblah?" Ka'ab replied, "Lay out a place for it behind the Rock, whereby you will make one the two Kiblahs, that, namely, of Moses, and that of Muhammad." But Omar answered him, "Thou hast leanings still towards the Jews, O Abu Ishak. The Mosque shall be in front of the Rock (not behind it)." And so the Mosque was erected in the fore part of the Haram Area.

¹ In Jaulân.

And on the like authority as the foregoing, and as an addition to what has been said above on the warranty of Ibrahim ibn Abu 'Ablah al Mukaddasi, who had it of his father, saith he: Omar then came to the Holy City, and encamped on the Mount of Olives. And afterwards he descended therefrom, and he entered the Noble Sanctuary by the Gate of the Prophet. Now, when he came to stand erect therein, he gazed to the right and to the left, and exclaimed, "By Him than whom there is no other God! this is the Mosque of Solomon the son of David, of which the Apostle of Allah related to us that he had been brought thereto by night." Then he went to the western part of the Noble Sanctuary and said, "Let us place the Mosque for the Muslims here, to be a place of prayer for them to pray in." And on the authority of Sa'id ibn 'Abd al 'Azîz it is related: When Omar conquered the Holy City, he found on the Rock great quantities of dung that the Greeks had thrown down here for an insult to the Children of Israel. And Omar spread his cloak, and began to sweep together all that dung, and so did also the Muslims who accompanied him. . . .

Further, Al Walîd adds, on the authority of Sa'id ibn 'Abd al Azîz, that the Letter of the Prophet had come to the Kaisâr (Cæsar) while he was sojourning at the Holy City.¹ Now at that time there was over the Rock of the Holy City a great dungheap, which completely masked the Mihrâb of David, and which same the Christians had put here in order to offend the Jews, and further even, the Christian women were wont to throw here their cloths and clouts, so that it was all heaped up therewith.² Now when the Cæsar had perused the letter of the Prophet,³ he

¹ In the year of the Hijrah 7, the Prophet despatched envoys to the Chosroe of Persia, and to the Cæsar of Byzantium, calling on them to acknowledge his mission as Allah's Apostle.

² The text here appears to me to be corrupt. The general sense, however, is plain enough.

³ As a specimen of Mr. Reynolds' method of translation, the following may be quoted from p. 179, representing the above passages:

"We are also informed by Al Walid that Sa'ad Ibn-'Abdul-Aziz said, A letter (an epistle) of the Prophet of God (upon whom be the mercy and peace of God!) came to Al Kais; and this it is — In the Bait-ul-Mukaddas, and upon the

cried and said, "O ye men of Greeee, verily Ye are the people who shall be slain on this dungheap, for that ye have desecrated the sanetity of this Mosque. And it shall be with you even as it was with the Children of Israel who were slain for the sake of the blood of Yahyâ ibn Zakariyyâ (John the Baptist)." Then the Cæsar commanded them to clear the place, and so they began to do, but when the Muslims invaded Syria only a third part thereof had been cleared. So when Omar had come to the Holy City and conquered it, and saw how thero was a dungheap over the Rock, he regarded it as horrible, and ordered that it should be entirely cleared. And to accomplish this they forced the Nabathæans of Palestine to labour without pay. On the authority of Jabîr ibn Nafir it is related that when Omar first exposed the Rock to view, by removing the dungheap, he commanded them not to pray there until three showers of heavy rain should have fallen. Al Walîd further relates, as coming from Kulthûm ibn Ziyâd, that Omar asked of Ka'ab, "Where thinkest thou that we should put the place of prayer for Muslims in this Holy Sanctuary?" Said Ka'ab, in answer, "In the hinder (or northern) portion thereof, in the part adjoining the Gate of the Tribes," but Omar said, "Not so; seeing that, on the contrary, to us belongs the fore part of the Sanctuary," and he then proceeded to the fore part thereof. Al Walid again relates—on the authority of Ibn Shaddâd, who had it of his father—"Omar proceeded to the fore part of the Sanctuary Area to the side adjoining the west (*i.e.* to the south-west part), and there began to throw the dung by handfulls into his cloak, and we all who were with him did likewise. Then he went with it—and we following him to do the same—and threw it into the Wâdî which is called

Sakhrâ of the Bait-ul-Mukaddas, there shall be a great sewer, whereby the tower of David (on whom be salutation!) is spoiled by the injurious abuse of the lying Christians, in order to hurt the Jews, until those changing times shall come that the cities be stirred up to wrest the precinct from Greece. Then shall the Sakhrâ be met with. Therefore said Al Kais, when he read this epistle of the Prophet of God," etc., etc.

There is here a specimen of nearly every kind of blunder. A whole passage is interpolated, the very common word *Kaisar*, Cæsar, is read twice over as an Arab proper name, Al Kais.

Wâdî Jahannum. Then we returned to do the like over again, and yet again,—he, Omar, and also we who were with him,—until we had cleared the whole of the place where the Mosque now stands. And there we all made our prayers, Omar himself praying among us. . . .

. . . ¹ Now when Omar made the capitulation with the people of the Holy City, and entered among them, he was wearing at that time two long tunics (*kamîs*) of the kind called *Sumbulânî*.² He prayed in the Church of Mary, and when he had done so he spat on to one of his tunics. And it was said to him, “Dost thou spit here, because that this is a place in which the sin of polytheism has been committed?” and he answered, “Yea, verily the sin of polytheism hath been committed hercin, but now in truth the name of Allah hath been pronounced here.” It is further reported that Omar did carefully avoid praying near the Wâdî Jahannum. . . .

³ The Khalif 'Abd al Malik it was who built the Dome of the Rock and the (Aksa) Mosque of the Holy City, and according to report he devoted to the expenses of the same the revenues (*kharâj*) of Egypt for the space of seven years. The historian Sibt al Jauzi states in his work, the *Mirât az Zamân*, that 'Abd al Malik began the building here in the year 69 of the Hijrah, and completed the same in the year 72. (A.D. 687-690). But others say that he who first built the Dome (of the Rock) of the Holy City was Sa'id the son of the Khalif 'Abd al Malik, and that he afterwards too restored it. Now on the authority of Rijâ ibn Hayâh, and of Yazîd ibn Sallâm,⁴ 'Abd al Malik's freedman, it is reported

¹ Reynolds, p. 182. The text of this passage is not from the *Muthîr*, and where *Šuyûtî* obtained it I do not know.

² Lane, in his great Dictionary (v. sub voce) says that the *Kamîs Sumbulânî* is a shirt ample in length, so as to reach down to the ground, and adds that it is so called in relation to a town or district in the Greek Empire. The Church of Mary (*Kanisah Maryam*), here mentioned, may be the Church of the Virgin described by Procopius.

³ This is the beginning of the sixth chapter of the *Muthîr* (see p. 300 for the text). Reynolds, p. 184.

⁴ Abu'l Mikdam Rijâ ibn Hayâh ibn Jarûl, of the Kendah tribe, was a man celebrated for his learning, and a great friend of the Khalif Omar (II.) ibn 'Abd al Azîz. Yazîd ibn Sallâm, his colleague, was a native of Jerusalem.

that on the occasion of the building the Dome of the Rock of the Holy City and the Aksa Mosque, the Khalif came himself from Damascus to Jerusalem, and thence despatched letters into all the Provinces, and to all the Governors of cities, as follows: "'Abd al Mâlik doth wish to build a Dome over the Rock in the Holy City, whereby to shelter the Muslims from heat and cold; as also a Mosque. But he wisheth not to do this thing without knowing the will of his subjects. Therefore let his subjects write to him their desires and whatever may be their will."¹ And letters came back to him from the governors of the Provinces which assured the Commander of the Faithful of the full approval of all men, and that they deemed his intention a fitting and pious one. And said they: "We ask of Allah to give completion to what the Khalif doth undertake in the matter of building in the Noble Sanctuary, and the Dome therein and the Mosque; and may it succeed under his hand, for it is a noble deed both for him and for those who follow after him." Then the Khalif brought together craftsmen from all parts of his empire, and commanded that they should set forth the proportions and elevation of the building before they began to build the Dome itself. So they laid out the plan thereof in the Court of the Haram Area.² And he commanded them to build a Treasure House on the east side of the Rock, and the same is the building which stands close beside the Rock.³ So they began to build: And the Khalif set apart great sums of money, and instituted to be overseers thereof Rijâ ibn Hayâh, and Yazîd ibn Sallâm, commanding them to spend the same, and giving

¹ The text as given in the Muthîr (p. 300) is, I think, corrupt; but there can be no doubt of the general import.

² I am by no means sure of my translation of this passage. If we read *Suffat-al-Kubbat*, it would mean "the porch of the Dome," i.e. one of the porches at the four gates. I prefer, however, to read *Sifat*, and to translate as I have done. Mujîr ad dîn in the corresponding passage (p. 241 of the Bulâk text, printed in A.H. 1283) gives quite a different reading. What he says is: "And 'Abd al Mâlik carefully described to the artificers what he wished to be built, and how it should stand. And while he remained in the Holy City, the architects built for him the small Dome which stands to the east of the Dome of the Rock, and is now called the Dome of the Chain. And this he so much admired that he ordered the Kubbat as Sakhrâh (the Dome of the Rock) to be built like it."

³ Now called the Dome of the Chain, Plan, c.

them authority therein. So they made expenditure for digging the foundations, and building up the structure, until the moneys were near to be all expended. Now when the edifice was complete and solidly constructed, so that not a word could be said for improvement thereto, they wrote to the Khalif at Damascus: "Allah hath given completion to what the Commander of the Faithful commanded concerning the building the Dome over the Rock of the Holy City, and the Aksa Mosque also. And no word can be said to suggest improvement thereto. And verily there remaineth over and above of what the Commander of the Faithful did set apart for the expense of the same,—the building being now complete and solidly built,—a sum of 100,000 (gold) dinârs. Let the Commander of the Faithful expend the same in whatever matter seemeth good to him." And the Khalif wrote to them in reply: "Let this then be a gift unto you two for what ye have accomplished in the building of this noble and blessed house." But to this they sent in answer:—"Nay rather, first let us add to this the ornaments of our women and the superfluity of our wealth, and then do thou expend the whole in what seemeth best to thee." So the Khalif wrote to command them to melt down the sum and apply it to the adornment of the Dome. And all this sum was melted down and laid out to adorn the Dome of the Rock, to such an extent that it was impossible by reason of the gold thereon for any one to keep the eye fixed and look at it.

They prepared also two coverings to go over the Dome, of felts and of skins of animals, and the same was put over it in the winter to preserve it from the rains and the winds and the snows. Rijâ ibn Hayâh and Yazîd ibn Sallâm also surrounded the Rock with a lattice-screen of Sâsim (or ebony wood), and outside the screen they hung between the columns curtains of brocade.¹ Each day fifty-and-two

¹ Mr. Reynolds' translation (p. 187) of the foregoing passages is so remarkable that I quote it, in further proof of my assertion that his work needs emendation. 'Then he [the Caliph] wrote to them, "A great sum hath been expended and paid by the public for the chapel; therefore I will spend and lay out upon it (money for the purchase of) that which every one may look at—gold work, and ornament

persons were employed to pound and grind down saffron, working by night also, and leavening it with musk and ambergris, and rose-water of the Jûri rose. At early dawn the servants appointed entered the Bath of Sulaimân¹ ibn 'Abd al Malik, where they washed and purified themselves before proceeding to the Treasure Chamber (al Khazânah), in which was kept the (yellow perfume of saffron called) Khulûk. And, before leaving the Treasure Chamber, they changed all their clothes, putting on new garments made of the stuffs of Marv and Herât, also shawls (of the striped cloths of Yaman) called 'Aşb, and taking jewelled girdles they girt them about their waists. Then bearing the jars of Khulûk in their hands, they went forth and anointed therewith the stone of the Rock, even as far as they could reach up to with their hands, spreading it all over the same. And for the part beyond that which they could reach, having first washed their feet, they attained thereto by mounting on the Rock itself, anointing all that remained thereof, and by this the jars of Khulûk were completely emptied. Then they brought censers of gold and of silver filled with aloes wood of Kimâr (in Java), and the incense called Nadd, compounded with musk and ambergris, and letting down the curtains between the columns, they swung to and fro the censers, and the incense would rise into all the space between the columns and the Dome above by reason of the quantity thereof. Which done and the curtains again drawn up, the censers were carried outside the building, whereby the sweet smell went abroad, even to the entrance of the market beyond, so that all who passed therein could scent the perfume. After this the censers were extinguished. Proclamation then was made by criers from before the screen,—“The Sakhrâh, verily, is

a sort of common part (which all may be permitted to behold), of mosaic, outside; and there also, a second, to be a covering against rain and wind and snow.” But Rijah-ibn-Haywah and Yazîd ibn Salâm had already surrounded it with a screen of lattice-work, with small interstices, and a curtain of silk hanging loosely between pillars.’

¹ The MSS. of Suyûtî give “Hammâm Sulaimân” only, as though it were King Solomon. I have found no notice of this bath elsewhere. The Jûri rose is named from the town of Jûr or Gûr, in Persia, afterwards called Fairûzâbâd, which was so celebrated for its roses as to be surnamed *Balad al Ward*, the City of Roses (see Yakût, ii. 147).

open for the people, and he who would pray therein, let him come." The people hastened to come and make their prayer in the Sakhrâh, the most of them performing two Rika'ahs,¹ while some few acquitted themselves of four. And after, he who had thus said his prayers had gone forth again, they would perceive on him the perfume of the incense, and say, "Such a one has been in the Sakhrâh." (After the prayer-time is over, the servants) wash off with water the marks left by the people's feet, cleaning everywhere with green myrtle (brooms), and drying with cloths.² Then the gates are closed, and for guarding each were appointed ten chamberlains, since none might enter the Sakhrâh, except the servants thereof, on other days than the Monday and the Friday.

On the authority of Abu Bakr ibn al Hârith, it is reported that during the Caliphate of 'Abd al Malik the Sakhrâh was entirely lighted with (oil of) the Midian Bân (the Tamarisk or Myrobalan) tree, and oil of Jasmin,³ of a lead colour. And the chamberlains had said to the Khalif, "O Abu Bakr, command for us candelabra with lamps (kandîl) in which we may put oil, for the same would be more agreeable unto us." And the Khalif granted them their request. Such are the matters which pertain to the days of the Caliphate of 'Abd al Malik.

Saith Al Walîd, it hath been related to me by 'Abd ar Rahman ibn Mansur ibn Thâbit, who said, I have it of my father, who had it of his father, and he from his grandfather,

¹ Prayer prostrations.

² What *Mashânî* or *Masânî* mean I do not know; the word is omitted in the MSS. of Suyûtî. Mr. Reynolds has completely misunderstood these paragraphs. I quote a single passage (p. 189), that, namely, which is supposed to give the translation of the above sentence. "Then the men went out; and whosoever smelt the smell of their incense said, This is from some one who has entered the Sakhrâ; and they washed the soles of their feet, and slightly passed a moistened hand over their face, at the threshold of St. George, and napkins were wetted, and gates were split open (i.e. *although they only slightly wetted their faces, and then wiped them with a napkin, yet, from the number who did this, the napkins were entirely wet, and from the rush of their entrance the gates were split open*). Also at every gate were ten beadles," etc. I need hardly point out that the commentary introduced with "i.e." is as much beside the mark as the remainder of the translation. The text of all this may be seen on p. 302.

³ The MSS. read, some *Zambak*, which is 'Oil of Jasmin,' and some *Zibak*, which is 'Quicksilver.' If the latter be right, and it concords better with *ar-rasîsî* 'of lead,' I fail to comprehend how the Mosquo was lighted with 'Quicksilver of lead.' Mr. Reynolds offers no solution, for he leaves these words out.

that in the days of 'Abd al Malik there was suspended from the chain hanging down in the middle of the Dome of the Rock a single unique pearl, also the two horns of the Ram of Abraham, and the Crown of the Cosroes. But when the Caliphate passed to the Abbasides, they had all these transported to the Ka'abah, which may Allah preserve.

On the authority of the Hâfidh ibn 'Asâkir, the testimony going back to Abul Ma'âli Al Mukaddasî,¹ it is related how 'Abd al Malik built the Dome of the Rock and the Aksa Mosque; which, further, is inserted by the author of the Muthîr al Gharâm in his seventh chapter,² citing 'Ukbah as his authority, and continuing to the following effect: Now in those days there were in use in the Mosque 6000 beams of wood for the ceilings, besides the beams for the wooden pillars. And the doors were 50 in number. There were 600 pillars of marble, and seven Mihrâbs, and of chains for suspending the candelabra 400 minus 15 (i.e. 385), of which 230 were in the Aksa Mosque, and the remainder (i.e. 155) in the Dome of the Rock. The length of all these chains put together was 4000 ells, and their weight 43,000 Syrian (pounds or) ratls.³ There were 5000 lamps, and in addition to these they were wont to light 2000 wax candles on Friday nights, and on the middle nights of the months of Rajab, Sha'aban, and Ramadhân, as also on the nights of the Two (Great) Festivals. (In the various parts of the Haram Area) are 15 (small) Domes, besides the (Great) Dome of the Rock, and on the Mosque roof there were 7700 sheets of lead, each sheet weighing 70 ratls, Syrian measure, and this did not include what was on the roof which covered the Dome of the Rock. All this was of that which was done in the days of 'Abd al Malik. And this Khalif appointed for the perpetual service of the Noble Sanctuary 300 servants, who were (slaves) purchased with moneys of the Royal Fifth from the Treasury; and as these servants in time died off, each man's

¹ See above, p. 253.

² See p. 303.

³ The ratl (from the Greek λίτρα) is of about 6 lbs. English.

son, or his son's son, or some member of his family, was appointed in his place. And so the service has continued on for all time, generation after generation; and they receive their rations from the public treasury. In the Haram Area there are 24 great water cisterns, and of minarets 4, to wit, three in a line on the west side of the Noble Sanctuary, and one that rises above the Bâb al Asbât (Gate of the Tribes). And among the servants of the Haram there were Jews, from whom was exacted no poll-tax; originally there were ten men, but their families increasing the number rose to twenty, and it was their business to sweep up the dust left by the people at the times of visitation both in summer and in winter, and also to clean the places of ablution that lay round the Aksa Mosque. There were also ten Christian servants of the Noble Sanctuary, whose office went by inheritance likewise. These made and likewise swept the mats of the Mosque. They also swept out the conduits which carried the water into the cisterns, and as well attended to the keeping clean of the cisterns themselves, and other such service. And among the servants of the Sanctuary, too, were another company of Jews who made the glass plates for the lamps, and the glass lantern bowls, and glass vessels and rods. And it was appointed that from these men also no poll-tax was to be taken, nor from those who made the wicks for the lamps, and this exemption continued in force for all time, both to them and their children who inherited the office after them, even from the days of 'Abd al Malik, and so for ever.

On the authority of 'Abd ar Rahmān ibn Muhammad ibn Mansur ibn Thâbit from his father, who had it from his grandfather, it is reported that in the days of 'Abd al Malik all the gates of the Mosque were covered with plates of gold and of silver. But during the reign of Abu Ja'afar al Mansûr, in the year 130 (A.D. 746), both the eastern and the western portions of the Mosque fell down, and it was reported to the Khalif, saying, "O Commander of the Faithful, the earthquake hath thrown down the eastern part of the Mosque and the western part thereof also, now therefore give orders

to rebuild the same and raise it again." And the Khalif replied that as there were no moneys in his treasury, (to supply the lack of coin) they should strip off the plates of gold and of silver that overlaid the gates. So they stripped these off and coined therefrom dinârs and dirhems, which were expended on the rebuilding of the Mosque, even till it was completed. Then occurred the second earthquake, and the building that Al Mansûr had commanded to be built fell to the ground. In the days of Al Mahdi, who succeeded him, the Mosque was still lying in ruins, which, being reported to him, he commanded them to rebuild the same, adding that the Mosque had been (of old) too narrow, and of too great a length,—and for this reason it had not been used by the people,—so now in rebuilding it they were to curtail its length and increase its breadth. The restoration of the Mosque was completed on this plan during his reign. In the year 452 (A.D. 1060) the Great Lantern (Tannûr) that hung in the Dome of the Rock fell down, and there were in it 500 lamps. Those of the Muslims who were there augured evil therefrom, saying, "Of a surety there will happen some portentous event in Islâm."

Al Walid further writes, on the warranty of Abu 'Amir ibn Damrah, who said it on the authority of 'Atâ, who had it of his father, that in early days it was the Jews who were appointed to light the lamps in the Noble Sanctuary, but that when Omar ibn 'Abd al Aziz¹ came to reign, he deprived them of this office, and set in their place servants who had been purchased with moneys of the Royal Fifth. And a certain man of these servants, a slave bought of the Royal Fifth, came once to him and said, "Give me manumission, O Khalif!" but Omar answered, "How then! for verily I cannot emancipate thee! but shouldst thou depart (of thine own accord), behold I have no power over a hair even of the hairs of thy dog!"²

¹ The Omeyyad Khalif, who reigned at Damascus A.H. 99-101 (A.D. 717-720).

² The remainder of this chapter is devoted to an account of the taking of Jerusalem by the Crusaders, and its re-conquest by Saladin; the details of which being matters of history, and fully treated of in other works, need not detain us here.

CHAPTER X.

An account of those who have entered the Holy City, of the various Prophets, and also of the Companions of the Prophet and of their Followers, and others besides. Further, an enumeration of such of them as have died and been buried in the Holy City. Also how all nations—with the exception of the Samaritans—do hold in honour the Holy City.¹

CHAPTER XI.

Concerning the excellency of our lord Abraham the Friend, and the excellency of visitation to his abode. And an account of his birth, with the story of how he was thrown into the fire. Also of his hospitality and generosity. Also how he is the Friend of Allah, and how this title is peculiar to him. Account of his circumcision, and of his wearing breeches, and of the greyness of his hair; also of his kindness and goodness to all men, and of his benevolent ways and agreeable manners, such as none before him had ever shown forth, and which may be as an ensample and rule of conduct to all who come after him. Also an account of his life and the story of his death, and of the garment he shall put on on the Day of Resurrection.²

CHAPTER XII.

Concerning Abraham's temptation in the matter of the Sacrifice, and of his own son who was the victim. Also the life of Isaac, and the age that his father and mother had attained at the time of his birth. An account of his mother Sarah, and the exception in her favour as to her prophesying, and as to her being able to prophesy; also notice of such other women beside her who did so. The story of Jacob and his life, also incidents from the history of his son Joseph, his appearance, and how many years he was parted from his father Jacob, and how long he was estranged from him. And of his sepulture, and what time elapsed between him and Moses.³

¹ Reynolds, p. 280.

² Reynolds, p. 320.

³ Reynolds, p. 354.

CHAPTER XIII.

Description of the Cave in which Abraham and his children were buried; and how the same was bought from the king of that country by name 'Afrân (Ephron the Hittite). And who was the first to be buried in that cave, and what are the monuments over the graves therein, and what proof there is of the genuineness of the graves. How Solomon built the Sepulchre that is there, and of the advantages to be derived from visiting the above-mentioned tombs. The discovery of the place of Joseph's sepulture; also how the place around the tombs came to be a Mosque, and of permission to enter therein, and how it was called the Haram. Also of the lands given in fief by the Prophet to Tamîm ad Dâri and those of his tribe who came with him, and the deed which the Prophet wrote for them in witness thereof.

. . .¹ It is reported by Ibn 'Asâkir, on a chain of tradition going back to Ka'ab al Ahbar, that the first person who died and was buried at Hebron was Sarah. . . . Then Abraham himself died and was buried at her side. Then Isaac's wife Rebecca died and was buried there, and Isaac himself later was buried beside his wife. When Jacob died, he was buried at the mouth of the cave, and when his wife Likâ (Leah) came also to die, she was buried beside him. Then the sons of Jacob met together, and also Esau and his brethren, and they said, "Let us leave the entrance of the cavern open, so that when any die he may be buried therein." But afterwards a dispute arose among them, and one of the brothers of Esau, or, as some say, one of the sons of Jacob, raised his hand and struck Esau a blow that caused his head to fall off and roll into the cave. And they carried forth his body and buried it without the head, for the head remained within the cave. And the cave they closed by a wall. Then over each grave they erected a monument, inscribing on each severally "This is the tomb of Abraham," "This is the tomb of Sarah," and so forth, after which they all departed, closing the gates. . . .²

¹ Reynolds, p. 359.

² The following curious account of a visit to the Cave of Machpelah has been copied by Suyûti verbatim from Chapter XV. of Ishak al Khalîli's "History of Hebron," mentioned above, p. 252.

Muhammad ibn Bakrân ibn Muhammad al Khatîb, who was Khatîb (Preacher) of Abraham's station, has reported as having heard Muhammad ibn Ahmad the grammarian relate the following; and it is given in his own words: Once I went with the Kâdî Abu 'Amr 'Othmân ibn Ja'far ibn Shâdhân to visit the tomb of Abraham—upon him peace. We had sojourned there for the space of three days, when, on the fourth, the Kâdî approached the inscription which is facing the tomb of Rebecca, Isaac's wife, and ordered it to be washed, that the writing thereon might be made clear; and he set me to copy all that was on the stone, in exact facsimile, on a roll of paper that we had brought. And after this he returned to Ar Ramlah;¹ where he brought together men of all tongues to read what was thereon, but no one among them was able to interpret it; but they agreed that the same was in the language of the ancient Greeks, and that if any one there were who knew how to read it, it would be a certain Shaikh of Aleppo. So the Kâdî Abu 'Amr sent expressly to this Shaikh requesting his presence at Ar Ramlah, and when he had arrived he caused me also to be present. And behold he that was come was a very ancient man; and this Shaikh from Aleppo dictated to me as follows, being the translation of what I had copied: "In the divine and adored Name, the sublime, the mighty, the well-directing, the strong, the powerful! Verily the mound which is facing this is the Tomb of Rebecca, the wife of Isaac, and that which lies near thereto is the Tomb of Isaac. The great mound over against this is the Tomb of Abraham the Friend, and the mound which faces it on the eastern side is the Tomb of Sarah his wife. The further mound, which lies beyond that of the Tomb of Abraham the Friend, is the Tomb of Jacob, and the mound adjoining it is the Tomb of Îliyâ (Leah), Jacob's wife. And Esau wrote this with his own handwriting."

² [Further, Muhammad ibn Bakrân speaks of another

¹ At that time the capital of Filastîn.

² This second account is omitted by Suyûtî.

account, and that the copy of the inscription cut on the above-mentioned stone, lying to the east, stated that the head of Adam—peace be on him—was therein, the interpretation thereof being as follows:—"In the divine and adored Name, the high, the mighty, the victorious, the strong, the puissant—this mound which lies near this inscription is the Tomb of Rebeeca, the wife of Isaae, and the mound thereto adjacent westwards is the Tomb of Isaae. The great mound which lies on the opposite side, and corresponding thereto, is the Tomb of Abraham, and the mound which is facing this to the east thereof is the Tomb of his wife Sarah. The mound that lies farthest off, but in a line with the Tomb of Abraham the Friend, is the Tomb of Jacob, and the mound adjacent thereunto and to the east thereof, is the Tomb of his wife İliyâ—the benediction of Allah and His merey and His blessing be upon them all, for purity lieth in His grace."

These then are the two accounts.] Muhammad ibn Bakrân Al Khatîb notes that the name of (Leah) Jacob's wife is İliyâ, but that in some books her name is written Layâ (or Liyâ), and she is known also as Lîka, but Allah knows alone the truth thereof. The Kâdî mentioned in the first account—Abu Amr 'Othman ibn Ja'afar ibn Shâdhân—was a judge of high renown and well known; the narrator of the account, however, was not certain as to the exact name of his father; I have reason to believe that he was 'Othman son of Muhammad ibn Shâdhân. He was Kâdî (Judge) of Ar Ramlah during the Khalifate of Ar Râdî billah, in the year 320 and odd (A.D. 932), and the years following. He is an authority for Traditions, which he held at many hands, and a great number of very learned Traditionists also cite him as their authority.

The Hâfiz Ibn 'Asâkir writes: In a certain book of Traditions I read and copied the following: 'Muhammad ibn Bakrân ibn Muhammad al Khatîb—who was Khatîb of the Masjid of Abraham the Friend—states (having heard it from Muhammad ibn Ahmad ibn 'Ali ibn Ja'afar al Anbari, who himself had heard Abu Bakr al Askâfi give the

account), as follows: "With me it is of a surety that the Tomb of Abraham is at the spot now shown as the same, for I have looked on it and seen it with my own eyes. And it was after this manner:—I had expended great sums, amounting to nearly 4000 dinârs, on the Holy Place and its Guardians, hoping thereby to obtain favour of Allah—may He be exalted—and I wished also to convince myself of the exactitude of what was reported concerning (Abraham's tomb). So when the hearts (of the Guardians of the Holy Place) were won by all that I had done there in the way of pious deeds and generous giving, and in the making of presents, and honourably entreating of them, and other such bounties, I proposed to get at the root of the truth which my heart desired to know. So, on a certain day, I said to the Guardians, when we were all assembled together, 'I would fain ask of you to conduct me to the door of the Cave, that I may descend therein and be a witness for myself (of the tombs) of the Prophets. The Benediction of Allah and His mercy be upon them.' The Guardians answered me, 'We would certainly agree to do this for thee, for thou hast put us greatly in thy debt, but at this present time the matter is impossible, for travellers are constant in arriving,—but do thou have patience till the winter shall have come.' And when the month of the II. Kanûn (January) was entered, I went to them again, but they said to me, 'Remain with us yet awhile until the snow falls.' So I remained with them till the snow fell. Now when the travellers had ceased coming, the Guardians brought me to where was the stone which lies between the Tomb of Abraham the Friend and that of Isaac,—Peace be on them both,—and they raised this slab, and one of them, a man of the name of Sa'lûk, a just man, who did many pious works, prepared to descend to guide me. And he descended, and I with him and following him. We went down seventy-two steps, until we came to a place on the right as it were a great bier built of black stones—even like a merchant's stall in the bazaar—whereon lay the body of an aged man, on his back, long-bearded and hairy of cheek, with clothes of a green colour upon him. Said

Sa'lûk to me, 'This is Isaac—peace be on him!' Then we went a little further, and came to a yet larger bier than the first, and upon it extended on his back lay an aged man, the hair on his breast already whitened with age, and his head and beard and eyebrows and eyelashes white also. Under his white hair there appeared green garments, which covered his body and also the greater part of the bier, and the wind blew about his white locks to right and to left. Said Sa'lûk to me, 'This is Abraham the Friend,' and I threw myself upon my face glorifying Allah—may He be praised and magnified—for what He had vouchsafed to me. Then we continued on yet again and came to a smaller bier, on which lay an old man, with a face much browned by the sun, and a thick beard. On his body there were green clothes, which covered him over. Said Sa'lûk to me, 'This is Jacob, the Prophet—on him be Peace!' Then we turned to go to the right, as though to go to the Harem." "At this point (says Muhammad al Anbari) Abu Bakr al Askâfî swore to me that his story must end. So I arose from beside him, the time of the visit and his telling me of all this having drawn to a close. But at my convenience I went later to the Masjid Ibrahîm (Hebron), and, coming to the Mosque, inquired for Sa'lûk. Said they to me, 'In an hour he will be here.' And when he came, I went to him, and sitting down beside him, began to tell him part of the story. But he looked on me with an eye that would have denied all knowledge of the circumstances related by me. Then I turned towards him to gain his favour, and showed him that I was free of evil intent, for that Abu Bakr al Askâfî was as my paternal uncle, whereby he began to incline to me. And I said to him, 'O Sa'lûk, by Allah! when ye did turn as though to go towards the Harem, what happened, and what was it that ye saw?' And he said to me, 'But did not Abu Bakr tell thee thereof?' I answered, 'I desire to hear of it from thee.' Then said he, 'We heard, as coming from out near the Harem, a voice of one crying—*Depart ye from the Harem! and Allah have mercy on you*—and we fell down and lost all sense. After a time we came to ourselves again

and arose, but we despaired of life, and our companions (above) had despaired of us also.'

The Shaikh further told me that Abu Bakr al Askâfi lived on but a few days after he had related to him this account, and Sa'lûk also died shortly after—Allah have mercy on them both."¹

¹ I have given this curious account in extenso, for it has been copied by many later Arab historians and abridged. The following version of this and also a notice of another visit to the Cave has appeared to me worth translating from the pages of Yakût's great Geographical Dictionary (ed. Wüstenfeld, vol. ii. p. 468, s.v. Al Khalîl).

The place is called Al Khalîl; originally, however, it was named Habrûn, and also Habrâ; and in the Books of Moses it is written how Al Khalîl (the Friend of God, Abraham) bought a piece of ground from Afrûn ibn Sûhâr al Haithî (Ephron the son of Zochar the Hittite) for four hundred dirhems of silver, and buried therein Sarah. Many of the Traditionists are of this town; and it is a pleasant, wholesome, and agreeable place, wherein many blessed sights are to be seen. It is said that its fortress was built by Solomou the son of David. Al Harawî relates as follows: "I went to Jerusalem in the year 567 (A.D. 1172), and both there and at Hebron I made the acquaintance of certain Shaikhs, who informed me that in the year 513 (A.D. 1119), during the reign of King Bardawil (Baldwin II.) a certain part over the Cave of Abraham had given way, and that a number of the Franks had, by the King's permission, made their entrance therein. And they found (the bodies of) Abraham and Isaac and Jacob—peace be upon them—their shrouds having fallen to pieces, lying propped up against a wall. Over each of their heads were lamps, and their heads were uncovered. Then the King, after providing new shrouds, caused the place to be closed once more." Al Harawî continues: "I once read, when attending the lectures of As Sufî, that a certain man, who is called the Armenian, being of a mind to make his visitation at Hebron, gave large sums in presents to the Guardians (of the shrine), and had asked one of them whether it were not possible for him to take him down to see the (body of the) Patriarch—on whom be peace. The man replied that at that time it was not possible, but that if he would wait till the press of pilgrims was over, that he could do it. And so (when the time of the pilgrimage) was passed, he raised up a stone flag (in the floor of the Mosque), and taking a lamp with him, he and the other descended some seventy steps to a spacious cavern. The air here was blowing freely, and there was a platform on which lay extended (the body of) Abraham, peace be on him, clothed in green garments, and the wind as it blew tossed about his white locks. At his side lay Isaac and Jacob. And the guide went on with him to the walls of the cavern, telling him that behind the wall lay Sarah, and he had in intention to show him what was beyond the wall, but lo! a voice cried out, saying, 'Beware, for it is the Haram!' The narrator adds that he returned and came up by the way he had gone down."

The person quoted by Yakût is Abu'l Hasan Ali al Harawî (of Herât), who died in A.H. 611 (A.D. 1215) at Aleppo, and wrote a book describing the Holy Places of Palestine, of which work a MS. exists in the Bodleian Library. In Ibn al Athîr's Chronicle, under the events of the year 513 (A.D. 1119), that is in the very year mentioned by Al Harawî, there is the notice "That in this year was opened the Tomb of Abraham, and those of his two sons Isaac and Jacob, at a place near the Holy City. Many people saw them. Their limbs had nowise been disturbed, and beside them were placed lamps of gold and of silver."

All the extant notices of visits to the sepulchres of the Patriarchs at Hebron are ably brought together and discussed by Comte Riant, in a paper inserted at p. 411 of the Archives de l'Orient Latin, vol. ii. 1884. On Hebron in general, the note given by M. Quatremère in the Appendix (p. 239) to vol. i. part ii. of his Histoire des Sultans Mamlouks (one of the most useful of the Oriental Translation Fund Publications), may with advantage be consulted.

CHAPTER XIV.

Concerning the birth of Ishmael and how he went to Mekkah, also how our lord Abraham rode thither on the steed Al Burák to visit him and his mother Hagar. Also of Hagar's death and burial, and Ishmael's age and his burial, and how many were the years that elapsed between his death and the birth of the Prophet Muhammad.¹

CHAPTER XV.

The story of Lot, and the place of his sepulture. Also description of the Cave which is below the Old Mosque, and facing it on the west. And of the Mosque al Yakin, and the Cave which lies to the west thereof.²

The Shaikh Abu 'Ukbah 'Abd Allah ibn Muhammad, the Hanifite, of Marv, says, I have read in certain of the Lives of the Prophets that Lot lies buried in a village called Kafar Barík, lying about a farsakh from Masjid al Khalil (Hebron); and that in the cave to the west, beneath the Old Mosque, lie 60 Prophets, of whom 20 were also Apostles. And Lot's tomb has been a place of visitation and veneration from ancient times, the men of the age succeeding those who have gone before.

The author³ of the Kitâb al Badî' fi Tafsîl'al Mamlakat al Islâm, says that at a distance of a farsakh from Hebron is a small mountain which overhangs the Lake of Zughar. This is the site of Lot's Villages, and a Mosque has been built here by Abu Bakr as Sabâhî, in which is preserved Abraham's bedstead; it is sunk in the earth to the depth of an ell. It is related that when Abraham perceived the Villages of Lot before him in the air, he stood still there (or lay down), and cried out, "I testify that He is the Truth, the Certain (Al Yakin)." Hence this Mosque was named Masjid al Yakin.

At Tadmûrî,⁴ however, states that he never found any one whose works he had read, among the writers of history, who

¹ Reynolds, p. 370.

² Reynolds, p. 377.

³ That is, the well-known geographer Al Mukaddasi.

⁴ At Tadmûrî, the Palmyrene, is Abu'l Fidâ Ishâk al Khalilî, mentioned above, p. 252.

mentioned aught of Lot's death, or of his life, or of his tomb. Here ends the account. . . .

CHAPTER XVI.

*As to what is related concerning the burial-place of our lord Moses, and concerning his life, and his prayer at his place of sepulture. Also his benevolence to the people and his compassion for them. And mention of certain of his miracles and why he was called Moses, besides other matters.*¹

CHAPTER XVII.

*Concerning the excellence of Syria, and what has been said thereon of old and in the chronicles. Also the reason of its being called Ash Shâm (Syria), and the delineation of its frontiers. Also the Traditions of the Prophet relating to this land and its inhabitants, and its being the home of true believers and the centre pillar of Islâm. Also the prayer of the Prophet in favour of this land, and an account of all the places therein that are desirable places for visitation and holy places where prayers are granted. Also a general and particular advertisement of all that concerns the same.*²

¹ Reynolds, p. 378.

² Reynolds, p. 391. Suyûti's description of Damascus, and his account of the building of the Mosque by the Khalîf al Walîd is too lengthy to insert here. Besides, Suyûti is not an original authority on these points, and nearly all the information he gives may be found, in a slightly different form, translated into French, and inserted by Qnatremère in a long note (vol. ii. pt. iii. p. 262) to his *Histoire des Sultans Mamlouks*. It may, however, be worth while to give what Suyûti writes of the political divisions of Syria, noting that on this subject he merely copies word for word what the author of the Muthîr had written in A.D. 1351. Mr. Reynolds has given not a few misreadings (p. 394, *et seq.*). The first town of Syria, says the Muthîr, is Bâlis (not Bayâs, as in R.), and the last Al 'Arîsh of Egypt. Syria is divided into five districts, namely—1. Filastîn, whose capital is Iliyâ (Eliâ), eighteen miles from Ar Ramlah, which is the Holy City, the metropolis of David and Solomon. Of its towns are Asealon, Hebron, Sibastiah, and Nâbulûs. 2. Haurân, whose capital is Tiberias, with its lake, whereof mention occurs in the Traditions anent Gog and Magog; and 'tis said that at the time of the birth of him (*i.e.* the Prophet), whom Allah bless and keep in peace (*fî wakti wilâdatihi sallâ Allahu 'alaihi wa sallama*, which Mr. Reynolds renders, "in the time of Walâdat"), the Lake overflowed. Of its territories are those of the Ghôr, the Yarmûk (Hieromax), and of Baisân (Bethshean, Seythopolis), which is the town of whose palm trees the Antichrist (ad Dajjâl) will enquire (Reynolds has, "from whose palm trees pitch is sought, whence its name Al Bijjalat, the Tigris"). Also the Jordan, more often called Ash Sharî'ah. 3. The Ghûtah. Its capital is Damascus; Tripoli is on its coast. 4. Ilîms (Emessa; the name of the province, and of its chief town). Of its dependences is the city of Salamaniah (Salaminius. Reynolds writes 'Salamît'). 5. Kinnasrîn (not 'Kinnarîn' as in Reynolds). Its chief town is Aleppo, and of its dependences are Sarmîn (not 'Samwil,' as in Reynolds) and Antioch.

EXTRACTS FROM THE MUTHÎR AL GHARÂM.¹*From the Fifth Chapter of the Muthîr al Gharâm.*

² روى عن شداد بن اوس انه حضر مع عمر بن الخطاب رضى
حين دخل مسجد بيت المقدس يوم فتحها الله جل ثناؤه بالصلح
فدخل من باب محمد صلعم حبوا هو ومن معه حتى ظهر الى
صحنه ثم نظروا يمينا وشمالا ثم كبر ثم قال هذا والله او هذا والذي
نفسى بيده مسجد داود عم الذي اخبرنا رسول الله صلعم انه اسرى
به اليه وتقدم الى مقدمة مما يلي الغرب وقال نتخذ هاهنا مسجدا
قال الوليد ايضا اخبرنى ابن شداد عن ابيه عن جده ان عمر
لما فرغ من كتاب الصلح بينه وبين اهل بيت المقدس قال
لبطريقنا دلى على مسجد داود عم قال نعم قال فخرج عمر متقلدا
بسيفه فى اربعة الاف من اصحابه الذين قدموا معه متقلدين بسيوفهم
و طائفة منا ممن كان علينا ليس علينا من السلاح الا السيوف
والبطريق بين يدى عمر فى اصحابه ونحن خلف عمر حتى دخلنا
مدينة بيت المقدس فادخلنا الكنيسة التى يقالون لها كنيسة القيامة
وقال هذا مسجد داود قال فنظر عمر رضى وتامل فقال كذبت ولقد
وصف لى رسول الله صلعم مسجد داود بصفة ما هى هذه قال فمضى
الى كنيسة يقال لها صهيون فقال هذا مسجد داود فقال كذبت
فانطلق به الى مسجد بيت المقدس حتى انتهى به الى بابه

¹ The text is taken from the following MSS.:

Muthîr al Gharâm: A. Paris MS. Arab. 716

B. " " " 841

C. " " " 142

Collated with Suyûtî's Ithâf: S. a. Brit. Mus. Add. MS. 7326.

S. b. " " " 23339.

S. c. Paris MS. Suppl. Arab. 919.

S. d. " " Arab. 836.

S. e. " " 838.

² The translation of the following will be found on p. 275 *et seq.*³ S. a. b. علينا

الذى يقال له باب محمد وقد انحدر ما فى المسجد من الزبالة على درج الباب حتى خرج الى الزقاق الذى فيه الباب وكثر على الدرج حتى كاد ان يلصق بسقفه¹ فقال له لا تقدر على ان تدخل الا حبوا قال عمر رضى و لو حبوا فحبى بين يدي عمرو وحبونا خلفه حتى افضينا الى صخرة² بيت المقدس واستويناه فيه قياما فنظر عمرو وتامل مليا ثم قال هذا والذى نفسى بيده الذى وصفه لنا رسول الله صلعم *

وعن هشام بن عمار عن الهيثم بن عمر بن العباسى قال سمعت جدى عبد الله بن ابي عبد الله يقول لما ولى عمر بن الخطاب رضى زار اهل الشام فنزل الجابية و ارسل رجلا من جديدة الى بيت المقدس فافتحها صلحا ثم جاء عمرو معه كعب فقال يا ابا اسحاق اتعرف موضع الصخرة فقال اذرع من الحايط الذى يلى وادى جهنم كذا وكذا ذراعاً ثم احفر فانك تجدها قال وهى يومئذ مزبلة فحفروا فظهرت لهم فقال عمر لكعب اين ترى ان يجعل المسجد او قال القبلة فقال اجعله خلف الصخرة فتجتمع القبلتين قبله موسى و قبله محمد صلعم فقال ضاهيت اليهودية يا ابا اسحاق خير المسجد مقدمها قال فبناها فى مقدم المسجد *** *

وعن ابراهيم بن ابي عتبة المقدسى عن ابيه قال قدم عمر بن الخطاب رضى بيت المقدس وعسكر فى طور زيتا ثم انحدر فدخل من باب النبی صلعم فلما استوا فى المسجد نظريميناً و شمالاً ثم قال هذا والذى لا اله الا هو مسجد سليمان بن داود الذى اخبرنا به رسول الله صلعم انه اسرى به اليه ثم اتى غربي المسجد وقال يجعل مسجد المسلمين هاهنا مصلى يصلون فيه *

¹ س. سقفت الرواق

³ استوفقنا B.

² صحن مسجد S.

⁴ باب A.

وعن سعيد بن عبد العزيز قال لما فتح عمر بن الخطاب رَضَ بيت المقدس وجد على الصخرة زبلاً كثيراً مما طرحته الروم غيضاً لبنى اسرائيل فبسط عمر رَضَ ردآه فجعل يكنس ذلك الزبل وجعل المسلمون يكتسبون. معه * وقال الوليد قال سعيد بن عبد العزيز جاء كتاب رسول الله صلعم الى قيصر وهو ببית المقدس وعلى صخرة بيت المقدس مزبلة قد حازت محراب داود مما التفته النصارى عليها مضارة لليهود حتى ان¹ المرأة لتبعث بخرق² دميها من رومية فتلقى عليها فقال قيصر حين قرا كتاب رسول الله صلعم انكم يا معاشر الروم لخلقنا ان تقتلوا على هذه المزبلة بما انتهكتكم من حرمة هذا المسجد كما قتلت بنو اسرائيل على دم يحيى بن زكريا فامر بكشفها فاخذوا بذلك فقدم المسلمون الشام ولم يكشفوا منها الا ثلثاً فلما قدم عمر رَضَ بيت المقدس وفتحها ورأى ما عليها من المزبلة اعظم ذلك فامر بكشفها وسخر لها انباط فلسطين

وروى عن جبير بن نفير قال لما جلى عمر المزبلة عن الصخرة قال لا تصلوا فيها حتى تصيبها ثلاث مطرات

قال الوليد وحدثني كلثوم بن زياد ان عمر بن الخطاب رَضَ قال لكعب اين ترى ان تجعل مصلى المسلمين من هذا المسجد قال فى مؤخرة مما يلى باب الاسباط فقال كلا ان لنا مقدم المسجد قال فمضى الى مقدمه * قال الوليد وحدثني ابن شداد عن ابيه ان عمر رَضَ مضى الى مقدمه مما يلى الغرب فحشى فى ثوبه من الزبل وحشونا فى ثيابنا ومضى ومضيئا معه حتى القينه فى الوادى الذى يقال له وادى جهنم ثم عاد و عدنا بمثلها حتى صلينا فيه فى موضع مسجد يصلى فيه جماعة فصلى عمر بنا فيه * * *

¹ ان كانت S.a. C. : S.b.c.d.e. ان كان S.a.

² S.a.e. حيشها

The Sixth Chapter of the Muthir al Gharâm.

¹ الفصل السادس * فى ذكر بنا عبد الملك بن مروان قبة الصخرة ومتى كان ذلك البنيان *

وقال العلما بنى عبد الملك بن مروان رحمه الله مسجد بيت المقدس سنة سبعين من الهجرة وحمل الى بنيائه خراج مصر سبع سنين وقال سبط بن الجوزى فى كتاب مرآة الزمان ابتدا بنيانه فى سنة تسع وستين و فرغ منه سنة اثنين وسبعين قال المصنف رحمه الله ويقال ان الذى بنا قبة بيت المقدس وجددها سعيد بن عبد الملك بن مروان * روى عن رجا بن حيوة ويزيد بن سلام مولى عبد الملك بن مروان ان عبد الملك حين هم ببنا صخرة بيت المقدس والمسجد قدم من دمشق الى بيت المقدس وبث الكتب فى جميع عمله الى جميع الامصار ان عبد الملك قد اراد ان يبنى قبة على الصخرة صخرة بيت المقدس تكن³ المسلمين من الحر والبرد والمسجد فكرة ان يفعل ذلك دون راي رعيته فلتكتب الرعية اليه برايهم وما هم عليه فوردت الكتب عليه يرى امير المؤمنين رايه موفقا. رشيدا نسال الله تعالى ان يتم له ما نوى من بنا بيته وصخرته ومسجده ويجرى ذلك على يديه ويجعله مكرومة له وللمن مضى من سلفه فجمع الصناع من جميع عمله كله وامرهم ان يصفوا له صفة القبة وسمتها من قبل ان يبنيا فكرست له فى صحن المسجد وامر ان يبنى بيت المال فى شرقى الصخرة وهو الذى فوق على حرف الصخرة فاشكن بالاموال وكل على ذلك رجا بن حيوة ويزيد

¹ The translation will be found on p. 280.

² قبة الصخرة ومسجد الاتصى S.

³ تقى S.e.

⁴ سميتها S.e.

بن سلام و على النفقة عليها و القيام بامرها و امرهم ان يفرغوا المال عليها فراغا دون ان ينفقوه اثقا و اخذوا فى البناء و العمارة حتى احكم و فرغ من البناء و لم يبق لمتكلم فيه كلام و كتب اليه بدمشق قد اتم الله ما امر به امير المؤمنين من بنا صخرة بيت المقدس و المسجد الاقصى و لم يبق لمتكلم فيه كلام و قد يبقى مما امر به امير المؤمنين من النفقة عليه بعد ان فرغ البناء و احكم ما به الف دينار فيصرفها امير المؤمنين فى احب الاشيا اليه فكتب اليهما قد امر بنا امير المؤمنين لكما جائزة لما وليتما من عمارة ذلك البيت الشريف فكتبنا نحن اولى ان نزيد من حلى نسائنا فضلا عن اموالنا فاصرفها فى احب الاشيا اليك فكتب اليهما تسبك و تفرغ على القبة فسبكت و افرغت على القبة فما كان احد يقدر ان يتاملها مما عليها من الذدب و هى لها جلالان من لبود و من ادم من فوقه فاذا كان الشتا البسته ليكنها من المطر و الرياح و الثلج * و كان رجا بن حيوة و يزيد بن ملام قد حفا الحجر بدرابزين من ساسم من فوق¹ الدرابزين ستون ديباج مرخاة بين العمد و كان كل يوم اثنين و خمسين يامرون بالزعران ان يدق او يطحن ثم يعمل من الليل بالمسك المعنبر و الما ورد المجورى و يخمر من الليل ثم يامر الخدم بالغداة فيدخلون حمام سليمان بن عبد الملك يغتسلون و يتطهرون ثم ياتون الى الخزانة التى فيها الخلق فيلقون اثوابهم ثم يخرجون اثوابا جددا من الخزانة مرويا و هرويا و شيا يقال له العصب و يخرجون مناطق محلاة يشدون بها اوساطهم ثم ياخذون سفول الخلق ثم ياتون بنا حجر الصخرة فيطحنون ما قدروا ان تناله ايديهم حتى يغمره كله فما لم تناله ايديهم غسلوا اقدامهم ثم يصعدون على

الصخرة حتى يلطخوا ما بقى منها ثم يرفع انية الخلق ثم ياتون
 مجامر الذهب والفضة و العود القمارى والنذ المطرى¹ بالمسك و
 العنبر فترخى الستور حول الاعمدة كلها ثم ياخذون البخور حولها
 يدورون به حتى يحول بينهم وبين القبة من كثرته ثم تشمر الستور
 فيخرج البخور يفوح من كثرته حتى يبلغ الى راس السوق فيشم
 الريح من شمه وينقطع البخور من عندهم ثم ينادى فى صف
 البزازين² وغيرهم الا ان الصخرة قد فتحت للناس فمن اراد الصلاة
 فيها فليات فيظل مبادرين الى الصلاة فى الصخرة و اكثر الناس من
 يدرك ان يصلى ركعتين و اقلهم اربعا ثم يخرج الناس فمن شموا
 رايحته قالوا هذا ممن دخل الصخرة و تغسل اثار اقدامهم بالما و
 تمسح بالاس الاخضر و تنشف³ بالمشانى و المناديل و تغلق الابواب
 وعلى كل باب عشرة من الحجبة ولا تدخل الا يوم الاثنين او الخميس
 ولا يدخلها فى غيرهما الا الخادم * وعن حارث قال كنت اسرجها
 خلافة عبد الملك كلها بالبان المدينى و الزنبق الرصاص⁴ قال و
 كانت الحجبة يقولون يا ابا بكر مرلنا بقنديل فندهن⁵ به و نتطيب
 فكان يجيبهم الى ذلك فهذا ما كان يفعل بها خلافة عبد الملك
 كلها * و عن الوليد قال عبد الرحمن بن محمد بن منصور بن ثابت
 حدثنى ابي عن ابيه عن جده قال كان فى السلسلة التى فى
 وسط القبة على الصخرة درة يتيمة و كرنا كبش ابراهيم و تاج كسرى
 معلقات فيها ايام عبد الملك فلما صارت الخلافة الى بنى هاشم
 حولها الى الكعبة حرسها الله تعالى *

¹ عطر. S.e.

² S. الدرازين

³ بالمشانى. C. بالمشانى

⁴ الزنبق الرصاصى. C. الزنبق الرصاصى

⁵ B. and C. ندهن

The Seventh Chapter of the Muthîr al Gharâm.¹

الفصل السابع * فيما اثره عبد الملك وغيره فى المسجد الاقصى
و فى طوله و فى عرضه مستوفى مستقصا *

روى الحافظ ابن عساكر رحمه الله بسندة الى ابي المعالى المقدسى
فذكر حديث بنا عبد الملك قبة الصخرة والمسجد الاقصى و قال
عقبة وكان فيه فى ذلك الوقت من الخشب المسقف سوى اعمدة
خشب ستة الاف خشبة و فيه من الابواب خمسون بابا و من العمود
ستماية عامود رخام و فيه من المحاريب سبعة و من السلاسل للقناديل
اربعمائة سلسلة الا خمس عشرة منها مايتا سلسلة و ثلثون سلسلة
فى المسجد و الباقي فى قبة الصخرة و ذرع السلاسل اربع الاف
ذراع و وزنها ثلاثة و اربعون الف رطل بالشامى و فيه من القناديل
خمس الاف قنديل و كان يسرج فيه مع القناديل الفا شمعة فى
ليالى الجمع و فى رجب و نصف شعبان و فى ليالى العيد و فيه
من القباب خمس عشرة قبة سوى قبة الصخرة و على سطوح
المسجد ملابس من شقات الرصاص سبعة الاف شقة و سبعمائة وزن
الشقة سبعون رطلا بالشامى غير الذى على قبة الصخرة و كل ذاك
عمل فى ايام عبد الملك و رتب له من الخدم القوام ثلثمائة
خادم اشترى له من خمس بيت المال كلما مات منهم ميت
قام مكانه ولده و ولد ولده او من اهل بيته يجرى عليهم ذلك ابدًا ما
تناسلوا و تقبضون بايديهم من بيت المال و فيه من الصاريج
اربعة و عشرون صهريجًا كبارا و فيه من المنابر اربع ثلاث منها صف
واحد غربى المسجد و واحد على باب الاسباط وكان له من الخدم
اليهود عشرة رجال لا يوخذ منهم الجزية و تولدوا فصاروا عشرين

¹ The translation of this chapter will be found on p. 285.

² A.B. المنابر, but C. and S. always المنابر

رجلا لكنس اوساج الناس فى المواسم والشتا والصيف ولكنس المطاهر
التي حول الجامع وله من الخدم النصارى من الرجال عشرة
اهل البيت يتوارثون خدمته لعمل الحصر وكنس حصر المسجد
وكنس القنى التي تجرى الى صهاريج الماء وتنظيف الصهاريج وكنسها
ايضا وغير ذلك وله من الخدم اليهود جماعة يعملون الزجاج
للقناديل والاقداح والبراقات وغير ذلك لا يوخذ منهم جزية
وكذلك لا يوخذ جزية من الذين يقومون بالسراقة للفتيل¹ التي
للمصاييح جاريا عليهم وعلى اولادهم ابدا ما تناسلوا من اهد عبد
الملك بن مروان الى الان * وعن عبد الرحمن بن محمد بن
منصور بن ثابت قال حدثني ابي عن ابيه من جده ان الابواب
كانت ملبسة ذهبا وفضة صفائح للابواب كل ذلك فى خلافة
عبد الملك كلها فلما قدم ابو جعفر المنصور وكان شرقى المسجد
وغربة قد وقع فرفع اليه يا امير المؤمنين قد وقع شرقى المسجد
وغريه زمان الرجفة سنة ثلاثين ومائة وقالوا اليه لو امرت ببنياء
هذا المسجد وعمارته فقال ما عندى شى من المال فامر بالقلع
الصفائح الفضة والذهب التي كانت على الابواب فضربت دنائير
ودراهم وانفق عليه حتى فرغ منه ثم كانت الرجفة الثانية فوقع
البناء الذي امر به ابو جعفر ثم قدم المهدي من بعده وهو خراب
فرفع اليه ذلك فامر ببنيائه فقال دق هذا المسجد وطال وخلا من
الرجال انقضوا من طوله وزيدوا فى عرضه فتم البناء فى خلافته
وفى سنة اثنين وخمسين واربعماية سقط تنور قبة بيت المقدس
فيه خمسماية فتدليل فتطير المومنون المقيمون ببيت المقدس
وقالوا ليكون فى الاسلام حادث عظيم * وروى عن الوليد قال حدثني

ابو عمير بن ضمرة عن ابن عطا عن ابيه قال كانت اليهود تسرج بيت المقدس فلما ولى عمر بن عبد العزيز رحمه تعالى اخرجهم وجعل فيه من الخمس فاتاه رجل من اهل الخمس فقال اعتقني فقال كيف اعتقك ولو ذهبت انظر ما كان لى شعرة من شعر كلبك * قال المحافظ ابن عساكر وطول المسجد الاقصى سبعماية ذراع وخمسة وخمسون ذراعا بذراع الملك وعرضه اربعماية ذراع وخمسة وستون ذراعا بذراع الملك قال المصنف رحمه الله وكذا قاله ابو المعالى المشرف فى كتابه ولكن رايت قديما بالحائط الشمالى فوق الباب الذى يلى الدوادية من داخل السور بلاطة فيها طول المسجد وعرضه وذلك يخالف لما ذكره فالذى فيها ان طوله سبعماية ذراع واربعه وثمانون ذراعا وعرضه اربعماية ذراع وخمسة وخمسون ذراعا قال المصنف رحمه الله ووصف فيها الذراع لكنى لم اتحقق ذلك هل هو الذراع المذكور ام غيره لتشعث الكتابة قال رحمه الله وقد ذرع بالحبال عرضه وطوله فى وقتنا هذه فجاء قدر طوله من الجهة الشرقية ستماية وثلاث وثمانون ذراعا ومن الغربية ستماية وخمسون ذراعا وجاء قدر عرضه اربعماية وثمان وثلاثين ذراعا خارجا عن عرض اسواره *

¹ The translation of this concluding paragraph is that given on p. 269.

NOTES OF THE QUARTER

(December, January, February).

I. REPORTS OF MEETINGS OF THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY, SESSION 1886-87.

Second Meeting, 20th December, 1886.—Col. H. Yule, R.E., C.B., President, in the Chair.

Elections: Licut. Walter Henry Simpson, Bengal Staff Corps, and Mr. W. McDouall, of the Persian Gulf Telegraph Department, were elected Non-Resident Members.

The President, on taking the chair, expressed his deep regret at another loss the Society had experienced in the death of their Member of Council (formerly one of the Vice-Presidents), Mr. Arthur Grote.

Professor R. K. Douglas, in the absence of the author, read Mr. Beal's paper, the subject of which was mainly an endeavour to reconcile certain doubtful passages in the travels of Fa-Hien the Chinese pilgrim, as recorded in available texts, whether in respect of verbal interpretations or the identity of places. The President and Professor Douglas adverted to one or two points which suggested discussion; while the paper itself appears *in extenso* in the present Number of the Journal (pp. 191-206).

Among the presents notified, twenty-six brightly bound volumes in Arabic and Turkish, for the greater part of an educational character, presented by the Turkish Ambassador, under instructions of H.I.M. the Sultan; and two valuable French translations from the Arabic—the “*Voyages d'Ibn Batoutah*” and “*Prairies d'Or de Maçoudi*”—presented by the Société Asiatique through M. Ernest Leroux, called for special notice and acknowledgment.

Third Meeting, 24th January, 1887.—Col. H. Yule, R.E., C.B., President, in the Chair.

Elections: Mrs. Finn, and Pandits Shám Lál and Lakshmí Naráyn

were elected Resident, and Messrs. A. Rae, C. De Morgan, C. Mullaly, and A. Baumgartner, Non-Resident Members.

Dr. R. N. Cust, Hon. Secretary, gave a *vivâ voce* address on the subject of the Languages of Oceania. He divided the vast Region into I. Polynesia, II. Melanesia, III. Mikronesia, IV. Australia, and dealt with each separately. He stated the five distinct theories of the origin of the Polynesian race: I. a submerged Continent; II. South America; III. China and Japan; IV. New Zealand (autochthonous); and V. Malaysia. He then passed under review each Island and Language of Polynesia, stating that they were all of one Family. Passing on to Melanesia, he described the infinity of separate languages in this Region, which extends from Fiji to New Guinea, inclusive of both. He alluded to the great progress which had been made, and the linguistic books published: much more, however, remains to be done. In Mikronesia he alluded to the languages which had been studied in the Carolines, Ladrones, Marshall and Gilbert Groups, all North of the Equator. Of Australia he remarked that, though scores of languages were catalogued, the information supplied was most inadequate: in Tasmania the last Native had died; in Australia there were still about one hundred thousand surviving, and it was hoped that something might still be done with regard to this remnant.

Mr. G. W. Rusden, being called upon, bore testimony to the homogeneity of the language spoken by the Polynesian race throughout the Pacific; *i.e.* of the race to which the Maori belong. He had himself, in New Zealand, heard a Sandwich Islander, a native of Rarotonga, and Maori, joining together in an animated conversation about the events which are supposed to have preceded the migration of a portion of the people of Hawaii to the south in a fleet of canoes of which the names are still preserved. Slight differences of inflection, and the use by the Northerner of *l* where the Maori used *r*, did not prevent freedom of discussion. Nor was such freedom of speech a new thing. When Captain Cook visited New Zealand in 1769, he took Tupia, a Tahitian, with him; and Tupia easily conversed with the Maori. On two other occasions Society Islanders interpreted between Captain Cook and the Maori (1773, 1776). As to the quarter from which the Maori traditions declare that their forefathers came, it is always the same—from the Hawaiki in the north-east. The Rarotonga Islander, whose home is at the north-east of New Zealand, declares that *his* ancestors came from Avaiki, also in the north-east. At Tahiti the natives aver that their forefathers migrated thither from Hawaii. Hawaii, at the Sandwich Islands, is still, as of old, Hawaii; and the inhabitants preserve traditions of the departure of a fleet of canoes to the south-west. There seems no reason to doubt the

truth of these. If there were no other proof than they contain of the fancifulness of the speculation of the French writer (Lesson) who asserts that the Maori was autochthonous in New Zealand, and despatched numerous colonies throughout the Pacific as far as the Sandwich Islands, the well-authenticated genealogies of Maori families would suffice to destroy that theory. The Maori was proud of the nobility of his race. The eponymous heroes of the original pilgrim-fathers are venerated to this day. The records of each descent are preserved on a genealogical tree—a notched wand—on which the serrations indicate by their largeness or smallness whether the ancestor commemorated had a long or a short life. The accuracy of these genealogies has been tested in a singular manner in the Native Land Courts established by the Colonial Government. In tribes separated by long distance from one another, the wands were retained; and when, as sometimes happened, marriages occurred between members of distant tribes, the records in each tribe were so kept as, by collation, to convince the Judges of the trustworthiness of the genealogical trees. The speaker added—Of this I have been assured by Mr. Fenton, late Chief Judge of the Land Court, who by the way has propounded a new theory as to the ancestry of the Polynesian or brown race. He has written a work, which I have presented to the Library of this Society, to prove that the Maori are sprung from the Sabæans of Southern Arabia. He detects a kinship between Sabæa and Savai, or Havaii or Hawaii. The few places in the Pacific at which there are remains of architecture or sculpture are called in to support his theory. Very remarkable are those sculptures at Easter Island, to which I almost wonder that Dr. Cust did not allude. Gigantic idols, some said to be 70 feet high, abound there. No such works are found elsewhere in the Pacific, though in the Caroline Group, which lately formed a bone of contention between Germany and Spain, there are remains of what is said to be Cyclopean masonry, some of them submerged on the shore of a small island. But the progenitors of the Maori had stone-carved idols. Two were carried to New Zealand by the Arawa tribe, who occupied the Lake Country, the scene of recent eruptions. One of the idols is still preserved with veneration in the small island of Mokoia in Lake Rotorua; the other is in the possession of Sir George Grey, in his island Kawau.

Mr. H. H. Howorth, M.P., remarked that wherever a race which had no literature was distributed over a wide area, and presented few dialects in its speech, it was pretty certain that that race had spread comparatively recently from some focus. This was the case in such a typical example as Russia, and it seemed to him to be conclusive about the Polynesian race. Apart from this, wherever Polynesians were found south of the Equator, the peculiar fertility in devising ornaments, the character of the ornaments, and of the arts of the islanders, pointed to the Polynesians found there having invaded and occupied an area previously occupied by Melanesians, who were either incorporated or driven out. Such conclusion was

applicable to all parts from Easter Island to New Zealand. All this confirmed remarkably the traditions of the New Zealanders themselves about a comparatively recent migration of their ancestors from one of the many Hawaiki of the Central and Northern Pacific, and also their traditions about finding other people when they arrived in New Zealand. His own view was that the Hawaiian Archipelago, which occupied an area known to be sinking, and marked by the best proofs of proximity to a sinking area, viz. volcanoes, represented the remains of a former small continent, which was the original home of the Polynesian race.

Sir George Campbell, M.P., Mr. Park Harrison, and Professor Terrien de Lacouperie, continued the interesting discussion which followed Dr. Cust's address. The attendance was unusually good. A large diagram of the Region referred to had been lent for the occasion by the Royal Geographical Society.

Third Meeting, 21st February, 1887.—E. L. Brandreth, Esq., in the Chair.

Elections: Mr. Charles Edward Johnston and Mr. Sydney Wynn Graystone as Resident Members, and Dr. Marc Aurel Stein as Non-Resident Member.

A letter was read from Surgeon-General Bellew, regretting inability to read his "Notes on the Names borne by some of the Tribes of Afghanistan"—the paper announced for this day's meeting—owing to indisposition, and the strict prohibition of his medical adviser. The Chairman further intimated that as it had been thought advisable to defer consideration of this paper until the author's recovery, Captain Temple would give a short account of his several publications, notably *Indian Notes and Queries* and the *Indian Antiquary*. The impromptu address given was to the following effect: "I have in my hand a copy of the *Indian Notes and Queries*, a journal started some years ago under the name of the *Panjab Notes and Queries* by a body of 31 gentlemen belonging to the Panjab Commission, and which I was asked to edit. Subsequently it passed entirely into my own hands, and the general interest taken in it so increased that, last year, in order to comply with the wishes of many of its supporters, and to enable me to extend its contents over a wider sphere, the title was changed to *Indian Notes and Queries*. In its present shape I merely conduct it, editing it so far as is necessary with the assistance of many competent scholars in all parts of Asia—in Aden, Persia, Ceylon, Straits Settlements, Burma, Siam, China, Japan, and in all parts of India. And I apprehend that, in order to meet the ever-increas-

ing demand for space for notes from all parts of the East, the title will have to be still further widened to *Asiatic Notes and Queries*. The Journal began with 12 pp. of matter monthly, and I am now obliged to print 18 to 24 pp. in order to cope with the mass of useful and valuable matter that comes in. There seems to be no limit to the material available, as indeed might be expected from so wide a field to work upon—and the size of the Journal is limited only by the subscription. The principle upon which the Journal is conducted, and the character of its contents, may be best gauged by a reference to the original prospectus, which says in effect that it affords a ready means of recording and rendering generally available all kinds of miscellaneous information regarding the country and the people, and also of an interchange of experience regarding practical difficulties. Englishmen in India are, as a rule, far too busy to undertake any systematic inquiry into the religious and social customs of the natives. But every resident in it is constantly meeting with curious and interesting facts bearing upon those customs; while every year old residents leave India in possession of the most varied and extensive information on the subject. Few have both leisure and inclination to publish this information; and indeed it is often so fragmentary and miscellaneous in its nature, and seems so much a matter of course to its possessor, that he does not think it worth while to work it up into literary shape; and so his knowledge dies with him, and never becomes generally available. If, however, some ready means are at hand of recording and publishing such odd scraps of information as they are picked up, many people, who will not be at the trouble of writing set articles for magazines or journals, avail themselves of those means and send rough notes to a periodical such as this, and in a few years there is thus formed a most valuable collection of facts regarding the country and its inhabitants. Such a collection increases our own knowledge of the people, and so enhances our influence over them, and renders our intercourse with them at once more easy and more interesting. But it has a still wider value. Within the last few years the learned have turned their attention to the institutions and structure of Indian society, and the need which they most often feel and express is for a larger supply of well-ascertained facts and for more minutely-detailed information. We constantly find European writers on social institutions quoting customs which they have laboriously discovered in old notices of strange tribes, and wholly unaware that the every-day routine of any Indian village would

furnish far better instances of the facts they are in search of. The periodical also serves yet another purpose. Every Indian official must have often felt the need of some ready means of exchange of information and experience with his fellow-workers. On all matters of principle, and on all important matters of practice, it is to his official superiors that he must look for instruction. But in the every-day routine of administration a thousand petty doubts and difficulties arise, which are hardly fit matter for official reference, but which must have been settled many times over in other districts and by other men. And a periodical in which he can state his difficulty and ask for advice affords him a means of availing himself of the experience of others. The principles, then, on which *Indian Notes and Queries* is conducted may be summarized thus. It admits short notes and articles, questions and answers to those questions on all points connected with the physical and ancient geography, antiquities, history, flora and fauna, or products of India; or with its people, their history, distribution, languages, caste, customs, trades, and occupations. It also admits similar notes and queries bearing upon any branch whatever of practical administration. But under no circumstances is any contribution admitted which can be interpreted as in any way criticising the principles followed, the measures adopted, or the rules of procedure laid down by Government. Politics, in fact, are strictly tabooed.¹

"I should like to say a few words as to my contributors. About half are natives of India, whose contributions give me much trouble, speaking as an editor, but they are welcome always, because it is to the natives that we must look for our best, minutest, and widest information. As the majority are not well acquainted with English, their notes require much editing and sifting. Many do not write English at all, and this entails a certain staff of native assistants, who turn the vernacular contributions into some kind of English, which has to be eventually worked up into a form suited to a high-class publication, and thus made available to students in a manner that would be otherwise impossible. Perhaps the most hopeful sign of all of the ultimate success of the periodical, is the number of natives of all classes that contribute to its pages.

"A few words will suffice for the *Indian Antiquary*, an old journal, well known to many Members of this Society. Dr. Burgess started it,

¹ Captain Temple here gave an illustration of the sort of note obtained and admitted in his Journal. The specimen selected was taken from under the head of Folk-Lore (No. 90 in vol. iv.).

and edited it for 13 years, and rather more than two years ago Mr. Fleet and I took it over from him. I am happy to report that we have been successful in keeping it up to its former very high standard as regards contents, in materially increasing its circulation, and in procuring a constant succession of able contributions. During the Vienna Congress of Orientalists last year, I was much gratified in finding how great was the esteem in which it was held all over the Continent, and I trust that as long as the present editors conduct it that esteem will never be diminished. It is an expensive Journal for its size, but the comparatively high price is caused by the heavy expense entailed by the many and elaborate illustrations which are to be found in almost every number. It has always been the pride of the *Indian Antiquary* that it has done more for Oriental Epigraphy than has any other learned periodical, and that it has thus materially advanced our knowledge of early Indian history. But the constant reproduction of facsimiles of inscriptions and copperplates to scale is a very expensive and troublesome affair, and if the subscribers are called upon to pay rather more than is usual, they must kindly bear in mind that there is a very good reason for the demand. As regards this Journal, too, I am able to say that contributions are so plentiful of a first-class description that of late we have been obliged occasionally to issue double numbers, in order to keep up with them, and will have to do so frequently in the near future.

"I will only now trouble you with a few remarks on the *Legends of the Panjab*, published in volumes of twelve fasciuli each, the third volume being at this time in progress. The object of the work is to give the *ipsissima verba* of the bards of the Panjab, and so preserve the legends and stories of the people, and at the same time their various dialects. In this way it is hoped that our knowledge both of the ideas of the Panjābi and of their language will be materially increased. The principle adopted is to give the text exactly as taken down from the lips of the bards, with a running translation and notes where necessary. These notes are often the most difficult portion of my task. By way of showing you how vast is the field to be thus worked, I may say that when I began I anticipated having matter enough to fill two volumes; but I have already filled nearly three, and even then I have not given more than half of the material I already have in hand. I may also say that not only in the Panjab, but everywhere in India from Peshawar to Cape Comorin, the bard is an institution,

and that what he has to say is always for many scientific reasons worthy of recording. But there are signs beyond doubt that his popularity is on the decline, and that before very many years more it will be extremely difficult to make researches in this direction. It is indeed a case of now or never. I sincerely hope, therefore, that my work in the Panjab will not remain alone for long. In conclusion I have to say that I have shortly to go to new fields in Burma, where, however, I trust that I shall still be able to carry on the work I have above noticed. At any rate I am much encouraged to go on with it by the kindly manner in which you have listened to me this afternoon."

A vote of thanks having been proposed to Captain Temple by Colonel Fryer, Dr. R. N. Cust rose to second the proposition. He not only thanked the above-named officer for his interesting discourse, but still more for the devotion of his talents and industry, in the midst of heavy official duties, to all subjects connected with India. The accomplished son of an accomplished father, his publications were of the highest importance; and all lovers of India must sincerely hope that Captain Temple might be spared for a long time to prosecute his studies in his new sphere of Mandalay. Dr. Cust alluded to the Choochur Shah Dowlah of the Punjab: parents who had the misfortune to have idiot and ill-formed children, used to consecrate them at the shrine of Shah Dowlah, where they were taken care of. They were called Choochur or Rats, from their extraordinary heads, shaped like a rat; and an enterprising showman, presuming upon the ignorance of the community, exhibited them at Paris in 1851 as Azteks or Earthmen of Central America. This would be impossible since publication of the full account of them in Captain Temple's book.

II. PROCEEDINGS OF ASIATIC OR ORIENTAL SOCIETIES.

Asiatic Society of Bengal, 4th August, 1886.—E. T. Atkinson, Esq., President, in the Chair.

Twenty-four presentations were announced; the election of two Ordinary Members notified; and three candidates for election proposed.

The papers read were:—On the Antiquity of Khotan, translated and compiled from the Tibetan MSS. the "Bod-kye-yigtshang," and the "Dsam-ling Gyeshi," by Babu Sarat Chandra Dâs, C.I.E.; and the same writer's translation of the Tibetan Chronological Table "Re-humig," from the MSS. historical work, "Choos-joong-

jonsang," compiled by Lama Yeshe Palgor of Amdo in 1747 A.D. Both are to be published in the Journal.

It was notified that the Government of Bengal had referred to the Society, for criticisms and suggestions, certain papers relating to an inquiry into the castes and occupations of the people of India now being prosecuted by Mr. Risley, C.S.

3rd November, 1886.—E. T. Atkinson, Esq., President, in the Chair.

Seventy-seven presentations were announced; the election of six Ordinary Members and six withdrawals notified; and one gentleman was proposed for election as an Associate Member. Intimation was also made of the death of three Ordinary and two Associate Members.

The Philological Secretary exhibited three silver coins, being part of a find of Treasure Trove in the Khaira District; and read six Reports on other coins, chiefly silver, found in various places.

There were, moreover, read, a paper on the Land-shells of Perak; two papers on Butterflies, and a paper on Solar Thermometer Observations at Allahabad.

23rd November, 1886 (Special Meeting).—The President on this occasion introduced Mr. C. Stevens, of Brisbane, Australia, who read a paper on "The result of inquiries and observations among the wild Veddahs of Ceylon, as to their religious belief, domestic and social life and intellectual capacity, undertaken with a view to obtaining a vocabulary and such information as would tend to solve the question as to the origin of the race."

The Chairman, in expressing the thanks of the meeting for the paper communicated, remarked on the existence of several kindred hill tribes in Kumaon, Nepal and Assam, who lived exactly like the Veddahs, entertaining a similar belief that they were superior to the natives of the plains. He thought it the duty of one or other of the Society's members to work up further inquiries in regard to the interesting people of whom Mr. Stevens had spoken.

2nd February, 1887.—Bearing this date, the Annual Address of the President has been separately printed. It supplies an interesting *résumé* of the year's events, more or less directly connected with the objects and interests of the Society. Three Englishmen have been selected for special mention from its obituary. These are our late Treasurer, Mr. Edward Thomas, and our late Vice-Presidents, Messrs. Gibbs and Grote. Of the papers in our own

Journal which have attracted attention as dealing with Indian subjects are the contributions of Dr. Edkins, Sir Monier Monier-Williams, Mr. Sewell, Mr. Grierson, Mr. Pincott, and Capt. Talbot. Reference is made to the Oriental Congress at Vienna; and besides noting proceedings in Assam and Burma, the President sketches the local progress made in Semitic and Aryan studies, in Dravidian languages, in Bihari, and Vernacular literature in general. As regards the domain of Natural Science, the concluding sentence of the Address is strongly indicative of the true bent of the Indian mind. An indirect expression of regret at the little interest taken in the study by Native Members, is followed by the statement that "perhaps with the exception of the late Babn Harimohun Mukharji and one gentleman in Bombay, there is not a single native of India, known outside its limits, for proficiency in either Botany or Biology."

Asiatic Society of Japan, Tokyo, October 21st, 1885.—B. H. Chamberlain, Esq., Vice-President, in the Chair.

A paper upon the "Tenets of the Shinshiu or 'True Sect' of Buddhists," by James Troup, Esq., H.M. Consul at Hyōgo, was read by the Corresponding Secretary. It is published in vol. xiv. part i. of the Society's Transactions (Yokohama, June, 1886).

16th December, 1885.—N. J. Hannen, Esq., President, in the Chair.

A paper was read by Dr. C. G. Knott, F.R.S.E., on "The Abaens; and its Scientific and Historic Import." Published in vol. xiv. part i. of the Transactions.

17th February, 1886.—The Rev. Jas. L. Amerman, D.D., Vice-President, in the Chair.

The Rev. J. Summers read a paper on Buddhism and Traditions concerning its Introduction into Japan; and Mr. Chamberlain a short paper entitled, "Past Participle or Gerund? a point of Grammatical Terminology." Both are published in the aforesaid volume.

In reply to a suggestion offered by Capt. Brinkley, the Chairman stated that a measure to enlarge the scope of the Society's Transactions was about to be introduced by the Council, which he hoped would meet the approval and support of Members.

5th May, 1886.—N. J. Hannen, Esq., President, in the Chair.

J. Conder, Esq., read a paper on "The Art of Landscape Gardening in Japan." This is published in part ii. of volume xiv. Transactions.

23rd June, 1886.—N. J. Hannen, Esq., President, in the Chair.
Annual Meeting.

The *résumé* of a French paper on "The Vine in Japan," by Mr. J. Dautremet, was read by the Secretary. It is published in part. ii. vol. xiv. also. After a few remarks, the annual reports were presented and adopted. With reference to the year's obituary, the Society had to express its sorrow at the loss of one of its oldest friends, Rear-Admiral Shadwell, and of a sound scholar, Mr. Thomas R. H. McClatchie, of H.M. Consular service.

Société Asiatique, Paris, 12th November, 1886.—M. E. Rénan, President, in the Chair.

After the election of five new Members and ordinary business, M. Rodet explained certain technical terms used in Arab music, and their corresponding expressions in Greek metre. He also communicated the result of his researches on the mode of demonstrating the fractional parts of a Rupee in the various systems of Indian writing.

10th December, 1886.—M. E. Rénan, President, in the Chair.

After the election of three new members, M. Halévy communicated the contents of a letter he had received from M. Mahler, astronomer in Vienna, under date the 1st December inst., supporting the view put forward by M. Halévy himself, on "The Star, Kakkab Mesri, in Assyrian," published in the previous number of the Society's Journal. The same gentleman made some remarks also on the names of authors most frequently mentioned in the Nabathean Agricultural system of Ibn Wahchia, and on the old Turkish words occurring in certain Syriae inscriptions lately translated by M. Chwolson.

M. Oppert then read the translation of a "Babylonian Astrological Text;" and M. Berger presented on the part of M. and Madame Leopold Delisle, a reprint of the "Notice historique sur MM. Burnouf père et fils," read at the annual public meeting of the "Académie des Sciences et Belles Lettres" on the 18th August, 1854.

American Oriental Society, October 27th, 1886.—The Rev. Dr. Ward, of New York, Vice-President, in the Chair.

After the election of ten corporate members, and other ordinary business, the Corresponding Secretary laid before the Society a parcel of rubbings of inscriptions from Buddhist convents at Fangshan, S.W. of Peking. The substance of these is not considered important, except on account of the Sanskrit *dhāraṇīs* and quota-

tions apparent in one of them; and Mr. Rockhill, who wrote a report on them in detail, adds, that the kind of Sanskrit text which they exhibit appears to be the only one now obtainable in and about the Chinese capital. He hoped, however, to ascertain later on whether there was not something of interest to be discovered at Wu t'ai shan, the oldest sanctuary in Northern China.

An interesting letter from Protap Chandra Roy, dated Calcutta, July 17, 1886, was read; and a scheme of the Rev. Stuart Dodge submitted for founding a School of Biblical Archæology and Philology in the East. Beirut is looked upon as the probable locality of the proposed Institution.

The following is a list of the papers read or accepted for reading:—

1. On the Syriac Part of the Chinese Nestorian Tablet, by Professor I. H. Hall.

2. On a newly discovered Syriac Manuscript, by the same.¹

3. Some Arabic Proverbs; collected by Mr. James Richard Jewett, now in Syria.

4. Two Hymns of the Atharva Veda, by Professor Bloomfield, of Baltimore.

5. Observations on the Condition of Hindu Women according to the Mahābhārata, by Professor Edward W. Hopkins.

6. On Avestan Similes. I. Similes from the Realm of Nature, by Dr. A. V. Williams Jackson.

7. On a Modern Nestorian MS. Ecclesiastical Calendar, by Professor I. H. Hall.

III. CORRESPONDENCE.

1. *The Persian for Rouble.*

THE ELMS, BROOK GREEN, 16th February, 1887.

SIR,—

Dr. Redhouse's letter in your last issue tells us about the word used in Persian for the silver rouble (MANĀT); but I imagine that it would be still more interesting could we trace the ordinary word used in that country for the paper rouble ISKENĀN. I do not

¹ The description of this MS. given in the American Society's Record cannot fail to be interesting to all who seek information on the history of the Nestorian (or Assyrian) Church. Its Syriac title is thus translated: "History of Mar Yawallaha (or in Jacobite, Yaballaha), Catholic (Patriarch) of the East, and of Rabban Sauma, General Bishop (or Deputy General, or Vicar General)." Although there is no date or name of author attached, the latest date referred to in the MS. is November 15, 1629, of the Seleucid era = A.D. 1817.

know where that comes from, and, although I have made many inquiries, was unable in Persia to trace its derivation.

Yours faithfully,

ALEXANDER FINN.

The Secretary of the Royal Asiatic Society.

2. *Notes on Persian Literature from Tehran.*

10th February, 1887.

Since writing my note on Rezá Qulí Khán and his works, further details concerning some of that author's literary productions have reached me as follows: The *Latáif ul-'Árifin* is a Súfí tract in prose mixed with verse. The *Ríáz ul-'Árifin* is divided into a *Muqadimmeh*, called a "*Hadíqeh*," two "*Rózehs*" and a "*Ferdós*"; concluding with a *Khátimch*, called a "*Khuld*." The *Khuld* contains a biography of the author. I hope to be able shortly to announce the publication here, in lithograph, of this biography of the Súfís.

The *Fehras ut-Tavárikh*, a chronology of general Asiatic History, appears to have been lost, save that portion which was lithographed at Tabriz in A.H. 1280, but which has never been distributed. It may here be noted that the "*Muntazem Násirí*" of Muhammed Hasan Khán, Saní' ud-Dowleh, Marághí, which is a Chronology of Historical Events in Asia from A.H. 1 to 1300, and which was issued in lithograph in three folios in A.H. 1298, 1299, and 1300 as a Year Book, is a very similar production. Volumes I. and II. of the "*Muntazem Násirí*" are taken up with general events; to each of these volumes a supplement is added, recording the events of the current year. Volume III. is devoted entirely to the Chronology of the Qájár dynasty. Volume II. contains a translation of a contemporary memoir on the Fall of the Sefávís, originally written in Latin, in the reign of Sháh Sultán Husain Sefáví, by a European who had spent twenty-six years at Isfahán. This memoir was translated into Ottoman Turkish by Ibráhím, and entitled "*'Ibrát Námeh*." The Persian version is by 'Abd ur-Razzáq Beg, author of the Persian original of Harford-Brydges' "*Dynasty of the Kájárs*." The same volume also contains an extract from Mírzá 'Abd un-Nebí Behbeháni's "*Tárikh Afghání*," also a contemporary record of the Afghán invasion of Persia.

The works of 'Ubaid Lakání, edited by M. Ferté of the French Embassy at Constantinople, and printed in the clear and elegant type of the Abú az-Ziá press at Constantinople—for private circulation only—have just appeared in one volume, dated 1303 A.H.

The Tarjumán ul-Lughat of Muhammad Yahya Qazvíní is in the course of being re-lithographed here. This ponderous work, which is a Persian version of the Qámus ul-Lughat of Majd ud-Dín Abú Táhir Muhammed B. Ya'qúb ul-Fírúzábádí nsh-Shírází, was completed by order of Sháh Sultán Husain Sefáví, in A.H. 1117. The text being now re-lithographed is that prepared and published by 'Alí Asghar B. 'Abd ul-Jabbár Isfahání in A.H. 1273.

The "Tabsiret ul-'Avám" of Murtezá Rází ul-Husainí, which is an exposition of the principal creeds of the East, has just been lithographed at Tehrán, dated A.H. 1304, for the first time. Bound up with the Tabsireh is a re-litho of Muhammad B. Sulaiman Tenekábuní's "Qisas ul-'Ulamá," a biography of the 'Ulamá, which was originally lithographed in A.H. 1290.

MacGahan's "Khiva" has been translated into Persian from the Ottoman Turkish version.

SIDNEY J. A. CHURCHILL.

The Secretary of the Royal Asiatic Society.

3. Assyrian Names of Domestic Animals.

Just before going to press we are favoured with the following note:



Among the names of animals found in the Assyrian and Babylonian lists it is, perhaps, noteworthy that many of those designating beasts of burden seem to be changes (as it were) rung on the roots *m-r*, *b-r*, *p-r*, *b-l*, and *p-l*; trilateralized, however, by the addition or insertion of a weak radical or vowel.

The following is a list giving most of those hitherto found:

AKKADIAN.

ASSYRIAN.

𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	𒌦 𒌦 𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	<i>mu-u-ru</i> (<i>mûru</i>), young ass.
𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	𒌦 𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	<i>mi-i-ru^m</i> (<i>mîru</i>), young ox.
𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	<i>bi-i-ru^m</i> (<i>bîru</i>), ox.
𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	𒌦 𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	<i>pi-i-ru^m</i> (<i>pîru</i>)
	𒌦 𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	<i>pi-i-lu</i> (<i>pîlu</i>) } elephant.
𒌦 𒌦	𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	<i>bu-lu^m</i> (<i>bûlu</i>), animal.
𒌦 𒌦	𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	<i>i-me-ru</i> (<i>imêru</i>), ass (𐎶𐎵𐎶𐎵).
𒌦	𒌦 𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	<i>im-me-ru</i> (<i>immeru</i>), sheep.
𒌦 𒌦 𒌦 𒌦 𒌦 𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	𒌦 𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	<i>i-bi-[ru^m]</i> (<i>ibiru</i>), a road-bull (𐎶𐎵𐎶𐎵).
𒌦 𒌦 𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	𒌦 𒌦 𒌦 𒌦	<i>i-bi-lu</i> (<i>ibîlu</i>), an old ass(?).

To these may be added the words *parru* and *parrat*, apparently 'bull' and 'cow' respectively. It is probable, also, that the Assyrian for 'son' *āplu* (Akk. *ibila*), and 'male child' *māru* (fem. *mārtu*, Akk. *dum*), come from some of the above roots.¹ The word *ibiru* (in Akkadian *am-si ġarran* 'the horned bull of the road') is even found in Egyptian under the forms  *ābar*,  *ābari* 'an animal imported from Syria' (Chab. voy. p. 87, Brugsch, Pierret, Lauth, who all compare the Hebrew אֲבִיר, Ps. xxii. 13, אֲבִירֵי בָשָׁן, 'bulls of Bashan'). The word was probably imported into Egypt with the animal.

THEO. G. PINCHES.

IV. OBITUARY NOTICES.

Although the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society is neither privileged nor required to place on record in its Obituary Notices the services of statesmen and others who pass away from the living circle of distinguished public characters, on the mere plea that they happen to have been enrolled among its subscribers, it is nevertheless within its competence to give expression to its profound regret for the loss, and respect for the memory, of one who, like the late *Earl of Iddesleigh*, was not only a Member of eighteen years, but ever a keen promoter of education and literary research, and at one time Secretary of State for India. To add that the sentiment of the Society is universal, is not, in the present case, the utterance of a conventional platitude, but the assertion of a sober truth.

By the death of *Sir Walter Elliot* on the 1st of March, and of *Mr. Alexander Wylie* on the 6th of February, European Orientalists have lost two remarkable members of their body, each eminent in his particular sphere. As regards the first, although a brief notice of his career was in type, it has been thought advisable to await a fuller Memoir promised for the July number of the Journal. A similar course will be pursued in the case of the second, who, though not a Member of the Royal Asiatic Society, seems to merit a careful and substantial record.

According to the *Athenæum* of the 11th of December, the Indian papers report the death of *Babu Prasanna Kumar Sarvadhikari*, for

¹ The ancient Babylonians seem to have derived *āplu* or *āblu* from the root *āpūlu* 'to bring again,' *pu'ul āppulu* 'to produce.' The Akkadian *ibila* is therefore a borrowed word.

many years Principal of the Sanskrit College at Calcutta, and author of several mathematical treatises in the Bengali language. The same paper, on the 18th idem, announces also the death of *Dr. John Nicholson*, of Penrith, translator of Ewald's "Hebrew Grammar," and, from the Arabic, of the History of the "Fatimite Dynasty in Africa."

V. EXCERPTA ORIENTALIA.

The third number of the first part, vol. lv., *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, contains Mr. Theobald's "Notes on some of the Symbols on the Coins of Kunanda"; an article on the "Mina tribe of Jéypur," by Kavi Ráj Shyámal Dás, translated by Babu Ram Prasad; Mr. C. J. Rodgers, on "Coins supplementary to Mr. Thomas' Chronicles of the Pathan Kings of Dehli"; and Babu Sarat Chandra Dás, on "Buddhist and other Legends about Khoten." As both the contributions of the European writers relate to coins, the brief notice which can be given to them in these pages will be under "Numismatics." The second paper is the outcome of an inquiry concerning the Minas of the Kherár, who are compared with the Bhíls of the hilly tracts. As to their origin, the contributor gives what would appear to be the generally received opinion, but forms his own separate conclusions on the subject. With regard to Khoten, the scholarly local knowledge of Sarat Chandra Dás makes all he has to say worthy of attention.

The *Journal Asiatique*, huitième série, tome viii., has in its No. 3 (Novembre-Décembre, 1886), the final pages both of M. Sénart's study of the Piyaḍasi Inscriptions, and of M. Sauvaire's materials for a history of Muhammadan Numismatics and Metrology. In the *Nouvelles et Mélanges*, M. Pavet de Courteille reviews Vambéry's *Das Türkenvolk in seinen Ethnologischen und Ethnographischen Beziehungen*; M. Rubens Duval contributes an instructive notice of M. Chwolson's *Syrische Grabenschriften aus Semirjetschie*; and M. Oppert, under the head, "Kakkab Mesri," argues in favour of his own particular version of a particular Assyrian inscription on a broken obelisk. No. 1 of vol. ix. contains "Fragments d'un roman d'Alexandre, en dialecte Thébain," by M. Urbain Bouriant; extracts from "Tchou-tze-tsieh-yao-tchuen," a résumé of the essential principles of the philosophy of Tchou-tze, bearing especially upon morals and the laws of propriety, by the learned Professor De Harlez of Louvain; and M. Clermont Ganneau's "Stèle de Méša," commenting upon the inscription of the Moabite king Mesa, as interpreted by MM. Smend and Socin (vide *Academy*, November 27).

Journal of the China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society, Vol. xix. Part 2. In his article on Yuen Fszts'ai, M. Imbault-Huart displays an unrivalled knowledge of the most difficult department

of Chinese literature. But although the Chinese poet may have been justified in singing of himself, "sous les trois derniers empereurs (K'anghsi, Yangchêng and K'ienlung), qui peut m'être comparé en littérature?" his poetry, judging by M. Imbault-Huart's examples, hardly rises above the level of neatly-turned *vers de société*. In the same part is a dissertation by Mr. T. W. Kingsmill upon the *Sérica* of Ptolemy, containing much valuable and curious information, somewhat spoilt, perhaps, by a too random philology that takes no account of the achievements the last decade or two have witnessed in philological science.

Parts 1 and 2 of vol. xiv. *Transactions of the Asiatic Society of Japan*, exhibit signs of life and vigour. The first contains Mr. Troup's article "On the tenets of the Shinshiu or 'True' Sect of Buddhists;" Mr. Cargill Knott's paper "On the Abacus in its Historic and Scientific Aspects;" "Buddhism, and Traditions concerning its Introduction into Japan," by the Rev. James Summers; and Mr. Basil Hall Chamberlain's "Past Participle or Gerund? a point of grammatical terminology." In the second are "A list of works, essays, etc., relating to Japan," compiled by Carlo Giussani—a useful contribution, worthy the inspection of Japanese scholars, students, and bibliophiles in all parts of the world, who might supply possible omissions; "The Art of Landscape Gardening in Japan," by Mr. J. Conder, with which may be coupled Mr. Dautremere's "Situation de la Vigue" in the same country; and an Aino-English Vocabulary, compiled by the Rev. J. Summers.

The following *fasciculi* of the *Bibliotheca Indica* (New Series, Nos. 575 to 585) have reached the Royal Asiatic Society during the quarter.

Sanskrit.—1. The *Lalita-Vistara*, or memoirs of the early life of Sákya Siñha, translated from the original by Rájendralála Mitra, LL.D., C.I.E. Fasc. iii.

2. *Chaturvarga-Chiutámani*, by Hemádri, ed. Paṇḍita Yogesvara Smṛitiratna and Paṇḍita Kámákhyánátha Tarkaratna. Vol. iii. part i. *Paríśeshakhanda*. Fasc. xiv.

3. The *Nirukta*, ed. Paṇḍit Satyavrata Samaśrami. Vol. iii. Fasc. v. vi.

4. The *Aśvavaidyaka*, a treatise on the diseases of the Horse, compiled by Jayadatta Sûri; ed. Kaviráj Umeśa Chandra Gupta Kaviratna. Fasc. ii.

5. *Manutíkâsangraha*, ed. Julius Jolly, Ph.D. Fasc. ii.

6. The *Sranta Sûtra* of Sāṅkhāyana, ed. Dr. Hillebrandt. Vol. i. fasc. iii.

Prakrit.—The *Uvāsagadasāo*, ed. Dr. A. F. Rudolf Hoernle. Fasc. ii.

Hindi.—The *Prithirāja Rāsau* of Chand Bardai, ed. in original old Hindi, Dr. A. F. Rudolf Hoernle. Part. ii. fasc. v.

Persian.—*Zafar-námah*, by Mauláná Sharfuddín 'Alī Yazdí, ed. Maulavi Muhammad Hahdád. Vol. i. fasc. v. vi.

A later instalment consists of the following (New Series, Nos. 586 to 595):—

Sanskrit.—1. The *Vṛihannāradiya Purāṇa*, ed. Paṇḍit Hṛishīkeśa Śāstri. Fasc. ii.

2. The *Aśvavaidyaka* of Jayadatta Śūri, above edition. Fasc. iii.

3. The *Vivādaratnākara*, ed. Paṇḍit Dinanātha Vidyālankāra. Fasc. iii. iv.

4. The *Kūrma Purāṇa*, ed. Nīlmaṇi Mukhopādhyāya Nyāyā-lankāra. Fasc. ii.

5. *Tattva Chintāmaṇi*, ed. Paṇḍita Kamākhyānātha Tarkaratna. Fasc. v.

6. *Sthavirāvalīcharita* or *Parīśiṣṭaparvan*, being an Appendix of the *Trishastīśālākāpuruṣācharita*, by Hemachandra, ed. H. Jacobi. Fasc. iv.

7. The *Nirukta* with Commentaries, above edition. Vol. iv. fasc. v.

8. *Chaturvarga-Chintāmaṇi*, by Hemadri, above edition and part. Fasc. xv.

9. *Nārada Smṛiti*, ed. Julius Jolly, fasc. iii. (complete).

And four numbers of the Old Series (252 to 255), being a Biographical Dictionary of Persons who knew Muhammad, by Ibn Hajar, ed. (in Arabic) Maulawī Abdu'l-Haī. Fasc. xxviii. to xxxi. vol. iii. Nos. 8, 9, 10, and vol. ii. No. 9.

No better proof of the intellectual vitality of the Asiatic Society of Bengal could well be given than these recently printed Sanskrit octavos, covering 900 pages, exclusive of any English Preface or Introductory remarks; and to these may be added 584 like pages of Arabic.

Archæology.—Among the papers contained in the second Fasciculus of M. Clermont-Ganneau's *Recueil d'Archéologie Orientale*, is the article headed "Mané, Thécél, Pharès et le Festin de Balthasar," noted last quarter in the contents of the *Journal Asiatique*, tome viii. No. 1. Another contribution to the *Recueil*, on the unpublished Inscriptions of Palmyra, independently of its intrinsic value and interest, is rendered especially attractive by excellent illustrations. The whole publication adds honour even to the well-known reputation of M. Leroux.

Tome iv. of *L'Histoire de l'Art dans l'Antiquité*, by Mons. Perrot and Chipiez, containing the three divisions Sardaigne, La Judée, and Les Hétéens, is a splendid volume, full of interest and attraction. Judæa has many references to the work of the Palestine Exploration Fund, and the names of Wilson and Warren are of constant recurrence in its pages. There is apparent in them a lament that so little of Jerusalem prior to the Captivity—the Jerusalem of the Kings and greater Prophets—has been restored; but no want of acknowledgment for the perseverance and energy of those who undertook and carried out the long and continuous exploration. "Sans l'intérêt que le public anglais porte à tout ce qui, de près ou de loin, se rattache aux études bibliques, jamais on n'aurait eu l'idée d'entreprendre

des fouilles aussi dispendieuses, aussi laborieuses, aussi dangereuses que celles de Mons. Warren et Wilson," is a sentence which may be quoted as characteristic of French opinion; and the estimate is one at which Englishmen should have no reason to demur. Professors Wright and Sayce are largely quoted in the division appropriated to "Les Hétéens," subdivided again into four chapters as follows:—1. Hittites: their history and writing. 2. Northern Syria: Eastern Hittites. 3. Asia Minor: Western Hittites. 4. Monuments of Hittite Art in Asia, on this side the Halys.

The second part of Mr. Growse's "Indian Architecture of to-day, as exemplified in the new buildings in the Bulandshahr district," is not only of interest from a number of well-executed photographs, with descriptive letterpress; but its Preface and Epilogue invite the sympathy of æsthetic and art-loving readers—especially those whose opinions are not hampered by forced allegiance to Departments of State. Mr. Growse has done admirable service to the cause he so earnestly advocates; and the architectural results of his labours at Bulandshahr are alone monuments of a taste and industry on the exercise of which both he and the district may be warmly felicitated. Among the photographs, the "Garden Gate" and the "Colvin Gate" should arrest the attention of the most phlegmatic observer.

The Quarterly Statement of the *Palestine Exploration Fund*, published in January, contains the full report of the Anniversary Meeting held on the 22nd June, at which the Archbishop of York, President of the Society, took the Chair. After his Grace's impressive address, Mr. Glaisher, Sir George Grove, Sir Charles Wilson, Captain Conder, and Canon Tristram spoke well and to the purpose; Mr. John MacGregor followed with the relation of an appropriate incident of exploration; and Professor Hayter Lewis, strong not only in general acquaintance with his theme, but in the fact of having paid a second and recent visit to Jerusalem, closed the discussion with some interesting observations. Among these may be here noted "a tribute of respect to the memory of Mr. Fergusson," who is called "one of our most zealous of Biblical scholars," who "devoted an immense amount of energy and literary research to the subject," and regarding whom all would bear witness "to the great learning, the great skill, and the great earnestness with which he pursued his work." Besides the Report, there are many valuable contributions to the Journal by MM. Schumacher and Clermont-Ganneau, Sir Charles Warren, M. Conrad Schick, and others, some accompanied by well-executed illustrations.

In connection with the work of the Fund aforesaid, mention may be made of a paper read in January before the Jews' College Literary Society, by Marcus N. Adler, Esq., under the presidency of Sir Charles Warren, who referred to the lecture as throwing much light "on the ancient customs and traditions of Jerusalem."

The *Indian Antiquary* for December contains "A Selection of

Kanarese Ballads," "Sanskrit and Old-Kanarese Inscriptions, Nos. 166 and 167," and "Some Fantastic Characters," by Mr. Fleet; the Rev. S. Beal's remarks "On the Age and Writings of Nagarjuna Bodhisattva;" a paper on the "Hathasni Inscription of the Mehara Chief Thepaka," with a note by Mr. Fleet; Pramada-Dasa Mitra's Sanskrit translation of the British National Anthem; together with an instalment of Mr. Patlibhai D. H. Wadai's "Folk Lore in Western India," and one of Pandit S. M. Natesa Sastri's "Folk Lore in Southern India." In the January number, Mr. Fleet resumes his exposition of Sanskrit and Old-Kanarese Inscriptions, with an analysis of the "Kauthem Plates of Vikrama-Ditta V.;" the December articles on Folk Lore are continued; and there are contributions on "The Dakhan in the time of Gautama-Buddha," by the Rev. Thomas Foulkes; the "Study of Asiatic Symbolism," by Mr. Murray-Aynsley; the "Grammar of Sakatayana," by Prof. Kielhorn; and on the Gipsy Language and People, by Mrs. Grierson and Mr. Grierson respectively. The "Miscellanea" are learned and instructive, and there is a Book Notice referring to the *Kavya-mala*, "a collection of old and rare Sanskrit Kâvyas, Nâtakas, Champûs, Bhâṇas, Prahāsanas, Chhandas, Alaṅkāras, etc., edited by Pandita Durgaprasada and Kashinatha Panduranga Paraba."

Hebrew and Semitic Languages.—The *Athenæum* of December 4 has an interesting paper by Professor Neubauer on "Azazel and Goat Worship." That the word Azazel signified a pagan divinity is not perhaps so clearly shown as that the goat itself had a sacred character among Canaanitish tribes; but the names En-gedi, one of the six cities in the wilderness, Gadi, the father of Menahem, and Gaddiel, the son of Sodi, especially the first, may bring evidence to that effect. The writer says that from the Mishnah we learn only that "the Azazel was considered by the tradition of the Rabbis to be a steep mount, which is called Tsouk. In the book of Enoch Azazel is turned into a demon."

The *Academy* of 25th December has a contribution by the Rev. J. Davies on the word "Kipôd," found only in Isaiah xiv. 23, xxxiv. 11; and in Zephaniah ii. 14. "In our Authorized Version," he writes, "it is translated 'bittern,' and in the Revised Version, following the Septuagint, 'porcupine.' Rabbi Kimchi says that it is the name of a bird that dwelt in desolate places, but Rabbi Joseph says that its proper meaning is 'tortoise,' and Rabbi Salomon wavers between the meanings of 'hedgehog' and 'owl.' Buxtorf asserts that it was a name of the Anataria, a kind of eagle that dwells in marshy places. The Arabic version of the word is Al-houbara, which is said by Shaw to be the name of a bird nearly as large as a capon." Mr. Davies is of opinion that the word is a form of the Sanskrit *Kapôta*, "a kind of pigeon that has always been a bird of ill-omen." This recalls the Persian *kabûtar*, a word well known throughout India; while the *houbara* (*ubâra*) is a familiar sound to many Indian sportsmen who are acquainted with the species of bustard otherwise called "*tilûr*."

"Some Books of Hebrew Philology," being works by Dr. Delitzsch, M. Jastrow, and Dr. Wünsche, afford the reviewer an opportunity of recording in the *Academy* of the 5th February certain learned and appropriate remarks, worthy the attention of the Hebrew student, who will not improbably be led to consult the original books brought to notice.

Dr. Neubauer's labours in compiling the Catalogue of the Hebrew Manuscripts in the Bodleian Library form the subject of an appreciative review in the *Athenæum* of the 18th December. To the same article belongs a notice of forty Facsimiles that accompany the Catalogue, which include "the well-known autograph of the great Maimonides, and, for completeness, the curious script recently discovered by Dr. Harkavy." In the next succeeding issue of the *Athenæum* is the statement that Dr. Steinschneider has completed his Bibliographical Supplement to Benjacob's "Treasure of Hebrew Books" (Wilna, 1880), which is arranged alphabetically according to titles.

Arabic.—The *Academy* of 4th December has a favourable notice of Mukkadasi's Description of Syria, as translated by Mr. Guy Le Strange. It is one of the publications of the Palestine Pilgrims' Text Society, and a fair specimen of the good work they have set themselves to perform. In the following week, Miss Edwards reviews Lady Burton's edition of her husband's Arabian Nights, coming to the conclusion that a large debt of gratitude is due by the public "for the happy thought which places an inaccessible work at the disposal of all sorts and conditions of readers."

Sir Richard Burton writes to the *Academy* of the 22nd January, to impart the discovery of the original text of the "Zayn al-Asnam and Aladdin," both of which so-called "Gallandian tales" are contained in two folios written in a modern Syrian hand, recently purchased by M. Hermann Zotenberg, of the Bibliothèque Nationale.

The *Athenæum* of 25th December says that among the MSS. brought by Dr. Harkavy from the East is a large fragment of an Aramaic text of Karaite casuistic rules (Halakhah) which may possibly turn out to be a fragment of the 'Fadlakhah' of Anan (the founder of the Karaite sect).

Fasciculus ii. of Part i. of Howell's Grammar of the Classical Arabic Language merits more than the hurried notice which could be given in the current number of the Journal. Analysis of this important work must therefore be deferred for the present. Meanwhile, it may be stated that it meets with approval in the *Calcutta Review* for January, and is pronounced in that periodical to be in some respects superior to the Grammars of Forbes and Palmer.

The *Athenæum* of 1st January reports that Dr. Simeone Levi has commenced the publication of the 'Hieroglyphic-Coptic-Hebrew Vocabulary,' for which the Accademia dei Lincei at Rome awarded him the great quadrennial prize founded by the King of Italy. The Italian Ministry of Public Instruction contributes £80 to this important publication.

Assyriology. — The first instalment of Tiele's *Babylonisch-Assyrische Geschichte*, forming part of a series of "Hand Books of Ancient History," under publication at Gotha, has recently been issued, and is reviewed in the *Academy* of the 1st January, a number which contains also mention of M. Berthelot's paper read before the Académie des Inscriptions, on "Certain Metals and Minerals used in Ancient Assyria and Chaldæa." One vase of pure antimony, and a statuette of copper devoid of tin, are cited as remarkable specimens of unalloyed metal brought home by M. Sarzec.

M. Bertin, in a letter to the *Academy* dated 8th January, answers a question put by Dr. Edkins, as to whether the Babylonians had a zodiac of twenty-eight signs. He says that they never made use of a zodiac of twelve signs, but had thirty divisions of the ecliptic, and that he had found in the British Museum a tablet giving their names. The correspondence is continued by Mr. G. Brown in a letter from Barton-on-Humber, dated January 24, published in the *Academy* of the 29th idem.

According to a notice in the *Athenæum* of the 8th January, M. Strassmaier's book (Leipzig, Hinrichs), with the bilingual title *Alphabetisches Verzeichniss der Assyrischen und Akkadischen Wörter der Cuneiform Inscriptions of Western Asia*, vol. ii, contains about 10,600 words "gathered together during the course of several years' study of the published and unpublished cuneiform texts preserved in the British Museum, Liverpool Museum, and elsewhere; and the other volumes of the 'Cuneiform Inscriptions of Western Asia' have been laid under contribution."

The next part of this Journal will contain an article by Mr. T. G. Pinches, upon the document known as "the Babylonian Chronicle." This ancient record (of which a paraphrase has been published in the Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archæology) has a peculiar interest, and will be found to be of great value to Bible students. It treats principally of affairs in Babylonia, beginning with the reign of Nabonassar; but refers also incidentally to Assyria and Elam, a part of the chronology of which last-named country it enables us to restore. The chronicle forms part of an ancient record, extending from the earliest to the latest period of Babylonian history, and was probably meagre at first, but given in greater detail as time went on, and the records were more carefully kept. Of the complete series, if such could be obtained, it is difficult to over-estimate the value.

Smith (S. A.), *Die Keilschrift Texte Assurbanipal*, part 1, is announced among new publications.

Two more numbers of the *Babylonian and Oriental Record* have given a kind of stability to this new record of the "Antiquities of the East"; more especially as the last issue shows an increase of nine declared collaborators, making thirty-six in all. In No. 4, for October, Professor De Harlez continues his "Iranian Studies;" Mr. Pinches has three "Babylonian Notes," treating of two

kings—Gaddâs and Tarzia—and the Deities Ilan and Har; Mr. Tyler discourses on the “Babylonian idea of a disembodied Soul,” and Professor de Laeouperie asks, “Did Cyrus introduce Writing into India?”—seeing in the word “Kharôsti,” used in the *Lalita-vistara*, a probable recipient of the name of the Persian monarch. No. 5 contains “A Babylonian Land Grant,” interpreted by Mr. Boscawen; a suggested illustration by a Babylonian seal of a verse in the New Testament, by the Rev. W. A. Harrison; a continuation of the Pahlavi study by Prof. De Harlez; “A Fragment of a Babylonian Tithe-List,” by Mr. Pinches; and a “Note on Babylonian Astronomy,” by Mr. W. T. Lynn. In the concluding notices, promise is held out of interesting discussions.

The *Zeitschrift für Assyriologie* for November contains, irrespective of the Sprachsaal, Reviews, and Lists of recent publications, the following articles:—1. Ueber einen Nebukadnezar-cylinder des Berliner Museums, von Hugo Winckler. 2. Grammatische Bemerkungen zu den Annalen Asurnasirpal's, von Ernst Müller. 3. The Hittite Boss of Tarkondemos, by A. H. Sayce. 4. Bemerkungen zu einigen Sumerischen und Assyrischen Verwandtschaftswörtern, von P. Jensen. 5. Mene tekelliphar, von Th. Nöldeke, with reference to M. Clermont-Ganneau's interpretation in the *Journal Asiatique*. 6. Kleinere Assyriologische Notizen, von Friedrich Delitzsch. 7. Two unedited Texts, K. 6 and K. 7, by S. A. Smith. In the “Sprachsaal,” M. Oppert has something to say on the “Mul Kaksidi,” or *voxata questio* of the Star, to which allusion has already been made.

Aramaic.—Dedicated to his much-respected teacher, Nöldeke, the “Aramaischen Fremdwörter im Arabischen” of Siegmund Fraenkel, mentioned among the new issues of last quarter, exhibits the learned treatment of a subject which tells of a labour of love, as of scholarship.

Ethiopic.—Among late announcements is: Praetorius, F., *Grammatica Æthiopia cum paradigmatis, litteratura, Chrestomathia et Glossaria*. Karlsruhe, Reuther.

Hittite.—Capt. Conder, so well known in connection with the Palestine Exploration Fund, whose recent book on Syrian Stone Lore (reviewed in the *Athenæum* of 26 February) merits special recognition, has lately come forward as the exponent of Hittite inscriptions. The result of his later inquiries will be looked for with interest by those who read his report on the subject to the *Times*.

Aryan Languages.—*Sanskrit*.—In introducing Dr. Speijer's *Sanskrit Syntax* (Brill, Leyden) to English students, Dr. Kern pronounces it to be the “first complete syntax of classical Sanskrit,” expressing, at the same time, his hope that it may be “the forerunner of a similar work, as copious and conscientious, on Vaidik Syntax.”

The *Revue Critique* of December 6 notices Dr. W. Solf's *Die Kasmir-Reension der Pancâçikâ*, with acknowledgment of its

usefulness as an aid to the critical examination of the story of Bilhana, author of the *Vikramāṅkadevacarita*—or rather of the circumstances attending the composition of his poem of fifty stanzas (*pañcāṣat*); but demurs to the unqualified acceptance of Dr. Bühler's Kashmirian MS. as disposing of the whole question. According to some, the poet was condemned to death for a love-intrigue with his fair and royal pupil: but the later evidence would show his offence to have been forgiven. M. Sylvain Lévi, the critic of the *Revue*, considers the point still unsettled.

Parts i. and ii. of the eighth volume of Rajendralāla Mitra's "Notices of Sanskrit MSS." have reached the Society's Library during the past quarter; also the following, received from the Secretary of State for India:—Commentary of Govindarāja on *Manāva-Dharma Śāstra*, edited with notes by Rāo Sāhib Vishvanāth Nārāyan Mandlik, C.S.I. Parts xxi. xxiii. xxviii. and xxix. of "The Mahabharata of Krishna-Dwaipayana Vyasa, translated into English Prose," stated to be "published and distributed, chiefly *gratis*, by Protap Chandra Roy," should, moreover, be acknowledged.

Among new publications are noticed:—Panini's *Grammatik*: hrsg. übers. erläutert. etc. v. O. Böhtlingk, 6 Lfg. Leipzig, Haessel. Speijer, J. S., *Sanskrit Syntax*. Leiden, Brill.

Persian.—In the *Athenæum* of December 11th, the reviewer of "Persia as it is," by Dr. C. J. Wills, says:—"These bright sketches of Persian life form a worthy continuation of the preceding volume, and augur a successful career in the paths already trodden." The same book is approvingly noticed by Mr. C. E. Wilson in the *Academy* of Jan. 15. And of Mr. Benjamin's "Persia and the Persians," noticed in the last number of the R.A.S. Journal, while the *Athenæum* (15th January) recommends it as "a gift book combining novelty, instruction, and a graceful exterior," the *Academy* admits that, with certain drawbacks, it is "interspersed with much interesting and trustworthy information."

Mr. F. F. Arbuthnot's "Persian Portraits" is a small volume intended to convey, in a simple and popular form, such information on Persian history, literature, manners and customs, and politics, as would be useful to those who may not care or have leisure to become Oriental scholars or students. As regards "literature" there is not only supplied a sketch of the subject generally, but the whole question itself occupies more than three-fourths of the book. A separate notice is given to each of seven Greater and fourteen Lesser Poets (a classification which might, perhaps, be disputed), and the various forms of Persian poetry and some popular tales and stories current in the country are summarized for the reader.

The first part of *Mittelpersische Studien*, by C. Salaman, has been published among the "Mélanges Asiatiques" from the Bulletin de l'Académie Impériale des Sciences de St. Pétersbourg, tome ix. It treats of the Ganjeshaya-gan, Andarze Atrepât Mārāspandān, Mádigāne Chatrang, and Andarze Khusroe Kávātān, by P. D. B.

Sanjana, mentioned in the R.A.S. Journal for October under the head of Pahlavi. The original text in that language is transliterated in Zend characters, and translated into Gujaráti and English.

Turkish.—The first part of the second volume of M. Barbier de Meynard's "Dictionnaire Turc-Français" has appeared, and brings up the purely lexicographic process to the verb *صانق*. Three more parts will complete the work, the condition of which is to supplement heretofore published dictionaries by giving: 1. words of Turkish origin; 2. Arabic and Persian words used in Osmanli; 3. proverbs and popular forms of expression; and 4. a geographical vocabulary applicable to the latest distribution of territory throughout the Ottoman Empire.

The Turkish Race.—In his retrospect of the year for Hungary, contributed to the *Athenæum*, under "Continental Literature in 1886," Professor Vambéry says with reference to his work bearing the above designation ('A Török Faj'): "I have tried to comprise in that book partly my own personal experiences gathered during my travels among the Turkish-speaking races of the world, partly the notes I collected from reading Turkish, Persian, Arabic and Russian descriptions of the people, extending from the banks of the Lena to the shores of the Adriatic."

It may interest readers of the Journal who took note of the literary controversy referred to in page 467 (July, 1886), to learn the nature of M. Vambéry's reply to M. Hunfalvy on the Turko-Tatár and Finn-Ugric question. The substance of his statement made before the Academy of Sciences at Budapest on the 22nd November last was as follows:—His opponent looked upon language alone as the principal, if not sole guide, in investigating the origin of a nation; though it is evident that language was of a changeable and transient character. Numerous instances might be adduced of a purely Iranian people speaking an Ural-Altaic language or *vice versâ*. It was doubtful whether M. Hunfalvy could succeed in proving to the satisfaction of all that the Magyar language belonged to the Finn-Ugric type, and, if he could, it did not follow that the Magyar nation must be of Finn-Ugric origin. His own inquiries confirmed him in the opinion that the Magyars were "an offshoot from the Turkish stem." The very name "Magyar" was an ethnical rather than political expression, characterizing a warlike, conquering, Turkish host, making its way from the southern slopes of the Altaic mountains towards the river Volga. The word 'Magyar,' in the Turkish language *majar* (مجاړ), meant 'lord,' 'sovereign,' 'commander,' and in reality this was the "appellation by which the Turkoman and the Khirgiz of to-day called their foreign masters. These children of the wilderness addressed their Russian conquerors as: 'majar-im, cajar-im,' meaning 'my lord!'"

China.—The *Académie des Inscriptions et Belles Lettres*, at their sitting of the 19th November last, conferred the Stanislas Julien Prize for the best work relating to China, on Father Séraphin

Couvreur, for his Franco-Chinese Dictionary (Ho-kien-fou, 1884). Professor Terrien de Lacouperie furnishes an interesting paper to the *Academy* of February 19th, on "A new writing from Western China." In it he gives an account of the Shui-kia or "Water People," from whom the MS. in question is said to have been obtained.

Cochin-China.—The May-June number of *Excursions et Reconnaissances* opens with a continuation of M. Aymonier's Notes on Annam, the scope of which the writer explains to have been considerably narrowed by the events of July, 1885. So far, however, as the inquiry has been pursued, he has succeeded in putting together much valuable information both on the country and people visited. M. Aymonier has added a further paper on the method of transcription adopted for Europeanising the native written character. The other articles in this number are the short account of a trip by steamer in the Mékong, by M. Reveillière, and a "Dictionnaire-Stieng"—being a collection of 2500 words of the Stieng language—together with a description of the Stiengs of Brolam, by Father Azémar, Missionnaire Apostolique. Both of these contributions are to be continued, and promise information of a novel and useful kind.

Burma.—Although Mr. Smeaton's book on the *Loyal Karens of Burma* meets with carefully directed criticism in the *Academy* of Jan. 29th, those who are not acquainted with local Burmese history may find in the small volume referred to much interesting matter about an interesting people.

Trübner's American, European and Oriental Literary Record, No. 231, states, with reference to the collection of manuscripts lately in the possession of King Theebaw, and now in the India Office: "It is due to the energy and influence of Dr. Rost that this invaluable treasure was secured for the Library entrusted to his care, and he has thereby at once succeeded in making the India Office Collection of Pali and Burmese MSS. by far the most important one in existence. He can boast of having added to an already extensive and valuable collection over 500 beautiful and costly MSS., of which about 200 are Burmese and the remainder Pali. While many of the Burmese MSS. are translations of, or commentaries on, Pali books, others are peculiarly interesting, particularly because they treat almost exclusively of the modern history of Burma and Siam."

Japan.—M. Guimet, whose interest in the life and art of Japan is well known, has printed a lecture he gave some time since at the Cercle St. Simon on the *Theatre in Japan*, which is well worthy of perusal, and gives a clear and picturesque account of the strange phase of Japanese manners presented by the stage and audience of a *shibaya*. He does not, however, explain the etymology of the word used for a theatrical representation, an etymology full of interest and significance. *Shiba-i* means simply 'amid the grass,' and carries us back to the time when spectacular exhibitions were

held *al fresco* on a cleared spot of ground, while the audience squatted around 'amid the grass' or bushes. So, only a few centuries ago, the Cornishmen assembled in their 'rounds' to witness the miracle plays which Norris's labours have preserved. M. Guimet's account ends with a brief statement of the plots of three popular tragedies, of which one, that of the Chiushingura or Loyal League, founded on the story of the 47 Rōnins, so well told by Mr. Mitford, has been translated into English. It may be doubted whether M. Guimet's estimate of the Japanese theatre is not a somewhat extravagant one; but it is certain that many Japanese comic actors show great artistic power, and excite among their own countrymen a quite boundless enthusiasm. M. Guimet's *brochure*, it should be added, is embellished by characteristic illustrations, drawn by that inimitable delineator of Japanese life, Félix Regamey—the duett of dancing girls on p. 30, in especial, represents the peculiar charm of the 'musumé' with singular fidelity and grace.

The *Academy* of December 11th has a long and appreciative notice, by Mr. Cosmo Monkhouse, of Mr. Anderson's *Pictorial Arts of Japan*, and *Descriptive and Historical Catalogue of a Collection of Japanese and Chinese Paintings in the British Museum*. Parts iii. and iv. of the former form also the subject of an elaborate review in the *Athenæum* of the 26th February.

In the *Academy* of February 26th, it is stated that Bunyiu Nanjio, now Professor of Sanskrit at Tokio, had been sent by his Monastery on a scientific and religious mission to India. Having come to Oxford some years ago to study Sanskrit under Prof. Max Müller, he received, on leaving India, the honorary degree of M.A. He is the author of works on Buddhism, and translator into Japanese of Max Müller's Sanskrit Grammar.

The first part of the *Memoirs of the Literature College of the Imperial University of Japan*, which has just appeared, consists of an essay on Japanese and Aino Philology, by Mr. B. H. Chamberlain, that will sustain the high reputation of the recently-appointed Professor of Philology, and a Grammar of the Aino—or more correctly Ainu—language, by the Rev. J. Batchelor, who has laboured during many years among the almost unknown dwellers in the northernmost parts of the Japanese group, that entirely supersedes all previous work on the subject. Mr. Chamberlain's essay contains a most interesting investigation of place-names in Japan, many of which, from Aomori to Kagoshima, he finds to be of Aino origin, showing that the aboriginal population of the entire Japanese archipelago was, in great part at least, of Aino race. Of these important contributions to philological science no adequate notion can be given here, but Mr. Dickins proposes to prepare a summary of Messrs. Chamberlain and Batchelor's work, adding some comments of his own, that will supply the deficiencies of the present notice.

Egyptology.—The fourth annual general meeting of the Egypt

Exploration Fund was held on December 8th, in the theatre of the Royal Institution, Albemarle Street. The objects of the Fund, as submitted to and approved by this meeting, are as follows:—“(1) To organize excavations in Egypt, with a view to further elucidation of the history and arts of Ancient Egypt and to the illustration of the Old Testament narrative in so far as it has to do with Egypt and the Egyptians; also to explore sites connected with early Greek history, or with the antiquities of the Coptic Church, in their connexion with Egypt. (2) To publish, periodically, descriptions of the sites explored and excavated, and of the antiquities brought to light. (3) To ensure the preservation of such antiquities by presenting them to museums and similar public institutions.” At the meeting on December 8th, Miss Amelia B. Edwards (Hon. Sec.) was able to announce the completion of the Fowler Fund, founded in 1883 by Mr. William Fowler, who offered a challenge of £50, provided that nineteen other donors could be found to give the same sum. The Treasurer’s report showed an increase on last year’s support. Probably the Tahpanhes excavations will have done much to excite the interest of the public generally in the valuable labours of the Egyptian explorers. Mr. Ernest Gardner gave some account of his second season’s work at Naukratis. Mr. J. S. Cotton informed the meeting that Professor Maspéro had been elected Hon. Fellow of Queens’ College, Oxford, and read portions of a report by Mr. Griffith on recent excavations at Gemayemi (some three miles from Nebeshah) and Kantara. Miss Edwards read Mr. Flinders Petrie’s report of work at Naukratis, at Nebeshah (ancient Egyptian “Am”), at Tell Faraïn (Buto), and at Tell Defenneh (Tahpanhes). Miss Edwards then read her own report, giving first a retrospective glance at the past work which had been so rich in results, and a prospective glance at the future, pointing to the expedition of M. Naville, whose object would be—in continuation of his work at Pithom and Goshen—to determine the route of the Exodus. Donations of antiquities to the British Museum, the Museum of Fine Arts at Boston, U.S.A., and various other Museums, were then voted.

The *Academy* of Dec. 4th announces M. Maspéro’s two courses of Lectures in Egyptology at the Ecole Pratique des Hautes Etudes: (1) On the interpretation of hieratic texts of the early Empire, with special reference to the Berlin papyrus 3, containing a dialogue between an Egyptian and his soul; and (2) On the representations of armour and fighting in the monuments. The same paper tells that M. Guéyès is lecturing on Egyptian Grammar.—Dec. 11th gives a brief account of a paper read by Mr. J. Offord, jun., upon “The Papyrus Literature of Ancient Egypt as illustrated by Recent Discoveries,” and mentions the beginning of the publication of the Archduke Rainer’s Fayum Papyri.—In Jan. 8th is an account of the Recent Excavations at Gizeh, by Mr. Flinders Petrie.—In Jan. 22nd a letter by Professor Sayce on the inscribed Ostraka still to be found in the mounds of

ancient cities in Egypt. This No. has also a short notice of Prof. Pott's *Allgemeine Sprachwissenschaft und Carl Abel's Aegyptische Sprachstudien*. Under the head "Egyptian Jottings," Miss Edwards announces a course of Stone Lectures on Egyptology to be delivered in America by Dr. Kellogg, and a course by Prof. Taylor on Egyptological subjects at the Peabody Institute, Baltimore; and notices a small pamphlet, by Major G. T. Plunkett, R.E., entitled "Walks in Cairo." She also refers to Maspéro's derivation of the name of Asia from *Asi*, the ancient Egyptian name for the island of Cyprus. In the *Academy* of Feb. 12th is a review of Mr. E. A. Wallis Budge's "Sarcophagus of Ankhnesneferab," by Miss Edwards, who contributes in the No. for Feb. 19th a report from M. Naville, showing the results of his first week's tour in the district of Goshen. In the same paper is a letter from Cairo giving some account of the fallen statue of Ramses II. at Memphis, and stating that the work of raising the Colossus was begun by a party of the Royal Engineers on Feb. 4th.

The *Athenæum* for Feb. 5th quotes from the *Weser Zeitung* that Prof. A. Ascherson, the botanist of the University of Berlin, is engaged with his friend Prof. Schweinfurth upon a Catalogue of the Egyptian Flora, which is to be published this year by the *Aegyptisches Institut*. The number of hitherto known species of Egyptian plants is said to be 1260. Prof. Ascherson, the *Athenæum* tells us, was to start in February upon a journey in Lower Egypt. His intention is to explore the less-known parts of the Nile Delta, and then to follow the march of the Children of Israel through the wilderness, according to the theory of Schleiden and Brugseh. The journey is to be at the cost of the Egyptian Government, and will probably last about three months.

The *Oesterreichische Monatschrift für den Orient* for February has a paper by A. v. Schweiger-Lerehenfeld, entitled "Cultur Einflüsse und Handel in ältester Zeit," which is to be continued later.

In the *Deutsche Literaturzeitung*, No. 3, Jan. 15th, is a notice of Meyer's "Geschichte des alten Aegyptens."

The *Revue Egyptologique*, quatrième volume, Nos. iii.-iv., contains, amongst other articles—Memoire sur quelques inscriptions trouvées dans la sepulture des Apis, par le Vicomte Emmanuel de Rougé.—Religion et mythologie des anciens Egyptiens d'après les monuments (Paul Pierret).—Une inscription Grecque de Ptolémaïs (Menshieh) (M. Miller).—Le poème de Pentaour (J. de Rougé).—Une page de l'histoire de la Nubie (E. Revillout).—Lettre à M. Revillout sur les contrats Grecs du Louvre provenant de Faioum (Charles Wessely).—Tessères bilingues publiées par MM. Revillout et Wileken.—This number gives some interesting reproductions of demotic texts in illustration of some of the above articles.

*India and countries adjacent.*¹—Urdu.—The *Friend of India* states that the Rev. J. D. Bate, M.R.A.S., of the Baptist Mission at Allahabad, is engaged in the preparation of a "Roman-Hindustani

¹ Communicated by Hon. Secretary to *Independent States* inclusive.

Dictionary," as also of the reverse—an "English-Hindustani Dictionary"—works which "will not be mere compilations from the existing dictionaries." The first "will contain no less than 15,000 words which have never before appeared in any dictionary of the Hindustani language, and which the author has himself collected from the literature and lips of the people, in constant intercourse with them for many years. Special attention is to be given to the technical uses of words appertaining to the professions (such as law, medicine, religion, navigation, agriculture, etc.) and the sciences (such as astronomy, grammar, geography, etc.). The innumerable crotchety idioms of poetry, prose, and the living dialects, as also the important question of the government of verbs and particles, will be carefully noted, and every word will be traced back to its original root. The words will be arranged in the order of the English alphabet, the letters of the Arabic and Nagari alphabets being given in their respective orders at the beginning of the work. Every word will be printed in the native characters also, in each entry, the Persian words in the Arabic character, and the Hindi words in the Nagari. In whatever character a book may be written, the student will find the word in that character in the dictionary, but in the order of the English alphabet. It will be a Dictionary of Urdu and Hindi combined, the need for separate dictionaries of these two languages being, by the plan of the work, removed at a stroke. There is no idea of depriving either Hindus or Mahomedans of the characters of their respective tongues, but of adapting the dictionary to the long-felt need of those students of Oriental literature who are more familiar with the order of the English alphabet than with that of the Indian alphabets, and of dispensing with the necessity of purchasing two or more expensive dictionaries instead of one. The work will thus be specially adapted to the requirements of European students, and of Indians who read English. It will be a dictionary of both classical and colloquial speech, and will meet the requirements of the scholar as well as of the beginner." The *Friend* expresses its belief, in conclusion, that such a work will "be highly prized and warmly welcomed by native students and by all men newly coming to India,—missionaries, merchants, magistrates, and men of business generally."

Province of Bengal.—The Rev. E. Droese, a missionary, has published a translation of the Book of Common Prayer into the language of the Hill Tribes of Bhagalpúr, known as the Pahári or Maler. He has also translated a Gospel and some educational books, and published them. The language belongs to the Dravidian Family, though spoken by a tribe not far from the Ganges.

Province of Assam.—The Rev. S. Endle, a missionary, has published at Shillong an excellent Grammar of the Kachári Bara language as spoken in the district Darrang, Assam, with a Vocabulary and Texts, and an important Preface. This language belongs to the Tibeto-Burman Group.

Mr. J. F. Needham, Assistant Political Officer, Sadiya, has published an excellent Grammar of the Shaiyang Miri Language, as spoken by the clan of the tribe of Miri who dwell near Sadiya, with Vocabulary and Texts. This book is of the highest value. This language is also of the Tibeto-Burman Group.

Mr. C. A. Soppitt has published a Grammar, Vocabulary, and Texts of the Kaehelâr Naga tribes. This language is also of the Tibeto-Burman Group.

Professor Avery has published in the Journal of the American Oriental Society papers on the Garo and Ao Naga Language, both of the Tibeto-Burman Group.

We hear of Grammars published of the Singpho or Kakhyon Language by Major MacGregor, of Abor by Mr. Needham, of the Angami Naga by Mr. McCabe, and of Grammars proposed to be published by Mr. Soppitt of Kuki, by Mr. Staek of Bhutu-Changho, and a projected Vocabulary by Mr. Staek of Tipura. All these languages belong to the Tibeto-Burman Group, and these linguistic works are a positive addition to our existing knowledge. We only regret that the Government of Assam, or the Bengal Asiatic Society, do not supply the Library of the Royal Asiatic Society with copies, and send over additional copies to be supplied to the Libraries of Europe. We commend to the authors the famous line :

“Seire tuum nihil est, nisi te seire hoe sciat alter.”

Independent States.—Professor Avery has published in the pages of the American Oriental Society a paper on the Language of Lepcha, the vernacular of the Independent State of Sikkim in the Himalaya. This also belongs to the Tibeto-Burman Group.

Calcutta Review.—Among thirteen papers contributed to the January number, three by natives of India may be selected for special mention. “The Growth of Radicalism in India and its danger,” does credit to the writer Rajah Oday Pertap Singh, a Talukdar of Oudh, in that it is a lucid expression of opinion, and the argument of one who, however conservative, is ready to examine the character of innovations. It is a kind of apology for those of his class who do not send their children and relatives, so generally as might have been expected, to the Canning College. “Buddha as a Philosopher,” by Ram Chandra Bose, is also a remarkable paper, illustrative of the tendency of the native mind to reason on the higher question of religion in the latitudinarian spirit of Western criticism. The third article is more practical and less speculative than the other two, and deals largely with statistics. The three together are marvellous indications of the advance of education in India during the last thirty years. It is doubtful whether before the Mutinies a native could have written any one of them. Now, it may reasonably be inferred, that one or all might be written by intelligent natives in either Presidency. The remaining articles are “A Garo’s Revenge,” and “Our Station,” by Esmé; “The Massacre of Patna” (continued from a previous number), by Mr.

Beveridge; "Imperial Federation," by Mr. Braddon, M.P., written apparently in Tasmania; a criticism of the "Bengal European School Code," by Mr. Gasper; "Yunan," by Major E. C. Browne; "The Covenanted Civil Service and Financial Reform in Bengal," by Mr. C. J. O'Donnell; "Obsolete Crime in Bengal, and its Modern Aspects," by Mr. T. Durant Beighton; a few lines on "Frederick Archer," in Memoriam, by an old Turfite; "The Birds," by J. J. W.; besides the Editorial Summaries and Critical Notices. In the last it will suffice to refer to the publications under the head of "Vernacular Literature." Of these, a book entitled "Sabitri," published by the Secretary of the Sabitri Library, Calcutta, is said to contain a collection of papers read at that Institution, and prize essays of a Bengali Lady; "Baukim Chandra"—whether in this case a biography, or a work by the bearer of that name, is not clear—is referred to as the "first Bengali author of the day," but the praise bestowed on him by his biographer or reviewer is of that unqualified character that causes the reader to hesitate in accepting the judgment recorded. Dewan "Ganga Gobinda Sinha: A Historical Novel," by Chandi Charan Sen, is designated a work in which "there is little to admire and a great deal to condemn;" *Lalkuthi*, by Radanath Mitra, if correctly described by the critic, must be a mistake; and *Resam-tattwa*, part i., is a work on the silk industry of Bengal, which seems to call for attention, not only as an innovation in native literature, but as a sensible step in a right direction.

Indian Notes and Queries for November and December are full of good and interesting matter, and keep up that high reputation so creditable to their industrious editor and his competent staff of assistants. Want of space prevents a more detailed notice.

The *Academy* (15th January) states that the forthcoming joint work by Sir Richard Temple and his son will contain journals kept by Sir Richard in Haidarabad, Kashmir, Nepal, and Sikkim, with elaborate introductions by Capt. Temple. There will be illustrations and numerous maps. Messrs. Allen and Co. are the publishers, and it is expected that they will be ready with the book in two months.

Capt. Trotter's *India under Victoria* meets with a generally favourable notice from a practised hand in the *Academy* of the 22nd January.

The Rise of the British Power in the East, by the late Hon. Mountstuart Elphinstone, edited by Sir Edward Colebrooke, has just been published by Murray. It is a continuation of the well-known "History of India in the Hindû and Mahomedan Periods," supplemented by a chapter of the editor's own writing, bringing to a close the otherwise unfinished narrative of the struggle between the English and French. Sir Edward Colebrooke has also attached to the penultimate chapter a detailed note on "the grant of the Diwâni," showing "some of the difficulties that beset the path of British administrators in applying European principles

and European agency to the Government of the first great province that came under British rule."

Parts i. to xi. of the *Journal of Indian Art*, published by Mr. Quaritch, under the authority of the Government of India, are noticed among illustrated publications in the *Athenæum* of Dec. 4th.

École Spéciale des Langues Orientales Vivantes.—The success attending a volume of *Mélanges Orientaux*, published by the Professors of this Institution for presentation to the Members of the Leyden Congress in 1883, has induced the same Professors to offer to the Vienna Congress, held during the past year, a similar volume, under the title of *Nouveaux mélanges Orientaux*. Its contents may be briefly recorded:—1. The Persian text, and M. Schefer's translation, of Muhammad Ibn 'Alī Ravendi's sketch of the reign of Muizzu'd-din Abu'l Harith, Sultan Sanjār. 2. M. Barbier de Meynard's "Considérations sur l'Histoire Ottomane," with extracts from the original Turkish "Tārikhi Djeydet." 3. Professor Houdas on "L'écriture Maghrébine," with specimens. 4. Fragment of the Arabic Kharidatu'l Kaşr, by 'Imād ad-dīn al-Kātib, on Ousāma ibn Mounkidh, a Syrian Amīr of the early Crusades, with introduction by Professor Derenbourg. 5. The Abbé Favre's translation of a "texte Malais" relating to Moses in the Mount. 6. Summary and part translation of the "Vogages de Basile Vataee," born at the close of the seventeenth century, with original Greek text, and an introduction by M. Émile Legrand. 7. M. Dozon's translation of "Les Noces de Maxime Tzérnoïévitch," a popular Servian poem. 8. Professor Abel des Michels' version of some Annamite tales, to which is added an explanation of a verse in the Chinese "Yü Kiāou Li." M. Henri Cordier's "Notes pour servir à l'histoire des études Chinoises en Europe," bringing the reader up to the days of the elder Fourmont. 10. Professor Vinson's "Specimen of Tamul Palæography." 11. Professor Carrière's Armenian Version of the Story of Assénath—otherwise Asenuth, daughter of Potipherah, and wife of Joseph. 12. M. Émile Picot's "Notice Biographique et Bibliographique sur l'Imprimeur Anthime d'Ivir, Métropolitain de Valachie," and 13. A paper on Japanese writing, by Professor Léon de Rosny.

The ordinary publications of the "École Spéciale" are noticed under the heads to which they respectively belong; and it is needless to say how great is, in many cases, their value to students. With regard to the admirable Institution itself, the following account will interest many readers, and is appropriate as illustrating one form of encouragement to Oriental study and research, in connection with the "Statement" recently circulated by the Royal Asiatic Society to Schools and City Companies, and published in the present number of the *Journal*.

Notes¹ on the School of Modern Oriental Languages at Paris:—This excellent school was founded at the end of the last century.

In the year 1790 Monsieur Langlès, an Orientalist, called the

¹ Kindly contributed by Major C. M. Watson, C.M.G., R.E.

attention of the French National Assembly to the importance of encouraging the study of the living languages of the East, and to the advantage which would accrue from a more general knowledge of these languages, both in the extension of commerce, and as an aid to French political influence.

No immediate result followed, but in 1795 the question was referred to a committee, of which Lakanal, a member of the Convention, was the President. He drew up a strong report, pointing out the neglect with which the study of modern Oriental languages had been treated in France. He called attention to the fact that while the *ancient* languages of the East were the object of much consideration, and ample means were provided for teaching them to students, there were, on the contrary, no arrangements for teaching the *modern* languages, although the latter were of more use both for commerce and for political purposes. He concluded by proposing that a school should be opened and attached to the National Library.

Acting upon this report, the French Government, by decree of the 30th March, 1795, established the School of Modern Oriental Languages, with three professorships, *i.e.* one of Arabic, one of Turkish and Tartar, and one of Persian and Malay. The salary of each professor was fixed at £120 per annum, and they were instructed to prepare grammars of the languages in which they were to teach.

The school was located in the Rue Neuve des Petits Champs near the National Library. The first professors were as follows: Arabic, Silvestre de Sacy; Turkish, Venture de Paradis; Persian, Langlès. Of these it is only necessary to say a few words.

Langlès, who must be regarded as the originator of the School, had been intended for the career of an officer in the army, but ill health prevented his following so active a life. Wishing to obtain some appointment in the East, he devoted himself to the study of Arabic and Persian, and was, in consequence, appointed one of the guardians of the manuscripts in the National Library during the Reign of Terror. He was appointed first administrator of the School when it was established, as well as Professor of Persian, and held the two appointments for twenty-eight years.

Silvestre de Sacy was already one of the most renowned Orientalists of France when he was called to the post of Arabic Professor at the School, and held the position for forty-two years.

Venture de Paradis was the son of a Consul in the Levant, and had been employed for some years as Interpreter in the Diplomatic Service. He was Dragoman to the French Embassy at Constantinople, when appointed to the post of Turkish Professor in the School of Oriental Languages. He held the latter position for two years only, when he was summoned to act as Chief Interpreter to General Bonaparte on his Egyptian expedition, and took with him as assistants several pupils of the School, which thus already began to give a return to the Government for the money spent upon it.

Venture accompanied Bonaparte into Syria, and died of dysentery at St.-Jean d'Acre in 1799.

From time to time other professorships have been added to the School, according as experience showed the necessity of increasing the number of modern languages taught, and care has been taken to avoid the danger of making the instruction of too learned a character, and to carry out the original intention of the School, namely, to teach the students to read, speak, and write the languages as they exist at the present time.

The School is under the direction of a President, who is chosen from among the Professors, and is responsible to the Minister of Public Instruction. The President is assisted by a Secretary, who also acts as Librarian.

There are twelve Professors in the School, who instruct in the following languages: Modern Arabic, Literary Arabic, Persian, Armenian, Turkish, Russian, Modern Greek, Hindustani and Tamil, Chinese, Japanese, Annamite, and Malay and Javanese.

The Professors now receive a salary of £300 per annum each. They are bound to give three lectures of one hour's length weekly, of which one lesson is usually for beginners and the two others for students who are more advanced.

The lectures are free to the public and are gratuitous, the whole cost of keeping up the School being provided by the State. In addition to attending the lectures of the Professors, students are allowed to study in the reading rooms, where, at certain times, assistant teachers attend to help them in their courses.

From time to time additional series of lectures are given by qualified persons on cognate subjects, such as upon the history and political and commercial geography of the countries of which the languages are taught.

There is an excellent library of more than 20,000 volumes, so the students have the advantage of being able to consult all the best grammars and dictionaries without having to purchase them for themselves.

In addition to the actual work of instruction in the Oriental languages, the School assists in the publication of new works and of translations.

It is worthy of note that the lectures and course of study were not suspended during the siege of Paris, in the winter of 1870-71.

In 1873 the School was moved to the building which it now occupies, at the corner of the Rue de Lille and Rue des Saints Pères. This belongs to the Government, and had formerly been used for the school of naval engineering. It is now being enlarged at the expense of the State, and when the alterations are completed, it will be most commodious.

The number of students appears to be increasing, and many foreigners come to Paris to attend the courses of lectures.

There is no doubt that the School is a most excellent institution, well deserving of the money expended upon it, and one that might

be imitated with great advantage in England, where the study of modern Oriental languages is at a very low point.

The following is the expense of the School as laid down in the budget for 1887:—Salaries of 12 professors (11 at £300 per annum, 1 at £200 per annum), £3500; Additional for the president, £50; Secretary and librarian, £120; 7 assistant teachers, £760; Porter and attendants, £216; Fees for extra courses of lectures, £300; Rewards for the students, £340; Lighting, cleaning, etc., £313; Purchase of books, printing of new publications, etc., £516; Total per annum, £6145.

Vienna Oriental Journal.—We welcome the appearance of the specimen number of this publication, edited by the Directors of the Oriental Institute of the University of Vienna, G. Böhler, J. Karabáek, D. H. Müller, F. Müller, and L. Reinisch. It is intended to be a central organ, exclusively devoted to the interest of Oriental studies, partly in the English, partly in the German language; French and Latin papers are also admitted. Papers regarding India will, as far as possible, be given in English. It will appear quarterly, and will contain reviews of important works as well as original articles. The first number well sustains the promise held out.

Numismatics.—Mr. Theobald, in noticing some of the symbols on the coins of Kuninda (Beng. Asiat. Soc. Journal, No. 3, 1886), questions the correctness of identification as regards the deer, which animal he thinks may not always be intended where commonly supposed. The tail and horn seem rather to designate the yak, though in one case he admits the other explanation. He further discusses the symbol above the animal's head, stated to represent snakes, and the object or symbol on the reverse, the import of which the late Mr. Thomas expressed himself unable to conjecture. In the same number of the Journal, Mr. C. Rodgers gives an interesting analysis of thirty coins. Referring to the doubtful interpretation of the first, it may be remarked that the word "Amir" suggested by the late Mr. Giles, seems preferable to "Habib" as regards the context. "Lord" is more intelligible than "Friend," when prefixed to "East and West" الشرق والغرب; but an inspection of the coin itself is essential to forming a judgment on the word inscribed. Could it be Sahib صاحب?

Epigraphy.—Our Director, Sir Henry Rawlinson, has been elected a Membre Associé Étranger de l'Académie des Inscriptions, in place of Malvig. There is a laudatory notice of Mr. Fleet's forthcoming volume of Gupta Inscriptions in the Academy of 15th January; and it is stated to be now so near completion "that the page-proofs are ready." The author's high reputation will no doubt be enhanced by a publication the value of which is to a great extent already certified, and its appearance will be awaited with more than common interest by students of Indian archaeology. We are informed in the same paper that Professor de Goeje of Leiden and Dr. Bretschneider have been elected Foreign Corre-

sponding Members of the Académie des Inscriptions, in the place of Dr. Birch and Mr. Edward Thomas, deceased. "Twenty-three Inscriptions from Nepal," collected at the expense of the Nawáb of Junâgadh, edited by Pandit Bhagvânâlâl Indrâji, together with "Some considerations on the Chronology of Nepal," translated from Gujarâti, by Dr. G. Bühler, form the material of a Bombay reprint from the *Indian Antiquary*. There has also been a reprint at Bangalore of twenty-three "Coorg Inscriptions," translated for Government by Mr. Lewis Rice, Secretary to the Government of Mysore. The dates of these extend over a period of nearly fourteen hundred years, or from A.D. 466 to A.D. 1842.

Africa (Communicated by the Hon. Secretary).—Dr. Sims, of the Baptist Mission on the Kongo, has published a Vocabulary of the Teke Language spoken at Stanley Pool, and another Vocabulary of the Bangi *alias* Yansi Language, spoken in the Upper Kongo about the Equator. Both these belong to the Bantu or South African Family. The Rev. Wm. Crisp has published a Grammatical Notice of the Chuána Language spoken in South Africa (Central): this also belongs to the Bantu Family. The Rev. Mr. Bentley, of the Baptist Mission on the Kongo, has published a complete Dictionary of the Kongo Language, with an elaborate introduction. This is a most important work. The language is Bantu. The Rev. Mr. Brincker, of the Rhenish Mission, has published in the German language a complete Dictionary, and Grammar and Texts of the Hereró language in South Africa on the West side. This language belongs to the Bantu Family. The Rev. Mr. O'Flaherty (deceased), of the Church Missionary Society in Equatorial Africa, prepared during his six years' residence at Rubága, the capital of U-Ganda, grammars, vocabularies, texts, translations of the Scriptures in *Ganda*. He was on his road home to publish these important works when he died in the Red Sea. This may delay their publication, but they will be utilized when a competent editor is found. This language belongs to the Bantu family, and is spoken on the Equator. Senhor Joaquim d'Almeida da Cunha, Secretary of the Governor-General of the Portuguese Colonies in East Africa, has published the first part of his Studies of the Languages spoken within the Portuguese territory. It is in the Portuguese language, and is valuable as an independent inquiry. He gives a general view of all the languages, and a Vocabulary of the languages spoken by the tribes of Ma-Konde and Ma-Via, on the river Rovuma in West Africa South of the Equator. It belongs to the Bantu Family.

VI. SPECIAL COMMITTEE, ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY.

(See President's Address, page v, Proceedings of Anniversary Meeting, in Journal for July, 1886.)

In connection with inquiries as to the best means for the promotion of Oriental Studies in England, the Council of the Royal

Asiatic Society have had prepared by the Committee above indicated, and from the best information at their command, lists of appointments in England and India for which a scholarly acquaintance with Oriental Languages is a necessary or important qualification.

As the information thus collected appears to show that the prospect of remunerative employment open to English Orientalists is less discouraging than is usually supposed, the Council think that the publication of the lists may do something towards stimulating Oriental studies in this country. The lists are accordingly published below, and it is further proposed to notify from time to time in the Journal all new appointments of like character created, and all vacancies and changes of incumbency in existing appointments.

It will be seen from these lists that, excluding those for which a knowledge of Hebrew only is required, the number of permanent salaried appointments in the United Kingdom is about twenty-nine, the salaries ranging from £50 to £1000 per annum. In India there are ninety-eight Government appointments open to Europeans, with salaries ranging from 250 to 2450 rupees per mensem, for which a knowledge of Oriental languages and literature is either essential or a very important qualification. These appointments include 14 Professorships of Oriental Languages, 45 Headships of Colleges and Schools, 32 Educational Inspectorships, and 7 Directorships of Public Instruction, and all—with the exception of 8 Professorships and 2 Inspectorships—are at present held by Europeans.

Besides the appointments referred to above, there are, in the United Kingdom, Professorships at King's and University College, London, minor College Tutorships at Oxford and Cambridge, Examinerships in connection with Indian Civil Service competitions, and temporary appointments in the British Museum, offering more or less remunerative employment to Orientalists. Again, in India, the Government offers to its Civil and Military servants handsome rewards for proficiency in Sanskrit, Arabic, Persian, and the languages of India, and success in the examinations for them not unfrequently leads to special advancement in the Service. Lastly, both in England and India, important work is being done, and much more remains to be done, in the editing and translation of Oriental texts, and in the preparation of dictionaries and grammars and other works relating to the history, antiquities, and languages of the East, while, judging from the periodical lists of Messrs. Trübner and other Oriental publishers, the public interest in this class of literature is on the increase :—

STATEMENT.

*Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland,
31st January, 1887.*

The Council and Members of the Royal Asiatic Society, in common with every Oriental scholar throughout the kingdom, have long been painfully conscious of the general neglect in this country of Eastern learning. There is no nation to which an acquaintance with Eastern languages, religions, and laws, and with the history and character of Eastern races, is so important. And yet we are almost daily brought face to face with the strange fact,—that perhaps in no great European country is the cultivation of these sciences more backward than in this.

It may be possible, with more or less plausibility, to attribute that condition of things to a variety of causes, but it seems needless to seek for others, when, at the very threshold of the question, we are confronted with the fact, that in other countries inducements and material assistance are offered by their Governments, Universities, and other Public Institutions, for the promotion of Eastern learning in all its branches, to which nothing of a similar nature in the United Kingdom can be fitly compared. The results are notorious to all who have ever interested themselves in the question. We cannot claim to occupy, even in the study of the Indian languages, and least of all in their scientific study, the foremost place that would naturally be expected of this country. And in departments of Oriental learning, of almost equal importance to us from a national point of view, the effect of a comparison between the results achieved abroad and those accomplished in England is to exhibit us in a light totally unworthy of a great and wealthy civilized nation. Under Government patronage and with its substantial help carefully collated texts and translations of important works by the great Arab historians issue uninterruptedly from the Continental presses. Archæological and other publications, casting valuable light upon early history and civilization, and upon their expansion from their primeval centres in Egypt

Assyria or Babylonia, are successively brought forth. Works, in short, upon all the leading subjects of Eastern research are produced, and are produced in sumptuous form, which for generations to come will do honour to the nations to whom the world is indebted for their publication. The record for corresponding work in England must be described, to say the least, as far from creditable. In those cases where important work may have been achieved at the cost of years of labour, the author can rarely depend—unless, indeed, the work has some claim on the consideration of the Government of India—for the purpose of placing the results of his labours before the world, upon anything but the private means which he may or may not be fortunate enough to possess; and instances are not wanting where such work has remained in manuscript for years, simply because the author could not meet the cost of publication. Even in the case of Indian studies we may hear of a publisher being able to undertake the publication of an important Pali text, thanks only to a small allowance from the India Office having been supplemented by a subvention of £50 per volume, granted to him by the Academy of Berlin; whilst the discontinuance of the Sanskrit Text Society, after vain efforts on the part of Professor Eggeling of Edinburgh to prolong its existence, is equally significant. Even while this subject has been under consideration by the Society, it has been announced in the Press that a Bill was to be brought before the German Reichstag providing for the establishment of a school of Oriental languages in connection with the University of Berlin, with six professorial chairs attached.

But these particular features of the question, however important, are not those to which it is alone or even chiefly desired to direct attention. Our great and first want arises from a deficiency of men possessing the means, in addition to the ability and desire, to enter into and to persevere in a course of Eastern study. The loss thereby incurred from a national point of view can hardly be exaggerated. A considerably larger Mohammadan population, for example, is governed by this country than is subject to any other rule, yet it is almost literally true that nowhere is less encouragement and assistance offered to the student of Mohammadan languages than in this. An analogous case is that of the languages and people of the Chinese Empire, in which our interests are already so great, and in which they promise soon to become of such vast importance.

The facts of the case are known and deplored by every person interested in the question, but all are disheartened by the failure of every attempt hitherto made to bring about an adequate amendment. The late Dr. Pusey, Prof. Max Müller, Prof. Sayce, and other eminent representatives of Oriental studies at the University of Oxford, exerted themselves some years ago to press upon the commission appointed to amend and reform the existing institutions of the University the application of a portion of the endowments of the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge to the interests of Oriental research. The Council of the Royal Asiatic Society took part in signing a Memorial to the Commissioners, asking them to endow and encourage certain branches of Oriental learning, which, though recognized in Continental and American Universities, receive little or no support from their English sisters. The Committee of the Hebdomadal Council, among other recommendations, urged the appointment of Professors for the study and teaching of the languages and antiquities of Assyria and Egypt. Neither that nor similar representations pressed upon the Commissioners were attended with any result.

It is true that means of study are not altogether absent at the Universities. Chairs have been established and Oriental teachers appointed. The Boden and one or two other Scholarships have been moreover founded or set apart for Oriental learning at Oxford and at Cambridge. We owe to the untiring exertions and perseverance of Sir Monier Williams the foundation at Oxford of the Indian Institute, and its acquisition from the University chest of a small endowment, which, however inadequate, forms at least a happy precedent in the interest of Eastern learning. In Edinburgh, in like manner, we are indebted to the late Dr. Muir for the foundation and endowment of a Sanskrit chair. And it has to be thankfully acknowledged that the University of Cambridge, and more recently Oxford, have admitted Sanskrit, Persian and Arabic, and that of London Sanskrit and Arabic, as subjects in their examinations for degrees; while something has been done, especially by Oxford, in the publication and translation of Oriental texts. But there is little, if anything, more to add, when speaking of our Universities.

As regards Government assistance or encouragement, so far as the Imperial Government is concerned, they are almost non-existent. It is not requisite to discuss the merits or demerits of our national policy in this particular matter, still less to mention it as a subject

for reproach, but the result is a state of things hardly creditable to a nation ruling a great and powerful Eastern Empire.

The Government of India, indeed, has liberally assisted in the publication of Oriental works, but its assistance is mainly confined—and rightly so—to works more or less directly connected with the languages and literature of India. That Government also offers liberal rewards to its servants, civil and military, for proficiency in Indian languages; but, owing perhaps to the engrossing requirements of the service, the result, so far as scholarship is concerned, is small. Moreover, the present object is not the development of scholarship in the servants of the Indian Government, but the establishment of a comprehensive school of Oriental learning in this country.

To some of the circumstances that have been touched upon may, perhaps, be attributed a prevalent belief among the public that a knowledge of Oriental languages is of no practical value—that it offers little or no career worth speaking of. This, it must be said, is, even under present circumstances, less true than is usually supposed. We find, on the contrary, as may be gathered from the accompanying abstract, that, chiefly through the mere force of circumstances, a moderate number of appointments exists in England, and a larger number in India, for which a scholarlike acquaintance with Eastern languages is an indispensable or important qualification. And it cannot be doubted that, under a better condition of things, not only would research in all departments of Eastern science be stimulated, but fresh careers of increasing importance would unfold themselves, and would present additional objects of legitimate ambition to students. It is not probable that it would, for instance, still be said of a chair in one of our leading Universities, that “its emoluments are about equal to those of a Classical Mastership in any good Grammar School.” The field of Oriental research is a vast one, and full of attractive interest, and an increase in the number of its labourers would demonstrate more and more the practical as well as the scientific value of its fruits. The supply of Eastern scholarship, its public appreciation, and a demand for it, could not fail to act and to re-act upon one another. It is a significant fact, and one far from creditable to us, that at present the supply of properly-qualified Englishmen is not sufficient, and that in order to fill some of the most important of the existing appointments we are obliged to have recourse to scholars trained in foreign seats of learning.

The crying want is that of encouragement and assistance to young men, willing, perhaps keenly desirous, to labour in a great and worthy field. But as regards encouragement, the belief is too prevalent, and, it must be said, too well-founded, that the study of Oriental languages affords little opening for school and academic distinction. In the case of our Universities something has been done, especially of late years, to remove this reproach, but in the case of schools encouragement is almost non-existent. Yet how much may be done by even slight means is well exemplified in the case of Merchant Taylors' School, where the grant by the late Sir Moses Montefiore of a silver medal for the study of Hebrew has had the effect of creating a class, from which more than one distinguished Hebrew scholar is able to trace the commencement of his career. At the City of London School, also, a prize of £5 and an exhibition, the gift of Sir Albert Sassoon, have been regularly awarded for several years past for the encouragement of the study of Sanskrit, with excellent results. These examples, it must, however, be added, are solitary ones in our public schools.

The main obstacle, however, is the deficiency of material assistance, that is of endowments such as exist for the promotion of other departments of science. From scholars at all our seats of learning, whether in England, in Scotland, or in Ireland, the same complaint is to be heard. It is simply impossible for a young man not possessed of independent means, to devote himself to the subject by which he is, it may be, most attracted. Even before he leaves school, the object of relieving the pressure of expense upon his parents or other friends, the necessity he is under of providing himself with means of independent livelihood in the future, and even of finding the means of living during the laborious years of preparation which the acquisition of the most important Oriental languages requires, must of necessity weigh upon his parents and upon himself with constantly increasing force. In the words of the occupant of one of our Oriental Chairs, the student has it ever before him that a smaller expenditure of intellectual energy will, in numerous other directions, secure to him greater distinction, and at the same time, it may be added, more effectual external assistance towards its attainment.

It has already been mentioned that in two of the great English Universities, Sanskrit, Arabic and Persian are subjects now admitted in their examinations for degrees, and Sanskrit and Arabic in

APPENDIX.

I LIST OF APPOINTMENTS in the United Kingdom for which a scholarly acquaintance with Asiatic Languages is a necessary or important qualification; with statement of emoluments, mode of appointment, and names of present holders.

GOVERNMENT DEPARTMENT OR INSTITUTION.	NATURE OF APPOINTMENT.	LANGUAGE.	EMOLUMENT.	MODE OF APPOINTMENT.	NAME OF HOLDER.	REMARKS.		
British Museum— I. Department of Printed Books	Assistant, 1st Class	Chinese and Japanese	£250	Trustees	Prof. R. K. Douglas	This office is now held by an Assistant Keeper, who receives pay also in respect of other duties		
Do.	Assistant, 1st Class	Sanskrit and Indian languages generally	£250		Do.		C. Bendall, M.A.	
Do.	Assistant, 2nd Class	Hebrew	£120		Do.		Van Straelen	
Do.	Assistant, 2nd Class	Other Semitic languages	£120		Do.		A. G. Ellis, M.A.	
	Private scholar, out on the Staff	Neo-Syriac	Generally at the rate of about £200 a year, at full time		Do.			These are appointments, purely temporary, which have been made from time to time during the last 10 or 15 years.
	Do.	North Indian Vernaculars			Do.			
	Do.	South Indian Vernaculars			Do.			
II. Department of Oriental MSS.	Keeper	Oriental languages generally	£750		Chas. Riou, Ph.D.	This Department is separately administered from the Department of MSS. in general.		
	Assistant, 2nd Class		£120		R. Hürning, Ph.D.	There was formerly an Assistant-Keeper, now suppressed. Occasional temporary help has been paid for.		
III. Department of Egyptian and Assyrian Antiquities	Keeper	Egyptian	£750		Mr. Le Page Renouf	Personal allowance from Treasury £100 extra.		
	Assistant, 1st Class	Assyrian	£250		T. G. Pinches	Now for Egyptian.		
	Assistant, 2nd Class	Assyrian	£120		E. A. W. Budge, M.A.			
	[Private scholar]	Assyrian	About £200			Temporary.		
IV. Department of Coins and Medals	No permanent official appointment					Temporary, as above.		
	[1. Private scholar]	Arabic						
	[2. Private scholar]	Chinese, Japanese, etc.						
India Office	Librarian	Arabic and Sanskrit, Persian and Literary Vernaculars	£600	Secretary of State for India in Council	Reinhold Rost, Ph.D.			
Foreign Office	Oriental Interpreter	Turkish, Arabic, and Persian	£100	Foreign Secretary	J. W. Redhouse, C.M.G.			
Royal Asiatic Society	Secretary		£250	Council	Sir F. Goldsmid, K.C.S.I., C.B.			
University of Oxford	Bodleian Professor	Sanskrit	£1000	Elected	Sir Monier Monier-Williams, D.C.L.			
	Landian Professor	Arabic	£300	Do.	R. Gandell, M.A.	Will, on next vacancy, be attached to a Fellowship of St. John's College.		
	Lord Almoner's Professorship	Arabic	£50 less fees of office	Appointed by Lord Almoner	G. F. Nicholl, M.A.			
	Professor	Chinese	Int of £3000, Fell. C.C.C. and £100 from University chest	Elected	Rev. J. Legge, M.A., I.L.D.			
	Teacher	Hindustani	£200 and fees	Elected	Capt. R. St. John, Hon. M.A.	Some of the Colleges have Tutors on Oriental subjects, e.g.		
	Teacher	Persian	£200 and fees	Do.	J. T. Platts, Hon. M.A.			
	Teacher	Tamil and Telugu	£200 and fees	Do.	Rev. G. U. Pope, Hon. M.A.			
	Assistant Bodleian	Library	£400	Nominated by Librarian (Official)	A. Neubauer, Ph.D.			
	Sub-Keeper	Indian Institute	£90		Same as Bodleian Professor			
University of Cambridge.	Professor	Comparative Philology	£600	Elected	Prof. Max Müller	There are also at Cambridge University Teacherships in the chief Indian languages for candidates for the Indian Civil Service. These are paid at about £200 per annum, but are established upon a temporary basis only. The Teachers are Col. Sherlock, J. F. Blumhardt, Rev. A. H. Arden.		
	Deputy Professor	Comparative Philology	£500	Do.	Rev. A. H. Sayce			
	Professor	Arabic		Do.	W. Wright, I.L.D.			
	Lord Almoner's Professor	Arabic	£50	Do.	Ion Keith-Falconer, M.A.			
	Professor	Sanskrit	£500	Do.	E. B. Cowell, M.A. (Camb. and Oxon.)			
University of London	Teacher	Sanskrit	£50	Do.	R. A. Neil, M.A.	These are paid at about £200 per annum, but are established upon a temporary basis only. The Teachers are Col. Sherlock, J. F. Blumhardt, Rev. A. H. Arden.		
	Examiner	Sanskrit and Arabic	£50	Do.	Reinhold Rost, Ph.D.			
				Do.	Julius Eggeling, Ph.D.			
University of Edinburgh	Professor	Sanskrit	£450	Do.	Mir Aulad Ali			
University of Dublin	Professor	Arabic, Persian and Hindustani		Do.				
	Professor	Sanskrit		Do.	R. Atkinson, LL.D.			
University College, London	Professor	Chinese	Fees	By Council	Rev. S. Beal, M.A.			
	Professor	Sanskrit	Do.	Do.	C. Bendall, M.A.			
	Professor	Pali	Do.	Do.	T. W. Rhys Davids, I.L.D., Ph.D.			
	Professor	Hindustani	Do.	Do.	A. H. Kennie, B.A.			
	Professor	Arabic and Persian	Do.	Do.	Ch. Riou, Ph.D.			
	Lecturer	Arabic and Persian	Do.	Do.	H. A. Salomoné			
	Professor	Indo-Chinese Philology	Do.	Do.	M. Terrien de Lacouperie			
	Lecturer	Bengali	Do.	Do.	J. F. Blumhardt			
		Hindi	Do.	Do.	J. F. Blumhardt			
		Telugu	Do.	Do.	Vacant			
	Tamil	Do.	Do.	Vacant				
	Marathi	Do.	Do.	Dr. Mantri				
	Gujarati	Do.	Do.	Sapnarye Asp. Kapadia				
King's College, London	Professor	Burmese	Do.	Do.	R. F. St. John			
		Chinese	Do.	Do.	R. K. Douglas			
		Sanskrit	Fees	Do.	G. F. Nicholl, M.A.			
		Bengali	Do.	Do.	Rev. J. Campbell			
		Hindustani	Do.	Do.	T. Bowley, M.A.			
		Tamil and Telugu	Do.	Do.	T. Bowley, M.A.			

II. APPOINTMENTS IN INDIA for which a scholarly acquaintance with Asiatic Languages is a necessary or important qualification. Those appointments for which such acquaintance is a necessary qualification are marked with an asterisk

GOVERNMENT.	NATURE OF APPOINTMENT.	EMOLUMENT.	NAME OF HOLDER.	REMARKS.
		Rs. per mensem.		
Government of India Bengal	*Secretary to Board of Examiners	2000	Lieut.-Col. H. S. Jarrett	
	Director of Public Instruction	2250	A. W. Croft, M.A., C.I.E.	
	Inspectors of Schools—			
	Presidency Circle	1500	C. B. Clarke, M.A.	
	Rajshahye Circle	1250	G. Bellett, M.A.	
	Eastern Circle	1250	C. A. Martin, LL.D.	
	European Schools	1050	A. M. Nash, M.A.	
	Assam Circle	1000	J. Willson, M.A.	
	Bihar Circle	1000	J. Van Someren Pope, M.A.	
	Western Circle	600	Brisham Mohan Malik	
	Principal of Presidency Coll., Calcutta	1500	C. H. Tawney, M.A.	
	Principal of Madrasah, Calcutta	750	Dr. A. F. R. Hoernle	
	Principal of Patna College	1250	Alfred Ewbank, M.A.	
	Principal of Hooghly College	1250	W. Griffiths, M.A.	
	Principal of Bacc College	750	W. Booth, B.A.	
	Principal of Rajshahye College	750	A. Clarke Edwards, M.A.	
	Principal of Kishinagar College	750	Jahu Mann, M.A.	
	Principal of Birbhum College	750	W. B. Livingstone	
	Principal of Berhampore Sanskrit College	1000	Mahesh Chandra Nyayaratna, C.I.E.	
	Principal of Cuttack College	400-500	Samuel Ager	
	Principal of Moorshabad Madrasah		J. Reuther	
	Principal of Patna Collegiate School	300-400	A. S. Phillips, B.A.	
	*Prof. of Sanskrit, Presidency Coll.	340	Nihani Mukhergen, M.A.	
	*Prof. of Anglo-Persian, Calcutta, Madrasah	270	W. Billing.	
Madras	*Prof. of Sanskrit, Patna College	500-1000	Chhota Ram Tewari, B.A.	
	Director of Public Instruction	2000-2250	H. B. Grigg, M.A.	
	Assistant to ditto	371	D. S. White	
	Inspectors of Schools—			
	1st Division	500-1500	T. T. Logan, B.A.	
	2nd Division	500-1500	G. Bickle	
	3rd Division	500-1500	J. T. Fowler	
	4th Division	500-1500	John Bradshaw, M.A., LL.D.	
	5th Division	500-1500	A. Alvaro, M.A., B.C.L.	
	6th Division	500-1500	L. Garthwaite, B.A.	
	7th Division	500-1500	E. Marsden, B.A.	
	Principal Presidency Coll., Madras	1250-1500	D. Duncan	
	Principal Ambaconnu College	500-1500	G. H. Stuart, M.A.	
	Principal Raja Mundry College	500-1500	E. P. Metcalfe, M.A.	
	Head Master, Calicut College	500	W. Sconce	
	Head Master, Birbhum College	500	J. M. Hensmann	
	Head Master, Madura College	500	T. R. Scott, B.A.	
	Head Master, Mangalore College	500	J. Moss, B.A.	
	Head Master, Cuddalore College	500	Satyamihau	
	Head Master, Madrasul-i Azam Coll.	500	A. L. Fowler, B.A.	
	*Professor of Sanskrit, Presidency College, Madras	500-1500	G. Oppert, Ph.D.	
Bombay	Director of Public Instruction	2150	K. M. Chatfield, M.A.	
	Inspectors of Schools—			
	Southern Division	1250	W. A. Russell, M.A.	
	Northern Division	1250	E. Giles, B.A.	
	North-east Division	750	H. P. Jacob	
	Sinde Division	250	F. Hart-Davies	
	Principal of Elphinstone College	1500	W. Wordsworth, B.A.	
	Principal of Deccan College	1250	N. G. Oxenham, M.A.	
	Principal of Rajkumar College	1250	C. Macnaughten, M.A.	
	Principal of Kullapur College		C. H. Conly, B.A.	
	Principal of Ahmedabad College	500	K. T. Best, M.A.	
	Professor of Oriental Languages, Elphinstone College	1000	P. Peterson, M.A.	
	*Professor, Deccan College	750	Ram Krishan Gopal Bhambharkar, M.A.	
	*Professor, Ahmedabad College	750	Rao Sahib Abaji Visham Kathavate, B.A.	
	*Professor, Kullapur College	750	Shikram Bapuji Poranji	
	*Prof. of Persian, Elphinstone Coll.	500	Mirza Haidar	
	*Professor of Persian, Deccan Coll.	500	Dastur Hosangji Janasgi	
	Head Master, High School, Belgaum	350	E. H. Hoogwerf	
	Director of Public Instruction	2000	R. T. H. Griffiths, M.A.	
	Inspectors of Schools—			
	Meerut Division	1300	E. T. Constable, M.A.	
	Agra Division	1250	R. A. Lloyd, B.A.	
	Oude Division	1250	J. C. Nesfield, M.A.	
	Allahabad Division	750	C. Dodd	
	Rutulghaud Division.	750	Durga Prasad	
	Principal of Muir Central College	1250	A. S. Harrison, B.A.	
	Principal of Benares College	750	G. Thibaut, Ph.D.	
	*Prof. Sanskrit, Muir Central Coll.	?	Aditya Ram Bhattacharya	
	Head Masters of District Schools—			
	Etawah School	400	C. H. De Mello	
	Allahabad School	400	B. D. Gordon	
	Bareilly School	400	E. A. Phillips	
	Benares School	400	C. Flotts	
	Fyzabad School	400	H. O. Budda	
	Cawnpore School	300	H. Harris	
	Moradabad School	300	W. Bonnard	
Punjab	Director of Public Instruction	2000	Colonel Holroyd	
	Inspectors of Schools—			
	Delhi Circle	1250	C. Pearson, M.A.	
	Lahore Circle	1000	T. Sans, B.A.	
	Rawalpindi Circle	850	D. W. Thomson	
	Anbala Circle	550	T. C. Lewis, M.A.	
	Multan Circle	500	T. Harvey	
	Principal of Lahore College	1250	Dr. G. W. Leitner, LL.D.	Since retired.
	Principal of Central Punjab Coll.	1000	H. Duck	
	*Principal of Oriental College	?	Dr. G. W. Leitner	Since retired.
	Head Master of Lahore High School	400	F. D. Staines	
	Director of Public Instruction	1500	C. A. N. Browning	
	Inspectors of Schools—			
	South Circle	1000	Lieut.-Col. H. B. Jacob	
	North Circle	1000	G. Thomson, B.A.	
Central Provinces	President High School, Nagpore	500	W. Young	
	Director of Public Instruction	1250	P. Hordern, B.A.	
	Inspectors of Schools—			
	Rangoon Circle	700	R. G. Huson	
	Junior Circle	500	L. H. Go-s	
	Principal of Rangoon College	800	T. H. Gilbert	
	*Professor of Pali	350	Samuel Forchhammer, Ph.D.	
	Head Master High School, Moulmein	400	I. A. Adams	
	Head Master Normal Sch., Rangoon	400	D. Aldridge	
	Head Master High School, Akyab	350	T. Simeon	

The Appointments may be grouped thus—

	Rs. per month.
1 Secretary to Board of Examiners ..	2000
7 Directors of Public Instruction ..	1250-2150
32 Inspectors of Schools ..	250-1500
26 Principals of Colleges ..	500-1500
13 Professors of Oriental Languages ..	270-1000
19 Head Master-ships of High or District Schools ..	300- 500

There are, besides, a vast number of subordinate educational posts, such as Deputy-Inspectors of Schools, Assistant-Professors and Head-Master-ships of Lower Grade Schools; but as these are ordinarily held by Natives of India, no account has been taken of them.

INSTITUTION.	NATURE OF APPOINTMENT.	EMOLUMENT.	MODE OF APPOINTMENT.	NAME OF HOLDER.
University, Oxford	Regius Professor	£40, and Canonry of Ch. Ch. worth about £1400		Rev. S. R. Driver, M.A., D.D.
University, Cambridge	Reader in Rabbinical Literature	£200		Ad. Neubauer, M.A.
	Regius Professor	£40 and Canonry of Ely		Rev. A. F. Kirkpatrick, M.A.
University, London	Teacher Rabbinical Literature	£300		Dr. Schiller-Szinessy
	Two Examiners	£60 each		Rev. S. Leathes and Mr. S. Bentley
University, Durham	Professor			Ven. H. W. Walkius
	Lecturer			Rev. J. T. Fowler
University, St. Andrews	Professor of Oriental Languages			
University, Glasgow	Professor of Oriental Languages			
University, Aberdeen	Professor of Oriental Languages			
University, Edinburgh	Professor of Hebrew	£300		D. C. Adams
University, Dublin	Professor of Hebrew			T. K. Abbott
	Erasmus Smith Professor			R. Atkinson, LL.D.
	Erasmus Smith Professor, also 2 Assistants			H. R. Poole, D.D.
University College, London	Goldsmid Professor	Proceeds of £2000	By Council	Rev. F. W. Marks
King's College, London				Rev. S. Leathes, D.D.

There are likewise Professorships of Hebrew conjoined with other subjects at Owens College, Manchester; New College, London; Lancashire Independent College; Spring Hill College; Carmarthen College; Brecon College; University College, Bristol; and at some other Nonconformist Training Colleges, and at Jewish Colleges.

SCHOLARSHIPS, Etc.

University, Oxford	4 Boden Sanskrit Scholarships of £50, tenable for four years, awarded yearly.
" "	The Davis Chinese Scholarship of £50, tenable for 2 years.
" Cambridge	Brotherton Sanskrit Prize of £25, annually.
" "	At St. John's College, 2 Studentships of £60 to be applied in the management of Natural Science or the Study of Semitic or Indian Languages.
" Edinburgh	Vans Dunalop Semitic Scholarship, £100 for 3 years.
" "	Certain Prizes in Semitic and Sanskrit.
" Dublin	Semitic Prizes to £40, none ever awarded.
" "	Arabic Prizes to £10, " "
" "	Hindustani Prizes to £5 " "
" "	Sanskrit Prizes to £10 " "
Sanskrit Exhibition at City of London School, £	" "

HEBREW SCHOLARSHIPS, Etc.

University, Oxford	2 Kennicott Scholarships, one £120 for 1 year awarded annually, one of £120 for ditto, awarded every second year.
" "	2 Pusey and Ellerton Scholarships, £40 for 2 years.
" "	Deuyer and Johnson Scholarship, 2 of £50 for a year, awarded annually—Hebrew included as a branch of theology.
" "	Houghton Syriac Prize of £15, awarded annually.
" "	Wadham College, Oxford, Hebrew Scholarship of £80 a year for 4 years.
" "	St. John's College, Oxford, one of £80 for 4 years.
" Cambridge	Tyrwhitt Scholarship (2), £30, £20, for 3 years, awarded yearly.
" "	Crosse Scholarship (3), £20 each, for 3 years, awarded yearly.
" "	Also a Hebrew Exhibition at Queens' Coll. Camb., and Merchant Taylors' School.
" "	Prize, proceeds of £600.
" Edinburgh	Barty Prize.
" Coll., London	Holles Scholarship, £60 for 1 year, awarded yearly.

There are probably some other Prizes, etc., especially in Hebrew, but in other Oriental languages it is not likely that there are any beyond those enumerated.

Much of the above information was obtained with considerable difficulty, but it is believed to be fairly accurate and complete. The result of the inquiries made is that there is even less encouragement given to students of Orientals than to teachers; of the latter, indeed, the professional duties must in some cases be extremely light, owing to the absence of sufficient inducements to join their classes.

Taking the three Classical Oriental Languages—Sanskrit, Arabic, and Chinese—we have:

12 appointments more or less exclusively in Sanskrit, with salaries ranging from £0—£300—£500—£1000.

7 appointments in Arabic, with salaries ranging from £0—£50—£500.

4 appointments in Chinese, with salaries ranging from £0—£70—£300.

15 appointments, Indian and Persian, mostly in connection with the preparation of Candidates for the Indian Civil Service, and depending mainly, in most cases exclusively, upon class fees. At Oxford and Cambridge the three Indian Readers get each £200 and fees.

the University of London. A boon of material importance has thus been granted. What is now wanted is to extend it to other Eastern languages, to facilitate access to it not alone by the endowment of a substantial number of scholarships for the encouragement of other departments of Eastern learning as well as of Sanskrit, but also by adding the necessary complement of *fellowships*, which might be made tenable under a pledge from the beneficiary to persevere in the cultivation of Eastern research.

A wider extension and additional encouragement may, and we hope will, be given to Eastern studies and research at the Universities, and something also be done by the governing bodies of schools throughout the kingdom towards promoting the study at least of Eastern history, including recent extensions of knowledge, the result of investigations of ancient languages, and of their written characters, and of the decipherment of monumental inscriptions. But it is to the liberality of the public that those acquainted with the circumstances of the case must turn for effectual aid and support. It is through such aid granted to the Egypt Exploration Fund, that something has at length been done to raise an important branch of Eastern science, that of Egyptology, from the deplorably low level at which it has long stood in England. Private munificence has never been found wanting in this country for the promotion of a great cause. The Royal Asiatic Society believes that it is performing a public duty by making it more generally known that such a cause exists. There are few other great objects in which such important results may be expected from so small an expenditure of money. And those who may be induced to assist in a too long neglected field, may rest assured that they will be rendering an important service to one of our greatest national interests, and that they will be helping to remove that which, in the eyes of the civilized world, is nothing less than a reproach to the English name.

CONTENTS OF VOL. XIX. PART III.

[NEW SERIES.]

ORIGINAL COMMUNICATIONS.

	PAGE
ART. XI.—The Life and Labours of Alexander Wylie, Agent of the British and Foreign Bible Society in China. A Memoir. By M. HENRI CORDIER, Professor at the École des Langues Orientales Vivantes and École des Sciences Politiques, Paris. (Communicated by Professor R. K. Douglas, M.R.A.S.) ..	351
ART. XII.—The Modern Languages of Oceania. By Dr. R. N. CUST, Hon. Sec., accompanied by a Language-Map and a Bibliography	369
ART. XIII.—Ibnu Baṭūṭa in Sindh. By Major-General M. R. HAIG, M.R.A.S.	393
ART. XIV.—Formosa Notes on MSS., Races and Languages. By TERRIEN DE LACOUTERIE, Ph. & Litt.D., Professor of Indo-Chinese Philology, University College, London. Including a Note on Nine Formosan MSS. by E. COLBORNE BABER, H.B.M. Chinese Secretary, Peking	413
ART. XV.—On the Revenues of the Moghul Empire. By H. G. KEENE, Esq. (Communicated through the Secretary R.A.S.).....	495

NOTES OF THE QUARTER

1. Reports of Meetings of the Royal Asiatic Society, Session 1886-7	500
2. Proceedings of Asiatic or Oriental Societies	506
3. Correspondence—(1) Buddhist Remains at Guṇṭu-palle, by R. Sewell. (2) Tsuh fu, by Robert K. Douglas	508
4. Obituary Notices	513
5. Excerpta Orientalia	528
6. Notes contributed by the Hon. Secretary	545
7. Address to Her Majesty on the occasion of the Jubilee	549

JOURNAL

OF

THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY.

ART. XI.—*The Life and Labours of Alexander Wylie, Agent of the British and Foreign Bible Society in China. A Memoir.* By M. HENRI CORDIER, Professor at the École des Langues Orientales Vivantes and École des Sciences Politiques, Paris.

(Communicated by Professor R. K. Douglas, M.R.A.S.)

It may be at first a matter of surprise to many that an alien by nationality and religion, a Roman Catholic Frenchman, should come before this learned Society to discourse on the life and labours of a British Protestant Missionary. A few words, however, will show that there are strong reasons for my taking up some of your valuable time with an account of the good work done by our late friend.

Indeed, Wylie's library was the very foundation of my *Bibliotheca Sinica*.¹ In 1869 I was engaged as Honorary

¹ *Bibliotheca Sinica*. Dictionnaire bibliographique des ouvrages relatifs à l'Empire chinois par Henri Cordier. Paris, E. Leroux, 1878-1885, 2 vols. imp. 8vo. I wrote in the Preface, June, 1878, p. x: "Tout le monde en Chine connaît Mr. Alex. Wylie; le savant et modeste agent de la 'British and Foreign Bible Society' donnait de son cabinet de travail situé à la 'London Mission,' Shantung Road, Changhai, les renseignements les plus utiles à ceux qui venaient frapper à sa porte. Une portion de sa bibliothèque avait été cédée à la Société asiatique, mais la plus précieuse partie à laquelle étaient venus s'adjoindre de nouveaux volumes était restée chez lui. Avec une rare bienveillance, Mr. Wylie m'avait permis de travailler dans sa bibliothèque, et j'ai à m'accuser d'avoir souvent dérangé cet excellent homme dans ses propres travaux, en venant—avec une indiscretion qui n'a d'excuse que mon désir de produire un ouvrage sérieux—m'installer au milieu de ses livres et de ses manuscrits. C'est là que j'ai pu examiner la copie faite par Stanislas Julien de la *Notitia* du P. de Prémare, une traduction du Tchoung Young du P. de Ventavon, et mille et une plaquettes uniques ou rarissimes. D'ailleurs, Mr. Wylie est un confrère, si un élève comme moi peut traiter de confrère un maître comme lui; n'a-t-il pas écrit ces *Notes on Chinese Literature* qui sont aujourd'hui le *vade mecum* de celui qui cherche à s'orienter dans le labyrinthe de la littérature de la Chine."

Librarian to compile the Catalogue of the Library of the North China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society at Shanghai, the bulk of which came from Mr. Wylie, when an idea of compiling a list of all the books relating to the Middle Kingdom occurred to me. Having published the catalogue of the Asiatic Society, I have devoted the last eighteen years to this task. I drew much of the necessary materials from the N. C. B. R. Asiatic Society's Library, a great deal more from the new collection made by Wylie during his visit to Europe in 1860. His library was situated on the ground floor at the farthest end of the premises belonging to the London Missionary Society in the Shantung Road, at Shanghai. Four or five large book-cases contained the works comprising his new library. The Chinese books were at the back in a sort of passage. Wylie was exceedingly proud of his Chinese library, rivalled or surpassed in China only by the collection of that very learned sinologist and distinguished diplomatic agent, Sir Thomas Wade, Her Majesty's Minister at Peking. Many an afternoon, winter and summer, did I sit with Wylie at his small round writing table, he doing some useful work for some one who might never think of thanking him for it, I copying titles in view of my *Bibliotheca Sinica*. Wylie was not one of those savants with a solemn appearance who fill with awe and reverence the poor mortals who are allowed to approach them: he had a kindly appearance, a pleasant smile on his face, a modest countenance, and oftentimes, when engaged in conversation, he would make you believe that he was highly interested in and derived much knowledge from what you told him. Though extremely pious, he did not think that religion should make one gloomy, and he was at that time of a very genial and humorous turn of mind.

When the *Bibliotheca Sinica* was published in parts, it was to Wylie that I owed the first public recognition of my labours in the *Chinese Recorder*, the *China Review*, *Trübner's Record* and the *London and China Express*. Our friendly relations continued to the end. In fact, I published

in my own *Revue de l'Extrême-Orient* what I believe to be the last paper written by him, *The Ethnography of the After Han Dynasty*. I think that under these circumstances I may feel quite justified in bringing here my grateful tribute to the memory of a friend whose science I admire, whose character and life I hold in high esteem.

Some years ago, as I intended giving some notices about celebrated sinologists, Wylie, to whom I applied for particulars of his life, sent me his photograph, adding with characteristic modesty:¹ "Your notices of sinologues will be interesting, but it will be a long time ere it comes to my turn. I really do not know what notes I could give you about myself that would be of any interest to the public. I am essentially one of *hoi polloi*. My birthday was April 6th, 1815, in London, and I reached China August 26th, 1847. The rest I think you know tolerably well."

Of the early life of Alexander Wylie I know but few particulars. Dr. James Legge related in *Trübner's Record* (No. 231, vol. viii. No. 1) lately how he made the acquaintance of Wylie, and under what circumstances the latter proceeded to China: "Having returned from Hong Kong to England for a time in consequence of illness, I was living in London in 1846. It was there that I first saw Mr. Wylie. He called on me with a letter from a friend, which told me that my visitor was a cabinet-maker, whom he knew well, of great intelligence and other high qualities, who had been occupying himself lately with the study of Chinese. I asked the stranger what had made him take up that language, when he said that having picked up, the winter before, at an old-book stall, a copy of Prémare's *Notitia Linguae Sinicae*, he had learned Latin sufficiently to be able to read it, was much interested with it, and wished to obtain some guidance in prosecuting the study of Chinese. There was a New Testament in Chinese on the table. I opened it, and he read with tolerable accuracy a column or two, and translated them with an approximation to correct-

¹ January 21st, 1882.

ness. His pronunciation was not exact, but he had got hold of the principle of relative position by which the meaning of the symbolic characters in their combination is determined. I asked him where he had got a dictionary, and he said he had not got one. "How, then, did you learn the names and meanings of those characters?" "Partly," he said, "from Prémare, and I have tried to make a list of characters and their signification for myself. I got a New Testament from the Bible Society. Turning to the fourth Gospel, I knew that the first verse must contain the name for 'God' twice, and the character for 'Word' three times. I put these down, and went on to determine others in the same way." He had brought with him some tracts which he had got from the Religious Tract Society; trying him with one of these, he was not so successful as with the New Testament, but still did wonderfully. I arranged for him to come to me, and get a lesson occasionally. When he left me, I felt sure that if the way could be opened for him to pursue the study under favourable conditions, he was a man who would greatly distinguish himself in the field of Chinese scholarship. The result of that interview was, that soon afterwards he was studying the work and management of a printing office under the auspices of the late Sir Charles Reed, and in 1847 he proceeded to China to take the superintendence of the printing office of the London Missionary Society at Shanghai, which he conducted efficiently till 1860."

As soon as Wylie arrived in China, he set at work to master the Chinese language. Knowing well the enormous influence the Classics have on the mind of the natives, and how necessary it is for the missionary to penetrate into the inner thought of the individual, he undertook to translate for himself the whole of the *King*. This wonderful labour he successfully accomplished, and I well remember the six or seven half-bound volumes containing his manuscript on the top shelf of one of his book-cases. However, Wylie considered these translations too imperfect to be printed, so they have remained unpublished; they have fallen into good hands, those of his daughter, with the exception of one in

care of Dr. James Legge, who speaks in the following terms of the version of the *Li ki*¹: "The present translation [Dr. Legge's] is, as I said above, the first published in any European language of the whole of the *Lî Ki*; but another had existed in manuscript for several years,—the work of Mr. Alexander Wylie, now unhappily, by loss of eyesight and otherwise failing health, laid aside from his important Chinese labours. I was fortunate enough to obtain possession of this when I had got to the 35th Book in my own version, and, in carrying the sheets through the press, I have constantly made reference to it. It was written at an early period of Mr. Wylie's Chinese studies, and is not such as a Sinologist of his attainments and research would have produced later on. Still, I have been glad to have it by me, though I may venture to say that, in construing the paragraphs and translating the characters, I have not been indebted in a single instance to him or P. Callery."

After trying his hand in this severe task, Wylie was ready to give to the public some works bearing his name. Many opportunities were soon offered to him.

Wylie was one of the foremost contributors to the *North-China Herald* in the early days of that paper. The *Chinese Repository* had ceased to exist in December, 1851, after the completion of its twentieth volume. During the last seven years of its existence, this celebrated magazine had lost from 300 to 400 dollars annually,² and its last editor, Dr. S. Wells Williams, had discontinued its publication, thinking—and in this he was wrong—that the appearance of numerous newspapers rendered useless a periodical of the nature of the *Repository*. The *North-China Herald* had been started in 1850³ at Shanghai, by Henry Shearman, who continued to edit it to his death in 1856.⁴ News was then scarce, one monthly line of steamers brought letters and papers from

¹ Sacred Books of the East, translated by Dr. James Legge. Part iii., *Li ki*, Oxford, 1885, pref. p. xiii.

² S. W. Williams's *Recollections*, *Journ. N.C. Br. R.A.S. Soc.* n.s. vol. viii. p. 18.

³ Vol. i. No. 1, Saturday, 3rd August, 1850.

Henry Shearman died, 53 years old, at Shanghai, on the 22nd March, 1856.

home, and China was not yet connected with Europe by a telegraphic wire, so Henry Shearman gave much place in his gazette to scientific papers. Wylie was one of those who took advantage of the new periodical to publish articles which—owing to their lasting value and to their length—would no doubt have suited the defunct *Repository* better than a weekly chronicle. However, at the end of the year, Shearman used to reprint as an appendix to his Almanac a number of the special articles which had appeared in the *Herald*, making out of valuable materials lost in the files of the newspaper an interesting *Miscellany*¹—now very rare—which lived until 1858. Charles Spencer Compton, who took Shearman's place, thought it too much trouble to continue a serial which reflected great credit on its editor, but did not bring him £ s. d.

Two of Wylie's papers in the *North-China Herald* at that time call for some special notice: one is on the celebrated Nestorian stone² found in 1625 at Si-ngan fou in the Shensi province, which shows, as everybody knows, that the Christian religion existed in the Chinese Empire as far back as the eighth century, under the rule of the Tang Dynasty. One would have thought that all discussions were at an end after the notes, articles, or books from Fathers Terenz, Trigault, Martini, Semedo, Kircher and Visdelou, from Andreas Müller, Abel Rémusat, Neumann, Leontiev, E. C. Bridgman.³ Wylie made the subject quite new, and, in spite of more recent researches made by G. Pauthier, Dabry de Thiersant, and others, his series of papers on the Si-ngan fou tablet cannot be overlooked by all who study the progress of Nestorianism through Asia. As late as the 10th of December, 1879, did Wylie busy himself with this

¹ Shanghai Almanac for 1853, and Miscellany. Printed at the "Herald" Office, Shanghai, 8vo. The last number is: Miscellany or Companion to the Shanghai Almanac for 1857. Printed and published at the *N.C. Herald Office*, Shanghai, 8vo.

² The Nestorian Tablet in Se-gan Foo (*N.C. Herald*, 1854, Oct. 28, Nov. 25, Dec. 2; 1855, Jan. 6, Nov. 24, Dec. 15, 22, 29). Rep. in the *Shanghai Miscellany* for 1855 and 1856, and in the *Journ. of the Am. Oriental Soc.* vol. v. pp. 275-336.

³ Cf. my *Bibliotheca Sinica*, col. 325-329.

favourite subject of his in a short reply¹ to an article of Mr. George Phillips in the *China Review*.²

The second of these articles is on the science of the Chinese,³ particularly on Arithmetic. It was deemed of sufficient importance to be translated into German,⁴ and the learned Secrétaire perpétuel of the Academy of Sciences in Paris, Joseph Bertrand, did not think that two lengthy articles in the *Journal des Savans*⁵ were unnecessary to bring Wylie's researches before Western mathematicians. This article seems to have been the starting-point of those mathematical and astronomical studies, which, though little known in Europe, are perhaps the most important of the scientific baggage of Wylie. In 1853 he gave a Compendium of Arithmetic in Chinese, *Soo hëö k'é mung*, with a table of logarithms as an appendix. Four years later he gave one more paper on the bibliography of mathematical books, and he then boldly undertook to translate some European scientific books into Chinese. At the beginning of the seventeenth century the celebrated Matteo Ricci,⁶ founder of the Jesuits' Mission at Peking, owed as much of his success to his scientific books as to his religious works, one of which remains famous to this day in China: The True Doctrine of God, *Tien choo she e*,⁷ while others like the treatise on Friendship, *Kiao yow-luen*, are not yet forgotten. Ricci had given a general Treatise on Arithmetic, *Tong wen swan che shong pien*, a work on Geometry, *Hwan yong kiao e*, etc., and he had translated the first six books of Euclid's *Elements*, *Ke ho yuén pùn*, in 1608, with the assistance of his noble convert, Seu Kwang ke, whose life he wrote, *Seu Kwang ke ling lio*.

¹ Nestorians in China (*China Review*, viii. pp. 190-191).

² Nestorians at Canton (*China Review*, viii. pp. 31-34).

³ "Jottings on the Science of the Chinese" (*North China Herald*, 108, Aug. 21, 1852; 111-113, 116-117, 119-121, Nov. 20, 1852). Rep. in *The Shanghai Almanac and Miscellany*, 1853, 22 pages; and in *The Chinese and Japanese Repository*, April, 1864, et seq.

⁴ *Crelle's Journal für die reine und angewandte Mathematik*, 1856, pp. 59-94, "Die Arithmetik der Chinesen" (Von Herrn Dr. K. L. Biernatzki, zu Berlin), Berlin, April, 1855.

⁵ *Journal des Savans*, 1869, June and August.

⁶ Born at Macerata, 6th October, 1552; arrived in China in 1583; and died at Peking 11th May, 1610.

⁷ Published in 1601.

Wylie, following in the wake of Ricci, completed his work by rendering into Chinese book vii. to book xv. of the *Elements*, published in 1857 at Sung keang, under the title of *Sǎh ke ho yuén pùn*, Supplementary Elements of Geometry. At the end of the short English preface Wylie remarks: "To accompany this issue with an apology would almost seem out of place. Truth is one, and while we seek to promote its advancement in science, we are but preparing the way for its development in that loftier knowledge, which as Christian men and missionaries, it is our chief desire to see consummated." Henceforth *Li Ma-tow* (Ricci, Matteo) and *Wei-lě Yâ-lih* (Wylie) were inseparable, and in 1865 Viceroy Tseng Kwo-fan had both of these works reprinted together at Nanking.

Next follow (Shanghai, 1858) a Popular Treatise on Mechanics, *Chung hě ts'een shwo*, from the English, and De Morgan's Treatise on Algebra, *Tsae soō hěo* (Shanghai, 1859). Always indefatigable, at the same place and in the same year (Shanghai, 1859), he produced translations of Loomis' Elements of Analytical Geometry and of the Differential and Integral Calculus, *Tae wé tseih shi keih* and Herschell's *Outlines of Astronomy*, *Tan tēn*. This last work is illustrated by the original steel engravings used at home. The astronomical phenomena "cannot fail," Wylie observes at the end of the Preface of Herschell's *Outlines*, "to awaken in inquisitive minds of a certain order, a desire to become better acquainted with these and kindred facts in nature, which is calculated to exercise a healthful influence on the intellectual character. That such facts may lead to juster and more exalted conceptions of 'Him who hath created these orbs,—who bringeth forth their host by number and calleth them all by their names;—who hath made the earth by His power, established the world by His wisdom, and stretched out the heavens by His understanding,' is the sincere desire of the translator." We think it interesting to note from this same preface the disbursements for the publication of the last three works in Chinese:—

	TAEELS.
500 copies of De Morgan's Algebra	146, 00
355 copies of Loomis' Algebraic Geometry and Differential and Integral Calculus	323, 00
1000 copies of Herschell's Astronomy	622, 00
	<hr/> Tael8 1091, 00 <hr/>

They were covered with contributions from friends of the translator to the extent of Tael8 1000.

He occupied himself with these studies late in life, as he devoted a lengthy and most remarkable article to the *Uranographie Chinoise*¹ by Dr. Schlegel, of Leyden, in the *Chinese Recorder*.² The work of Schlegel had been very severely criticized, to my mind unjustly, by M. Joseph Bertrand,³ and Wylie's high encomium was exceedingly gratifying to the learned Dutch professor. Wylie gave to the Fifth International Congress held at Berlin a paper on the Mongol Astronomical instruments kept at the Observatory at Peking. All visitors to the Capital of the Middle Kingdom have admired on the wall of the city or in the garden below the magnificent bronze castings which are generally ascribed to the Jesuit missionaries of the eighteenth century, especially to Ferdinand Verbiest, though some of them date as far back as the Yuen dynasty. These Mongol instruments are fully described in the memoir presented to the Berlin Congress (1881).⁴

While prosecuting these scientific works, Wylie was studying the Tartar languages, Manchu being especially useful; it is a language more easily acquired than Chinese, and as most Chinese books of importance have been translated into Manchu, a great saving of time may be effected

¹ Sing chin khao youen. *Uranographie chinoise ou Preuves directes que l'Astronomie primitive est originaire de la Chine et qu'elle a été empruntée par les anciens peuples occidentaux à la sphère chinoise* . . . par Gustave Schlegel . . . La Haye, 1875, 2 parts, 8vo. and atlas.

² vi. pp. 442-447.

³ *Journ. des Savans*, Sept. 1875, pp. 557-566. Schlegel answered since (1880) in the *Bijd. tot de Taal- Land- en Volkenkunde v. Ned. Ind.* pp. 350-372.

⁴ Cf. Yule's *Marco Polo*, 2nd ed. ii. pp. 544-550.

by using the Manchu, instead of the Chinese texts. This was done to a great extent by the missionaries at Peking, and by Leontiev during the Këen-lung period, as well as by Klaproth at the beginning of this century. Wylie was soon able to give articles on some interesting Mongol and Neuchih inscriptions.¹ To facilitate the study of Manchu, he translated in 1855 a Chinese grammar of this language known as the *Ts'ing wän k'e müng*.² This work had been already put into Russian by Valdykine in 1804; but Russian being almost as inaccessible as Chinese to most readers, this version remained in manuscript, and I do not think that Wylie even suspected its existence in the catalogue of Klaproth's scattered library.³ Wylie intended giving a *Manchu Chrestomathy*, but he did not carry out his idea. This Chrestomathy was to include an English translation by Wylie of the so-called Amiot's *Grammaire Tartare-mantehou*,⁴ which was really written in Latin by Gerbillon.⁵ The English version was printed, I have seen it, and comprised 30 pages 8vo., but was not published. Four years later (1859), Wylie edited at Shanghai the Gospels of Matthew and Mark from the Manchu translation by Lipovzov and the Delegates' version in Chinese with the titles *Woó choó yây soo ke tüh sin e chaóu shoo* and *Musei echen isusgheristos i tutapuha itche ghese*. New Testament in Manchu and Chinese.

Amid these multifarious labours Wylie found time enough to edit a new periodical, *Lüh hó ts'ung tan*, which lasted

¹ On an Ancient Inscription in Chinese and Mongol, from a Stone Tablet at Shang-hae. By Mr. A. Wylie, printer to the *London Missionary Society*, Shanghai. Read before the Society May 21st, 1855 (*Trans. China Br. R.A.S.*, pt. v. Art. III.). On an Ancient Inscription in the Neuchih Language (*ibid.* vi. pp. 137-153, 1859). Remarks on some Impressions from a Lapidary Inscription at Keu-yung-kwan, on the Great Wall near Peking. By A. Wylie, Esq. (*Journal N.C.B.R.A.S.*, No. 1, n.s. pp. 133-136). See also *Journal of this Society*: Vol. XVII. (1860), Art. XVI.; and Vol. V. n.s. (1871), Art. II.

² Translation of the *Ts'ing Wang ke'mung*, a Chinese Grammar of the Manchu Tartar Language: with Introductory Notes on Manchu Literature. Shanghai, London Mission Press, 1855, 8vo. pp. lxxx-314.

³ Klaproth's sale, part ii. No. 202.

⁴ *Grammaire Tartare-mantehou*, par M. Amiot, Missionnaire à Pékin. Tirée du tome xiii. des Mémoires concernant l'Histoire, les Arts, les Sciences, etc., des Chinois. A Paris, chez Nyon l'aîné, . . . M.DCC.LXXXVII. 4to. pp. 39.

⁵ *Elementa Linguae Tartariae*. (Thévenot, *Recueil*, vol. ii. 4e Partie, 1696.)

from January, 1857, to 1858. It includes articles somewhat after the style of magazines, and in it appeared the *Popular Treatise of Mechanics* alluded to already. This serial was, with the exception of the articles on religion, reprinted by the Japanese during the following year.

About this time some spirited gentlemen thinking that tea, silk, and Manchester goods, however important they were from a mercantile point of view, were not sufficient food for the mind, created a literary and scientific association, which soon after became affiliated to this Society under the name of the North-China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society. The inaugural address was delivered on the 16th of October, 1857, by the Rev. Dr. E. C. Bridgman, of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, the first editor of the *Chinese Repository*, President of the Society.¹ Naturally, Wylie was one of the first contributors, and he gave in the Journal of the Society, almost at the outset, a long notice of the coins of the present dynasty, illustrated with 232 cuts.² This catalogue of coins has been completed in 1878 by Mr. James Kirkwood in the *China Review*.³

Every one knows of the scion of the Jewish family which emigrated under the Han dynasty, and finally settled at Kai Fung foo, in the Honan province, where its representatives were discovered by the Jesuits at the beginning of the seventeenth century.⁴ Indeed, this group of Israelites do not exist any longer: the Tai-ping rebellion has scattered its few remaining members all over China; in fact, I knew one of the last Jews, who was my tailor at Shanghai twelve years ago. But great interest was taken in them formerly in 1850, the Right Rev. George Smith, then Lord Bishop of Victoria, Hongkong, had sent to them two native

¹ *Journal of the Shanghai Literary and Scientific Society*, No. 1, June, 1858, Inaugural Address, pp. 1-16.

² Coins of the 大清 *Ta Ts'ing*, or Present Dynasty of China. Laid before the Society, Nov. 17th, 1857, pp. 44-102.

³ *China Review*, vol. vii. July, 1878, to June, 1879, pp. 162-167, 255-269.

⁴ Lettre du P. Jean Paul Gozani, S.J., au P. Joseph Suarez, Kai Fung foo, 5th Nov. 1704, *Lett. édifiantes*, éd. Mérimot, xviii. pp. 31-48.

Christians¹ on a mission of inquiry;² these envoys brought back some manuscripts, faesimiles of which were printed at Shanghai. An agent to the London Missionary Society could not overlook such an interesting question, and Wylie published a valuable article on the Jews in China in 1863 in the *Chinese and Japanese Repository*.³

Let us add to all these works: *Kĕä yĭh urh yĕw lún shùh*, Story of the two friends Kĕä and Yĭh, Shanghai, 1858, which is a revision of Dr. Milne's tract *Chang yuen lĕang yĕw sĕang lún*, Dialogues between Chang and Yuen, Malacca, 1819, with a last chapter by Dr. J. Edkins (reprinted at Shanghai, 1861), and *Chung se t'ung shoo*, Chinese Western Almanac for the year 1859-1860, in continuation at Shanghai, during an absence of Dr. Edkins, of an annual commenced in 1852 by the latter. On his return, Dr. Edkins resumed the work.

But time had come for Wylie to take a little rest, and he returned home in 1860. He had previously ceded his valuable library, which was to be replaced later on by a still more valuable collection of books, to the North China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society. A preliminary list was prepared,⁴ and I published some years later a full catalogue with notes.⁵ A change occurred at this time in Wylie's life. While in London he transferred his connection from the London Missionary Society to the British and Foreign Bible Society, as whose agent he went back to China in 1863.

¹ They left Shanghai 15th November, 1850.

² The Jews at K'ae-fung-foo, being a Narrative of a Mission of Inquiry to the Jewish Synagogue at K'ae-fung-foo, on behalf of the London Society for Promoting Christianity among the Jews; with an Introduction, by the Right Rev. George Smith, D.D., Lord Bishop of Victoria. Shang-hae, London Missionary Society's Press, 1851, 8vo. pp. 82.—Faesimiles of the Hebrew Manuscripts obtained at the Jewish Synagogue in K'ae-Fung-Foo. Shanghai, printed at the London Missionary Society's Press, 1851, 4to.—On a Hebrew MS. of the Pentateuch, from the Jewish Congregation at Kai-fung-fu in China, by Mr. John W. Barrow, of New York; presented by Dr. Martin (communicated to the *Am. Or. Soc. Journal*, May, 1869, ix. No. 2, p. liii.

³ i. July, pp. 13-22; ii. August, pp. 43-52.

⁴ Catalogue of Books relating to China and the East. Shanghai, 1868, 8vo. pp. 29.

⁵ A Catalogue of the Library of the North China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society (including the Library of Alex. Wylie, Esq.), Systematically Classed. By Henri Cordier, Hon. Librarian, Shanghai. Printed at the "Ching-Foong" General Printing Office, 1872, 8vo. pp. viii.-86.

The return journey to China was overland from St. Petersburg to Peking, and Wylie has related it in a too impersonal manner in the *Journal of the N.C.B.R. Asiatic Society*.

Bibliographical labours are those by which Wylie is best known in Europe; indeed his *Notes on Chinese Literature* is actually the only guide to the general literature of China. His debut in this field of learning was the now very rare Catalogue of the London Mission Library at Shanghai.¹ It is not a meagre list of Chinese titles arranged in alphabetical order, but a catalogue raisonné, with most interesting notices on the works and the authors. It is really a very brilliant prelude (1857) to his greater undertaking. He had given a bibliographical list of works printed in Manchu, in the preface to his translation of the *Ts'ing wán ke'mung* (pp. xlix et seq.), and a descriptive catalogue of the languages into which the Bible has been translated in his *Chinese Western Almanac* for 1860. Wylie always refused to recognize as his own the very useful bio-bibliographical book entitled *Memorials of Protestant Missionaries* (1867).² He wrote to me once (28th January, 1872): "I was instrumental in furnishing Gamble³ with nearly all the information in the 'Memorials of Protestant Missionaries,' but never authorized him to put my name to it. I protested against it at the time he issued it, but have repudiated it so often that I now let the thing take its course." The work, nevertheless, bears fully his mark; it contains the surname and Christian names of every missionary, his native name, and a full list of his publications, whether in Chinese, Malay, or in any other language.

In 1867 the *Notes on Chinese Literature*⁴ appeared. Bibliography is not merely a list of works strung together in

¹ Catalogue of the London Mission Library, Shanghai. Shanghai, 1857, 8vo. pp. 102.

² Memorials of Protestant Missionaries to the Chinese, giving a list of their Publications, and Obituary Notices of the Deceased, with copious Indexes. Shanghai, American Presbyterian Mission Press, 1867, 8vo. pp. vi.-331.

³ William Gamble, Superintendent of the American Presbyterian Mission Press.

⁴ Notes on Chinese Literature, with introductory remarks on the Progressive Advancement of the Art, and a List of Translations from the Chinese into various European Languages. By A. Wylie, Agent of the British and Foreign Bible Society in China. Shanghai, American Presbyterian Mission Press, 1867, 4to. pp. viii.-xxviii.-260.

alphabetical or systematical order. To be a good bibliographer, some general and technical knowledge to classify books, tact to make a discriminate selection of works, exactitude to describe volumes accurately, are required. These qualities are possessed in a high degree by the Chinese, who are first-class bibliographers. Wylie's book is based mainly on the splendid catalogue of the Imperial Library at Peking, compiled during the period K'een-lung from 1772 to 1790, *Kin ting szé k'oo' tseuen shoo tsùng mǔh*, an abridgment of which, containing less than a tenth of the original matter, was published under the title of *Kin ting szé k'oo' tseuen shoo k'een ming mǔh lǎh*. Wylie followed the Chinese system of classification under four headings, *szé koo*, I. Classics (*Yih-king*, *Shoo-king*, etc.). II. History, *Shé* (History, Geography, etc.). III. Philosophy, *Tsze* (including Religion, Arts and Sciences). IV. Belles-lettres, *Tseih*, the largest of the four divisions, including the various classes of polite literature, poetry, and analytical works. Over 2000 works are described with notes by Wylie, and the whole is headed by a preface and introduction, including a list of the translations of Chinese works into European languages. At the end are to be found an appendix, containing a list of general collections of works, *Tsung shoo*, then an index of the titles of books, and an index of the names of persons to terminate the volume.

The work carried on by an agent of a Bible Society partakes somewhat of the nature of the labour performed by a peddler: the chief quality of an agent is activity characterized by itinerancy. Wylie never failed to do his duty, and he travelled extensively throughout the Celestial Empire; he has kept the record of one of his longest journeys in the central provinces in the *Journal of the N.C.B.R. As. Society*.¹

About this time Wylie, who was one of the Vice-Presidents of that Society, the late Egyptologist, C. W. Goodwin,

¹ Itinerary of a Journey through the Provinces of Hoo-pih, S'ze-chuen, and Shen-se, by A. Wylie (*Journ. N.C.B. Roy. Asiat. Soc.* n.s. No. v. December, 1868, Art. VIII. p. 153).

being the President, had the greatest share in editing the Journal. It was during this brilliant period that the Society built rooms for itself, that the library was removed and catalogued, that a museum of natural history was created, and that in the Journal were published the remarkable articles of W. F. Mayers, on the introduction and use of gunpowder among the Chinese,¹ of the Abbé Armand David on the Natural History of China,² of the Archimandrite Palladius on Marco Polo,³ of Dr. Emil Bretschneider on the Mediæval Geography of Central and Western Asia.⁴

Wylie himself gave little to the Journal, being fully occupied elsewhere, and he returned to his old studies with two papers on the eclipses recorded by the Chinese, and the opinions of the Celestials regarding these Phenomena.⁵ He soon took the editorship of the *Chinese Recorder*. A periodical devoted to missions had been started in January, 1867, at Foochow, under the name of the *Missionary Recorder*;⁶ it soon was changed into the *Chinese Recorder and Missionary Journal*,⁷ with the Rev. S. L. Baldwin and Justus Doolittle as successive editors; but it was short-lived owing to its almost exclusive tendency; two years later

¹ On the Introduction and Use of Gunpowder and Firearms among the Chinese, with notes on some Ancient Engines of Warfare, and Illustrations, by W. F. Mayers, Esq., F.R.A.S., F.R.G.S., etc., of H.B.M.'s Consular Service, China. Read May 18th, 1869 (*Ibid.* n.s. No. vi. 1869 and 1870, Art. V. p. 73).

² Quelques renseignements sur l'histoire naturelle de la Chine septentrionale et occidentale, par le Père Armand David, Missionnaire Lazariste. Lettre à M. Forbes à Shanghai. Peking, 12 Août, 1872 (*Ibid.* n.s. No. viii. 1871 and 1872, Art. X. p. 205.)

³ Elucidations of Marco Polo's Travels in North China, drawn from Chinese Sources. By the Rev. Archimandrite Palladius (*Ibid.* n.s. No. x. 1876, Art. I. p. 1).

⁴ Notices of the Mediæval Geography and History of Central and Western Asia. Drawn from Chinese and Mongol Writings, and compared with the Observations of Western Authors in the Middle Ages. By E. Bretschneider, M.D. (*Ibid.* n.s. No. x. 1876, Art. IV. p. 75).

⁵ Notes on the Opinions of the Chinese with regard to Eclipses. Read October 13th, 1866 (*Journal N.C.B.R.A.S.* n.s. No. iii. December, 1866, Art. IVa, p. 71). Eclipses Recorded in Chinese Works (*Ibid.* n.s. No. iv. December, 1867, Art. VII. p. 87).

⁶ *The Missionary Recorder*: A Repository of Intelligence from Eastern Missions and a Medium of General Information. Vol. i. 1867, American M.E. Mission Press. Foochow, 8vo.

⁷ *The Chinese Recorder and Missionary Journal*, Rev. S. L. Baldwin, Editor. Vol. i. May, 1868, to April, 1869. Foo-chow, printed by Rozario, Marçal & Co., 1869, 8vo.

(1874) Wylie took it up. He had much of the spirit which guided the Jesuits at Peking during the last century; he was too liberal-minded to separate science from religion; both could march together to their mutual benefit. At once the *Recorder*,¹ transferred to Shanghai, published papers of the highest order due to Archimandrite Palladius² and to Dr. Bretschneider;³ room was largely given to history and geography, while the *Term* question was renovated with new vigour. But it was Wylie's last great effort. Age, fatigue, and more than age or fatigue—his failing eyesight—compelled him to return to Europe in 1877.

With Palladius' death at Marseilles, just landing from the mail steamer, Bretschneider's return to St. Petersburg, Wylie's demise, historical and geographical studies have suffered irreparable losses in China; in Europe the innumerable correspondents of these scholars knew well their worth. I may be allowed to quote the following lines: "Not a few of the kind friends and correspondents who lent their aid before have continued it to the present revision. The contributions of Mr. A. Wylie, of Shanghai, whether as regards the amount of labour which they must have cost him, or the value of the result, demand above all others a grateful record here."⁴

These words, written by your illustrious President at the beginning of the *Book of Ser Marco Polo*, the greatest monument ever raised to mediæval geography, could not be passed over in silence.

And what shall I say of the host of newspapers, reviews, magazines, periodicals of all kinds, serials of all size suddenly deprived of one of their most valuable contributors? *North China Herald*, *North China Daily News*, *Shanghai Evening*

¹ *The Chinese Recorder and Missionary Journal*, vol. v. Shanghai, American Presbyterian Mission Press, 1874, 8vo.

² *Traces of Christianity in Mongolia and China in the Thirteenth Century*, drawn from Chinese Sources. By Archimandrite Palladius (*The Chinese Recorder*, vi. 1875, pp. 104-113).

³ *Notes on Chinese Mediæval Travellers to the West*. By E. Bretschneider, M.D. (*China Recorder*, vol. v. 1874).

⁴ *The Book of Ser Marco Polo, the Venetian, concerning the Kingdoms and Marvels of the East*. Newly translated and edited, with notes, maps, and other illustrations. By Col. Henry Yule, C.B., 1875, 2 vols. 8vo.

Courier,¹ *Shanghai Budget*,² *China Review*, *Notes and Queries on China and Japan*,³ to name the most important; it would take two or three pages to index Wylie's articles, and I indicate only a few.

Wylie crossed the Channel in 1878, and was present at the fourth Congress of Orientalists held at Florence, where he read a paper on Corea.⁴ On his way back to England he stayed a few days in Paris. The latter days of his laborious life were spent at 18, Christchurch Road, Hampstead, where he could enjoy pure air and the splendid view of the Heath. His last work was the translation of the Ethnological part of the History of Han,⁵ but he would make himself useful to others, and he revised, among other things, the proof-sheets of the book on *Chinese Buddhism* by his old friend, Dr. Edkins.⁶

But his eyesight was rapidly failing him. The last autograph letter I received from Wylie in March, 1881, is written by a hand which is no more guided by the eyes; later on his devoted daughter acted as his secretary, and he only signed his name to the letters; towards the end the mind had not survived the eyes, and Wylie had forgotten the world, whilst the world was still expecting some new

¹ Works of Pauthier (*Evening Courier*, Shanghai, May, 1873).

² Works of Stanislas Julien (*Shanghai Budget*, April 26, 1873). History of the Heng Nuo in their Relations with China. Translated from the Tseen-Han-Shoo (*Shanghai Budget*, 1873, *passim*).

³ Advance of a Chinese General to the Caspian. (*Notes and Queries on China and Japan*, ii. pp. 153-154).—Steaks from Living Cattle (*Ibid.* pp. 155-156, October, 1868).

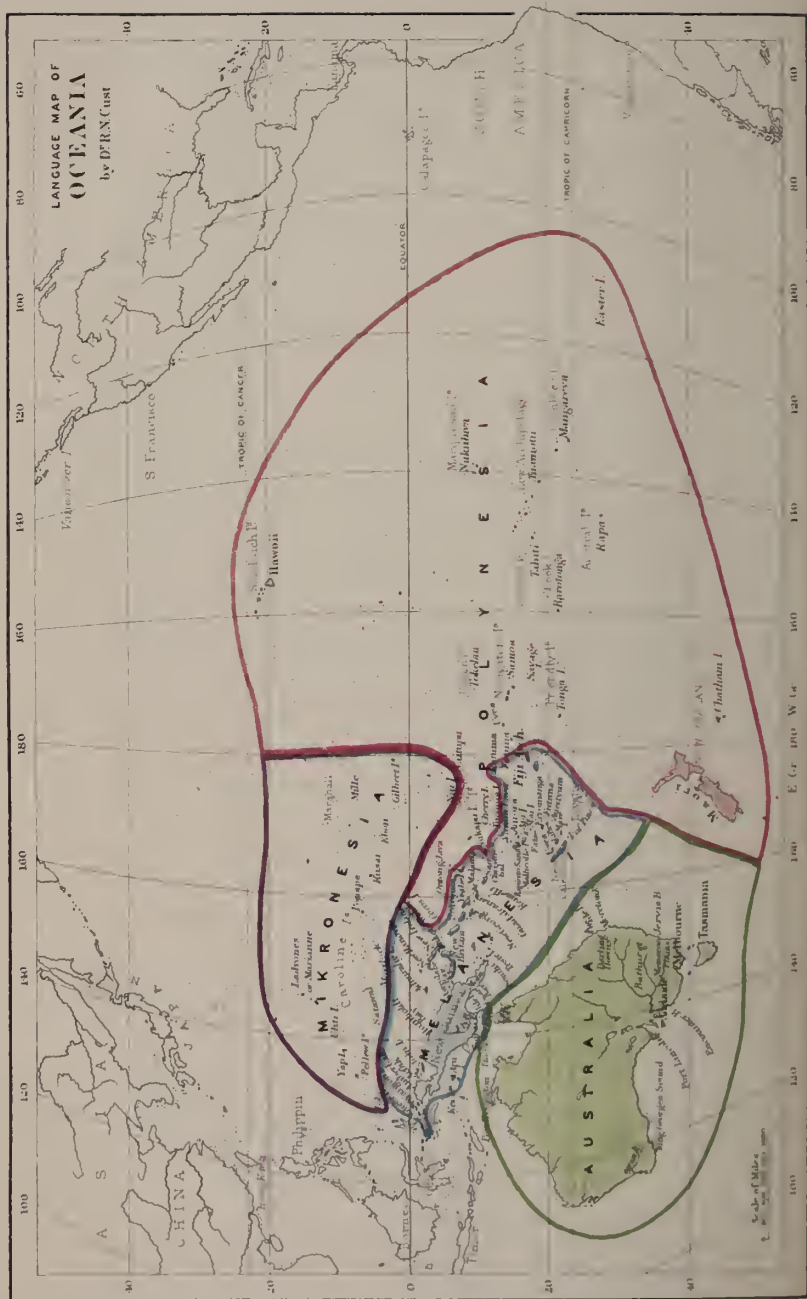
⁴ The Subjugation of Chaou-seen (Corea) (*Atti del IV. Cong. int. degli Orient.*).

⁵ Notes on the Western Regions. Translated from the "Tsëñ Han Shoo" (*Journal of the Anthropological Institute*, from August, 1880).—Ethnography of the After Han Dynasty. By A. Wylie, Esq., History of the Eastern Barbarians. Translated from the How Han Shoo, book cxv. (*Rev. Extrême Orient*, tome i. No. 1, 1882, pp. 52-83).—History of the Southern and South-Western Barbarians. Translated from the How Han Shoo, book cxvi. (*Ibid.* tome i. No. 2, 1882, pp. 198-246).—History of the Western Keang. Translated from the How Han Shoo, book cxvii. (*Ibid.* tome i. No. 3, 1882, pp. 423-478).

⁶ "The publishers have to acknowledge the efficient and disinterested aid they have received from Mr. A. Wylie, late Agent of the British and Foreign Bible Society in China, who, owing to the absence of the author in England, has revised the proof sheets of this work in their passage through the press; and they are also indebted to him for the preparation of the copious and valuable index appended to it" (*Adv. of Chinese Buddhism*, etc., by Rev. Joseph Edkins).

work from the veteran sinologist. When this man of good works and deeds breathed his last on the 6th of February, his valiant spirit had long since abandoned his enfeebled body.

Like S. Wells Williams, like many other sinologists whose primary object in life was the propagation of the Gospel in the Celestial Empire, Wylie was a self made man, and proud he might be of it, that self-made man, seeing that he could write his own language in such a simple and cheerful manner, could understand and speak French and German, read Latin and had a knowledge of Russian. He had studied successfully mathematics and astronomy, and mastered so thoroughly the Manchu and Chinese languages, that he leaves translations of Euclid and Herschell and his *Notes on Chinese Literature* as everlasting monuments of his learning and industry. If I add that Wylie never neglected his duties as a missionary, I think I shall be quite right in saying that he may be set as an example, not only to his fellow-workers in the evangelical field, but also to men of science at large. Alexander Wylie's name ought to be a pride to his profession and to his country. I only hope that full justice will be done to his memory.



ART. XII.—*The Modern Languages of Oceania.* By Dr. R. N. CUST, Hon. Sec., accompanied by a Language-Map and a Bibliography.

THE annexation of New Caledonia, the Loyalty Islands, and the Society Islands to France; of the Fiji Archipelago to Great Britain; of a great portion of the Solomon Islands to Germany; and the tripartite division of New Guinea and its adjacent Islands between Great Britain, Germany, and Holland, have given a startling prominence to the remote Islands at our Antipodes. We hear sad stories of Native Races, which at the time of Capt. Cook in 1770 were strong and numerous, dwindling away under the so-called European civilization of intoxicating liquors, infectious diseases, and wholesale man-stealing, the entire credit of which last attaches itself to the English Colonies of Queensland and Fiji. Already the languages of Tasmania, Chatham Island, and the Ladrões, have disappeared with the entire races who once used them. Others are rapidly proceeding in the same direction. As in North America, so in Oceania, the Bible-Translations will remain as the monument of a form of speech, which no longer floats on the lips of men. Before it is too late, I throw together a succinct account of the languages now spoken. In the course of the Session I gave a *vivâ voce* address on the subject, which appeared to excite interest, and at the Congress of Orientalists held at Vienna last September, I read an address in the German language on our present knowledge of the Languages of Oceania, but gave no detail of names of languages or authorities. As my object is to assist the student in the further study of some of the still imperfectly known languages of this great field, I supply a Language-Map, and a Bibliographical Appendix, showing the name of each language or dialect, and one at least of the authorities, from whom knowledge can be obtained.

To anticipate objections to the propriety of such a subject being treated of in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society, I draw attention to the inaugural address of the Founder, Mr. Colebrooke, in 1823, who remarked, that it was one of the duties of the new Society to contribute to a better knowledge of Australasia.

Oceania embraces all that vast region of sea and land, which is situated South of Asia, and the Asiatic Archipelago, East of Africa, and West of America. It includes the vast Islands of Australia, New Guinea, and the two Islands of New Zealand. But that it embraces the Sandwich Islands and Mikronesia, it might be stated to lie entirely South of the Equator, and North of the Tropic of Capricorn. Easter Island is its advanced guard towards the East, and Australia is its most Western land. Malaysia, being part of Asia, and Madagascar, being part of Africa, are not included within its limits, and care will be taken not to be drawn into the great Malayo-Polynesian controversy, or the still more wonderful Aryo-Polynesian hypothesis. No one has been bold enough has yet to blow a Semitico-Polynesian bubble, unless the remarks of some of the early Reverend Grammarians, that they came upon traces of the Hebrew Primitive Language of the human race, can be taken seriously. We will in charity hope, that that delusion has been lived down.

Ancient Geographers always dreamt of the existence of a great Southern Continent South of the Equator sufficiently large to act as an equipoise to the Continent of the North, and this notion had not been got rid of, when in 1568 Mendána, nephew of the Viceroy of Peru, discovered the New Hebrides, and gave some of the Islands the grand names, which still survive. One Island was called Terra Australis del Espirito Santo. Two centuries were allowed to slip by before the real Australia was discovered, and it is only within the last twenty years, that the Spanish discoveries have been thoroughly or even partially explored, and are being gradually partitioned betwixt Germany, Great Britain and France. Four distinct theories have been propounded to account for the existence of the Races of Oceania: 1, that a vast Continent

once occupied the space which has gradually subsided, and the Islands are the summits of the loftiest mountains: 2, that the Eastern portion of the region was colonized from South America: 3, that the whole region was colonized from Asia: 4, that New Zealand was the birthplace of an autochthonous race, which spread over the Eastern Islands, and as far North as the Sandwich Islands. The ingenious Frenchman, who starts this theory within the last five years, has a peculiar contempt for those, who still, even in a faint-hearted way, adhere to the generally received notion of a common origin of the human race. As a fact, within the region there are three distinctly-marked separate races, the brown race, which occupies the Eastern Islands, the black curly-haired race, which occupies the Central Islands, including New Guinea, and the black straight-haired race, which is found surviving in Australia: so none of the last three theories cover the whole ground; and as to the "Sunken Continent" theory, it is merely pushing the problem back to a remoter period, for, when we have grasped the idea of a Continent, we have still the question of the origin of the races before us.

Everything in this region is thorny and controversial: no one can agree as to the nomenclature. No doubt the names of Europe, Asia, Africa, and America are illogical and insufficient, but somehow or other they have obtained, and no author thinks of altering them; but as regards this fifth region every writer tries his hand at a new and often a phantastical nomenclature. I follow the Geographical order and method, and divide the region into four sub-regions, using Geographical Names:

- I. Polynesia.
- II. Melanesia.
- III. Mikronesia.
- IV. Australia.

I am glad to find that Keith Johnston's Colonial Atlas of 1886 has adopted these terms, and they are obviously more convenient than such mystic symbols as Mahori, Sub-

Papuan, Sa-wai-Ori, Tara-Pon. Imagine the inhabitants of the British Isles being called by a name composed of a syllable of each of the names of the three kingdoms—*e.g.* “Seot-Ire-Eng,” and yet this kind of name is suggested in the last two terms above mentioned, as a proper appellation for South Sea Islanders.

Let us describe each Sub-Region separately. Polynesia extends from Easter Island on the East, not so very far from South America, to Tonga on the West, and from the Sandwich Islands on the North to New Zealand on the South. It is an established fact, that the inhabitants belong to one race, brown in colour, straight-haired, magnificent in stature, gentle and hospitable, excellent navigators, and not without certain arts and culture. Their languages belong to the same Family. Perhaps the degree of affinity and mutual intelligibility has been exaggerated, and many are the stories, that are told of the languages of one Group of islands being understood in another. I could meet them with anecdotes stating just the contrary. We have the great fact, that the Missionaries belonging to the Protestant Societies have prepared translations of the Scriptures in eight distinct languages of this Family, all published by the British or American Bible Societies, who would certainly not have incurred the expense, if one or two translations were sufficient. No doubt a very superior linguist might be able to understand and make himself understood, to a limited extent, by the speakers of another Language; but it is clear that the Languages are as distinct as Italian from Spanish, or Hindustáni from Maráthi.

The chief Languages of the family are as follows:

- | | |
|----------------------------------|------------------|
| I. The Society or Georgian Group | speak Tahiti. |
| II. The Cook or Harvey's Group | speak Rarotonga. |
| III. The Marquesas Group | speak Marquesas. |
| IV. The Sandwich Group | speak Hawaii. |
| V. Savage Island | speak Niene. |
| VI. The Navigators' Group | speak Samoa. |
| VII. The Friendly Group | speak Tonga. |
| VIII. The New Zealand Group | speak Maori. |

But within the Region are no less than nine smaller Groups, of which the Languages are represented, and which may, upon more complete knowledge, resolve themselves into Dialects of the above-mentioned chief Languages, and they possess a certain amount of literature. More than this, beyond the Geographical Region of Polynesia, and within that of Melanesia, we find colonies of Polynesians established, sometimes independent, sometimes crossed with the Melanesian Races, but conserving in more or less purity their ancient Language. In the cases of the Islands of Aniwa and Futuna portions of the Scriptures have been translated. Canoes laden with members of both sexes have been picked up by European vessels at immense distances from the Island to which they belonged. A sudden storm, or tribal quarrel, has driven Polynesians westward, sometimes to maintain an independent settlement. Sometimes no doubt the males were overpowered and killed, and their women appropriated by the black Islanders, leading to a fusion of race and language.

Whitnee, who has had long personal acquaintance with this Family of Languages, as a written and oral medium of communication, has recorded the following characteristics:

The Adjective follows the Substantive. The Number is indicated by a change in the Article. The Possessive Pronoun precedes the Noun. The Nominative follows the Verb. Time is indicated by a preceding Particle, and there is no Grammatical Gender. The Passive is formed by a Suffix. Intensity and Continuity of action is indicated by a Prefix and Reduplication. Causation is effected by a Prefix. Reciprocity of action is indicated by a Prefix and Suffix, and often by a reduplication of the word as well. Words always end with a vowel.

The Language is spoken with Grammatical accuracy: the word-store is sufficient for the expression of every idea. There is generally a ceremonial Language for Chiefs: the component parts of a Chief's name are disused for his life, and sometimes after his death.

Each island is rich in legendary lore, a mine which has been fully worked : some of their customs were abominable, including Human Sacrifice, Child Murder, and Cannibalism. New Zealand belongs to Great Britain, the Society Islands to France, the Sandwich Islands are under the joint protection of Great Britain and the United States ; the remainder of the Region will pass gradually under some European power with the probable consequence of the entire extinction of the pure Native population.

To the West of Polynesia lies the Region of Melanesia. From Fiji on the extreme East extends a necklace of Islands in a semicircular sweep to New Guinea, the whole of which, with its adjacent Islands, is included. The Region is enormous, but the Groups of Islands are well demarked, and we can proceed with absolute Geographical certainty, and with some degree of accuracy with regard to Language. The inhabitants apparently belong to one race, black in colour, woolly-haired, small in stature, fierce and inhospitable, unskilled in Navigation, and in a low type of culture. Each Island has its own language, and in some Islands there are several languages totally distinct. Perhaps this again is exaggerated, and as the languages are better known, affinities will be discovered, and the differences be found to be only dialectal. Translations have been published by the British and Dutch Bible Societies in nineteen languages, and short texts are available in many more as well as Grammars, Grammatical Notes, Dictionaries and Vocabularies. But as regards New Guinea and New Caledonia, and some of the larger Islands, we have no certainty, that we have arrived at finality as to the number and variety of form of speech, and a great deal more has to be done. No names are admitted, of which there is not some sufficient proof of the Language, and an exact Geographical location.

It will be sufficient to state the name of the Group and the number of Languages and Dialects in each, and in the Bibliographical Appendix the name of each Language appears :

SUBDIVISION I.

I. Fiji Group	2
II. Loyalty Islands	3
III. New Caledonia	7
IV. New Hebrides	17
V. Banks' Islands	9
VI. Torres, St. Cruz, and Swallow Groups	4
VII. Solomon Islands	10

SUBDIVISION II.

VIII. Bismark Archipelago	6
IX. German New Guinea	1
X. Lousiade Archipelago	1
XI. Torres Straits	11
XII. British New Guinea ... (about)	20
XIII. Islands N. of New Guinea... ..	10
XIV. Dutch New Guinea... .. (about)	17

Fortunately the different British and Dutch Missions, which have been settled upon the different islands for many years, have supplied some, if not complete, information of the Languages, and our knowledge is yearly extending. Scientific travellers have also contributed their share.

Whitmee has thus recorded the characteristics of this Group of Languages, for it cannot be safely asserted, that they are a Family: they are very distinct from each other, and it is difficult to account for the number of isolated Languages. Still upon certain particulars there is a general agreement, at least they are more like each other than they are to any other Group or Family of Languages. They use consonants much more freely than the Polynesian; they have some consonantal sounds not found in the latter, which are difficult to transliterate. Many syllables are closed. There is no difference between the definite and indefinite article except in Fiji. Nouns are divided into two classes, with or without a pronominal Suffix, and the principle of division is the nearer or more remote connection between the possessor and possessed, *e.g.* the parts of a man's body

would take the Suffix, but not an article possessed for mere use. Gender is only sexual. Many words indiscriminately represent Noun, Adjective, or Verb without change, but sometimes a Noun is indicated by its termination. In most of the Languages the plural is indicated by a Prefix without any other change. Case is indicated by Particles prefixed. Adjectives follow Substantives. Pronouns are numerous, and the Personal Pronouns have four numbers, Singular, Dual, Trinal, and Plural, also inclusive and exclusive. Almost any word may be used as a Verb by adding a verbal Particle. The common characteristic of all is to mark Tense and Mood, and in some languages Person and Number, by Particles prefixed. These Particles vary in the different languages: they have a Causative, Intensative, Frequentative, and Reciprocal Form.

We hear of no legends; the people are cruel Cannibals, treacherous and revengeful, but they have been cruelly used by Europeans: whole islands depopulated by the labour vessels, and the natives deported to Queensland or Fiji, some never to return, and those who did return by no means improved. The Fiji Group has been occupied by Great Britain, the Loyalty Islands and New Caledonia by France. The New Hebrides are a bone of contention betwixt Great Britain and France. Banks' Islands, the Torres, St. Cruz, and Swallow Groups are awaiting annexation. The southern portion of the Solomon Group is by treaty with Germany left within the sphere of British influence. The Northern portion, as well as the Bismark Archipelago, and a portion of the North Coast of New Guinea, have passed under Germany. The Southern portion of New Guinea, the Islands of Torres Straits, and the Louisiade Archipelago, have passed into the sphere of influence of Great Britain. Beyond the parallel of 141° E. Longitude, New Guinea and its adjacent islands are under the protection of Holland. But as regards these Islands it will only be over the land, that the European Kingdoms will have sway, for the population is rapidly disappearing all over Polynesia and Melanesia. Neither the brown race, nor the black race, have the viva-

ciousness and lasting powers of the African Negro, and the man-stealing, intoxicating liquors, contagious disorders, and the adoption of European dress and customs, have led to their wasting away, and the Languages will expire with the people. It is a bitter satire on the so-called advantages of European civilization. Fifty thousand died of the measles in Fiji to celebrate the British annexation.

The Region of Mikronesia extends over a large area from 130° to 180° East Longitude and 20° North Latitude to the Equator, but it embraces very small and unimportant Groups of Islands. Singularly enough they are exceedingly populous, and have escaped up to this time the curses of civilization, but their evil day is at hand, for it is stated in the American Mission Reports that, when a Native Pastor dissuaded his flock from frequenting the Liquor Shops, the newly-established German Authorities fined him 500 dollars for his interference with their profits. The people are gentle and sociable, and the American Missions have worked among them with success: portions of the Scriptures have been translated into five languages, and nearly all we know of them is derived from that source. The Sub-Region embraces the Groups of the Carolines, Ladrões, Marshall, and Gilbert or Kingsmill, and some few scattered Islands, and only fourteen Languages are brought to book.

Whitmee thus describes their characteristics. Their sounds are the same, or nearly so, as the Polynesian; closed syllables are common, occasionally double consonants are used with a slight breathing between them; the accent generally falls on the Penultimate. In some of the Languages there is no Article, and, when it exists, it is placed after the Noun. Gender is sexual only. The Number is left to be inferred from the context, or expressed by a pronominal word or a Numeral. Case is marked by position, or a post-position. In Ebon one class of Nouns takes a pronominal Suffix, which gives the appearance of inflection. This class has the sense of close relationship. Words can be used as Nouns, Adjectives, or Verbs without change of form. In some Languages the personal pronoun can be singular, dual,

or plural. In others there are special dual forms. In the Ebon there are special inclusive and exclusive forms of the Personal Pronoun. Verbs have no inflections to express Mood, Voice, or Tense, but use Particles. In Ebon, however, the tenses are distinctly marked. There are Causative, Intensative, and Reciprocal forms of the Verb. Words of ceremony are used in some of the Languages, and there are special words for religious functions. The syllables, which occur in the names of chiefs, are disused.

Spain and Germany divide the Group betwixt them, but all the modern culture of the natives is derived from the American Missionaries, whose head-quarters are in the Sandwich Islands.

The Region of Australia presents phenomena totally different from those hitherto described. Of its two Sub-Regions the people of Tasmania have totally disappeared, the last representative of the race, a woman, having died in 1876, and with her perished any linguistic interest in that Island, and no text has survived to show what the Language was. In the other Sub-Region the same causes are in operation, and will probably lead to the same result. European civilization will have its way either in the destruction of the race, or the treading out of the Language. It is supposed, that at least 60,000 Australians still survive, which exceeds the population of Polynesia, but the environment is difficult. In New Guinea our knowledge is incomplete, because the country has not been explored, but the whole of Australia has been explored, and occupied by British, and the Natives pushed aside. As far as I can ascertain, such Missions as do exist make English the vehicle of instruction: this policy can have but one result. One translation of a portion of the Scriptures has been made, but the Edition is exhausted, and no second Edition called for. A long list of no less than eighty-two varieties of tribes and Languages is given in the usual Books of reference, and in a general way marked off into Regions; but the Natives in Colonial estimation so entirely go for nothing (the Shepherd certainly less valuable than the sheep) that the idea of preparing a Language-map of Australia,

or any of the Australian Colonies, has never been entertained. Some Grammars and Vocabularies have been compiled, and in general books of Philology an analysis of these passes muster for a representation of Australian languages; but I cannot realize the problem in Australia even as clearly, or as hopefully, as I do in New Guinea. It is generally asserted, that all Australian Languages have a common origin, but this has not been proved: there is indeed a general accordance in phonetics, as shown by the universal rejection of Sibilants: a common stock of primitive words, members of the body, objects of a general nature and Personal Pronouns: the imperfect conception of Number, and the uniform use of the same word for "two": the use of the dual Suffixes, and duplicate terms for the same objects: but on the other hand there are tremendous differences in the word-store of even adjacent tribes. In the last generation African Languages were spoken of as a unit, but we know better now. The theory of a connection of the typical Australian, before the Languages have been thoroughly studied, with the typical characteristics of the Dravidian of South India may be passed over as premature. All the Languages known are agglutinative, they have no Relative Pronoun or Article, and only sexual Gender: the accent falls generally on the Penultimate: there is an extensive use of onomatopoeic words. The perfection of the Language, as a Language, is a contrast to the barbarity of the people, as a people, but this is not an uncommon phenomenon. The construction is very complex, and some of the sentences are impossible to translate. It is much to be regretted that the study of these Languages has been so neglected, as the Australians occupy the lowest round in the ladder of human civilization, on a level with the Bushmen of South Africa, and the logical arrangement of thought, as represented by their word-forms, and sentence moulds, presents most interesting peeps into the working of unsophisticated minds.

It is obvious that a great deal more has still to be done before anything like a complete statement of the Languages of Oceania can be made, and I can only repeat what I

have often said before, that, until accurate data of all the Languages of the World are collected and collated, all speculations as to the origin of Language-Families, or of the power of Speech itself, are premature. Speculations as to the affinities of these Languages of Oceania with those of the rest of the World seem to be hazardous, as we have no written records to guide us. The existence of the English Language, as the Vernacular of Pitcairn's Island, would have been a puzzle, if the Mutiny of the Bounty had happened a thousand years ago, and had not been a part of written Modern History. Many a mutiny, many a storm and shipwreck, many a fortunate wind-driven passage over a vast ocean, has contributed its quota to the population of these Islands; but the brave men, who founded the new Colony, are like those, who lived before Agamemnon, and are forgotten. Even in these last days the results of the working of Commercial instinct are marvellous. These Islands of Melanesia had once an unequalled supply of Sandalwood, and have still an inexhaustible supply of a particular Slug called "Beehe de Mer": the wood was a requisite for the Chinese Joss-worship, and the Slug for Chinese Belly-worship, and Englishmen and Americans from their distant homes were the degraded agents in this commerce. There is still an English patois current in the Islands, known as "Beehe de Mer English," and it is amusing to read in a Frenchman's account of New Caledonia, that he had to communicate with the Natives in this choice Patois, in which Frenchmen are always spoken of as "Wee wee," and God as a "Big Fellow," both terms being used with most profound respect. British are called in New Guinea "Biritáni Dimdim," no doubt for the same National Word peculiarity, that led Froissart to call them the English "Goddam" at the battle of Agincourt, 1405 A.D. The French system everywhere is to make the use of their Language the test of loyalty, but they will have a hopeless fight in Oceania against English owing to its innate freedom from the shackles of Grammatical Inflections, Genders and Number, and its power of assimilation of foreign words. Bishop Selwyn (the elder) remarked, that the first

European word known in the New Hebrides was "Bishop," and the second "Tobacco." There is a danger that the literary Language, which springs up from the prentice-hands of good and earnest men, is not calculated to convey a clear idea of the primitive simplicity of the form of speech, as it flows undefiled from the lips of men. It could have been wished that more legends and stories had been taken down *verbatim* from the mouths of the people gathered together in social intercourse, than translations of a book written in a totally different type of Language, and transferred to another, fettered by theological interpretations and prepossessions. Unless the translator had caught the real genius of the Language, not only the Language in existence, but its undeveloped power of providing for new ideas out of its own plastic resources, it is to be feared, that new and foreign and unsympathetic phrases, idioms, and even grammatical forms may have been introduced by a single translator, working in his study with the aid of a couple of catechists, brought up in his own school, and not exposed to the candid criticism of an independent and educated audience, or the fiery attacks of a Public Press. What would the fate of Hindi and Urdu have been, had they been left to the tender mercies of the English Judge and his Writer of Proceedings? It is stated that old men in Oceania converse with each other in an idiom no more understood by their children than the words of an old Manx woman in the Isle of Man are by her grandchildren in the English-speaking Board-School.

It must be recollected that this sketch of a great subject does not in any way pretend to finality: it is merely a kind of literary "Vorschnack" to whet the student's appetite. The Map, specially prepared, at any rate is physically exact: the list of Languages is susceptible of expansion, as Explorers traverse new Regions, and Missionaries collect together new tribes, but susceptible of contraction, as Linguistic Knowledge deepens, and great comparative linguists point out that many of the forms of speech recorded and deemed distinct are nearly identical, at the best only dialectal

varieties, at the worst only branches and twigs of the same common stock.

PROVISIONAL LIST OF LANGUAGES OF OCEANIA

UP TO MAY, 1887.

1	Polynesia	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	30
2	Melanesia	I. South Sea Islands	.	.	.	.	52	}				118
		II. New Guinea	.	.	.	.	66					
3	Mikronesia	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	14
4	Australia	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	34
Grand Total											196	

Subject to Reductions and Amplifications.

R. N. C.

ABBREVIATIONS.—G. Grammar. D. Dictionary. Voc. Vocabulary. G.N. Grammatical Note. Z. Zeitschrift. Ethn. Ethnological.

I. POLYNESIA.

No.	Region.	Language.	Dialect.	Authorities.
1	Extreme East	Easter Island		Oster Insel. Geiseler, Berlin.
2	Gambier I.	Mangaréva		Mosbleck, Voc., Paris, 1843.
3	Low Arcipelago	Taumotu		Hale's Expedition, U.S., 1841.
4	Society or Georgian I.	Táhiti		London Miss. Soc., G.D., Lond., 1831. Gaussin, G., Paris, 1853.
5	Cook or Harvey Island	Rarotenga		Buzacott, G., Rarotonga, 1854.
6	Austral I.	Rapa		Hale's Expedition, U.S., 1841.
7	Marquesas I.	Nukuhiva		Buschmann, G., Berlin, 1843. Gaussin, G., Paris, 1853.
8	Sandwich I.	Hawaii		Andrews, G.D., Honolulu, 1854-65.
9		Savage I.		Lawes, G. (MSS.)
10	Navigator's I.	Samoa		Pratt, G.D., London, 1862.

No.	Region.	Language.	Dialect.	Authorities.
11	Union Group or Tokelau	Fakaafo		Hale's Expedition U.S., 1841.
12	Ellis Group	Vaitupa		Do.
13		Wallis I. or Uvea		Texts, Freiburg, 1878, 1885.
14		Horn I. or Futuna		Grezel, G.D., Paris, 1878.
15		Cocos I.		Hale's Expedition, U.S., Voc., 1841.
16	Friendly I.	Tonga I.		West, G., London, 1865. Rabone, D. (MSS.) See No. 13.
17	Loyalty I.	Uvea I.		
18	New Hebrides Island	Aniwa I.		Steele's New Hebrides, Text, London, 18 . See No. 14.
19	Do.	Futuna I.		
20	Do.	Mel and Fil I.		
21	Shepherd's Group	Mai or Three Hills I.		Codrington, Melanesian Languages, Oxford, 1886.
22	Duff I.	Taumoco I.		Quiros, Voc.
23	Swallow I.	Nukapu I.		Markham, Cruise of the Rozario, J.R.G.S., 1872.
24	Do.	Tukopia I.		Dumont D'Urville, Voc., Paris, 1838.
25	Do.	Cherry I.		Markh., Cruise of the Rozario, J.R.G.S., 1872.
26	Solomon I.	Lenencowa		Wallace, Australasia, 1879.
27	Do.	Rennell and Bellona		Codrington, Melanesian Languages, Oxford, 1886.
28	Do.	Ontong Java		Do.
29	New Zealand	Maori		Maunsell, G., 1862. Williams, D., 1852.
30	Do.	Chatham I.		Wallace, Australasia, 1879.

II. MELANESIA.

SUBDIVISION I.

1	Fiji Archipelago	Several Dialects	Hazlewood and Calvert, G.D., 1850-52
2	Rotuma I.		Hale's Expedition, U.S., G.N. 1846.

No.	Region.	Language.	Dialect.	Authorities.
3	Loyalty Island	Nengone I. or Mare		Codrington, Melanesian Languages, Oxford, 1886.
4	Do.	Lifu I.		Do.
5	Do.	Uvea I.		H. Conon von der Gabelentz, Leipzig, 1873.
6	New Caledonia I.	Duauru	}	Capt. Cook, Voc., 1770. H. C. v. d. Gabelentz, Leipzig, 1873.
7	Do.	Balada		
8	Do.	Yengeen		
9	Do.	Names uncertain		
10	Do.			
11	Do.			
12	Do.	I. of Pines		
13	New Hebrides I.	Ancityúm I.		Inglis, G.D., Lond., 1822.
14	Do.	Tanna I.		Texts, Bible Society.
15	Do.	Erromanga I.		Do.
16	Do.	Sandwich I. or Fate		Codrington, Melanesian Languages, G.N., Oxford, 1886.
17	Do.	Montague I. or Nguna		Do.
18	Do.	Sheperd Group { Mai or Three Hills (Sesake)		Do.
19	Do.		Tongoa	Do.
20	Do.		Api I., Tasiko or Baki	Do.
21	Do.		Do. Lemororo	Do.
22	Do.	Pama I.		H. C. v. d. Gabelentz, Leipzig, 1873.
23	Do.	Ambrym I.		Codrington, Melanesian Languages, Oxford, 1886.
24	Do.	Mallicollo I.		Georg von der Gabelentz, Voc., Leipzig, 1882.
25	Do.	Whitsuntide or Pentecost I. (A-Raga)		Codrington, Melanesian Languages, Oxford, 1886.
26	Do.	Espirito Santo (C. Lisburn)		Do.
27	Do.	Do. (Nogayon)		Do.
28	Do.	Lepers' I. (Oba)		Do.
29	Do.	Aurora I. (Maiwo)		Do.

No.	Region.	Language.	Dialect.	Authorities.
30	Banks I.	Star I. (Mer- lar)		Codrington, Melane- sian Languages, Oxford, 1886.
31	Do.	St. Maria (Gog)		Do.
32	Do.	Do. (Laku)		Do.
33	Do.	Great Banks I. (Vanua Lava)	1 Pak 2 Sasar- Leon 3 Vurcas 4 Mosina 5 Alo- Tepel 6 Nawáno 7-11 (Names uncertain)	Do., Voc.
34	Do.	Sugar Loaf I. (Mota)		Do., G., Texts, Voc.
35		Saddle I. (Motlao)		Do., G.N.
36		Do. (Volow)		Do.
37		Rowa		
38		Bligh I. (Nor- barbar or U- raparapara)		Do.
39	Torres I.	Lo		Do.
40	St. Cruz I.	Vanikoro I.		Do.
41	Do.	Deni I.		Do.
42	Swallow I.	Nifilole I.		Do.
43	Solomon I.	San Christo- bal I.	1 Fagani or Bauro 2 Wano	Do.
44	Do.	Uláwa I.		Do.
45	Do.	Malanta I.	1 Saa 2 Malama- shike 3 Bululaha 4 Alite	Do.
46	Do.	Guadalcanar I.	1 Gera 2 Vaturama 3 (Name uncertain)	
47	Do.	Florida I.		Do.
48	Do.	Savo I.		Do.
49	Do.	Ysabel I. (Bugotu)		Do.
50	Do.	Do. (Gao)		
51	Do.	New Georgia		Do., Voc.
52	Do.	Eddystone I.		H. C. v. d. Gabelentz, Leipzig, 1873, Voc.

SUBDIVISION II.

NEW GUINEA (GERMAN).

ISLANDS.

No.	Region.	Language.	Dialect.	Authorities.
1	Bismark Archipelago	New Britain		Strauch, Z. Ethn. viii., 1876, Voc.
2	Do.	Duke of York		Brown, G., Sydney, 1882.
3	Do.	New Ireland		Strauch, Z. Ethn. viii., 1876, Voc.
4	Do.	Moise		Le Maire, Julg, Litteratur, Berlin, 1847.
5	Do.	New Hannover		Do.
6	Do.	Admiralty		Georg von der Gablentz, Leipzig, 1882, Voc.

MAINLAND.

1	Kaiser Wilhelm's Land	Astrolabe Bay, alias Maclay Küste		Dumont D'Urville, Paris, Voc., 1833. Georg von der Gablentz, Leipzig, 1882, Voc.
---	-----------------------	-----------------------------------	--	---

NEW GUINEA (BRITISH).

ISLANDS.

N.B.—Nothing known of d'Entrecasteaux Islands and Woodlark Islands.

1	Lousiade Islands	Teste		McFarlane, MSS. Codrington, Melanesian Languages, Oxford, 1886.
2	China Straits	Dinner		Texts.
3	Do.	Heath's		McFarlane, MSS.
4	Off South Cape	Brumer		McGillivray, Voc., 1852.
5	W. of Orangerie Bay	Toulon		Lawes, Wallace's Australasia, 1879.
6		Yule	2 Dialects	D'Albertis, Travels, Voc., 1880.
7	Torres Straits	Darnley, alias Erub		Murray, "40 years," Voc., 1876.
8	Do.	Murray, alias Mer		Texts.

No.	Region.	Language.	Dialect.	Authorities.
9	Do.	Yorke		McGillivray, Voc., 1852.
10	Do.	Saibai		Texts.
11	Do.	Tauan, alias Cornwallis		McFarlane, MSS.
12	Do.	Thursday		

MAINLAND.

N B.—Nothing known of the Languages on the North Coast from Huon Gulf to Goodenough Bay. The list begins from the Eastern point and proceeds Westward.

1	Goshen Straits	East Cape		Lawes, Wallace's Australasia, 1879.
2	China Straits	Milne Bay		Do.
3	South Cape	Dahúni Orangerie Bay		Texts. Dumont D'Urville, Voc., 1833.
4	West of Mount Clarence	Aroma, alias Aloma		Lawes, Wallace's Australasia, 1879.
5	Near Keppel Pt.	Dedele		Do.
6	Hood's Bay	Kalo Quaibo		Do. Do.
7	Mountains behind Hood's Lagoon	Animoropu		Lawes, Wallace's Australasia, 1879.
8	Hood Point	Kerepuna, alias Hula Papaka, alias Babaga		First School Book, Sydney, 1878. Lawes, Wallace's Australasia, 1879.
9	Round Head	Ikolu		Do.
10	West of Round Head	Palavai		Do.
11	Do.	Manukolu		Do.
12	Pt. Moresby	Motu		Lawes, G.D., 1886.
13	Do. Inland	Koitapu		Stone, New Guinea, 1880, Voc.
	Do. Mountains	Koiári		Do.
14	Redscar Bay	Toula		Lawes, Wallace's Australasia, 1879.
15	Do.	Kabádi, alias Kapatsi		Chalmers, Pioneering, 1887.
	Cape Suckling	Naala		McGillivray, Voc., 1852.
16	Hall's Sound	Mou, alias Lolu		Lawes, Wallace's Australasia, 1879.
	Cape Possession	Maiva		Stone, New Guinea, Voc., 1880.

No.	Region.	Language.	Dialect.	Authorities.
17	Freshwater Bay	Elema		Stone, New Guinea, Voc., 1880.
18	West of Do.	Namau		Chalmers, Pioneering, 1887.
19	Bald Head	Mipúa		Do.
20	Fly River	Kiwái		D'Albertis, Travels, Voc., 1880.

NEW GUINEA (DUTCH).

ISLANDS.

1	Gelvinek Bay	Jobi	2 Dialects Ansus Srui	Georg von der Gabelentz, Voc., Leipzig, 1882.
2	Do.	Misóri, alias Schouten, alias Suk i Biah		
3	Do.	Mafúr, alias Nafúr		Meyer, G.N., Vienna, 1874. Van Hasselt, D., Utrecht, 1875.
4	Do.	Rún		Georg von der Gabelentz, Leipzig, 1882.
5	Do.	Moa		Do.
6	Dampier Strait	Middleburg, alias Mis- palu		Do.
7	Do.	Guebe		Dumont D'Urville, Paris, Voc., 1833.
8		Misol		Schwan u. Van der Aa, Voc., Hague, 1879.
9		Ki		Wallace, Malay Archipelago, 1875.
10		Aru		Do.

MAINLAND.

1	North Coast	Humboldt Bay		Schwan u. Van der Aa, Voc., Hague, 1879.
2	Gelvinek Bay	Aropin, alias Waropin.		Georg von der Gabelentz, Voc., Leipzig, 1882.
3	Do.	Wandaman		Do.
4	Do.	Umar		Do.
5	Do.	Jaur		Do.
6	Do.	Arfak	2 Dialects	Do.

No.	Region.	Language.	Dialect.	Authorities.
7	Gelvinek Bay	Andai		Georg von der Gabelentz, Voc., Leipzig, 1882.
8	Do.	Hattam		Do.
9	North Coast	Amberbaki		Do.
10	South Coast	Onin		Do.
11	Do.	Kapauer		Schwan u. Van der Aa, Voc., Hague, 1879.
12	Do.	Tuburasi		Do.
13	Do.	Karas		Do.
14	McCluer Bay	Segar Bay		Georg von der Gabelentz, Voc., Leipzig, 1882.
15	Arguna Bay	Kowiai		Do.
16	Interior of New Guinea.	Mairassi		Do.
17	Cape Steenborm	Utanata, alias Lobo	2 Dialects	Do.

III. MIKRONESIA.

1		Tobi or Lord North I.		Hale's Expedition, U.S., Voc., 1846.
2		Pellew I.		Semper, Zeit. Anth. Ges., Berlin, 1871.
3		Ladrones or Marianne I.		Hale's Expedition, U.S., Voc., 1846.
4	Caroline I.	Yap I.		Tetens u. Kaberi, Voc., Hamburg, 1873.
5	Do.	Mackenzi or Ulithi I.		Do.
6	Do.	Ponape		Gulick, G.N., Voc., Text, Boston, U.S.
7	Do.	Kusai		Text, Boston, U.S.
8	Do.	Satawal		Dumont D'Urville, Voc., Paris, 1833.
9	Do.	Ualan		Hale's Expedition, U.S., 1846.
10	Do.	Mortlock		Text, Boston, U.S.
11	Marshall or Radakh	I. Ebon		Hernsheim, Leipzig, 1880, G.N.
12	Do.	Mille		Do.
13	Gilbert I. or Kingsmill	Tarawa		Hale's Expedition, U.S., 1841.
14	Union Group	Nui I.		Whitmee, Missionary's Cruise, 1871.

IV. AUSTRALIA.

No.	Region.	Language.	Dialect.	Authorities.
1	Queen's Land	Cape York Konraregga Cape York		McGillivray, Voyage of the Rattlesnake, Voc., 1852.
2	Do.	Godang		Do.
3	Do.	Moreton Bay		Hale's Expedition, U.S., 1846.
4	Do.	Wide Bay		Bleek's Catalogue of Library of Sir G. Grey, p. 26. Bunce, Voc., Mel- bourne, 1856.
5	Do.	Darling Downs		Bleek's Catalogue of Library of Sir G. Grey, p. 29. Brucker, Voc.
6	Do.	Monero Downs		Bleek's Catalogue of Library of Sir G. Grey, p. 20. Lohtsky, Voc., J.R.G.S., ix., 1839.
1	New South Wales	Lake Mac- quaire		Threlkeld, G., Sydney, 1836. F. Müller, Grundriss, vol. i., 1882.
2	Do.	Bathurst		Hale's Expedition, U.S., 1846.
3	Do.	Mudgee		Do.
4	Do.	Wiraduree		F. Müller, Grundriss, vol. i., 1882.
5	Do.	Peel River		Hale's Expedition, U.S., 1846.
6	Do.	New England		Do.
7	Do.	Terreboo (Condamine River)		Bleek's Catalogue of Library of Sir G. Grey, p. 29. Birrell, Voc.
8	Do.	Bocharraboy (Condamine River)		Bleek's Catalogue of Library of Sir G. Grey, p. 29. Bunce, Voc., Mel- bourne, 1856.
9	Do.	Grafton Range		Do.
10	Do.	Kamilaroi (Namoi River)		Ridley, Kamilaroy, Sydney, 1868.

No.	Region.	Language.	Dialect.	Authorities.
11	Do.	Turrubul (Brisbane River)		Ridley, Kamilaroy, Sydney, 1868.
12	Do.	Dippil (N. of Moreton Bay)		Do.
13	Do.	Jervis Bay		Dumont D'Urville, 1833, Voc. Meyer, Voc. of aborigines, 1843.
1	Victoria	Melbourne		Bunce, Melbourne, 1856.
2	Do.	Omio Snowy Mountains		Do. Dawson, L. of Vic- toria, W. District, 1855. Hutt, Voc., 1842. Brough Smith, Abo- rigines.
1	S. Australia.	Port Lincoln		Teichelman and Schurmam, G. Voc., 1840.
2	Do.	Parankalla		Schurmam, Voc., Adelaide, 1844. F. Muller, Grund- riss, vol. i., 1882.
3	Do.	Adelaide		Do. Williams, Voc., 1839.
4	Do.	Murray R.		Moorhouse, G., Voc., 1846.
5	Do.	Encounter Bay		Meyer, Voc., Ade- laide, 1843. F. Muller, Grund- riss, vol. i., 1882.
6	Do.	Woolner D.		Bennet and Wood, Voc., Adelaide, 1872.
7	Do.	Narrinyeri		Text, Bible Society.
8	Do.	Pt. Essington		McGillivray, Voy- age of Rattle- snake, Voc., 1852.
9	Do.	Castlereagh		Bunce, Voc., Mel- bourne, 1856. Taplin, Folk Lore, Languages of S. Australia, 1879.

No.	Region.	Language.	Dialect.	Authorities.
1	W. Australia.	Swan River		{ F. Muller, Grund- riss, vol. i., 1882. Brady, Voc., Rome, 1845. Sir G. Grey, Voc. London, 1841. Moore, Voc., Lon- don, 1842. Dumont D'Urville, Paris, 1833, Voc. Spanish Missionaries, Voc., Missions Ca- tholiques, 1878.
2	Do.	Murray Bay (S. of Perth)		
3	Do.	King George's Sound		
4	Do.	New Nursia		

ART. XIII.—*Ibnu Baṭūṭa in Sindh.* By Major-General
M. R. HAIG, M.R.A.S.

THE extract from the Narrative of his Travels by Ebu 'Abdu-'llāh Muhammed of Tangier, commonly called Ibnu Baṭūṭa, an English translation of which appears below, relates to his experiences in the province of Sindh, and touches on matters of local history and geography which may interest some readers, and be thought deserving of such elucidation as may be possible. These matters are noticed in the remarks subjoined to the extract, a form of comment which I have thought preferable to the alternative of interrupting the narrative by frequent and copious footnotes.

The edition of Ibnu Baṭūṭa's work which I have used is that of Defrémery and Sanguinetti,¹ and the extract begins vol. iii. p. 93, where the second part of the book opens with the account of the traveller's arrival in India.

TRANSLATION.

"On the 1st Muharrem, the commencement of the year 734 A.H. (12th Sept. 1333 A.D.), we reached the river Sind, known as the 'Panjāb,' the meaning of which is 'Five rivers.' This is one of the largest rivers in the world. It overflows during the hot season, and the people of the country sow their lands during the inundation, as do the people of Egypt during the inundation of the Nile. At this river begin the territories of the revered Sulṭān Muhammed Shāh,² King of Hind and Sind. When we arrived at the river, the

¹ Voyages d'Ibn Batoutah. Texte Arabe, accompagné d'une traduction, par C. Defrémery et le Dr. B. R. Sanguinetti. Paris, 1877. Publié par La Société Asiatique.

² Muhammed Shāh bin Tughlaq succeeded to the Delhi throne in 725 A. H. (1325 A.D.).

official Intelligencers came to us and wrote information about us to Qutbu'l-Mulk, the governor of the town of Multān. The chief governor of Sind at this time was a slave of the Sultān named 'Sartiz,' (holding the office or title of) 'Aridzu'l-Memālik, and charged with the oversight of the royal forces. The meaning of his name is 'the sharp head,' for 'sar' means 'head,' and 'tiz' means 'sharp.'¹ At the time of our arrival he was at the town of Siwastān in Sind, between which place and Multān there is ten days' journey. Between the country of Sind and the capital (Delhi) there is fifty days' journey, and when the Intelligencers write to the Sultān from Sind, their reports reach him in five days owing to (the rapidity of) the Berid."

Here follows an account of the 'Berid' or Post, of the Sultān's regulations for the reception of travellers from foreign countries, and a description of the 'Karkadan' or Rhinoceros, a specimen of which the author saw just after crossing the Indus.

"We travelled for two days from the river Sind,² and arrived at the town of Janānī (جناني), a large and beautiful town on the bank of the river Sind, possessing excellent markets. Its inhabitants are a tribe called Es-Sāmara (السامرة), who have had their home there from ancient times, and whose ancestors settled in the place at the time of its conquest in the days of Hajjāj, son of Yūsuf, according to what the chroniclers have recorded concerning the conquest of Sind. The Sheykh³ Ruknu'd-dīn, son of the Jurist Shemsu'd-dīn, son of the Imām Behā'u'd-dīn Zekariyā, Qureyshī (one of the three persons whom the Sheykh Burhānu'd-dīn El-A'arej, in the city of Alexandria, told me I should meet in my travels, and meet them I did, praise be to God!), told me that the greatest of his ancestors was named Muhammed, son of Qāsim Qureyshī, and that he took part in the conquest of Sind in the army which Hajjāj, son of Yūsuf, when he governed Irāq, sent for that purpose; and that he settled in the country, and his descendants grew numerous.

The tribe known as 'Es-Sāmara' do not eat in company with

¹ Barnī gives the title as 'Sartiz-i-Sultānī.'

² That is, from the left, or eastern bank, to which the author had crossed. The crossing of the river is mentioned at the beginning of his account of the Rhinoceros.

³ The numerous eulogistic epithets applied to the Sheykh and his ancestors are omitted.

anybody (not belonging to them), and nobody looks at them when they are eating; they form no marriages with those not of their tribe, and no stranger marries among them. At this time they had a chief named Wunār,¹ an account of whom we shall give.

We travelled from the town of Janānī, and arrived at Siwastān.² This is a large town. The country outside it is desert and tracts of sand; there is not a tree in it but the Acacia (Umm Ghaylān), and they cultivate nothing on its river but melons. The food of the people is *Dhura* (Sorghum or Indian Millet), and the pulse which they call Mushunk (Mung, *Phaseolus Mungo*), of which (the millet) they make bread. Here there is abundance of fish and of Buffalo-milk. The people of the place eat the '*saqanqār*,' a small reptile resembling the chameleon, which the people of Meghreb call '*Huneyshetu'l-jenna*' (small garden-lizard), except that it has no tail. I saw them digging in the sand and pulling out the creature from it, then ripping up its belly, throwing away its contents, and stuffing it with '*Kurkum*' (safflower), which they call '*zerd-shūba*' (*chūba*), meaning '*yellow-stick*,' which with them takes the place of saffron. When I saw this little reptile, and the people eating it, I regarded it as unclean and did not partake of it.

We entered this town during the intensely hot period of the summer,³ and the heat of the place was extreme, so that my companions seated themselves naked, each placing a waist-wrapper round his middle, and a wrapper moistened with water over his shoulders. But a little time passed till the wrapper dried, when it was again wetted, and this went on continually. I met in this town its preacher, named Esh-Sheybānī. He showed me a written deed of the Commander of the Faithful, the Khalifa 'Umar, son of 'Abdu'l-'Azīz, (granted) to the greatest of his ancestors, conferring on him the preachership of this town. The family have held it by inheritance from that time till now. The

¹ وُنَار. The author gives the details of spelling and pointing, so that 'Wunār' is what he intended, but it will hereafter be shown that the person referred to was named Unar.

² In the detail of the pointing of the name it is said that the second *sin* is *mekṣūr*; we should therefore transliterate Siwasitān. At the present day many Sindhis would follow this pointing in writing the name, as it is a common practice to point a consonant with *kesra*, which, in strictness, ought to be quiescent. In such cases, however, the pronunciation of the *kesra* is so faint as to be hardly perceptible to the ear. This old name of Sēwan is now obsolescent. I am uncertain whether Siwastān or Siwistān is the correct form.

³ تَيْتًا, comprising part of May, all June and July, and part of August.

form of the deed is: 'This is the command of the servant of God, the Commander of the Faithful, 'Umar, son of 'Abdu'l-'Aziz, to so and so,' and its date is 99 H. (717-18 A.D.). On it is written, as the said preacher told me, in the handwriting of the Commander of the Faithful: 'Praise be to the One God!' In this place I also met the aged Sheykh Muḥammed of Baghdād, who (lived) in the hospice by the tomb of the upright Sheykh Uthmān of Merend.¹ It was said that his age exceeded 140 years, and that he was present at the murder of El-Must'aṣim-bi'llāh, the last Khalifa of the Benī 'Abbās dynasty, who was slain by the infidel Hulā'ūn (Hulāqū) grandson of Tangīz (Chingīz) the Tātār. The Sheykh, though of so great an age, was strong of body, and went about on foot.²

A Story.

There lived in this town the Amīr Wunār Es-Sāmārī, who has been previously mentioned, and the Amīr Qayṣer Er-Rūmī, both in the service of the Sulṭān, and with them some 1800 horsemen. There, too, lived an infidel Hindū named Ratan, who was skilled in reckoning and writing. He waited on the King of India with certain nobles. The King was pleased with him, named him a noble of Sind, gave him the government of that country, and assigned to him Siwastān and its dependencies in fief. He also conferred on him the honorific distinctions of drums and banners, such as are granted to the great nobles. When he arrived in this country the precedence of the infidel over them galled Wunār, Qayṣer and the rest, and they determined on his assassination. Accordingly, when some days had passed after his arrival, they suggested to him to go out into the dependencies of the town to inquire into the state of affairs there; so he went with them. When night fell, they raised an alarm in the camp, pretending that a lion had attacked it, and they went to the tent of the infidel and killed him. They then returned to the town and took what royal revenue there was in it, amounting to 12 laks. [The 'lak' is (an amount of) one hundred thousand (silver) dīnārs, and the 'lak' (of silver dīnārs) is equal to ten thousand dīnārs of Indian gold. The Indian (gold) dīnār is equal to two and a half dīnārs of

¹ This holy man flourished in the 13th century. His shrine, better known as that of *L'al Shāh Bāz*, is still of great celebrity.

² The tragedy witnessed by the Sheykh occurred in 656 H. It does not follow that he must have been of an unprecedented age in 734 H., or 78 lunar years later.

the gold of Meghreb (Northern Africa west of Egypt).] They then placed at their head the aforesaid Wunār, and named him Melik Fīroz. He distributed the revenue among the troops. Afterwards he took fright about himself because of his distance from his people, so he went off to them with such of his intimate associates as were with him. The remainder of the troops placed Qayşer-er-Rūmī over themselves. Information about them now reached 'Imādu'l-Mulk Sartīz, the slave of the Sultān, and the chief governor of Sind, who had his residence in Multān. He assembled an army and started an expedition both by land and by the river Sind. Now between Multān and Siwastān there is ten days' journey.¹ Qayşer went out against him, and an encounter took place in which Qayşer was routed, and those who were with him shamefully fled and took refuge in the town, where Sartīz besieged them and set up mangonels against them. The siege so distressed them that after forty days from the beginning of the investment they begged for protection, which he granted; but when they came before him, he treated them with treachery, took their property, and commanded that they should be slain. He used to behead some of them each day, some of them he had cleft in twain, and others he flayed, filled their skins with straw, and had them fastened to the town walls. The most of these skins were hung on crosses, terrifying to those who beheld them. Their heads he collected in the midst of the town, so that they formed as it were a mound there. I alighted at the great college in the town just after this event. On the roof of this building I used to sleep, and when I awoke at night and saw these skins hung on crosses, I shuddered at them. I could not bear living in the college, and therefore removed from it.

The accomplished and just jurist 'Alā'u'l-Mulk of Khurāsān, known as 'Faṣīhu'd-dīn,' formerly Qāzī of Hirāt, had waited upon the King of India, who had conferred on him the governorship of the town of Lāharī and its dependencies in the country of Sind. He had been present in these commotions with 'Imādu'l-Mulk Sartīz, among the military force accompanying him. I determined to go with him to the town of Lāharī. He had fifteen boats in which he proceeded by the river Sind, and with him I travelled."

Here follows an account of 'Alā'u'l-Mulk's arrangements while voyaging on the Indus.

¹ By river. The distance exceeds 400 miles.

"I travelled five days with 'Alā'u'l-Mulk, and we arrived at the seat of his government, Lāharī, a fine town on the shore of the ocean where the river Sind flows into it, so that two seas there meet.¹ It has a large harbour to which come people of Yemen, Fārs, and other places. Owing to this the customs collected are large and the revenues of the place considerable. The above-mentioned 'Alā'u'l-Mulk, the governor, informed me that the collections of this town are sixty laks annually. (The value of the *lak* we have already mentioned.) To the governor pertains one-twentieth of this. On such condition the sovereign confers governments, (the grantees) taking a twentieth of the revenues.

Account of a strange thing which I saw in the country outside this town.

I one day rode with 'Alā'u'l-Mulk to a spacious place, distant seven miles (from Lāharī), called Tārṇā, where I saw innumerable stones in the form of human beings and animals. Very many were altered (from their original form) and their (distinguishing) features were obliterated, so that there remained but the shape of a head or foot, or other member. Among the stones, too, were some in the form of grains of wheat, of the chick-pea, the bean and the lentil. There, too, were traces of a town-wall, and of the court-yards of houses (آثار سور و جدران دُور). Afterwards we saw the remains of a house in which was a chamber of hewn stone. In the middle of this was a platform (مُكَائِنَة) of hewn stone, like a single block, and on it the figure of a man, except that its head was elongated, and its mouth on the side of the face, and the hands were behind the back like a captive's. There were also pools of extremely stinking water in the place. On part of a court-yard wall there was an inscription in the Hindī language. 'Alā'u'l-Mulk told me that historians state that a great city existed in this place, and that most of its people were depraved, for which cause they were turned into stone, and that their ruler was he who was on the platform in the house which we have mentioned, and which is to the present time called *Dārū'l Melik* (the ruler's house); also that the Hindī inscription on one of the court-yard walls contains the date of the destruction of the inhabitants of this city, which occurred a thousand years ago or thereabouts.

¹ The word *Bahr* being applicable both to the ocean and to a large river like the Indus, the author fancifully describes the junction of this stream with the sea as the meeting of two *Bahrs*, or seas.

I stayed with 'Alā'u'l-Mulk five days in this town. He then furnished me liberally with provisions for travelling, and I parted from him (and proceeded) to the town of Bakār (Bakhar). This is a fine town; a channel from the Sind divides it. In the middle of this channel there is a fine hospice, where food is provided for passers-by. Kashlū Khān built it during the time of his government of the country of Sind.¹ In this town I met the jurist and Imām, Ṣadru'd-dīn the Hanīfite. Here, too, I met the Qāzī of the place, named Ebu Hanīfa, and the devout and self-denying Sheykh, Shemsu'd-dīn Muhammed of Shīrāz, who is among the very aged men. He told me that his age exceeded 120 years. Afterwards I travelled from Bakār and arrived at the town of Ūchch, a large place on the bank of the river Sind, possessing fine markets and excellent structures. Its governor at that time was the accomplished and noble Melik Jelālu'd-dīn El-Kijī, a brave and generous man. He died in this town in consequence of a severe fall from his horse."

Here follows an account of the governor's generosity; also of a pious Sheykh who presented him with a "Khirqa" or ragged garment worn by devotees.

"From Ūchch I travelled to the town of Multān, which is the seat of government in Sind, and the residence of the chief governor. On the road thither, and at a distance of ten miles from it, is the river known as Khusrūābād, a large stream crossed only by boat. Here travellers' goods are examined very strictly, and their luggage closely searched. At the time of our arrival it was their custom to take a fourth of all that the merchants carried, and they levied a duty of seven dīnārs on every horse. Two years after our arrival in India the Sultān did away with these duties, and directed that nothing was to be taken from people but the alms-dues and the tithe. This was at the time when he professed allegiance to the Khalīfa Ebu'l-'Abbās of the 'Abbās dynasty. When we began the crossing of the river, and the packages were being examined, I was annoyed by the searching of my baggage, for there was nothing valuable in it, though in the eyes of people it looked considerable, and it was much against my will that it was

¹ Melik Bahrām Abiya received the title of Kashlū Khān from Sultān Ghiyāsu'd-dīn on the accession of this sovereign in 720 H. (1320 A.D.) when the government of Sindh was conferred upon him. He had previously held some high post in that province. In the next reign he rebelled, and in an action with the royal troops was defeated and killed.

examined. Through the goodness of the Almighty, one of the principal military officers arrived on the part of Qutbu'l-Mulk, the lord of Multān, and ordered that I should not be subjected to inspection and to the searching (of my baggage), and so it was settled, and I praised God for His goodness vouchsafed to me. We spent this night on the bank of the river. In the morning the Chief of the Berīd (or Post) named Dahqān, a native of Samarqand, came to us. He it was who used to write to the Sultān the news of the town and its dependencies, of any fresh occurrences therein, and of those arriving in the place. I made myself known to him, and in company with him I waited on the governor of Multān."

REMARKS ON THE EXTRACT.

Though abounding in curious and interesting information, Ibnu Baṭūṭa's account of his travels is disappointing from a geographical point of view. The traveller had an eye for a fine town or a well-stocked market, and the pronounced taste of the devout Musulmān for venerable Sheykhhs and learned theologians, but his faculty for geographical observation was evidently meagre. The result is that the reader finds himself carried at a bound over vast spaces of country for the features and topography of which the author has not a word to spare.

In consequence of this peculiarity of Ibnu Baṭūṭa's, we are left in doubt as to the spot at which his Indian travels may be said to have begun. He tells of his arrival on the bank of that portion of the Indus called the "Panjāb," but gives no name to the locality, and supplies no means of identifying it. As will presently be seen, there is some reason for placing it in the north of the modern province of Sindh, but this conjecture involves the difficulty of accounting for Ibnu Baṭūṭa's taking such an unusual route from Qābul as one that would bring him to the Indus so very far down its course. Had he travelled by Qandahār and the Bolān Pass, the case would be different; but he says that he proceeded from Qābul to India by places called *Karmāsh* and *Shash-naghār*, and by the latter I think there can be no doubt

that Hashtnagar, also called 'Ashnagar, sixteen miles north-east of Peshāwar, is intended. Here, he says, began "the great desert," extending fifteen days' journey, and subject during the hot season to the blasts of the deadly "Samūm." In the absence of any other indications of the line taken, I can only conclude that he travelled along the base of the Suleymān range, though why the usual routes which would have taken him to Multān, or to Ūchch, were avoided, it is impossible to conjecture. After crossing the Indus, and marching for two days, Ibnu Baṭūṭa arrived at a town on the bank of the river called Janānī. There is no longer, I believe, any place so called on the Indus, but it may well be that, like hundreds of others, the town of Janānī has long since been swallowed up by that insatiable river. We are told, however, that it was inhabited by a people called "Es-Sāmara," to whom an Arab origin is assigned, but whose customs, as described by our traveller, clearly betray their Hindū stock. Later on I shall show why I believe them to have belonged beyond doubt to the Samā tribe of Sindh, and if my view is correct, Janānī must have been somewhere within the limits of the Pargana of Kandhīāro, fifty miles south of Robrī, which is identical with a very ancient territorial division, and is well known to have belonged from time immemorial to the Samās of Upper Sindh.¹ Unfortunately Ibnu Baṭūṭa omits to mention the number of marches from Janānī to Siwastān, from which known point a measurement would have enabled us to come to a more satisfactory conclusion regarding the position of the former town; but on the ground above mentioned I think it may be taken that this was somewhere in the Kandhīāro Pargana, and therefore about fifty miles north-east of Siwastān (Sēwan). In this case Ibnu Baṭūṭa must have

¹ The Chach Nāma mentions the northern limit of the Samā lands. It says that Rāe Chach, when proceeding (circa 633 A.D.) to Būdhīya (N.W. Sindh) and Siwastān, left Alor "and crossed the Mihrān (Indus) at a place called *Dahīāyat*, which is on the border of the Samā and Alor (districts)." *Dahīāyat* may be identified with a township called Dēhāt, on the northern border of the Kandhīāro Pargana, by which the Indus once ran, as evidenced by its forsaken channel still quite distinct. This spot is about fifty miles south of Alor and Robrī. The Indus now runs nine or ten miles to the west of the course here referred to.

crossed the Indus some forty miles (two marches) higher up its course, and therefore but a short distance below Bakhar, then the chief town on the lower Indus, which one might thus suppose he had at this time some object in avoiding, though he visited it not long afterwards. But, as I shall have occasion to notice hereafter, a long time passed at this period of his travels respecting which our author gives no account whatever. Much may have happened, and many places may have been visited in the interval, but the narrative is a blank in regard to this portion of the writer's experiences. Either recollection failed, or there was a deliberate purpose to suppress the record of what may have been uneventful or unpleasant, and the consequence is some confusion in the narrative and much that remains unaccountable.

The next place named is Sīwastān, in order to reach which the traveller must have regained the right bank of the Indus, but of this he says nothing. The town is described as large, but the surrounding country as desert and sandy (سحرآء ورمال), without any tree but the Acacia. This differs very much from the account of it given by the Arab geographers, some of whom visited it in the tenth century. Of these Ibnu Hawqil, as quoted by Ebu'l-Fida, says that the town abounded in good things, and was surrounded by villages and townships; while Idrisī (on the reports of other writers) says of it in the twelfth century that it "is remarkable for its size and the number of its fountains and canals, for the abundance of its productions, and for its rich commerce."¹ Ibnu Batūṭa's description, however, is quite correct if limited to the country south of the town, which is a sandy ridge extending for about four miles to the lower slopes of the so-called Lakī range. On other sides the land is remarkably fertile, though doubtless in the unsettled times described by the traveller it would be lying waste.

It may be noticed that Ibnu Batūṭa does not say that the

¹ Elliot's *Historians of India*, vol. i. p. 79.

town was *on the bank* of the Indus as Janānī was. He speaks, however, of "*its river*" (نهرها), probably referring to the Aral which flows round the northern side of the town.¹ It is true that in Istakhrī's map, as well as in Ibnu Hawqil's (Elliot's Hist. vol. i. p. 32), both illustrating the geography of Sindh in the middle of the tenth century, Sīwastān (then called Sadūsān) is represented as actually on the Indus, though in their texts both geographers describe the town as "to the west of the river," not as actually on the west bank. In both maps, too, the town of Daybal, or Dēwal, is represented as actually on the shore of the Indian Ocean, though, as I shall presently show, it is physically impossible that any town could have been so situated within the limits of the Delta, and that we must infer nothing more than *comparative* proximity to the sea—a distance of a few miles more or less. The same may have been the case in regard to the relative positions of Sadūsān and the course of the Indus in those days, and I think it not improbable that in Ibnu Batūtā's time, and for many years subsequently, the river ran in a channel, portions of which are still to be seen ten miles east of Sewaī. There is a still older channel twenty miles east of the town.²

Returning to our traveller, a curious fact, previously alluded to, has here to be noticed. He says that he reached Sīwastān during the intense heat of summer, and from his description of the methods of cooling themselves resorted to by his friends, it is evident that hot winds were blowing. The season must have been that known in Sindh as the

¹ The Aral is really the southern end of the stream called Nāro ("Western Nāra") which leaves the west bank of the Indus near Lādkānā, and after a course considerably exceeding 100 miles, expands into the Manchur lake—or swamp—eight miles due west of Sēwaī. Thence it issues, and passing eastward, runs close under the walls of the fort of Sēwaī, rejoining the Indus near the town. It is the portion between Sewaī and the Manchur lake that bears the name of "Aral." Though not mentioned by name, it is distinctly referred to in the "Chach Nāma," in the account of the siege of Sīwastān by the Arabs in 711 A.D.; and it is most probably that which is alluded to by Belādhurī in the "Futūḥu's-Sind," when he speaks of Muhammed Qāsim's "crossing a river on this (the west) side of the Mihrāu" (عبر نهرًا دون مهران), there being, indeed, no other which could be so described.

² Within my own experience the Indus has at one time run close under the town, and at another three to four miles or more eastward of it.

“Chālīho, or period of 40 days, beginning about the 10th May, during which the hot wind rages in that burning region. Now, as he arrived on the bank of the “Panjāb” on the 12th September, he must have spent at least eight months between that point and Sīwastān; the distance, putting it at the utmost possible, being no more than could have been covered with ease in three weeks, while the narrative certainly conveys the idea of the journey having been continuous, and not having occupied many days. Ibnu Baṭūṭa, it must be remembered, would not, especially when writing long after the events recorded, himself be likely to notice this discrepancy between the apparent and the actual lapse of time, for the period referred to began with a lunar month—Muharram—and ended with a fixed season,—summer,—and it is only on noting the solar year in which that particular Muharram fell that the length of interval is discovered. Moreover, his experiences in Sindh were of a tame and commonplace character, while his subsequent life at the court of Delhi was crowded with important and striking events likely to absorb his recollection, and to dim the memory of a preceding and more uneventful time. In some such way, perhaps, may be explained the fact that the traveller spent several months in Sindh, of the events of which he has left no record.

But a more interesting subject for consideration presents itself in the account of the local rebellion at Sīwastān, headed by Wunār, the chief, as we have previously been told, of the tribe of Es-Sāmara. It is well known that at this time the two most powerful tribes in Sindh were the Sūmra and the Samā. The former are described by a local historian (Mīr Mʿaṣūm) as having acquired predominance in the country as early as about 1050 A.D., and their chiefs are said to have been independent rulers of lower Sindh for periods variously stated at 143 and 550 years.¹ The statement as to their independence is questionable, and their

¹ See Elliot's *Historians of India*, vol. i. App. p. 483, “The Sūmra Dynasty.”

whole history is involved in obscurity, as is also that of the early Samā chiefs. In the case of both tribes the attempt has been made by zealous Muhammedan writers to conceal the fact of their Hindū origin, and to assign them a descent more distinguished in the eyes of Muslims than their real one from Rājputs. Thus the "Tuḥfetu'l-kirām" (a local history written by a Seyyid of Ṭhaṭa) says: "The Sūmra tribe sprang from the Arabs of Sāmira, who arrived in Sindh in the second century of the Hijra, accompanying the Tamīm, who became governors of Sind under the 'Abāssides.'" ¹ For the Samā also an Arab descent was devised, and a still more ridiculous fiction traced their origin to Jamshīd, and even to Sām, son of Nūh! ² But if any refutation of this rubbish were needed, it would suffice to mention the fact that there are Hindū Sūmra and Samā in Sindh and Kachchh to this day. The Samā too are mentioned in the Chach Nāma as a Sindhī tribe long before the Arab conquest. ³

I have already mentioned that I believe Ibnu Baṭūṭa's "Es-Sāmara" to be the Samā tribe. This belief is founded on the fact, first, that his description of their customs clearly shows that the Sāmara were Hindus, and therefore an indigenous Sindhī tribe; and next, that he tells us their chief was the Wunār who headed the uprising at Sīwastān. Now, Mīr M'aṣūm, in his "Tārīkh-i-Sind," gives the following account of Jām Unar, the first of the Samā rulers in Sindh; and though the historian, writing 300 years after the event, and depending apparently on local traditions, is in some confusion as to names and occurrences, and though his chronology does not fit-in with Ibnu Baṭūṭa's, it will be seen that he is evidently describing the events of which the traveller, as a contemporary, and almost an eye-witness, gives a more correct account. After describing the accession of one "Armīl," who succeeded the last of the Sūmra rulers, and proved such an intolerable

¹ Elliot's *Historians of India*, vol. i. p. 485.

² *Ibid.* p. 495.

³ See *antè*, p. 401, note.

tyrant that the people resolved to assassinate him, Mīr M'aṣūm proceeds :

"A body of Samās had come from Kachehh and settled in Sind, and between them and the Sindīs a path of mutual esteem and alliance had been cleared. One of these Samās, named Unar, was remarkable for intelligence." (Account of the murder of Armīl.) "They then proceeded with a number of people and seated Unar on the throne of sovereignty. * * He proceeded with a large force to the conquest of Sīwastān, and arriving in the vicinity of that place, prepared to attack Melik Ratan, an officer of the Turk dynasty. Melik Ratan, with forces arrayed, issued from the fort to the battle-field, and commenced the attack. On that day Jām Unar was routed at the first charge, but on a second occasion he collected a force with the aid of his brethren, and appeared on the field of action. Melik Ratan fell from his horse when it was at full gallop, and Jām Unar severed his head from his body. He then took possession of the fort of Sīwastān. Melik Fīroz and 'Aliyy Shāh, Turk, who were in the Bakhar territory, wrote to him saying that this audacity was unbecoming, and that he should now prepare to meet the royal forces, and show his valour and firmness on the battle-field. (Alarmed) at these words, he abandoned his enterprise, and proceeded to Ṭharī (a place in Lower Sindh)." There can be no doubt, I think, that Ibnu Baṭūta's "Wunār" is identical with the Unar of Mīr M'aṣūm. The historian gives no date for these occurrences, but from subsequent statements of his in connection with the history of the Samā rulers, it may be inferred that he supposed the Sīwastān affair to have happened about 1285 A.D., or some fifty years earlier than Ibnu Baṭūta's date. On the other hand, the Beg Lār Nāma (another local chronicle) dates the commencement of the Samā rule in 734 H. (1333-4 A.D.),¹ the very year in which Ibnu Baṭūta places the Sīwastān rebellion. Further confirmation is found in Kachehh and Kāthiāwāḍ annals, from which it appears

¹ Elliot's *Historians of India*, vol. i. p. 494.

that there undoubtedly was a Samā chief named Unād (or Unar) ruling in the former province in the early part of the fourteenth century, by whom, or by whose son, the ancient fortress of Ghumlī in Kāthiāwād was stormed in 1313 A.D.¹

From all this evidence, then, it may be safely concluded that in describing the events immediately preceding his arrival at Siwastān, Ibnu Baṭūṭā has fixed for us within a year or two the date of the commencement of Samā rule in Sindh, and thus is solved a question which has been much discussed without, up to the present time, any satisfactory result. It is to be wished that something could have been gathered from Ibnu Baṭūṭā's pages to throw light upon the much more interesting question of the period at which the conversion of the bulk of the population to Islām occurred. Unar is described as a Musulmān, though the Kachchh Samās for the most part ever remained true to their original faith; but it is possible that when he emigrated to Sindh the movement in favour of Islām was becoming more active, and that he found a change of religion desirable for the furtherance of his aims in that country. His feelings towards the Hindū Ratan may be explained by the proverbial hatred of the apostate for the professors of his former religion. However this may be, it is certain that soon after the accession of the Samās to power, the names of the chiefs of Lower Sindh become distinctly Muhammedan, and it seems probable that a general change of religion was nearly coincident with the transfer of authority from Sumrās to Samās in the first half of the fourteenth century.

But it is time to follow the further course of our traveller. From Siwastān, or Sēwan,² he proceeded down river to Lāharī, a voyage of five days he tells us. As the Indus

¹ Mr. Burgess' Report on Antiquities of Kāthiāwād and Kachchh, p. 178. Archaeological Survey of Western India.

² This name is spelt by Sindhis as variously as by Englishmen. The most usual form is سیوان—Sēwan—and, however written, it is invariably pronounced in accordance with this spelling.

ran in those days—far east of its present course—the distance would be about 300 miles, and as it was the time of high flood (June or July), a progress with the current of sixty miles a day would be quite feasible, supposing the voyage not to be interrupted by the strong southerly gales common at that season. It will be observed that he never once mentions Ṭhaṭa, though he must have passed very near the site of that town. The omission of any notice of what afterwards became the capital of Lower Sindh, and the most populous town in the entire province, at once suggests that either it was not then in existence, or was too unimportant to attract particular attention. The author of the *Tuḥfetu'l-Kirām*, himself a native of Ṭhaṭa, says that the town was founded by Jām Nizāmu'd-dīn, commonly called Jām Nanda, who succeeded to the chiefship in 1461 A.D., a statement which shows how little the author's chronology is to be trusted. The earliest mention of the place, so far as I know, is about 1347-8, near the close of Muhammed Shāh Tughlaq's reign, and in connection with the rebellion in Guzarāt incited by one of the populace named Taghī. This man, hunted from place to place, at last took refuge at Ṭhaṭa, whither he was pursued by the furious sovereign, who died near the town in 1351.¹ We may thus infer that Ṭhaṭa was founded between the time of Ibnu Baṭūṭa's visit to Lower Sind (1334) and the year 1347. According to the local chronicles, the first capital of the Samās was Sāmū'i, or Sāmuhī, the site of which is on the Kalrī branch of the Indus, three miles north of Ṭhaṭa; but while it was still in course of building, the position was found to be unsuitable, and the population migrated to the site farther south. It was perhaps while this movement was in progress that Ibnu Baṭūṭa passed by.

The ruins of Lāharī, so long the sea-port of Sindh, are still to be seen on the northern bank of a tidal channel called the Rāho, which communicates with the Baghār branch of the Indus. The spot is twenty-eight miles south-

¹ See Zīā-Barnī's *Tārīkh-i-Fīrozshāhī*.

east of Karāchī, and twelve miles in a direct line from the sea-coast, the distance by water being sixteen miles. As there is no reason to suppose that this part of the Delta has made any very large advance seawards during the five centuries and a half that have passed since Ibnu Baṭūṭa was there, it is clear that his expression, "on the shore of the sea," in describing the situation of Lāharī, was not intended to be taken literally. It is not possible, indeed, for any town to exist in the belt of land in the Delta, some miles in breadth, immediately bordering on the Indian Ocean, as this low-lying tract is liable to inundation at any high tide, and exposed to the furious inroads of the sea during the S.W. Monsoon. The port was variously named Lāharī, Laharī and Lāhorī, and later came to be known by Englishmen as *Larrybunder*. It seems to have existed as early as the beginning of the eleventh century, if, as there appears no reason to doubt, it was the "Loharānī at the embouchure of the river" mentioned by El Bīrūnī.¹ The still earlier port of Dēwal, mentioned by Arab chroniclers as existing in the first half of the seventh century, and doubtless then some hundreds of years old, was abandoned probably in the thirteenth century, but its name long survived it, and was sometimes applied to its successor Lāharī. The latter was known to the early Portuguese adventurers as Diul and Diulcindi, and the first English who visited the coast (in 1613) called Lāharī "the city Diul," while Capt. Hamilton, who was there in 1700, says the branch of the river on which it stood was named "Divellee," evidently his corruption of Dīwalī.² Lāharī continued to be the port of Sindh down to the end of the eighteenth century, when the entrance to the Rāho channel had shoaled so much that ships had to seek a more accessible anchorage. This was found at Karāchī. A writer in the "Asiatic Annual Register" in 1800 says that the customs of Karāchī averaged Rs. 125,000, and adds: "This however must be understood to relate to

¹ Elliot's *Historians*, vol. i. p. 61.

² See Purchas' *Pilgrims*, vol. i. pp. 495, 530, 531, and Hamilton's *New Account of the East Indies*, vol. i. p. 130.

the period, which is only of late years, since the channel of Laribunder river has been obstructed, by which Carrachee has attained its present commercial importance.”¹

But a port in the Delta has remained a necessity for part of the sea-borne trade of Sindh even to the present day, and when Lāharī was abandoned, its immediate successor in the Delta was Dhāraja, twelve miles to the south-east, and on a different channel.

The customs collections of Lāharī are stated by Ibnu Baṭūṭa to have been “60 laks,” and he refers the reader to his previous explanation of what is to be understood by “lak,” viz. 100,000 silver dinars, equal to 10,000 dinars. What the value of these dinars may be in modern money I am quite unable to say, but if six lakhs of gold dinars were collected annually at Lāharī, it is certain that the gold dinar must have been of small value. In the beginning of the seventeenth century the customs of this port amounted, according to the “Ā’in-i-Akbarī,” to 5,521,419 Dāms, equivalent to 138,035 Rupees, and there is no reason to suppose that by this time the trade of the place had fallen off. In 1613 the Hindū farmer of the Lāharī customs informed the English, whose visit has been above mentioned, that the Portuguese trade alone was worth a lakh of rupees to him,² and though this was very likely a gross exaggeration, it may be taken to show that the Portuguese contribution formed a large proportion of the customs.³

It is unfortunate that we are unable to identify the position of the ruins described by Ibnu Baṭūṭa as existing in a plain called Tārṇā, seven miles from Lāharī, which were evidently those of some ancient Hindū city. General Cunningham considers that they were most probably the

¹ As. Ann. Register, p. 70 of Chronicle for March, 1800. Karāchī was founded in 1725 by a body of traders who migrated from a small port at the mouth of the Hāb river named Kharak, where the anchorage had silted up.

² Purchas' Pilgrims, vol. i. p. 495.

³ For fourteen years after the British conquest of Sindh the total sea-customs of Karāchī and the Delta ports did not amount to a lakh of rupees. Our tariff has of course always been much more liberal than that of the native rulers, but it is needless to say that trade has increased in a far more than corresponding degree. The highest known collections at Karāchī under the Tālpurs was 1½ lakh.

ruins of Dēwal,¹ but as that place could not have been abandoned more than a century previously, the site and its name must surely have been familiar to all the people of the surrounding country.² The fathers of some still living in the neighbourhood may have seen Dēwal when it was yet inhabited, and it is quite impossible that a tradition of its having been destroyed a thousand years before could have gained currency. The name "Tārnā" is unknown in the locality, but the large scale maps show that in the open plain south of the Ghāro channel there is a ruined site called "Morā-Mārī," eight miles north-east of Lāharī, which may perhaps be the one described by Ibnu Baṭūṭa. The mention of "innumerable stones," some of them very large, would indicate a position in the naturally stoneless Delta, not far from the hilly tract immediately north of the Ghāro, where they could be quarried, and whence they could be conveyed without excessive expenditure of labour. There is thus a strong presumption in favour of identifying Morā-Mārī, which is only five miles from the nearest point of the hill-tract, with Ibnu Baṭūṭa's ruined city.

From Lāharī our traveller returned to north Sindh, and arrived at Bakār, by which of course we are to understand Bakhar. The description he gives of this place is singular. "A channel of the river Sind divides it" (يشقّ خلیج من نهر السند).

From this it is evident that he regarded the present town of Rohrī as forming part of Bakhar, and the channel separating the former from the island of Bakhar must have been the *Khalij* which he mentions. But I am totally unable to identify the place where Kashlū Khān's hospice stood. Ibnu Baṭūṭa says it was in the middle of the *Khalij*. If so, island and hospice must since have disappeared under water. There is no island in either of the channels which separate Bakhar from the mainland, but there are three—one on the north, and two on the south of Bakhar—

¹ Ancient Geography of India, pp. 299, 300.

² Sultān Jelālū d-dīn Khwārazmī was at Dēwal in 1224 (see Major Raverty's translation of the *Ṭabaḳāt-i-Nāṣirī*, I. 295 n.). The place appears to have been the seat of a local ruler in 1228 (*Ibid*, p. 615).

which may be correctly described as situated in the middle of *the Indus*, and it was perhaps on one of these that the hospice stood.¹

One more point in our extract may be noticed for its geographical interest. Ibnu Baṭūṭa passed on from Bakhar to Uchchh, and thence to Multān. At ten miles from this last city he had to cross an unfordable stream (wādī), named Khusraw-ābād, where he suffered so much vexation from the proceedings of the Customs' officers. This stream must have been the old channel of the Rāwī in which that river was still flowing sixty-five years later, when Tīmūr wrote thus of it: "The united waters (of the Jhēlam and Chīnāb) pass below Multān and then join the Rāwī."² The name of Khusraw-ābād is singular, as it implies an artificial channel. Had the Rāwī already begun to show symptoms of changing its course in the distant northern direction which it has since taken, and had it been restrained for a time by means of works carried out under the auspices of some local authority named Khusraw?

NOTE ON THE SITUATION OF JANĀNĪ.

It is possible that Hālānī, an old town in Pargana Kandhīāro, and 55 miles N.E. of Sēwan, may be Ibnu Baṭūṭa's Janānī. This town is situated on the left bank of the old course of the Indus mentioned in the note at the foot of p. 401. Ibnu Baṭūṭa, according to his custom, gives the details of the spelling of the name, and he makes it Janānī beyond all question, but it is to be remembered that he wrote—or rather dictated—the account of his travels long years after he had been in Sindh, and that he had lost the papers which he had prepared in India, a fact which no doubt accounts for much that is otherwise inexplicable in his narrative.

¹ The small island north of Bakhar, containing the shrine of Khwāja Khizr or Jind Pir (Zinda Pir), has in its mesjid what is perhaps the oldest extant Muhammedan inscription in India, dating Hijra 341 (952 A.D.). See Mr. Eastwick's article in *Journal Bombay R.A.S.* vol. i. p. 203. Sādh-Bēlo, the nearest island on the south, was, according to Mir M'aṣūm, for a short time the residence of Prince Kāmran, just after Humāyūn had at last quelled the restless and faithless spirit of his brother by causing him to be blinded.

² Elliot's *Historians*, vol. iii. p. 476.

ART. XIV.—*Formosa Notes on MSS., Races and Languages*,
 By TERRIEN DE LACOUPERIE, Ph. & Litt.D., Professor
 of Indo-Chinese Philology, University College, London.
 Including a Note on *Nine Formosan MSS.* by E.
 COLBORNE BABER, H.B.M. Chinese Secretary, Peking.

THE following notes, excepting a few additions in March, 1887, were written chiefly in April, 1886, at the suggestion of my excellent friend, the much-venerated scholar Col. Henry Yule, C.B., LL.D., President of the Royal Asiatic Society, after he had received from our common friend E. Colborne Baber,¹ of H.B.M. Consular Service in China, then at Se-ul in Corea, nine sheets of manuscript secured from Formosa. These manuscripts,² written in an old Pepohwan dialect, with Roman characters of Dutch origin, and, as regards several of them, bilingual with a Chinese translation, were accompanied with a valuable note of E. C. Baber, which forms a portion of the first part of the present paper.

These notes are distributed as follows :

¹ Gold Medallist of the Royal Geographical Society, author of *Travels and Researches in South-Western China*.

² They were exhibited by me at the Seventh International Congress of Orientalists at Vienna on the 29th Sept. 1886, with some oral remarks which I am sorry to say were rather badly reported. At the request of Dr. H. Kern of Leiden, through our learned friend Dr. R. Rost, I had two proof-sheets of fac-simile of two manuscripts communicated to this well-known scholar, who has thought fit to forestall the publication by my friend Baber and myself by putting forth an article on them. See his *Handschriften uit het eiland Formosa*, pp. 360-369 of *Verslagen en Mededeelingen der Koninklijke Akademie van Wetenschappen, Afdeling Letterkunde*, 3de Reeks, Deel iii. Amsterdam, 1887.

Analytical Summary of Contents.

I. THE MANUSCRIPTS, §§ 1-19.

a) *Their Existence and Date.*

1. Statement of Duhalde.
2. Report of Mr. J. Thomson about Formosan MSS.
3. MSS. seen by Paul Ibis.
4. Twenty-one MSS. seen by Mr. J. Steere.

b) *Note on "Nine Formosan MSS," by Mr. E. C. Baber.*

- I. The Dutch schoolmaster in Formosa.
- II. Nine Manuscripts.
- III. They were written at Sinkiang.
- IV. Vocabularies by Mr. T. L. Bullock and Mr. J. B. Steere.
- V. The Formosan of Psalmanazar.
- VI. Identification of words.
- VII. How the nine MSS. were secured.

c) *Remarks on the Nine MSS.*

5. First MS. without seals.
6. Second MS. and its six seals.
7. Third MS. without seals.
8. Fourth MS. and its two seals.
9. Fifth and sixth MSS. and their six seals.
10. Seventh MS. without seals.
11. Eighth MS. and its two seals.
12. Ninth MS. without seals.

d) *Two similar MSS. in the British Museum.*

13. Their genuineness was doubted.
14. First MS. and its six seals.
15. Second MS. and its five seals.

e) *Information derived from the Seals.*

16. Twenty seals different.
17. *Sin-Kiang* district.
18. The *T'u-Kwan* and *An-Kung* officers, etc.
19. The *T'u muh* and his office.

II. THE WRITINGS, §§ 20-27.

20. Roman characters of Dutch teaching.
21. Psalmanazar and Hervas, about an indigenous writing.
22. Its genuineness traced back as far as 1645.
23. Order of the alphabet, and its vague connection.
24. A probable adaptation.
25. Its existence proved again in 1871.
26. Native traditions about writing.
27. Further enquiry in the island required.

III. ETHNOLOGY, §§ 28-59.

a) *From Chinese Sources.*

28. Chinese works.
29. Illustrated album.
30. Other works.

31. *Ki-lung*, a name of Formosa.
32. *Pok-an*, another name.
33. Chinese name of aborigines.
34. Early notions about the Negritos.
35. Chinese expedition in 605 A.D.
36. Comparison with continental tribes.
37. *Kün-lun* interpreters.
38. What means their name.
39. Extension of the name.
40. The *Kün-lun* slaves.
41. The *Kün-lun* of Kwangsi.
42. The *Tan* and *Ki-lung*.
43. The *Halas* and the *Ta-galas*.
44. The *Bisayas*.
45. The Chinese correctly informed.

b) *From European Authorities.*

46. Dutch reports.
47. Men with tails.
48. Similar instances. The Nyam-Nyams and the Sema-Nâgas.
49. Probably same explanation in Formosa.
50. Negroes with lanky hair, lately found again.
51. Their importance for the ethnology of S.E. Asia.
52. Red-haired tribes
53. A summary of the other ethnology of the island.
54. New information.
55. Inferences about the Negritos.
56. Chinese emigrants in the island.
57. Affinities of native customs with Oceanic tribes.
58. Affinities with continental tribes.
59. Ethnological conclusions.

IV. LINGUISTICS, §§ 60-110.

60. Composite and fragmentary.
61. Progress of the Chinese speech.
62. Twenty-five languages and dialects.

a) *From Chinese Sources.*

63. The Record of 605 A.D.
64. A few words from that time.

b) *According to Psalmanazar.*

65. Suggestion of Mr. E. Colborne Baber partly verified.
66. The numerals.
67. Some of them are genuine.
68. False and mixed-up statements.
69. List of words.
70. Identification of a few.
71. His documents of Spanish source.

c) *From Dutch and Modern Authorities.*

72. Three Formosan languages known to the Dutch.
73. Translations of Rob. Junius and D. Gravius
74. They used the Sinkam and Sideia dialects.
75. The dialect of the MSS. similar to the Baksa-Pepohwan.
76. Rob. Junius has used the same dialect.
77. The Lord's Prayer in R. Junius' translation.
78. The same in D. Gravius' translation.

79. Similarities and dissemblances.
80. Phonetic equivalences $R = D = S$.
81. Illustrations of the law.
82. The Sinkam dialect.
83. The Favorlang dialect.
84. The Lord's Prayer in that dialect.
85. Data on the other dialects still more deficient.
86. The Tayal group.
87. Lists of words of other dialects.
88. Comparative list of pronouns.
89. Comparative list of numerals.

d) *Position in General Philology.*

90. Glossarial relation with the Malayan languages.
91. Proportion of Malay affinities with eight dialects.
92. Similar affinities of other dialects.
93. Unknown language of the black tribes.
94. J. Logan's work.
95. Conon von der Gabelentz's work.
96. L'Abbé Favre's memoir.
97. Dr. Fried. Müller's remarks.
98. Affinities established with the Indonesian languages.
99. Affinity of the Gyarung and Tagala.
100. The ethnological formation of China explains the fact.
101. The Gyarung and some Pre-Chinese tribes of China.
102. Proportions of affinities of the Tayal with the same tribes.
103. Are greater than with Malayan stock.
104. Traces of Indonesian languages in ancient E. China.
105. Peculiar system of prefixes from the Gyarung to Indonesia.
106. Indonesian prefixes in Formosan dialects.
107. In Formosan, Miao-tze, and Gyarung languages.
108. Comparative table of their ideological indices.
109. Conclusions it leads to.
110. General scheme of the Indo-Pacific stock of languages.

APPENDIX.

Formosan vocabularies.

I. THE MANUSCRIPTS, §§ 1-19.

a) *Their Existence and Date.*

1. Various writers and travellers have mentioned the sort of interesting manuscripts, relics of a former civilization, found in Formosa, such as those sent to the President of the Royal Asiatic Society by our friend and learned traveller E. Colborne Baber.

Duhalde, in 1730, seventy years after the expulsion of the Dutch, speaking of the Formosan aborigines, could say "that there are many who yet understand the Dutch language, who can read the books of the Dutch, and who in writing use their letters; many fragments of pious Dutch books are found amongst them."

2. Mr. J. Thomson, the traveller and photographer, who has paid special attention to the aborigines of the island, said that some specimens of romanized Malay were still preserved by some tribes, who no longer know the writing nor the language. These documents are chiefly deeds of property, or private contracts.

3. Paul Ibis, a Russian traveller, who saw much of the aborigines before 1877, says that the *Sekhoan* of Tchang-Hoa¹ on the N.W. of the island, have preserved some traces of the Dutch occupation, and that some ancient books and documents are still in existence amongst them.

4. In a notice on the native tribes of Formosa, written in 1874 by Mr. Steere,² who travelled among them, some interesting information is given regarding such manuscripts. The author says that, among the aborigines submitted to the Chinese and established in the hills East of Tai-wan fu and Takao, the Pepohwans, he has found a number of ancient manuscripts of the old Pepohwan language with roman letters, kept preciously by their owners, though they no longer knew how to read them. The majority of these documents consisted (as is the case with the present ones) of deeds and contracts written in the old tongue, which has been given up for the Chinese language, and is nearly forgotten. Mr. Steere was able to examine twenty-one of these manuscripts and recognize that they were dated in the Chinese fashion, according to the years of the ruling Emperor, and were all of them much later than the expulsion of the Dutch. Four of them were dated during the years Yung-tcheng (1723-1736), sixteen during the years K'ien-Lung (1736-1796), and one at the beginning of Kia K'ing (1796); so that they come down later by 42 years than the latest of those sent by Mr. E. C. Baber and described by him in the following section.

¹ *Globus*, 1877, t. xxxi. p. 233; Girard de Rialle, *Formose et ses habitants* (a most valuable paper in *Revue d'Anthropologie*, 1885, t. viii. pp. 58-77, 247-281), p. 254.

² *The Aborigines of Formosa*, in *China Review*, vol. iii. pp. 181-184.

b) *Note on "Nine Formosan Manuscripts" (by Mr. E. C. Baber).*

"This is a story of the decay and death of a people, and a language, and a script; and, incidentally, of a religion.

I.

"I think it was in the year 1626, or a little later, that George Candidius brought the schoolmasters into the Island. At any rate, it was about thirty years before the dreadful day when Mr. Hambroek unlocked himself from his daughter's arms and returned to the camp of the Pirate, where his wife and two young children were held as hostages. And you know how the Pirate slew him, and other captives and hostages, to the number of five hundred souls, including many schoolmasters. Nor were the women and children spared. This was in the year 1661; and very soon after this the Pirate made himself master of all the western part of the Island.¹

"But although the schoolmasters were murdered or driven away, the traces of their teaching remained for a hundred years. The nine sheets which lie before you will show you how the light of their learning dwindled and flickered into utter darkness.

"I need not tell you, for you know it right well, that I am speaking of the things which happened when the Pirate Koxinga was driving the Hollanders out of Formosa. The faded writings which I send you were written by the grandchildren of the native people who sat at the feet of George Candidius and the schoolmasters.

II.

"I have numbered the sheets I. to IX.

"The date of No. I. is 1735.

" " " II. " 1737.

" " " III. " 1737.

" " " IV. " 1740.

" " " V. " 1740.

" " " VI. " 1740.

" " " VII. " 1742.

" " " VIII. " 1746.

" " " IX. " 1754.

¹ "The Middle Kingdom" (Williams), vol. ii. p. 436.

"Let me first tell you how I make sure of this chronology. You will notice that three of these manuscripts are bilingual, being written in Chinese and in what we may conveniently call *Formosan*. Nos. V. and VI. are duplicates.

"In No. III. the Chinese version is dated, after the Chinese manner, 'Kienlung, 2nd year, 9th month;' and in the Formosan we find in the fourth line: '*Giamliong*, 2 ni.'

"It may, therefore, be surmised that these two terms mean the same thing. And when we refer to No. V. for confirmation or contradiction, we find, in the Chinese, 'Kienlung, 5th year, 11th month,' and in the Formosan: '*Gianliong*, 5 ni, 101 *goij*.'

"This makes the matter sure. For if you suppose that the 'eleventh month' cannot be called the 'hundred and first month,' you are wrong, as you will find anon without any prompting from me.

"Turning to the six manuscripts which are written in Formosan alone, I copy down the Formosan dates, and place opposite them the rendering which would correspond in Chinese:

No. I. Youngsing	103 ni	2 <i>goij</i> ¹	Yungehing	13th yr.	2nd m.	
No. II. Gianliong	2 ni	6 <i>goij</i>	104 sit	Kienlung	2nd „	6th „ 14th d.
No. IV. Gianlioung	5 ni	10 <i>goij</i>			5th „	10th „
No. VII. Gianliong	7 ni	1 <i>goij</i>	20 sit		7th „	1st „ 20th „
No. VIII. Gianlioung	101 ni	3 <i>goij</i>	209 sit		11th „	3rd „ 29th „
No. IX. Gianliong	109 ni (?)	<i>goij</i>			19th „	(?) „

"The Emperor Yungehing reigned twelve years and some months. There seems no need to adduce further argument to prove that the dates are established.

"Unhappily, the words *ni*, *goij* and *sit* cannot be Formosan. They are too evidently a mere transliteration of the Chinese words which, in the dialect of Amoy, mean 'year,' 'moon' and 'day.'

"However, I proceed to translate the Chinese Text of No. III.

"'Agreement by Yeh-k'uan. The native Kalung being in want of silver gives two fields as security, whereon Yeh-k'uan lends him 29 ounces 263 of silver. It is agreed that every ounce of silver is every month to bear interest of 4

¹ *Goij* should probably be written *Goiij*, as in Modern Dutch.

Candareens.¹ The full interest must be paid up, by the 12th month. If the interest be not so paid up, the fields will be to the lender to till and to hold, without let or hindrance; and this is to be the condition year by year. The above is the free wish of both parties, and neither may raise difficulties and withdraw from it. As a verbal agreement might not be binding, this is put in writing to make the understanding clear. There is also a loan of 17 piculs and 2 bushels of rice [in husk].'

"Turning to the Formosan version, and considering the first two lines, we find that the words '*Attaining Tasolladt*' are common to several of the documents, and probably mean *mutual agreement* or something of the sort. At the end of the second line we find mention of the weight of silver, which Kalung borrowed, written thus, '209 nio lam, 2 ci, 6 ho, iii.' corresponding with 29 ounces 263 in the Chinese version.

"Here again the words '*nio*,' '*ci*,' and '*ho*,' are transliterations of the sounds which in the dialect of Amoy, or thereabout, are equivalent to Taels, Mace and Candareens.

"Nevertheless I think we are close on the track of a veritable Formosan word. For, seeing that the term 'silver' twice occurs very early in the Chinese text, we may expect it to occur twice in the beginning of the Formosan version. And if this be true, the Formosan word for silver must be '*vanitok*,' which occurs in the first line, and in the second.

"But if '*vanitok*' means silver, we ought to detect the word in some of these manuscripts, with an amount, or enumeration, appended; because, in the Far East, *silver* is synonymous with coin, wealth, lucre, pounds, shillings and pence; money, in short.

"We find it occurring thus:

No. II. ki vanitok ki 206 nio

No. III. ki vanitok Cata sa 209 nio lam, 2 ci, 6 ho, iii . . .

No. IV. ki vanitok ki 102 niou

No. VII. ki vanitok tagikalangang ki 408 nio, 3 ci

¹ Equivalent to 48 per cent. per annum.

And since we know already that *nio* means ounces, and *ci* tenths of ounces, it is pretty certain that *vanitok* means 'silver.'

“Pursuing the same method, and remembering that *nio* means *ounces*, we are sure to find *nio* accompanied by a numeral in almost every case; much in the same way as Pounds, Shillings, and Pence, in an English deed or document, would be attended or interpolated with numerals. I proceed to put down all the instances in which the words *nio*, *ci*, etc., occur in the nine manuscripts.

In No. I. (they do not occur.)

In No. II. . . . Allaÿ ki nio tokat . . .

In No. II. . . . ki 206 mio . . .

In No. III. . . . sa 209 nio lam 2 ei . . .

In No. III. . . . ki l k inio 4 laÿ

In No. IV. . . . ki 103 niou

In No. V.) (they do not occur, nor do the corresponding

In No. VI. } expressions occur in the Chinese version.)

In No. VII. . . . ki 408 nio 2 ci

In No. VII. . . . ki 100102¹ nio

In No. VIII. . . . sasat kitiang ki niou togot ki sasaat ki
niou togot ki pahpat ki si

In No. VIII. . . . ki 1 ki niou

“Here we find nine cases, in seven of which the word *nio* is preceded by an unmistakeable Arabic numeral. May we not surmise that in the remaining cases the same word is likely to be preceded by a numeral *written in full*?

“I cannot make anything of *allaḡ ki nio tokat*” in No. II. But there can be no doubt that, in No. VIII., the passage *Sasat kitiang ki niou togot ki sasaat ki niou togot ki pahpat ki si* contains several numerals written in full. I confirm this deduction by a comparison with a passage in No. I.—‘10 ki sopau 2 ki sopau³ (?) 3 tau,’ which means ‘ten piculs and two piculs and (?) three bushels,’ that is to say ‘twelve piculs (?) three bushels’ in all. If you will reflect on this

¹ This portentous sum probably means 112 ounces of silver.

² Compare *tokat* in No. II. with *togot* in No. VIII.

³ We know from No. III. that *sopau* means a picul, and *tau* means a bushel. But they are probably Chinese words. Still *sopau* may be native Formosan.

comparison, you will derive from it the conclusion that *kitiang* means ten, and that *sasaat* and *pahpat* are numerals.

"But there is still further confirmation to be adduced. These numbers were doubtless 'writ large' for the sake of emphasis. I pray you to take notice that they are still more specially emphasized by being impressed with seals. There is a seal on *Kitiang*. There is a seal on *Sasaat*. There is a seal on *Pahpat*. And the seal is not a personal seal, but consists of two Chinese characters (in the square form)



which read 'Hu Fêng,' and mean 'carefully stamped.' A similar seal (but not the same) occurs in No. IV. line 7, where again it is impressed upon a numeral.¹ In all other cases the seals are in the ordinary Chinese character, and represent, or certify, signatures.

"Let us collect our results.

Vanitok is 'silver.'

Kitiang is 'ten.'

Sasaat is a numeral.

Pahpat is a numeral.

Sopau is a 'picul,' or 'a hundred pounds.'

*Killip baah*² is 'field.'

III.

"The problem presented to us is to discover what Formosan tribe now represents the folk by whom these documents were written. We want to give them a local habitation and a name.

¹ This seal is bilingual, one half being Chinese, in square form, with the meaning 'carefully stamped'; and the other half being Manchu, but too defaced to be legible.

² Compare *kil bagh*, No. II. line 6; and *pagh* in the middle of Nos. V. and VI.

“An examination of the seals on some of the deeds will show that they were impressed by the ‘Aboriginal Chiefs of Sinkiang;’ that is to say, native Formosans who had been appointed by the Chinese to act as Headmen in Sinkiang. I have no map of Formosa at hand; but Sinkiang must have been an important district, and a reference to old Dutch maps of the Island would in all probability at once determine its position. A little local research would very easily discover it.

IV.

“Of the Formosan (and obviously Malay) vocabularies given in the appendix, the first five were collected by Mr. T. L. Bullock, of H.M.’s Consular Service, and Mr. J. B. Steere, of the Michigan University. The following notes are extracted from an article which Mr. Bullock contributed to the *China Review* (Hongkong, Aug. 1874):

“‘The tribes which speak these dialects are called by the Chinese: 1. Tsuihwan; 2. Sekhwan; 3. Buhwan; 4. Pepohwan; 5. Pelam. The vocabulary standing sixth on the list is taken from a small ‘Dictionary of the Favorlang Dialect,’ compiled in the year 1650 by G. Harpart, a Dutch missionary in Formosa. This work seems to have existed only in manuscript until the year 1840, when it was published in Batavia by W. H. Medhurst.

“‘It is necessary to remember that the island of Formosa consists of two districts; the one a level plain about twenty miles in breadth, extending along the west coast for nearly the whole length of the Island; the other a mountainous region, through the middle of which runs a high range from north to south. The level country is almost entirely occupied by Chinese, the mountains almost entirely by the *uncivilized* Aborigines. The *civilized* Aborigines are hemmed in between the two, dwelling in some places on the plain, in others on the mountains.

“‘The Sekhwan (‘tame savages’) are a tribe of civilized Aborigines living on the mountain-spurs east of Changhwa. To the east of these live the Buhwan, on or near the central

range. The Buhwan are a branch of the Chenchwan, a Chinese term which means 'wild savages.'

"The Tsuihwan ('water savages'), a very small tribe, inhabit the shores of a lake a day's journey inside the mountains N.E. from Kagee¹ and S.E. from Changhwa.

"The Chinese term '*Pepohwan*' ('savages of the plain') is applied to all the civilized Aborigines living near the mountains in the southern part of the Island. The one name includes a number of ancient tribes which were formerly distinct, and spoke separate dialects. At the present time, however, Chinese is the language used by all; but most of the dialects may be learnt from old people who spoke them when young, and still remember them. The tribe which used the dialect given in the list lives some 25 miles east of Changhwa.

"The Pelam are a tribe of wild Aborigines inhabiting the east coast in about the latitude of Takow.

"The position which the Favorlang tribe occupied is doubtful.'

V.

"I should like to have added to this list a vocabulary of the Formosan dialect which George Psalmanazar spoke so fluently. Do you not think it very possible that he may have fallen across a vocabulary of one of these dialects, written by a Dutch missionary, and have learnt it by rote? It has always been supposed that George invented a language, but is not the theory which I suggest more probable? It would be interesting to re-examine the question under this light.

VI.

"I now place the words which I have identified over against the corresponding words in Mr. Bullock's Vocabularies.

	<i>Tsuihwan.</i>	<i>Sekhwan.</i>	<i>Buhwan.</i>	<i>Pepohwan.</i>	<i>Pelam.</i>	<i>Favorlang.</i>
<i>Silver</i> ... Vanitok	Tsui	Pilah	Pilat	Manituk	Apasho	
<i>One</i> Sasaat	Taha	Adadumat	Kial	Sasaab	Sha	Natta
<i>Eight</i> ... Pahpat	Kaspat	Ilasubituru	Mussupat	Pipa	Waro	
<i>Ten</i> Kitiang	Maksin	Issit	Nahal	Keteng	Pulu	Zehiet

¹ For the positions of Kagee and Changhwa, see "Handy and Royal Atlas," W. & A. K. Johnston, 1881, Map 29.

"You will not hesitate to select the Pepohwan. But before proving that your choice is justified, I write out the translation of No. V.

"Agreement of the Aborigines Sijih and Takalung. Whereas Takalung and Sijih have had a dispute about a certain field [or fields], a warrant has been issued for the Interpreter and Chiefs to try the case; and the Interpreter and Chiefs have now deliberated and decided. Sijih and Takalung will accordingly transfer the fields, in compliance with the original agreement, to Takalung to till and to hold. As regards the charge brought by Takalung about the loss of cattle, he also accepts the advice of the Interpreter and Chiefs, and drops the lawsuit. Except as regards the three¹ Dollars (?), what Sijih says about borrowing money from Ta-mi-lou on the security of family property, is not within the knowledge of Takalung. In case Ta-mi-lou may hereafter raise difficulties, Sijih will hold himself responsible. To this arrangement both parties hereby consent, and will never raise objection. A joint amicable agreement, executed in duplicate, each party holding one copy in proof.'

"In the Formosan version of this document, *Toughso* is merely the Chinese word for 'an interpreter.' It is tempting to surmise that *Lohang*, if this be the true lection, means 'cattle,' and is equivalent to *Loang* in Mr. Bullock's Vocabulary; and that *Masosoo* means 'to state,' or 'to declare,' or what not, corresponding to the Pepohwan *Masasu* = 'Talk.' But these are mere *ex-post-facto* guesses, and should not be accepted without more rigorous proof.

VII.

"Two years or more ago, at a meeting of the Royal Geographical Society, Lord Aberdare drew attention to the interest which attaches to certain manuscripts known to be in the possession of the Formosan aborigines; and it was this remark which prompted the Rev. William Campbell, of Taiwan, to send me these nine deeds from Formosa,

¹ From an inspection of the stamps or seals, I am inclined to think that the words *San yuan*, translated 'three dollars,' should be regarded as a proper name.

where he had discovered them. I speedily wrote to him, begging him to furnish me with precise particulars; and especially to tell me where he found them. It was not until after I had made the identifications above described that he very kindly supplied me with the following notes:

“‘The documents were obtained by me during the first week of July [presumably in 1884] at one of the villages in the low-lying hill region eastward from Taiwanfoo I wished to make sure that full advantage would be taken of those documents for throwing whatever light they could upon the language and ethnographical place of the people to whom they were once intelligible; because the Pepohwan tribe from whom they were obtained have now lost all knowledge of the language represented in those documents. They removed inland to their present settlements about eighty years ago, their own ancestral region being what was known during the Dutch occupation as the Township of Sinkkan, a name still preserved in the large Chinese market town of Sin-kang, about 20 li (say seven miles) N.N.E. of the city of Taiwanfoo. They are exclusively an agricultural people; and in regard to language, religion, dress and customs, differ now in almost no respect from the neighbouring Chinese. They have decidedly much less force of character than the Chinaman; and some years ago, after an elaborate investigation, one of our Mission Doctors came to the conclusion that they were far from being a prolific race. It was, moreover, chiefly among this tribe that the Dutch carried on that largely successful Christianizing and educational work of which not a single trace can be found at the present day. I should certainly wish to see some attempt made to solve this sadly interesting problem. During the Dutch rule, over 30 Christian Pastors laboured, and over 6000 of the natives were baptized on the profession of faith in our Saviour; but nowhere, in North, South, East or West Formosa, have I ever met with even a distinctively Christian *tradition* amongst the Aborigines.’

“‘The tale has grown too sad for me to seek in it any pastime, or any delight. It is a tale of a people which has

INSTITUTION.	NATURE OF APPOINTMENT.	ENDOWMENT.	MODE OF APPOINTMENT.	NAME OF HOLDER.
University, Oxford	Regius Professor	£40, and Canonry of Ch. Ch. worth about £1400		Rev. S. R. Driver, M.A., D.D.
University, Cambridge	Reader in Rabbinical Literature	£200		Ad. Neubauer, M.A.
	Regius Professor	£40 and Canonry of Ely		Rev. A. F. Kirkpatrick, M.A.
	Teacher Rabbinical Literature	£300		Dr. Schiller-Szinessy
University, London	Two Examiners	£50 each		Rev. S. Leathes and Mr. S. Bentley
University, Durham	Professor Lecturer			Ven. H. W. Walkins
University, St. Andrews	Professor of Oriental Languages			Rev. J. T. Fowler
University, Glasgow	Professor of Oriental Languages			
University, Aberdeen	Professor of Oriental Languages			
University, Edinburgh	Professor of Hebrew	£300		D. C. Adams
University, Dublin	Professor of Hebrew			T. K. Abbott
	Erasmus Smith Professor			R. Atkinson, LL.D.
	Erasmus Smith Professor, also 2 Assistants			H. R. Poole, D.D.
University College, London	Goldsmid Professor	Proceeds of £2000	By Council	Rev. E. W. Marks
King's College, London				Rev. S. Leathes, D.D.

There are likewise Professorships of Hebrew conjoined with other subjects at Owens College, Manchester; New College, London; Lancashire Independent College; Spring Hill College; Carmarthen College; Brecon College; University College, Bristol; and at some other Nonconformist Training Colleges, and at Jewish Colleges.

SCHOLARSHIPS, Etc.

University, Oxford	4 Boden Sanskrit Scholarships of £50, tenable for four years, awarded yearly.
" "	The Davis Chinese Scholarship of £50, tenable for 2 years.
" Cambridge	Brotherton Sanskrit Prize of £25, annually.
" "	At St. John's College, 2 Studentships of £60 to be applied in the management of Natural Science or the Study of Semitic or Indian Languages.
" Edinburgh	Vans Dunlop Semitic Scholarship, £100 for 3 years.
" "	Certain Prizes in Semitic and Sanskrit.
" Dublin	Semitic Prizes to £40, none ever awarded.
" "	Arabic Prizes to £10, " "
" "	Hindustani Prizes to £5 " "
" "	Sanskrit Prizes to £10 " "
Sanskrit Exhibition at City of London School, £	" "

HEBREW SCHOLARSHIPS, Etc.

University, Oxford	2 Kennicott Scholarships, one £120 for 1 year awarded annually, one of £120 for ditto, awarded every second year.
" "	2 Pusey and Ellerton Scholarship, £40 for 2 years.
" "	Denyer and Johnson Scholarship, 2 of £50 for a year, awarded annually—Hebrew included as a branch of theology.
" "	Houghton Syriac Prize of £15, awarded annually.
" "	Wedham College, Oxford, Hebrew Scholarship of £80 a year for 4 years.
" "	St. John's College, Oxford, one of £80 for 4 years.
" Cambridge	Tyrwhitt Scholarship (2), £30, £20, for 3 years, awarded yearly.
" "	Crosse Scholarship (3), £20 each, for 3 years, awarded yearly.
" "	Also a Hebrew Exhibition at Queens' Coll. Camb., and Merchant Taylors' School.
" "	Prize, proceeds of £600.
" Edinburgh	Harty Prize.
" Coll., London	Hollies Scholarship, £60 for 1 year, awarded yearly.

There are probably some other Prizes, etc., especially in Hebrew, but in other Oriental languages it is not likely that there are any beyond those enumerated.

Much of the above information was obtained with considerable difficulty, but it is believed to be fairly accurate and complete. The result of the inquiries made is that there is even less encouragement given to students of Orientals than to teachers; of the latter, indeed, the professional duties must in some cases be extremely light, owing to the absence of sufficient inducements to join their classes.

Taking the three Classical Oriental Languages—Sanskrit, Arabic, and Chinese—we have:

12 appointments more or less exclusively in Sanskrit, with salaries ranging from £0—£300—£500—£1000.

7 appointments in Arabic, with salaries ranging from £0—£50—£500.

4 appointments in Chinese, with salaries ranging from £0—£70—£300.

15 appointments, Indian and Persian, mostly in connection with the preparation of Candidates for the Indian Civil Service, and depending mainly, in most cases exclusively, upon class fees. At Oxford and Cambridge the three Indian Readers get each £200 and fees.

金立合約番月大加弄振其日事理心哀哀者通事大司金契通事大司議處日午轉報得
 原陶興地原寄官封其大加弄控其外亦總通事大司勸處得恩銀三元外其日移大
 之假公元為胎音實不知情從後日生依日報此乃二比升應聽處承盤任謝金親謹
 為呈樣武依各款壹紙為昭

乾隆五十年拾壹月

[illegible]



lost its religion, its estate, its nationality, its language, and almost the recollection of its identity. And perhaps it gave away the last record of its traditions when it parted with these nine ragged memorials of its ruin.

“E. COLBORNE BABER.

“*Se-ul in Corea*, 1 Jan. 1886.”

c) *Remarks on the Nine Manuscripts.*

5. These manuscripts are various, and many of them are stamped with seals of the officials. It is not without interest to examine them. The first, dated *Tsung sing* 1 : 3 *ni* 2 *goij esi* 10 *sit*, otherwise *yung tcheng*, 13 year 2 month 10 day, i.e. our 5th March, 1735, bears no stamps. It consists only of eight lines of text, with the single solitary names of four (contracting) parties, whose names, written by the scribe, are followed by four marks made by the parties themselves. Then comes the date and two names (of witnesses?), preceded respectively by the words *takalang* and *vagikalang*.

6. The second, reproduced on Plate II., is dated *Gianliong* 2 *ni* 6 *goij* 104 *sit*, otherwise *Kientung*, 2 year, 6 month, 14 day, corresponding to our 12th July, 1737. It consists of 15 lines of text, followed by 27 names and the date. Of the names, all written by the scribe, 19 are double, and all but one followed by a mark made by the party named; the 16th and 19th are finger marks, showing that the party, unable to hold a pen, had to put the tip of his finger into the ink in order to impress his mark. Six other names are single, four of which are accompanied by the seal of the party in Chinese characters. The first of them is *Sardaŷ*, whose seal reads *Sin kiang t'u kwan San tai tu ki*,¹ otherwise ‘seal of *San-tai* (Sarday), local official of Sinkiang.’

The second single name *taraŷa* has no seal; but the third, which is somewhat difficult to read *tarragi*, is accompanied

¹ 三 新
臺 港
圖 土
記 官

by one. We read it *Sin kiang Tsin king, t'u kwan san yuen k'i si*.¹

The seal of the fourth name, *Takavir*, reads *Sin Kiang shé t'u kwan Ta kia mi t'u ki*,² or "seal of Takiami, local official of the Sinkiang hamlet"; where Takiami stands for Takavir.

The fifth name is of a difficult reading; it may be *Kokal*, and the seal bears the following legend, *Sin Kiang t'u kwan She kan k'i Si*,³ i.e. 'seal of She Kan, a local official of Sinkiang.'

With the sixth of the simple names there is no seal. Then come two long names of men of another character: 1) *Thong so ti ki*, whose seal, *Sin Kiang t'ung-she Yen-kwan t'u ki*,⁴ otherwise "seal of Yen kwan, interpreter of Sinkiang," where Yen-kwan, in Amoy *Gan*, stands for Ti-ki, the name of the man. 2) *Om kong tarikobal*, a square seal smaller than the preceding ones, which are oblong, bears the Chinese *An kung Ta-li-kwan*,⁵ which means the An-kung Talikwan, and is only the Chinese rendering of the name of the officer preceded by his title of office.

7. The third MS. bears no seal, and, as it is reproduced here (Plate III.), needs no description. The date is given in the Chinese text only, viz. 乾隆貳年玖月, Kien-lung 2 year 9 month, corresponding to October, 1737.

8. The fourth MS., unilingual, is dated *Gian lioung 5 ni 10 goj*, i.e. Kienlung 5 year 10 month, corresponding to Dec. 1740. It consists of 10 lines of text, two long and three single names, and the date. Two seals are stamped on it. One, half Mandehu, half Chinese, having both writings in square characters and too much defaced for me to read it, is marked on the text. The other seal, stamped next to the first name, reads *Yen Kw'an ki si*,⁶ or "stamp of Yen Kw'an."

¹ 官新 三元港 記進 悉京 土	² 大新 加港 密社 圖土 記官	³ 治新 于港 記土 悉官	⁴ 顏新 寬港 圖通 記事	⁵ 大案 哩公 觀公	⁶ 顏 寬 記 悉
2	3	4	5	6	7

The same name or word appears also on a seal of an interpreter on the second MS. of 1737.

9. The fifth and sixth, bilingual, as remarked by Mr. E. C. Baber, are duplicates. I remark that they were folded together,¹ and that the halves of seals and writing which appear on the fifth (Plate I.) find their other halves on the sixth. The date is *Gianliong 5 ni 101 goj*, Chinese 乾隆伍年拾壹月, or Kien-lung 5 year 11 month, corresponding mainly to January, 1741. It bears in the two texts the names of nine individuals, namely, those of the two contracting parties, of the interpreter, and of six chieftains or officials. Sixteen stamped marks of only six different seals occur on the document. One, Mandshu Chinese, appears half on each of the two copies, but it is too much defaced to be read. One of the seals is that of the interpreter, and the four others, stamped like the preceding ones next to their names, are those of officials or chieftains. The contracting parties had no seals, and so made their marks, about which we shall have more to say hereafter. All of these seals read as follows: 1) *Sin Kiang t'ung she Yen Kwan tu ki*, or "seal of Yen Kwan, interpreter of Sin Kiang." We have already seen the same seal on the second MS. dated three years before (see above, § 6). The only remark to be made is that it seems to correspond to an office, more than to a man himself. It is the third instance of appearance of the words *Yen Kw'an*, and though within a space of a few years, the name of the individual as written in the native text varies in each case. Nor do they correspond to anything which might be rendered by these Chinese sounds, either as pronounced in the Amoy dialect, or to anything within the limitation of phonesis and the clumsy processes of the Chinese for transcribing foreign names. The scribe who wrote the fifth and sixth MSS. is not the author of the second MS., and his spelling, which is not regular throughout, is at variance with that of his predecessor. He writes for

¹ This was the usual device intended to prove the validity of the copy held in hand by each of the two parties. The translation of the Chinese text in Mr. E. C. Baber's note says:—"A joint amicable agreement executed in duplicate, each party holding one copy in proof."

“interpreter” *tohng so* (instead of *thong so*), and on the duplicate (six), in the corresponding passage, he has written *tongh so!*

2) *Sin Kiang tu kwan She Kan ki*, which has appeared also on the second MS., but in this case it belongs to the same man *rokal*. The *r* is doubtful, as on the first occasion.

3) *Sin Kiang tsin king t'u kwan san yuen ki si*, which also was stamped on No. II., but there is in the present case no name like that of *tarragi*, next to which it was affixed in the first MS.

4) *Sin Kiang t'u kwan san tai tu ki*, also stamped on MS. II. for an individual named *Sardaj*, whose name appears also in this case without variance of spelling.

5) *Sin Kiang shai t'u kwan ta ki li tu ki*,¹ or “Seal of Ta-k’i-li, native official of Sin Kiang hamlet.” His name is written *Dakilis*.

6) A small seal, half Chinese half Mandshu, defaced and unreadable.

10. The seventh MS., though written on the same sized paper, is shorter than the others. It is unilingual, and consists of only six lines of text, six names of individuals, accompanied by their own marks, one of them being a finger print, and the date: *Gianliong 7 ni 1 goj 20 sit*, otherwise 27th March, 1742, of our calendar.

11. The eighth MS., also unilingual, is much longer as text than the preceding. It consists of sixteen lines of writing, including twelve proper names, arranged by fours, each with their own marks, and the date *Gianlioung 101 ni 7 goj 209 sit*, or “Kien-lung 11 year 7 month 29 day,” otherwise 15th Sept., 1745. It bears seven stamps of two seals.

1) Square, and in square character, and read by E. C. Baber *Hu-fêng*, is repeated five times in the text.

¹ 大新
奇港
力社
圖土
記官

2) *Sin Kiang shai t'u kwan Ti-ka-lioung tu ki*,¹ or "Seal of Tikalung, local official of Sinkiang hamlet." *Tikalung* is the representative of the native name *Digikalang*.

12. The ninth MS. is also unilingual, and has no other seal-marks than two half stamps, so badly impressed that they cannot be read. There are altogether 12 lines of writing, including the date, *Gianliong 509 ni ? sit 4 ? goj*; the figures are doubtful, except those of the year, which corresponds to our 1754.

c) *Two similar manuscripts in the British Museum.*

13. When I spoke of the above-described MSS. to my friend Professor R. K. Douglas, of the British Museum, he remembered having heard that some MSS. from Formosa presented to the National Collection of Bloomsbury had been laid aside because their genuineness had not been ascertained. He inquired about the matter, and we found together, in the limbo where they were buried, two MSS. exactly similar in kind to the nine MSS. sent by Consul Colborne Baber. These two MSS. are stamped as presented to the British Museum on the 25th May, 1876. They are unilingual, but are stamped severally with the red seals of the Chinese and native officials, and both belong to the Kien-lung period, like those described by E. C. Baber, but their seals are very interesting.

14. The first is dated *Gianliong 20 ni 5 goey 209 jit*, or Kien-lung, 20th year, 5th month, 29th day, corresponding to the 29th June, 1755, of our era. It contains a long text in the native language occupying 28 lines.

It is stamped with six seals in Chinese, as follows:—

1) *T'ing* (placed as head-title of the seal). Then in perpendicular columns as usual: *Sin Kiang shé t'ung she T'ung yu*

¹ 弟新
加港
弄社
圖土
記官

ki,¹ i.e. "Reception Hall. Seal of T'ung yu, interpreter of Sin Kiang hamlet."

2) *T'ing*. *Sin Kiang shé An-kung An-Liu t'u ki*,² i.e. "Reception Hall. Seal of An-liu Ankung of Sinkiang hamlet."

3) *T'ing*. *Sin Kiang shé an-kung mi-t'ou ki*,³ i.e. "Reception Hall. Seal of Mi-t'ou Ankung of Sinkiang hamlet."

4) *T'ing*. *Sin Kiang shé t'u-muk wu kia ki*,⁴ i.e. "Reception Hall. Seal of *Wu kia*, t'u-muk of Sinkiang hamlet." T'u-muk is a title, as we shall see hereafter.

5) *T'ing*. *An-kung siao-ta-li-hu (?) t'u ki*,⁵ i.e. "Reception Hall. Seal of Siao-ta-li-hu (the) Ankung."

6) *T'ing*. *Sin Kiang shé t'u-muk Hia Nan ma t'u ki*,⁶ i.e. "Reception Hall. Seal of Hia-nam-ma, t'u-muk of Sinkiang hamlet."

15. The second MS. in the British Museum is dated *Guian-liong* 303 *ni* 3 *goy*, otherwise in the third month of the thirty-third year Kien-lung, corresponding to our April-May, 1768. It bears seven stamps of seals, only five of which are different, as follows :

1) *Hien tching t'ang*. *Sin Kiang shé t'u-muk*. *T'ing*. *Siao kia mei t'u ki*,⁷ i.e. "District Magistrate Hall. Reception Hall of the t'u-muk of Sinkiang hamlet. Seal of Siao-kia-mei." Twice stamped.

1 廳	2 廳	3 廳	4 廳
事新 冬港 烟社 記通	安新 劉港 圖社 案公 記	公新 迷港 投社 記案	目新 吾港 加社 記土
10	11	12	13
5 廳	6 廳	7 堂正縣	
里案 ?見公 圖小 記大	下新 南港 馬社 圖土 記日	小廳 嘉(= <i>ting</i> in cursive) 美圖 記	新港 社土 目
14	15	16	

2) *T'ing. Sin kiang shê An-kung Tcheng Li ho t'u ki*,¹ i.e. "Reception Hall. Seal of Tcheng Li-ho, the t'u-muk of Sin-kiang hamlet."

3) *T'ing. Sin kiang shê An-kung Lin san yuen t'u ki*,² i.e. "Reception Hall. Seal of Lin-san-yuen, the An-kung of Sin-kiang hamlet." Stamped three times.

4) *Hien tching t'ang. Sin kiang shê t'u-muk To mao ? tu ki*,³ i.e. "District Magistrate Hall. Seal of To-mao ? a t'u-muk of Sinkiang hamlet."

5) Is partly defaced or badly stamped. Only a part of it can be read. *Tching t'ang ? Sin kiang shê t'ung she ? ? ? tu ki*,⁴ i.e., "Magistrate Hall ? Seal ? ? ? interpreter of Sin-kiang hamlet."

d) *Information Derived from the Seals.*

16. Some interesting information about the Chinese settlements and management in the island, and their influence on the aboriginal tribes, may be derived from an examination of the 20 seals above deciphered, if taken in connection with their respective dates.

17. As to the geography, *Sin-kiang*, or better *Sin-Kang*,⁵ 'New port,' is the place where all the MSS. were stamped, and probably also drafted.⁶ Only one other name, *Tsin king*, or better *Chin-keng*, appears in one case,⁷ and, as it is coupled with *Sin-kang* which precedes it, we may infer that it was a dependency or subdivision of the same territory. Its local officer is called *san-yuen*, a name which appears again as that

1 廳	2 廳	3 堂正縣	4 ? 堂正
鄭新	劉新	多新	? 新
理港	三港	毛港	? 港
鶴社	元社	? 社	? 見社
圖案	圖案	圖土	圖通
記公	記公	記目	記事
17	18	19	20

⁵ As in Amoy.

⁶ Like the preceding.

⁷ On seal No. 2, year 1737, in the second MS. Also stamped on the v. vi. MSS. of 1741.

of a more important official in 1768,¹ a relation of the first or perhaps his son, if not himself, as he appears 31 years afterwards. Sin-kang, the Rev. William Campbell says,² was known during the Dutch occupation as the township of *Sinkkan*,³ a name still preserved in the large Chinese market town of Sin-Kang, about seven miles N.N.E. of the city of Tai-wan fu. *Sin-kang* is called a 社 *shê*,⁴ or better *sia*,⁵ which, says Wells Williams, means in Formosa 'a clan or tribe, living in a place or collection of hamlets.'⁶

18. In the earlier MSS. of the collection, namely, in all those sent by Mr. Colborne Baber, the Sinicisation had not advanced to the stage attained when the later MSS. of the British Museum were written. At first, i.e. from 1737-1746, the titles of the officials were as follows :

1) *T'u kwan* 土官, literally 'Local magistrates,' four of which existed in the Sin-kang territory, as shown by their stamps on the MS. ii. and v.-vi.⁷ On the latter, one only is different from the former; the *T'u kwan* Takami of 1737 was probably deceased when the v.-vi. was framed, i.e. in 1741, and the seal of a *T'u kwan* Takili appears in his stead. In 1746 (MS. viii.⁸) only one *T'u kwan* named Tikalung in Chinese, *Dagikalang* in the native language, an instance which shows that the presence of the four *T'u kwan* was not required for the binding of a contract.⁹ As it is written in the same language as the preceding, and as the stamp bears like the others the name of Sin-kiang, there is no probability that it was written somewhere else.

2) *An-kung*, in Chinese¹⁰ 案公, or 'Pacifying Prince,' was a more important official than the *T'u kwan*. It occurs only

¹ On seal No. 18.

² Vid. above, E. C. Baber's note on *Nine Formosan Manuscripts*.

³ Dr. O. Dapper, *Gedenkwardig bedrijf der Nederlandsche Oost Indische Maatschappij in China*, Amst., 1670, mentions: Sinkkam, Tanakam, Beklawan, Soelang, Mattou, Tiverang, Fovorlang, Takkeis, Tornap, Terenip, and Assoek.

⁴ On seals No. 3, 8, 9.

⁵ As in Amoy. In current Chinese it means a hamlet, a parish; originally it was the altars of the gods of the land.

⁶ *Syllabic Dictionary of the Chinese Language*, p. 748.

⁷ On seals No. 1, 2, 3, 4, 8, 9.

⁸ Vid. seal No. 9.

⁹ As might be inferred from the MSS. ii., v.-vi.

¹⁰ On seal 6; MS. ii. (1737).

once, and that on the MS. ii., which required the stamp of all the officials of the country. The 'An-kung' in that case was not a Chinaman, but simply a native, as shown by his name. It is curious that in the data of Portuguese origin (as we shall see hereafter), made use of by Psalmanazar, we find the same title *An-kung* under the form 'Angon,' meaning king.¹

Besides the two preceding sorts of officials, there was—

3) The *T'ung she* 通事, or 'interpreter,' whose seal occurs on MS. ii. and v.-vi. of 1737 and 1741.²

19. The MSS. of 1755 and 1768 show by their seals a decided advance in the settlements. The Chinese influence is strongly felt, though neither of the two MSS. exhibit a Chinese translation, as was the case with the MSS. iii. and v.-vi. of the years 1737 and 1741. The seals have been improved. In the MS. of 1755 every one of them bears as a sort of head title the character *t'ing*, which means a 'hall, a court, a place where cases are heard,' and by extension 'the officer in his court.'³

The *T'ung-she*, or 'Interpreter,' is still one of those whose seals appears on the MS., and also the An-kung; but the latter are more numerous, and two different officials bearing that title have put their stamps on the MS. of 1755. On the other hand, the *t'u-kuan* have disappeared, and in their stead the title *T'u-muk* 土目,⁴ which may be translated 'Local overseers,' occurs on three stamps of the same MS.

On the MS. of 1768, the change is still greater, and it is easy to see that the thirteen years which elapsed between its date and that of the preceding, were not lost to Chinese influence.

The seals of two *T'u-muk* occur on the deed, and bear⁵ as head title *Hien tching t'ang*, or 'District magistrate hall,' implying the creation by the Chinese Government of a *hien*

¹ Vid. below § 70.

² On seal No. 5 (MS. ii.), stamped also on MSS. v.-vi., cf. the remarks above § 6 and below § 70.

³ Wells Williams, *o.c.*, p. 906.

⁴ In Corean *tumak* is a head man, a sort of mayor in the villages. Cf. *Dictionnaire Coréen-Français*, p. 487a (Yokohama, 1880, 4to.), where it is rendered by other Chinese characters, a fact which shows that the title of office is not a Chinese one. The same may be the case in Formosa, and the Chinese characters may only be a happy hit at a phonetic and ideographic rendering.

⁵ On seals No. 16 and 19.

or district there. *Sin Kang*, however, is still called *shê* or hamlets. Two 'An-kungs,' with their seals, headed only by *T'ing*, as on the MS. of 1755,¹ are also stamped there, and this shows that they were native officials under the jurisdiction of the *T'u-muk* Chinese officials of higher grade. The interpreter has also put his seal on the deed, and it seems that his post has increased in importance; the stamp shows that a special residence was officially provided for him, but the third sign of the head-title is obliterated, and cannot be properly deciphered; the first two characters are *Tching t'ang*,² which alone imply the meaning we have expressed.

II. THE WRITTEN CHARACTERS, §§ 20-27.

20. All these manuscripts are written in Roman characters³ presenting casually a strange perversion of their original shapes. It was the writing, more or less altered in the mean time, which had been taught to the natives during the Dutch occupation of the Island. The more recent of these, MSS. 1796, shows that this writing was still in use at the time, without having lost too much of its characteristics. However, it gradually faded away, and some imperfect copies, such as would be attempted when copying an unknown writing, are occasionally met with in the island.

21. Lorenzo Hervás in his celebrated *Catalogo*⁴ (1784) states that the inhabitants of Formosa possess an alphabet of their own, written, like the Chinese characters, in vertical columns placed from right to left.⁵ This inexact statement has probably arisen from a combination of two former statements; one about the real existence of an indigenous alphabet in the island, as we shall see hereafter; the other

¹ On seals No. 17 and 18.

² On seal No. 20.

³ Dr. H. Kern has favoured me, since the above was written, with the following remarks: "The writing as well as the spelling recalls the Dutch way of writing in the seventeenth century, as might be expected. We find amongst other proofs the same propensity to use *k* and *c* promiscuously in some cases, e.g. *matictic* and *matiktik*; the *ÿ* with dots, etc. It is not a little interesting to find that the Formosans had in 1737 not yet forgotten the lessons of their Dutch teachers." (Leiden, 6 Nov. 1886.)

⁴ *Catalogo della lingue conosciute e notizia della loro affinità e diversità*.

⁵ Adrien Balbi, *Atlas Ethnographique du Globe*, n. 397.

concerning the use by the natives of the Chinese characters, as shown by several of the MSS. described above.

Psalmanazar, the author of the well-known fictitious description of Formosa¹ in 1704, has given in that work an alphabet of sixteen letters, composed of twenty-one characters. It has been generally and wrongly supposed that these were nothing more than another freak of his imagination, like the palaces, altars, costumes, and moneys,² which figure in his book. But he must be acquitted of this accusation, as we shall see directly.

22. Amongst the splendid collection of printing types of the Imperial and Royal Printing Office at Vienna, is a Formosan alphabet,³ composed of sixteen letters with five variants, making twenty-one altogether, whose genuineness has been doubted because it is exactly similar to that given by Psalmanazar. An enquiry at Vienna⁴ elicited the fact that the twenty-one types have been cut especially for the Aloïs Auer'sche *Vaterunser Sammlung*, which this celebrated establishment printed in 1847, and taken by the compilers from the collection of *Pater noster* made by Benjamin Schulze in 1748.⁵ Reference made to the splendid work of Auer, I find there, besides the alphabet, two versions of the *Pater noster* in Roman characters, No. 205, beginning with *Diam-eta ka tu rullum*, "Father-our who in heaven," borrowed from the *Katechism* published at Delft in 1645 by Rob. Junius,⁶ and No. 206, beginning with *Rama-jan ka itou Tounnoun*, borrowed from the sideic *Formulier* of Dan. Gravius in 1662.⁷ In the well-known work of Benjamin Schulze, published in 1748, there is a special plate giving the Formosan *Pater noster* in this very same alphabet written from right to left in horizontal columns. Reading it, I find the beginning to be *Diam-eta*, etc., which proves to be that of

¹ *Historical and Geographical Description of Formosa*, London, 1704, 8vo.

² Some of them are Japanese, badly figured.

³ *Alfabeto des Gesammten Erdkreises aus der K. K. Hof- und Staatsdruckerei in Wien*, 2te Auflage, Wien, 1876, 4to.

⁴ Through the kind office of Capt. Theo. Grimal de Guiraudon.

⁵ *Orientalische und Occidentalische Sprachmeister*, Leipzig, 1748, p. 114.

⁶ Vid. below, § 77.

⁷ Vid. below, § 78.

Rob. Junius' version.¹ This might suggest that the text in this character was given by Junius, and therefore would establish the authority of the alphabet on a better footing, inasmuch as Psalmanazar, who was not acquainted with the work of Junius, made by himself a spurious version of the prayer, which he would have written in the so-called Formosan character, should this alphabet have been invented by him. But there are difficulties in the way. The text (from Junius) in Roman, and that in the foreign character, disagree in a few points, while they agree all through in dividing wrongly the original text. It happens several times that a new sentence or line begins with words, belonging to the previous one, which ought to have been left with the line above. Benjamin Schulze's authority for the text in Roman character is John Chamberlayne (*Orat. Dominic. clü ling.*), who in his turn refers to some letters of Job Ludolph, which I have not seen. Unhappily I have not the means of verifying the fact in the book of Junius itself, as it does not exist in any of the libraries to which I have access.²

23. The order of the alphabet, as we have it, is peculiar; it is neither Semitic nor Indian, and the squareness of the shapes, like those of a monumental writing, is remarkable. It runs thus in the Vienna collection with the exception of the letters *s*, *x*, *z* and *f*, and therefore was simply espied from the same source as Psalmanazar, if not from Psalmanazar himself:

I	<i>a</i>	ʒ	<i>b</i>	II	<i>d</i>
J	<i>m</i>	ʒ ʒ ʒ	<i>h, ch</i>		<i>z</i>
U	<i>n</i>	Ƨ Ƨ Ƨ	<i>p</i>	III	<i>e</i>
Ƨ	<i>t</i>	Y	<i>k, c</i>		<i>f</i>
Γ	<i>l</i>	Ƨ	<i>o</i>	Q	<i>r</i>
	<i>s</i>	□	<i>i, y</i>	T	<i>g, j</i>
Δ	<i>ü, u, v, w</i>		<i>x</i>	∴	pause

¹ In Auers'sche *Vaterunser Sammlung*, the last words are *mikagna. Amen*; while in the text in character the words are *mikakua. Amen*.

² The title of this scarce little book is given in Adelung's *Mithridates*, i. 578, thus: "*Soulat i A.B.C. u.s.f. Katechismus in Formosanischer-Sprache d. Rob. Junius, Delft, 1645, in. 12, s. 24.*"

In Schulze's *Orientalische und Occidentalische Sprachmeister*, the full alphabet of twenty letters is given, each having three forms which differ only in the case of eight letters.

The similarities presented by these characters with other alphabets are ill-defined. First we must observe that the multiplicity of forms in the case of several sounds, such as *t*, *h* or *ch*, and *p*, recalls the similar phenomenon in some of the Indonesian alphabets, contractions of former ones more rich than was required by the phonetic wants of the languages to the rendering of which they have been applied. The Formosan alphabet so called presents only faint and perhaps occasional affinities with the Ylocana of the Philippines, and also with the Arabic character, while greater and more numerous similarities are met with in the square Pali characters of Burma. But these latter similarities are not such as could be expected in an alphabet of regular derivation or descent, and do not exist for more than half of the letters.

24. Therefore there are *ipso facto* reasons for believing that the adaptation of the Formosan alphabet is not a fact of simple transmission and intercourse. Add to this, the Semitic direction of the writing in horizontal lines from right to left, contrary to the practice of the Indian alphabets. The mere statement of the fact suggests an hypothesis which is perhaps a right hit at the solution of the problem, inasmuch as it would imply somewhat a repetition of a curious event which has happened elsewhere. The Gabali Tana, the modern alphabet of the Maldives, which is said to have been introduced when these islands were reconquered by the Mohammedans from the Portuguese,¹ is composed of the nine Arabic ciphers followed apparently by the old Telugu-Canarese numerals.² If such an adaptation has been made in the Maldives by the Mohammedan traders, why should not another sort of adaptation have been made by the same people in Indonesia, and imported to Formosa? In the

¹ Cf. A. Gray, *The Maldivé Islands, with a Vocabulary taken from François Pyrard de Laval*, 1602-1607, in J. R. A. S. Vol. X. pp. 173-209.

² Cf. Dr. Isaac Taylor, *The Alphabet*, vol. ii. pp. 357-358.

latter case the adaptation should have included a good number of Indian letters, and the process of making the alphabet would explain the similarities as well as the divergences.

25. I am not aware that the matter has been investigated by any of the scholars who have made researches about Formosan matters in particular, nor by those who have made alphabets and writings their special line of study. It seems to me, however, that the question, which requires some more elucidation, is worth the attention of future travellers and inquirers. The existence of the writing appears to be a fact. In his Official Report for 1871, Mr. Chas. W. Le Gendre, United States Consul at Amoy and Formosa, states that he had in his hands documents from the Baksa tribes, twenty-eight miles east of Ta-kao, written in foreign characters. The statement looks as if the said documents were completely written in a native writing. If they had been written in Chinese or in Roman characters, Mr. Le Gendre would not have used the expression "foreign characters."

26. On the other hand, Mr. G. Taylor, in his interesting notes on the Aborigines of Formosa, chiefly of the South, published last year, has disclosed a curious reference to writing in the traditions of the Amias, on the East coast down to South Cape. This people say that their ancestors were the crew of a large ship wrecked on the coast, an event which must have happened a long time ago, as they appear to have been a local tribe in Formosa for several hundred years. They have a vague idea of lands and peoples, where intercourse is carried on by means other than vocal language. "This," says Mr. G. Taylor, "is the only trace in South Formosa of any original idea of writing. Some state that the principal chief had manuscripts or books in his possession; but he has denied this to several Chinese. Still the denial might have been caused by a fear that the inquirers might wish to deprive him of them."¹

27. On several of the MSS. sent by Mr. Colborne Baber, and

¹ Cf. G. Taylor *The Aborigines of Formosa*, in *China Review*, vol. xiv. p. 198. Also my article *A Native Writing in Formosa* (the *Academy*, 9th April, 1887).

on one of those in the British Museum,¹ some native witnesses and parties in the contracts have appended some isolated signs next to their names written by the scribes in the Roman and Chinese characters. I had at first some hope that these various signs might prove related to this writing,² and be monograms like those made use of by the Ainos; but a close examination has convinced me that they are nothing of the kind. They have no regular connection, as characters of a writing would have, with the written names; they are simply fancy marks made by illiterate people, and are not related to the alphabet we have had under consideration. We leave the matter unsolved, with the hope that further research in the island will help to the solution.

III. ETHNOLOGY, §§ 28-59.

a) *From Chinese Sources.*

28. Besides the entries in the annals concerning the great Liu-Kiu, there are in Chinese literature a few special works on Formosa. The most important is the *Tai-wan fu tchi* 臺灣府志, a topography of that portion of the island belonging to the Chinese empire. The first edition by Kao Kung-kien was finished in 1694, not many years after the territory had been subdued; a second appeared in 1741 by Lin Liang-pih, in twenty books. The most recent edition is by Luh-shih-tsih, a Mandchu, and Fan Hien, in twenty-five books, which were completed in 1747. Besides the usual statistical details generally given in the Chinese topographies, it contains an account of the various races who have inhabited the island from ancient time up to the present day.

Luh-shih-tsih published also a short account of the customs of the aborigines on the island, with the title *Fan shé ts'ai fung t'u K'ao t'ih lioh* 番社采風圖考摘畧.³

¹ Nos. v. vi. vii. §§ 9, 10, above.

² Cf. *My Beginnings of Writing*, i. 37.

³ *Shwoh lin* collection, Bk. 28. These three works are noticed in A. Wylie's *Notes on Chinese Literature*, pp. 52, 38, 48.

A brief description of the institutions, customs, and geography of the island, *Tai-wan Ki lioh* 臺灣紀畧, was written by Lin K'ien-kwang after the subjugation of the famous Koxinga, in 1684.

Tai-wan tsah Ki 臺灣雜記,¹ Miscellanies about Formosa, is a very short and unimportant memoir written by Ki K'i-kwang.

29. Shall we mention also an illustrated album of some twenty-four water-colour pictures, about the habits and customs of the aborigines submitted to the Chinese rule? It is called *Tai-wan Fan tze t'u* 臺灣番子圖 'Illustrations of the foreigners of T'ai-wan,' and is interesting to look at as it displays a *couleur locale* which is not without merit. The copy I have on my table, the only one I have ever seen, belongs to my friend Mr. William Lockhart, formerly of Peking.

20. The *Kin ting Tai-wan Ki lioh* 欽定臺灣紀畧, which must also be mentioned here, is an account in seventy books of the subjugation of the island, drawn up in compliance with an imperial rescript issued in 1778.² And we must not forget in our enumeration the monographs concerning Formosa, which are part of one or the other of the great geographical collections and cyclopædias, such as that which was translated by Klaproth in 1822, *Tai tsing y tung tchi*, and which goes by the usual and modern name of Tai-wan.

31. In the great geography of the Ming dynasty,³ and in the Annals of the time⁴ after 1430, Formosa appears under the name of *Ki lung shan* 雞籠山 'Mountain of Kilung,' still the name of a post on the Northern coast. Tai-wan is mentioned in the Ming Annals after 1620, as a place of Ki-lung shan where the red-haired barbarians settled.⁵

¹ Same collection and book as the preceding. The two cover only fifteen fols.

² A. Wylie, *Notes*, p. 23.

³ *Tu ming y t'ung tchi*.

⁴ *Ming shi*, chap. 332.

⁵ E. Bretschneider, *Chinese intercourse with the countries of Central and Western Asia in the fifteenth century*.

Should we trust the *Tchung shan she kien*,¹ the name of *Kilung* or a similar one was known as early as the Sui dynasty, and was given to the country by the Chinese envoy who fancied its appearance on the sea was that of "dragon unicorn," *Kiu lung* 虬龍, whence the appellative of *Liu Kiu* 流虬 "flowing dragon." The story looks much like a spurious explanation adapting the real circumstances to its purpose, a feat in the accomplishment of which the Chinese mind is most clever, and has sometimes displayed a wonderful power of ingenuity and opportunism. We may see in this appellative *Kiu-lung*, compared to the *Kilung* named above, as many attempts at rendering in Chinese significant characters of appropriate phonetic values an indigenous name, or at least a name imported or not existing there previous to the Chinese expedition.

32. We find that the first Dutch Governor of Taiwan, Pieter Nuyts, writing in 1629, in his report records that "the island of Formosa, where the settlement or Fort of the Company is situated, is called *Pockan* by the Chinese."² A modern authority says that *Pak-an* is the indigenous name of the island. We have no Chinese authority to adduce in favour of the statement of the Dutch Governor, nor have we met any other allusion to the indigenous name just quoted.³ Now the *Paiwan* on the South-west coast were the first indigenous people with whom the Dutch came into contact.⁴ Perhaps *Pockan* and *Pak-an* are simply variants of their name, which was at first looked upon, as is often the case, as the name of the island.

33. The Formosans were included by the Chinese ethnographers among the *Tung Fan*, at Amoy *Tong hwan* 東番, or

¹ 中山世鑑; L. de Rosny, *Les peuples Orientaux connus des Anciens Chinois*, p. 82. His little French book, otherwise interesting, must not be used without great caution, as the author has trusted too much the uncritical compilers, Chinese and Japanese, of late date, instead of resorting to the original works and statements.

² This report is reproduced in A. R. Colquhoun's and J. H. Stewart Lockhart's *Sketch of Formosa*, p. 164.

³ L'Abbé Favre, *Note sur la langue des Aborigènes de l'île Formose*, p. 496. See below § 96.

⁴ G. Taylor, *The Aborigines of Formosa*, l.c. p. 194.

'Eastern Foreigners,' and several of the names of tribes as we know them are nothing more than Chinese descriptive appellatives of their social status, disguised to the eyes of the Mandarin Sinologists in the dress of the dialectal phonesis used at Formosa.

Tchi-hwan or *Seng-hwan*¹ 生番, literally the 'raw, *i.e.* untamed foreigners,' is the name applied to the independent tribes who do not recognize the Chinese supremacy and endeavour to escape from it.

*Shek-hwan*² 熟番, literally the 'cooked, *i.e.* tamed foreigners,' applies to those who recognize the Chinese authority.

*Pepohwan*³ 平埔番, literally, 'foreigners of the plain,' speaks for itself. They are included among the preceding.

*Yu-hwan*⁴ 野番, or 'savage foreigners,' applies to such tribes who object to any intercourse, and remain in the mountains.

None of these names has any ethnical value.

34. We cannot expect from Chinese sources early direct information about Formosa. The island stands opposite to the coasts of Fuhkien, a region on which, until the Tsin dynasty, *i.e.* the fifth century, the Chinese had scarcely any hold.⁵ It is from the north through their early relations with Japan that they heard for the first time, and rather loosely, of the great island as one of those belonging to the elongated line of island groups extending southwards from Corea and Japan to the Philippines. These early statements, which date from the third century, are interesting by their age and by the peculiar importance given therein to races of short men, *i.e.* of Negrito race, and cognate to the substratum of the population of Japan, to which the present race is indebted for their small size and several features of their language; they were also the very negritos which formed one of the

¹ *Sheng-fan* in Mandarin Chinese.

² *Shuk-fan* in M.C.

³ *Ping-pu-fan* in M. C.

⁴ *Ya-fan* in M.C.

⁵ They had tried to conquer it about 109 B.C., but they were compelled to retire, and leave the aborigines in possession. Cf. *Tsien Han shu*, bk. 95, reproduced from the earlier *She ki*, bk. 114, f. 5, art. *Min-yueh*.

earliest human strata on the mainland, in parts of Eastern and Southern China,¹ in Indo-China proper, and in Eastern India. Recent anthropological researches have shown that this small and short race, pure or mixed, spread on sea from the south-east of New Guinea to the Andaman Islands, from Sumatra, Java, Timor, etc., to Japan. And on the mainland it spread from Eastern China, Annam and Malacca peninsula to the West of India beyond the Indus, and from Cape Comorin to the Himalayas.

35. A later information which we have on the subject in Chinese sources dating from A.D. 606, is found in the Dynastic history of the Sui (581-618 A.D.), under the heading of *Liu-K'iu*,² which was the general designation of all the islands east of the Chinese coasts and south of Japan. Formosa, the largest of all, was visited by an expedition in the above-named year. The report of the expedition was the basis of the notice³ on the island, and from there we learn that the tribes of the south were different in customs, if not otherwise from those located further to the north. By the latter we must understand the tribes occupying the region of and around the modern Taiwan in the south-western part of the island, opposite to the Peng-hu or Pescadores Islands. These tribes had sunken eyes and long noses,⁴ something like the Hu⁵ people, says the author. The general sent by the Chinese Emperor was called Tehen Ling. "He had taken with him some men from the southern states, and among them, what is important for us as we shall see directly, he had taken *K'ien-lun men* to explain and disseminate what he had to say. Some of them went forward and explained his orders. But the Liu-Kiu people did not listen to them, and rebelled against the

¹ This important fact, of which I publish the proof in another paper, *The Negritos in China*, was not known to Prof. De Quatrefages when he wrote his valuable papers on the great extension of this small race.

² The identification of the Chinese *Liu K'iu* with Formosa was first made by Prof. d'Hervey de St. Denys in *Journal Asiatique*, Août-Septembre, 1874, Mai-Juin, 1875: *Sur Formose et les îles appelées en Chinois Lieou-Kieou*.

³ *Sui shu in Tai ping yü lan Cyclopaedia* of 983 A.D., k. 784, ff. 6-7.

⁴ 人深目長鼻頗類於胡人.

⁵ The name in Chinese literature of the races non-Mongoloid in type of Central Asia.

mandarin army. Then Tchen Ling advanced speedily to their capital city, fought and defeated them, destroyed their palaces and houses, made several thousand men and women prisoners, and then returned.”¹

36. During the previous year, an unsuccessful expedition had resulted in the bringing over to the mainland one native man prisoner, from whom they got apparently some information which led them to select the sort of men whom they wished to join the expedition. This small though not unimportant event for the future was carefully reported in the official records of the ruling dynasty, the Sui. When brought to court, this man wore his native cuirass, which was seen by a Japanese envoy then present, and declared by him to be like those employed by the people of *Y-ye-Kiu* 夷邪久.² Speaking of the manners and customs of the inhabitants of the island, the same record in the annals of the Sui dynasty says that they are much like those of the people of Ling-nan,³ i.e. south of the modern province of Kiang-su. Now this region is the very same one where Negritos were still settled in the third century A.D., and where the monk Odoric de Pordenone⁴ met them eleven hundred years afterwards. Tchang sho, a Chinese compiler of the eighth century, has preserved in his work a statement that the Formosan people were like dwarfs, and small like the Kün-lun men.⁵ Therefore all these testimonies agree pretty well together.

37. The fact that the Chinese commander took with his army some *Kün-lun* men is here highly suggestive of their language being recognized as cognate with those of the great Liu-Kiu or Formosa. It gives us, quite in an unlooked-for way, most valuable information about some point of ethnology of the island, which, as we shall see hereafter, is confirmed by linguistic affinities still recognizable in the present day.

¹ *Sui Shu*, or 'Annals of the Sui Dynasty' (581-618 A.D.).

² *Sui Shu*; *Tai ping yü lan*, bk. 734, fol. 7 v.

³ *Ibid.*, bk. 784, f. 9 v.

⁴ My friend Prof. Henri Cordier, the author of the valuable *Bibliotheca Sinica*, has edited the record of his journey.

⁵ *Teh'ao ye ts'ien tsai*, in *Yuen Kien lei han*, bk. 231, f. 44.

But it involves at the same time an important and interesting solution of a difficult problem, viz. what the word *Kün-lun* applied in this case means.

38. Of course it cannot be the large range of mountains¹ which in the north of Tibet stretches westwards and eastwards to the Tsung-ling range and the borders of China.² In the Flowery Land a range of mountains, otherwise called Peh-ling or Northern Range, north of Szetchuen from west to east, is considered, perhaps not without reason, to be an eastern extension of the great chain; and the name of *Kiu-lung*² which it receives is perhaps nothing more than a lessened form, and a local pronunciation without the nasal twang of the same appellative.³

The name is widely spread. The Kokarit hills, Dana mountains, and Pongloun range, east of Tenasserim and Pegu, were called Small and Great Kün-lun in Chinese records of the T'ang dynasty concerning the Piao kingdom. It exists also in the Malayan peninsula, and we hear of it in former times in Northern Tungking. In the province of Tai-nguyen, belonging to the latter region of Cao-bang, was a town called *Conlon thanh*,⁴ in Chinese *Kün-lun tching*, or Kün-lun city, built in 257 B.C.⁵

In Indonesia the name had also made its way. The Chinese Annals of 628 and 636 A.D. speak of the states of *Shu-nai* and *Kamtang* as having sent tribute to the Emperor; they were islands in the south-east, apparently corresponding

¹ Abel Remusat made the mistake, which was corrected by Klaproth in a learned paper quoted below, § 39, n. 4. Dr. Porter Smith, *Vocabulary of Chinese Proper Names*, has repeated Remusat's error.

² The *Kün-lun* Kwoh, or Kün-lun country, spoken of in the *Nan F tchi*, or 'Description of the Southern Barbarians' (ninth century), quoted in the *Tai Ping yü lan*, k. 789, f. 5, a Cyclopædia of 983 A.D., is nothing more than this mountainous region, and must not be mistaken for any other. It was situated northwards at eighty days' journey from the Si-erh-ho, an affluent of the Lan tsang Kiang near Talifu (W. Yunnan).

³ This is however doubtful. As a word for 'mountain' it has a wide extension. We find it in the Pgo Karen *Kulaung*, Sgo Karen *Koelong*, Manipuri *Kalong*, Môn *Khalon-Khyan* (cf. Siamese *Kalohn* 'great'). In my paper *On the Cradle of the Shan Race*, I have shown that the origin of this race took place near this range of mountains in N. Szetchuen. It may be from this smaller range that the name was extended to the great range of Northern Tibet, if not the reverse.

⁴ *Hoang viet dia du chi* (a native description of Annam), k. ii. f. 9.

⁵ Trung Vinh Ky, *Histoire Annamite*, i. 34.

to the Philippines, and they were inhabited by *Kün-lun* men.¹ The second of these names is perhaps the modern *Gaddan* of Luzon, a Tagala nation,² and the statement that they were *Kun-lun* men may have arisen from the name of the *Kalingas*, also a Tagala tribe in the same island.³

39. Another instance of the name *Kün-lun* much better known is that which concerns the Pulo Condor islands, south-east of Cambodia. Their indigenous name is *Conon*, according to Father Gaubil, visitor there in 1721,⁴ and *Kohnaong* according to Crawford,⁵ who says that this name, like that of the population, is Annamite, and that the ruler was named Cham Kwan Luang. Marco Polo in the thirteenth century calls the two principal islands (there are twelve altogether) *Sondur* and *Condur*.⁶ The latter name is like the modern *Condor*, which is Malay, and means 'pumpkin,' so that *Pulo Condor* is 'Pumpkin Island.'⁷ At the time of the expedition of Kubilai Khan to Chao-wa or Java in A.D. 1292, the same island is called *Kün tun*⁸ in the Annals of the Mongol Yüan dynasty. In 1730 the *Hai Kwoh wen kien luh*,⁹ a small geographical treatise chiefly relating to the islands in the eastern and southern ocean, warns his readers not to confound with the mountains of Northern Tibet the *K'ün lun* or *K'ün tun*, which are two mountains to the south of the 'seven islands' or *Ts'ih tchou*, otherwise *Pulo Panjang*, or 'Paracels islands.' "One of them

¹ *T'ang shu*—*Tai ping yü lan*, k. 788, f. 6 v.

² On these two tribes cf. A. H. Keane, in A. R. Wallace, *Australasia*, pp. 632, 635. The equivalence $d=l$ is a common one.

³ In that case the use of the name *Kün-lun* is perhaps without value, as that of *Kalinga* may be not derived from the old appellative we are studying, but only a transferred name through Java or Kaling, from the bold Kalingas of Southern India. Java is *Holing* in ancient Chinese geographers, *Ku T'ang shu*, k. 197; *Sin T'ang shu*, k. 222, ii.; W. P. Groeneveldt, *Notes on the Malay Archipelago*, pp. 12-13.

⁴ P. Gaubil, *Lettre de Poulo-Condore*, 1729.

⁵ *Journal of an Embassy to the Courts of Siam and Cochinchina*, 2nd edit. London, 1829, vol. i. p. 304.

⁶ Col. H. Yule, *The Book of Ser Marco Polo*, vol. ii. p. 257.

⁷ Lit. 'Island Pumpkin,' or 'of Pumpkin.'

⁸ 崑崙

⁹ By Teh'in Lun-Kiung, who, while his father was engaged in the subjugation of Formosa, collected his information among the mariners in whose company he was thrown on the occasion. Cf. A. Wylie, *Notes on Chinese Literature*, p. 48.

is large, the other small. The larger one is very high, and the waves break noisily against its basis. This is the Great K'ün lun. The small island is very different. There grow the most pleasant fruits, but no trace of inhabitants can be found in it."¹ The *San ts'ai t'u huy*, a cyclopedia of 1607, in an article about the slaves of K'ün lun, comes nearer to the point under review. It is there said that *K'ün lun* is a land in the south-western sea. "The body of the inhabitants is black, as if covered with black varnish. They make slaves from amidst their own people, and sell them to foreign merchants, receiving in exchange dresses and other articles."²

40. References to slaves of Kün lun is not unfrequent in Chinese literature. In the article on Sumatra³ of the Annals of the Sung dynasty, at the beginning of the latter's reign, i.e. after 960 A.D., it is said that "slaves of K'ünlun make music for the Sumatra people by trampling on the ground and singing." In the article *Ta shi* of the same annals, these slaves are described as black men with deep set eyes.⁴

The *Tung si yang K'ao* 'Researches on the Eastern and Western Ocean,' published at Nanking in 1618, in a description of Pahang, East coast of Malacca, says:⁵ "The King (then reigning) has the habit of buying from the *Mause*⁶ pirates the men they have caught. These Mause pirates are natives belonging to Bruni (Polo, N. Borneo); they roam over the sea for the purpose of stealing men, whom they bring to Pahang and sell as Kün lun slaves there."

¹ Cf. J. Klaproth, *sur les nègres de K'ün lun*, *Nouv. Journal Asiatique*, vol. xii. p. 232. E. Bretschneider, *On the Knowledge possessed by the Ancient Chinese of the Arabs and Arabian Colonies* (London, 1871, 8vo.), pp. 14-15.

² E. Bretschneider, *l.c.*

³ *Sung shu*, k. 489, *San fu t'si*.

⁴ E. Bretschneider, *l.c.* Mr. W. P. Groeneveldt in his valuable paper above quoted has the following note (p. 62): "*K'ün lun* 'slaves from Condore' seems to have been a general name for slaves, which the Malays probably got from this island and from the other islands in the south of the Chinese sea; the dance here described is still practised now by the natives of the Natuna and Tambúlan islands" (between Malacca and Borneo). They are Malays. A. R. Wallace, *Australasia*, p. 378.

⁵ W. P. Groeneveldt, *o.c.* p. 138.

⁶ 毛思, in Amoy dialect *Mo-su*, the transliteration of a foreign word. Cf. Javanese *Bajak* 'pirate, rover.'

41. But let us return to the traces of Kün lun or Kulong on the main land. The *Kiu-lung* of N. Szetchuen, doubtful as it may be, is not the only instance of the name within China proper. We have some better ones. In the centre West of Kuangsi, the mountains north-east of Nan-ning and west of Pintchou¹ bear in history this very name of Kün-lun, and were inhabited by non-Chinese tribes, a fact important to notice, as we shall see directly.

42. The boat population of Canton, also called *Tan-Ka* otherwise *Tan* families,² is also known as Kün-lun slaves, and they are said to be connected with some native tribes in the north of the Kuang-tung province, consequently in proximity to the above Kün-lun mountains of Kuangsi. On the other hand, the latter barbarians or *Tan-Man* extended formerly south of the Meiling in Fuhkien province, in proximity to Formosa on the mainland. And the said *Tan Ka* of Canton are also cognate with native tribes of Hainan. Another link may be found in the name of *Ki-lung* on the north of Formosa, which, in its Chinese dress and fancied etymology, is perhaps a disguised and altered form of the name carried away with them by the emigrants from the mainland. The word was not carried there as the ordinary word for mountain; in Tayal the chief language in the north of the island, 'mountain' is *laoui* or *malaoui*, and as this language is the one which by its glossarial and grammatical affinities was that of the emigrants from the mainland, it is most probable that the above name *Kilung* is transferred from another and older geographical horizon. The ethnic *Tan* from the continent is worth more attention. Passing over the linguistic data of Psalmanazar, we may remark the word *tanos* which he gives for the meaning 'nobles,' and of which the Portuguese final must be dropped. *Tan* remains, cognate to the above ethnic. The Sekhwan and Favorlang dialects have respectively *sanh* and *sham* for 'Man,' which may be

¹ They were made famous by a clever campaign of a Kiaotchi or Annamese General, who forced the passes through them in 1075 A.D.

² *Miao Man hoh tchi*, bk. i. f. 7.

the modern forms of the same, as there is another instance of the equivalence *s*, *sh* for *t*.¹

43. There are other evidences of importance, which show that the Chinese were acquainted with the dark-skinned occupiers of Formosa as originated from the Philippine Archipelago. The *Yang tchou wen Kao*² says that "the island of Tai-wan (or Formosa), which was formerly called *Ki-lung*, was originally a port of the *Liu-kiu* state, which was founded by some descendants of the *Ha-la*.³ The author does not say what the *Ha-la* are, assuming that his readers are acquainted with that name, so that we must look elsewhere for the wanted explanation. I find it in the *Miao Man hoh tchi*,⁴ "A Description of the Miao and Man Tribes," by Tsao Shu-K'iao of Shanghai. The entry about that people is amongst those of the south. They are described as *dark with deep set eyes*, a peculiarity which the Chinese stated to be that of the *Kün-lun* men, as we have seen above.⁵ The author of the *Miao Man hoh tchi* says also that the *Hala* do not know the practice of chewing betel, and he proceeds with some details on their clothes and customs in so far as they are peculiar to themselves, but they are unimportant. Now these *Hala* of the Chinese are simply the *-Gala*, commonly *Ta-gala*, with the usual *Ta* prefix(?)⁶ of the Philippine Islands; and the statement agrees entirely with the inference of ethnologists deduced from travellers' reports as to the parentship of several tribes of aborigines of Formosa with the Tagal population of the Philippines.

44. The Chinese ethnographical notices of the Sung Dynasty on the Liu-Kiu islands, including as it does all the

¹ As in *saab*, *sasaab* for which *taubf* stands in his list.

² Vid. Georg Kleinwächter, *The History of Formosa under the Chinese Government*, p. 345 (in *China Review*, 1884, vol. xii. pp. 345-352).

³ 哈喇.

⁴ 苗蠻合志, 卷 iii. 頁 6-7.

⁵ Cf. above §§ 35, 40.

⁶ On this separation of the *Ta* prefix from the name Tagala, vid. Leyden's *On the Languages and Literature of the Indo-Chinese Nations*. This prefix does not seem, however, to be genuine in the language, so that the Chinese have mistaken the first syllable *Ta-* for their own word (adjective pre-posed) *ta* 'great,' and dropped it with their usual contempt for foreign nations. But all this is conjectural.

islands from Japan to the Philippines, states that next to Liu-Kiu lies the country of the *P'i-shè-yé* 毗舍耶, in which we must, I think, recognize the Bizayas,¹ the most diffused population of the Philippines, and next to the Tagalas in importance. They made a raid on the coasts of Fuhkien at Tsiuen-tchou during the period 1174-1189 A.D., and caused a great deal of havoc. They are described as naked savages with large eyes, greatly covetous of iron in any shape, using bamboo rafts and a sort of javelin attached by a long string, and which they throw on their enemy.² This people travelling on rafts could not have come from afar, and therefore may be supposed to have come over to the Chinese coast from Formosa. In which probable case, this ought to have resulted from an emigration of them to the great island.

45. Therefore we may conclude from this somewhat protracted inquiry that the Chinese were acquainted with this fact that the two chief elements of the population of Formosa were the Negritos and the Indonesians. Some of their information on the Negritos began as early as the third century of our era, and grew more and more precise; though somewhat mixed in their reports, as it happened they were in reality from admixture and interminglings; the two races are however described with sufficient accuracy to leave no doubt in our minds on the trustworthiness of the Chinese documents here referred to.

III. ETHNOLOGY.

b) *From European Authorities.*

46. It is to the Dutch that we are indebted for the oldest European information on the island and its population. Though

¹ An objection, not insuperable, might be made to the identification of *P'i-shè-yé* with *Bizaya* or *Vizaya*, on the assumption generally repeated that this name was given to them by the Spaniards from the fact that they are tattooed, and that *Bizaya* in their own language means 'painted.' But why should this name have been first applied by the Spaniards, who could have better selected a Spanish word descriptive and telling, unless they did hear it applied by the people themselves or their neighbours?

² Cf. Ma Tuanlin, *Wen hien t'ung k'ao*; d'Hervy de St. Denys, *Ethnographie de Matouanlin*, vol. i. p. 425.

settled there for only thirty-seven years,¹ their influence was very great; traces of their blood are still recognized in the somewhat mixed race of the Sekhwans on the north-west;² their teaching was preserved during a period of about a century and a half after their expulsion by the pirate Koxinga,³ as shown by the precious relics represented by the MSS. described above. Geo. Candidius, who was the first missionary there under Dutch auspices, and who taught the natives with the success that we know of, wrote himself in 1637, a few years after his arrival there, a description of the island, which was published only in 1704⁴ in London for the first time in English.

47. But, as is often the case with a little-known country where the first remarks refer only to isolated and different spots, the early records are somewhat confusing and contradictory. Joining to this, the craving for marvel, usual accompaniment of the little known, and we may easily understand how it has happened that little credence has been given to these ancient descriptions. I am not sure, however, that they did not deserve a better fate, though some of them may be hard to believe, because they describe an appearance as a reality. I have here in view the marvellous statement of the existence in Formosa of men with tails, according to J. Struys.⁵ This ethnological fable recalls to mind similar statements concerning the existence of Taylards in Africa, in the Nicobar Islands according to Kœping, in N. E. India according to the Chinese authorities from the third century B.C. downwards, among others. Such

¹ The Dutch, according to the conditions of a treaty with the Chinese, settled at Tai-wan and the neighbouring territory in 1624. The Spaniards in 1626 settled near Kilung and near Tamsui; they were expelled by the Dutch in 1642.

² They have perhaps left distinct descendants. Cf. § 52.

³ He was the son of Tcheng tchi lung, and his name was Tcheng Tcheng Kung; but one of the princes of the Ming dynasty, who was anxious to procure his assistance against the Manchus, conferred upon him the royal surname of *Tchu*, from whence he came to be called 國姓爺, *Kok-seng-ya* (whence Koxinga), 'the bearer of the royal surname.' Vid. Colquhoun and Stewart Lockhart, *A Sketch of Formosa*.

⁴ G. Candidius, *A Short Account of the Island of Formosa*, in Churchill's collection, vol. i. London, 1704, fol. pp. 526-533.

⁵ *Voyages en Moscovie, en Tartarie, en Perse, aux Indes, etc.* Amst. 1681.

fables were looked upon with the greatest contempt, and attributed to the imagination of the writers, whose good faith was thus far thrown into discredit, as it did not come to the mind of the critics that the incriminated tails were perhaps factitious and ornamental.

48. This was shown to be a fact with the Nyam-Nyams of Central Africa by the late Guillaume Lejean.¹ The Chinese had heard long before the Christian era of tribes named Pu-yen, or Pu-lo, or Po-lo, or simply Puh,² in the South-West of Yunnan, i.e. North-East of India, who had tails and were cannibals;³ the report was looked upon as one of the many ethnological fables which were told by the traders travelling between Western China and Eastern India about the populations of the unknown regions they had to go through, and which told by them in China and in India were the occasion of the similar descriptions of fabulous tribes picked up in India by the Greeks, and reported in Chinese books like the *Shan hai King*.⁴ But quite unexpectedly the report has recently received an explanatory confirmation from a curious custom of some Naga tribes. The late G. H. Damant, Political Officer in the Naga hills, writing about the tribes dwelling between the Brahmaputra and the Ningthi rivers, describes the Sema Nāga, a very extensive and bloodthirsty tribe, numbering some 50,000 souls, south of the Lhota, along both banks of the Doyang river and the east. *They were discovered only in 1873. Their men wear*

¹ The Nyam-Nyams and their language were made known to the world for the first time not by Dr. Schweinfurth as Dr. R. N. Cust says (*The Modern Languages of Africa*, p. 155), but by M. Guillaume Lejean, French consul in Abyssinia. Cf. his article in the *Revue Orientale et Americaine*, 1868.

² Perhaps for Bore, Abor.

³ *Shan hai King*; *Yung-tchang Kiun tchuen*; *Fu-nan t'u suh tchuen*; *Liang tsu wei kwoh tung*; *Tai Ping yü lan*, bks. 787, f. 3; 791, f. 10v. The *Yung-tchang Kiun tchuen* reports that at 1500 li south-west of Yungtchang Kiun were the 'Tailards Puh'; their tail, similar to that of the tortoise, was four or five *tsün* (inches) in length; when they wanted to seat, it was necessary for them to dig the ground for their tail to be placed comfortably, as when it is brokea they die. The *Fu-nan t'u suh tchuen* reports that on the east of Ko-li was the region of Polo, where the men have tails five or six inches long. Ma Tuanlin has inexactly quoted the title of the last work as *Nan t'u suh tchuen*, while it is given accurately in the *Tai ping yü lan*, i.e.

⁴ T. de L., *The Languages of China before the Chinese*, § 212, and *Beginnings of Writing*, ii. 156 c. n.

tails about eighteen inches long, made of wood, to which bunches of goats' hair are attached.¹

49. The fabulous reports about men with tails having so far been verified in two notorious instances, leaving aside other similar cases,² why should not the same report concerning Formosa be verified in future time by any traveller coming into contact with one of the unknown tribes of the interior having the same mode of ornamenting themselves?

50. Now let us pass to another and more important statement. Valentijn, the great Dutch geographer, reports³ the existence in the beautiful island of "a race of men, black and extremely tall, inhabiting the mountains, and speaking another language than the other Formosans." The statement has been accepted by some scholars as a proof of the

¹ H. Damant, *Notes on the Locality and Population of the Tribes dwelling between the Brahmaputra and Ningthi Rivers*, p. 248 in *J. R. A. S.* 1830, Vol. XII. pp. 228-258.

² The earliest version in Europe of the tail story goes back to Ptolemy and the Isles of the Satyrs; or rather to Ctesias, who tells of tailed men on an island in the Indian Sea. Galvano (Hackluyt Society, 108, 120) heard that there were on the island certain people called *Jarague Dara*, which had tails like unto sheep. And the King of Tidore told him of another such tribe on the isle of Batoehina. Mr. St. John (*Forests of the Far East*, i. 40) met with a trader who had seen and felt the tails of such a race inhabiting the north-east coast of that island. The appendage was four inches long and very stiff; so the people all used perforated seats. This Borneo story has, a few years ago, been brought forward in Calcutta, and stoutly maintained, on native evidence, by an English merchant (*Allen's Indian Mail*, July 28, 1869). In the relation of Marco Polo, about Lambri (north-west coast of Sumatra, according to W. P. Græneveldt, *Notes on the Malay Archipelago and Malacca*, p. 100), we read: "Now you must know that in this kingdom of Lambri there are men with tails; these tails are of a palm in length, and have no hair on them. These people live in the mountains, and are a kind of wild men. Their tails are about the thickness of a dog's" (Col. H. Yule, *The Book of Ser Marco Polo*, 2nd edit. vol. ii. p. 282). The people of Canton use to believe that the *Yao min* (on whom see *The Languages of China before the Chinese*, § 87), aboriginal tribes at Lieutchou in the north-west of the Kuangtung province, had tails. The *Bulletin de la Société de Géographie de Paris*, ser. 4, vol. iii. p. 31, contains many similar stories about Africa. Among medieval Mahomedans, the members of the Imperial House of Trebizond were reputed to be endowed with short tails, whilst medieval Continentals had like stories about Englishmen, as Mathieu Paris relates. In the Romance of Cœur de Lion, the messengers of Richard are addressed thus by the "Emperor of Cyprus":

"Out, Taylards, of my pails!

Now go and say your tailed king

That I owe him nothing."—Weber, ii. 83.

The princes of Purbandar, in the peninsula of Guzerat, claim descent from the monkey-god Hanuman, and allege in justification a spinal elongation which gets them the name of *Pūṇchāriah*, 'Taylards.' Cf. Tod's *Rajasthan*, i. 114, in H. Yule, *Marco Polo*, ii. 284-285.

³ Cf. Maltebrun, *Annales des Voyages*, 1809, t. viii. p. 366 n.

presence in the island in former times of Papuas, whose presence was wanted there by some ethnological theories, while it has been rejected by other scholars as unverified and not probable.¹ However, the statement of the Dutch geographer was true. A recent traveller,² better acquainted with the tribes of the interior than many of his predecessors, has come forward, and describes the Diaramocks in such terms that Valentijn's veracity is once more vindicated. They are said to be a fierce and intractable race of cannibals, who disdain all intercourse with the other tribes. They are localised in the mountains, and having no guns, they use merely the bow and spear. Their complexion is very dark—almost black—and their hair hangs down behind to the full extent of its growth. They are said to be a southern branch of the Tangos of the north, who present the same characteristics, and it is not improbable that they are the true descendants of the aboriginal inhabitants of Formosa. No information is given on their language.

51. The appearance in the ethnological descriptions of this region of a black race with the hair not curled, as among the Papuas, cannot fail to attract the attention of specialist scholars, and any further information, which is much wanted, will be welcomed. It is a new element of complication, and perhaps a means of simplification, in the intricate mixture of races which has taken place in the inter-oceanic world.

52. But this is not the sole problem which the ethnology of Formosa has in stock for scholars. There are among several native tribes reports of a tribe of red-haired savages, living among the central mountains, who use brass guns of their own manufacture. They are perhaps descendants of Dutch refugees inland at the time of the conquest of Koxinga.

53. The moment has not yet come to establish a classification of the tribes more or less described by travellers in Formosa; the data are pre-eminently deficient, broken, and

¹ Girard de Rialle, *Formose et ses habitants*, l.c. p. 70.

² G. Taylor, *The Aborigines of Formosa*, l.c. pp. 286-287.

sometimes contradictory. A short survey of their list is all that can be made in our present state of knowledge. This has been drawn with talent by a French scholar, M. Girard de Rialle, who has collected and summarized, in 1884, all the ethnological information given by the various travellers.

54. Since he has done his work some most important notices have been published by Mr. G. Taylor, and we have had occasion to refer to them. His descriptions, chiefly relating to the tribes of the south, bear on the

Paiwans, tall, fine-limbed, and active, of a bright copper complexion, inhabiting the extreme south and on the west up to Tang kang. They include the Subengs.

Pepohwans, the much-mixed inhabitants of the plains.

Tipuns, of smaller stature and softer features than the *Paiwans*; they inhabit the great plain inland from Pilam, and claim to have come from some other country hundreds of years ago, settling where they are now. They conquered the low land aborigines, and ruled over the whole south of Formosa; but at the present day this is a tradition, and no more. The chiefs and their families are tattooed, principally around the wrists, and on the back of the hands and fingers, as lace work, red and blue. When a man marries he becomes part of his wife's family, thus reversing the rule which prevails among the *Paiwans*. The custom helps them to keep their homogeneity, and to increase their number, as they absorb instead of being absorbed.

Amias, hirsute and very tall race, foreign to the island, of whom we have already spoken about their tradition concerning written characters.

Deks, only mentioned.

Tierasocks, *Botans* (or *Boutans*), *Koaluts*, *Limhwans*, all independent or *Sekhwan* tribes.

Cariangans, mountaineers north of the *Paiwans*, to whom they are related.

And the *Diaromocks*,¹ the black race mentioned above (§§ 50-51).

¹ G. Taylor, *The Aborigines of Formosa*, l.c.

55. The report which reached the Chinese in the second century of our era concerning the presence of the short-sized Negritos in the island is confirmed by inference in the works of modern ethnologists, and therefore stands on a better footing than those wrongly derived from the Dutch statement about Papuas. Mr. Swinhoe in 1866 had spoken of little savages in the extreme south of the Island,¹ but they have not been actually seen. Dr. Arnold Sehetelig² and Prof. E. Hamy³ have been enabled from skull measurements to detect an influence of the Negrito race. Further data are required to settle the question, which, however, cannot fail to receive finally an affirmative answer. The great extension of the Negritos from Japan to Indonesia and the mainland of China, now ascertained, makes it the reverse of an impossibility.

56. The present inhabitants of Formosa include a large number of Chinese emigrants, the majority having come over from the province of Fuhkien through the port of Amoy, and it is the phonesis of the dialect of this port which rules generally the sounds used for the Chinese symbols of writing employed in the island. Other Chinese emigrants have come from different sea-ports; for instance, the Hok-los, also originating from Fuhkien, and settled in the Kwangtung province, have sent many emigrants from Swatow. The Hakkas, a distinct Chinese race said to have come originally from Shantung and now also in the Kwangtung province, have largely migrated to the island. To these must be added the Pun-ti or Cantonese proper represented there by many traders, bankers, etc.

57. Some remarks made by several travellers show that the relationship with the inhabitants of Indonesia is the most apparent. The Batanrang, a tall race, have been found bearing a resemblance to the Tagals, and the Sekhwan of the

¹ *Notes on the Aborigines of Formosa*, in *British Association for the Advancement of Science*, 1866, p. 130.

² *Transactions of the Ethnological Society of London*, 1869, n.s. vol. vii. pp. 215-229.

³ *Les Négritos à Formose et dans l'Archipel Japonais* (*Bull. Soc. Anthropologie, Paris*, 1872, 2nd ser. vol. vii.), pp. 848-849. Girard de Rialle, *l.c.* pp. 70-72.

district of Tamsui, to the Polynesians in general and to the New Zealandese in particular. The Sekhwan in the N.E. of Tehang-hwa, C.W. of the island, are described as tall, thin, ugly, with a light hue, and not connected with others. The Kabarans or Kibalans and Loksangs, also the Tsui-hwan, S. W. of Tehang-hwa, have been described as resembling the Malays, while the Kalis of the South, a mixed race, are said to have much of the Tagals of Luzon.¹ The Boutans of the South of the island are very much like the indigènes of

¹ Cf. Girard de Rialle, *Formose et ses habitants*, i.e. pp. 256-275. The following papers may be referred to with profit: Rev. J. Lobschied, *On the Natives of the West Coast of Formosa* (from Dutch sources), Hong Kong, 1860. Jomard, *Coup d'œil sur l'île de Formose*, Paris, 1859 (*Bullet. Soc. Geogr.* Dec. 1858). Rob. Swinhoe, *Notes on the Island of Formosa*, *Jour. Roy. Geogr. Soc.* xxxiv. pp. 6-18; *Note on the Kâli* (British Association, 1865); *Additional Notes on Formosa*, in *Proc. Roy. Geogr. Soc.* vol. x. pp. 122-128, London, 1866. Guérin and Bernard, *Les Aborigènes de l'île de Formose*, in *Bullet. Soc. Geogr.* Paris, Juin, 1868, pp. 542-568. Vivien de St.-Martin, *Aperçu General de l'île de Formose*, *ibid.* pp. 525-541. Dr. A. Schetelig, *Reise in Formosa*, *Zeitschr. f. Allg. Erdkunde zu Berlin*, 1868, vol. iii. pp. 385-397; *On the Natives of Formosa*, in *Trans. Ethnol. Soc.*, London, 1869, vol. vii. n.s. pp. 215-229. E. G. Ravenstein, *Formosa*, in *Geogr. Mag.* London, 1874, pp. 292-297. E. C. Taintor, *The Aborigines of Northern Formosa*, Shanghai, 1874. Arthur Corner, *A Tour through Formosa from South to North*, in *Proc. Roy. Geogr. Soc.* 1878, vol. xxii. p. 52. J. Dodd, *A Glimpse at the Manners and Customs of the Hill Tribes of Formosa*, in *Jour. Straits Branch Roy. Asiat. Soc.* June, 1885, pp. 69-78. And the other reports and works quoted throughout our pages. Also J. Thomson, *Notes of a Journey in Southern Formosa* (1871) in *Jour. Roy. Geogr. Soc.* 1873, p. 101. Paul Ibis, in *Globus*, t. xxxi. 1877. Dr. Arnold Schetelig, *On the Natives of Formosa*, in *Transac. Ethnol. Soc.* 1869, vol. vii. p. 215. E. C. Taintor, *The Aborigines of Northern Formosa*, in *Jour. North China Branch Roy. Asiat. Soc.* Shanghai, 1875, vol. ix p. 53. Dr. Collingwood, *Visit to the Kibalan Village of Sau-o Bay*, in *Trans. Ethn. Soc.* 1868, vol. vi. p. 135. Allen, *Journey Across Formosa from Tamsui to Tâiwan fu*, in *Geogr. Mag.* May, 1877, p. 135. P. Aguilar, in *Annales de la Propagation de la Foi*, 1867, p. 214. R. Swinhoe, *Narrative of a Visit to the Island of Formosa in 1858*, in *Jour. China Branch Roy. Asiat. Soc.* Shanghai, 1859, p. 153. Bienatzki, in *Zeits. Gesells. Allg. Erdkunde zu Berlin*, 1859, ii. p. 378. R. Swinhoe, in *Proc. Roy. Geogr. Soc.* 1866, x. p. 126. T. F. Hughes, *A Visit to Tok-i-tok*, in *Proc. Roy. Geogr. Soc.* 1872, xvi. p. 265. Beazeley, *Notes of an Overland Journey through the Southern part of Formosa in 1875*, in *Proc. Roy. Geogr. Soc.* 1885, vii. p. 1. *A Sketch of Formosa*, in *China Review*, 1885, vol. xiii. p. 161. Geo. Philipps, *Notes on the Dutch Occupation of Formosa*, *ibid.* 1882, x. p. 123. G. Kleinwächter, *The History of Formosa under the Chinese Government*, *ibid.* 1884, p. 345. J. Taylor, *Savage Priestesses in Formosa*, *ibid.* 1886, p. 14. Correspondence between the Rev. K. F. Junor and T. Watters, Esq., H.B.M. Consul Tamsui, Formosa, 8vo. pp. 24, s.l.n.d. (1881). Joest, W., *Beiträge zur Kenntniss der Eingebornen der Inseln Formosa und Coram*, in *Verhand. der Berlin Anthropol. Ges.* 1882, pp. 53-76. Dr. Ern. Martin, *Les Indigènes de Formosa*, in *Rev. d'Ethnographie*, vol. i. 1882, pp. 429-434. John Dodd, *A Few Ideas on the Probable Origin of the Hill Tribes of Formosa*, pp. 69-84 of *Journ. Straits Br. R. As. Soc.* for 1882.

Yukanuni, the westernmost island of the San-nan or Sakisima group in the Liu-Kiu Archipelago.¹

The Baksa Pepohwans recall by their features and costumes the Laocians of Siam,² according to Mr. J. Thomson. A man and woman of the mountaineers, photographed by the same traveller, are extraordinarily like a man and woman of I-Kia of N. Yunnan, pictured in the large work of the French commission in Indo-China.³

58. The connection here suggested between Formosan tribes and some aborigines of China, which is borne out by linguistic affinities, is supported also by similarities of peculiar customs. Tattooing the forehead in blue, still practised by the independent tribes fighting against the Chinese, was the constant practice of the Non-Chinese tribes of the maritime provinces facing Formosa; and tattooing the cheeks, also an aboriginal custom, and a punishment among the Chinese, is also in honour at Formosa, where tattooing is employed on an extensive scale. Knocking out the front teeth of girls on the occasion of their marriage, common among some tribes of the island, has caused some tribes of the Kih-lao in China to be named To-ya-kih-lao, or 'Tooth-breaking Kih-lao'; and these tribes are among those whose language shows much affinity with the Formosan Tayal. The parallelism could be continued for many other customs touching other events of life, and also as regards burial.

59. As to the greater number of the Formosans so called, they belong to the human substratum which includes so many of the aborigines of China, Hainan Island, Indo-China, the Philippine Islands, and the southern Archipelago next to it.⁴ They have sometimes been looked upon as being of the same race as the Igorrotes, the highlanders of Luzon, and some travellers have compared them to the Dayaks, to the

¹ L. Metchnikov, in E. Reclus, *Asie Orientale*.

² J. Thomson, *Ten Years*, p. 209.

³ Cf. J. Thomson, *o.c.* p. 311, and F. Garnier, *Voyage d'Exploration en Indo-Chine*, vol. ii. p. 328.

⁴ Ch. Guérin and Bernard *Les Aborigènes de l'île de Formose*, p. 547 (*Bullet. Soc. Geogr.* Paris, 1868, xv. pp. 542-568).

inhabitants of the Sulu Islands, to the Malays, and to the Tagals.¹ Anthropologists declare that the indigenes of Formosa are like the Atchinese, Lampongs, and Eastern Sundanese, belonging therefore to the Indonesian races, very similar to the Polynesians.² The statement is, however, established on too small a number of skull measurements and other anthropological data to be definitive without any amendment.³ There is among the various tribes a distinct lack of the homogeneity of type which it seems to imply. The populations of the southern part of the island are, as a rule, of smaller stature than those of the north, and the differences between the tribes amount to a clear suggestion that they have resulted from several ethnical superimpositions, some of which may have taken place previous to the migration of the mixed population.⁴ Numerous were the migrations into the island, from the mainland, from the Liu-Kiu archipelago, from Japan, from the Philippines, and casually from elsewhere. The migrations did not necessarily belong to different races, but many represented various divisions of one and the same great Indonesian race, settled on the continent of China and the islands, and diverged there individually by their intermingling with populations belonging to other races. In other words, the so-called native population of Formosa is the outcome of successive admixtures of ethnical elements—Negritos, Indonesians, Chinese—which themselves were not unmixed previous to their settlement in the island, and the continuous process of segmentation into distinct tribes, proper to their low standard of culture, has produced the state of intricacy which the ethnologist has to face in studying their origin.

¹ Fred. Müller, *Ethnologie*, p. 32, says the Igorrotes are a mixture of Tagals, Chinese and Japanese. Prof. A. H. Keane, *Philology and Ethnology of the Inter-oceanic Races*, s.v.

² De Quatrefajès et Hamy, *Crania ethnica*, p. 455; Girard de Rialle, *Formose et des Habitants*, l.c. p. 281.

³ Dr. P. de Koning, *Beschrijving von Chinesische Schedels* (Leiden, 1877, 4to.), has shown, pp. 54-56, that some important characteristics of the skulls of S.E. Chinese are met with at Formosa, the Philippines, and Celebes.

⁴ M. Girard de Rialle, as a conclusion to his valuable articles on *Formose et ses Habitants*, l.c., p. 281, has expressed an opinion somewhat similar.

IV. LINGUISTICS, §§ 60-110.

60. The linguistics and the ethnology of the island of Formosa are composite. Races pure and mixed from the mainland, and from the outward islands, have met there. Sometimes and in some places they have freely mixed. The absence of any strong government on a large area has not permitted any other unification to take place but that which results from the uninterrupted influence of the surrounding circumstances always at work. It was as a matter of fact the opposite case, and the numerous fragmentary chieftainships have produced in the languages as in the people a large number of broken and small units, which, made up of several ethnico-linguistic elements, can hardly be arranged otherwise than according to the prevalence of one or the other of these elements.

61. Like its ethnology, the linguistics of the island are fragmentary; not one of the languages has taken the lead and imposed its sway over the others. It is only on the western coast, where the Chinese colonists, Hoklo, Hakka, Punti, are established, that some native tribes have given up their native tongue and adopted that of their neighbours, somewhat their masters. Such, for instance, as the Baksa Pepohwan, who are the descendants of those who wrote the interesting MSS. which are the occasion of these notes.

62. A general review of the languages and dialects spoken in Formosa cannot be attempted otherwise than in a very incomplete and summary manner. Of the twenty-five languages and dialects enumerated below, only two or three are represented in our data by vocabularies of a certain length, while we know only a few words of the others. Some more are in existence, but nothing is known beyond their names. No grammar of any language of Formosa has ever been composed.

a) *In Chinese Sources.*

63. A precious bit of information is that which results from the Annals of the Sui dynasty, in 606 A.D., as we have

seen above¹ when dealing with the ethnological question. There we shall see that the Chinese were made cognizant that the language of the Formosans, at least on that southern part of the island facing the province of Fuhkien, was related to the speech of the tribes, mixed in origin otherwise, Negrito-Indonesian, which they knew within and without their dominions.

64. The above-named records contain a few words as a specimen of the Formosan language, which are interesting as the oldest example known. I reproduce them with their Chinese rendering, and also with the Amoy sounds which are usually employed on the island, because of the great number of Chinese emigrants from that port.

	AMOY SOUNDS.	MANDARIN SOUNDS.	MEANING.
歡 斯	<i>Hwan-su</i>	<i>Hwan-sze</i>	Family name of the king
渴 刺 兜	<i>K'at-la-tau</i>	<i>Koh-la-tou</i>	Personal ditto
可 老 羊	<i>K'o-lo-yong</i>	<i>Ko-lao-yang</i>	As he is named by his subjects
多 拔 茶	<i>To-pwat-tch'a</i>	<i>To-pa-tcha</i>	Name of the queen
波 羅 檀	<i>P'o-lo-tan</i>	<i>Po-lo-tan</i>	A royal residence or city
島 了	<i>Lian-lian</i>	<i>Miao-liao</i>	Head man of village

These few words are not uninteresting, because of their age, the beginning of the seventh century, though the Chinese orthoepy detracts a good deal from their value. In the recent reorganization of the Chinese administration of the island, a new city will be built on the site of a small village called *Hu-lu Tun*, south of Tchang-hwa, in the centre of the western coast. The name recalls singularly the *Po-lo-tan* of the above list.

Nothing can be made in the way of comparison of these special words with the modern lists of vocables from the various dialects, because of the deficiency and shortness of these lists when such words do not occur.

¹ §§ 37-41.

b) *According to Psalmanazar.*

65. Mr. E. Colborne Baber has suggested that the well-known Psalmanazar, in his fictitious description of Formosa at the beginning of the last century, might not have invented, as he did for the other parts of his book, the language of which he gave specimens. Our learned colleague supposes that the forger had perhaps met with a vocabulary of one of the Formosan dialects written by a Dutch Missionary. I have taken the hint, and consulted the above curious work, where however a few specimens only of the language are given, such as the numerals, some twenty-five words, besides translations of Our Lord's Prayer, the Apostles' Creed, and the Ten Commandments.¹ I think that the suggestion of Mr. E. Colborne Baber will prove partially true, and that most likely George Psalmanazar had come across some information concerning a dialect of Formosa through a Portuguese, not through a Dutch source. Such being the probabilities, it may be interesting to quote some of the documents from Psalmanazar's book.

66. About the numerals Psalmanazar writes : "They (the Formosans) had no names for numbers before the Dutch came here, but they sufficiently declared to one another what number they meant by their signs and fingers ; but because the Dutch did not understand this way of reckoning, they persuaded us to invent names to signify numbers, which now we use after the same manner as they do, proceeding from one to ten, from ten to twenty, and so to a hundred, a thousand, etc., as appears in this instance.

1) *Taufb*, 2) *Bogis*, 3) *Charhe*, 4) *Kiorh*, 5) *Nokin*, 6) *Dekie*, 7) *Meni*, 8) *Thenio*, 9) *Sonio*, 10) *Kan*; 11) *Ankon* or *Taufbkqn*, 12) *Bogiokon*, 13) *Charhekon*, 14) *Kiorhkon*, 15) *Nokiekon*, 16) *Dekiekon*, 17) *Menikon*, 18) *Thenikon*, 19) *Soniokon*, 20) *Borlhny*. After this *Borlhny-tauf* or *An Borlhny Bogio*, and so on to 30) *Chorlhny*, 40) *Kiorlhny*, 50) *Nokiorlhny*, 60) *Dekiorlhny*, 70) *Meniorlhny*, 80) *Theniorlhny*,

¹ See below, § 70 note.

90) *Soniorhny*, 100) *Ptommtomm*, and 1000) *Tanate*, so 1000, 2000, etc., and this may suffice for this article.”¹

67. Surely these numerals are not an invention; the short account which precedes them however may be something of a story, though not altogether untrue, as M. Guérin reports that the Tayal cannot make use of his decimal numeration without the help of his fingers.² I cannot identify them all through, but several of them may be correct: for instance, *taufb* ‘one’ is much like the Pepohwan *sasaab*; *charhe* ‘four’ reminds us of the *туру* of many of these dialects; *bogis* ‘two’ looks like a misprint for *rogis*, in which case it would be cognate to *roussa*, *loossa*, which appear for the same numeral in the lists given herewith; *kiorh* ‘four’ apparently for *?tiorh* is the *туру*, *taro* also in the same lists; *dekic* ‘six’ answers to *tai-o*; *soerio* ‘nine’ corresponds to *sio*, *siica*. These form six similarities out of the ten numerals, and go a long way to show that the Psalmanazar specimens were not invented by him.

68. There are, besides the above, a few statements of the most flimsy character, which display the preoccupation of an ignorant and ill-informed man. For instance, after stating that the language of Formosa is the same as that of Japan, he ventures to prove it by the following comparison:³

‘Ego amo,’ in Formosan *Jerh chato*, in Japanese *Jerh chato*.

‘Ego eram amans,’ in Formosan *Jervicye chato*, in Japanese *Jerh chataye*.

‘Ego ero amo,’ in Formosan *Jerhviar chato*, in Japanese *Jerh chatar*.

And he duly notes the difference between the two methods employed for expressing the conditions of time, the Formosan by addition to the pronoun, the Japanese by addition to the verb. The materials at hand are too scanty to permit me to show any assimilation of the verb ‘love’ in any of the Formosan dialects, and I do not find the word, or anything

¹ *A Description of the Isle Formosa*, pp. 246-247.

² M. Guérin, *Vocabulaire du Dialecte Tayal*, l.c. p. 467.

³ *A Description*, pp. 266-267.

approaching it, in Japanese. But we know more about the pronouns; *jerh* may be compared to the *ware* Japanese, and to the *yako*¹ Formosan, showing a sort of tentative spelling to connect the two words.

Then comes another statement concerning gender, which is said to be known by the articles:² *oi* 'hic,' *oy* 'hæc,' *ay* 'hoc,' as in *oi banajo* 'hic homo,' *os banajos* 'hi homines.' Here we have the most distinct proof of the Portuguese origin of the linguistic data made use by Psalmanazar. *Os* is the Portuguese article.

69. There is no vocabulary in his book; only a few words which it may not be uninteresting to extract, as follows:

*Baghathaan cherevaal*³ 'emperor or most high monarch'; *bagalo* or *angon* 'king'; *bagalendro* or *bagalender* 'viceroy'; *tanos* 'nobles'; *os tanos soulletos* 'governors of cities or isles'; *ponlinos* 'citizens'; *barhaw* 'countrymen'; *plessios* 'soldiers'; *banajo* 'man'; *bajane*⁴ 'woman'; *bot* 'son'; *boti* 'daughter'; *pornio*⁵ 'father'; *porniin* 'mother'; *georeo* 'brother'; *jarraiin* 'sister'; *arvannos* 'kinsmen'; *avia* 'an isle'; *tillo* 'a city'; *casseo* 'a village'; *orhnio* 'heaven'; *badi* 'earth'; *auso* 'sea'; *onillo* 'water.'⁶

70. It will be sufficient to identify a few of these words, and to remark the presence again of the Portuguese article, and the otherwise Portuguese appearance or dress of several words. The words for emperor, king, viceroy, may be genuine, though their meaning was respectively greatly magnified for the requirements of the case. They have in common the word *bagha* or *baga*, followed by a qualitative according to the requirements of Formosan ideology. *Pornio* 'father' and *georeo* 'brother,' with the addition of *in*,

¹ *Yakko* is also the spoken form of *yatsu-ko*, the old bookish pronoun for *I* in Japan.

² In the Bouïok, Buhwan, Sekhwan, Tsuihwan dialects; in Pepohwan *ya-u*, in Pelam *iko*, altered from *yako*.

³ This word recalls singularly the name *chhvea*, by which the Malays are known to the Cambodians. Cf. G. Janneau, *Manuel de la Langue Cambodgienne*, Saigon, 1870, 8vo. p. 63.

⁴ Cf. Malay *Bahina*, Celebes *Bahini*.

⁵ Cf. Sideia *rena* 'mother.'

⁶ Psalmanazar, *A Description*, pp. 270-271.

become *pornin* 'mother,' and *jarraijin* 'sister'; now *inina*, *ina*, *iena*, are the full word for 'woman' or 'female' in Formosan dialects. *Bot* 'son' we find in *badda* of *shiem badla*, i.e. 'man child,' in Favorlang. *Badi* 'earth' is connected with the well-known word *batu* 'stone.'¹ *Auso* 'sea' answers to the Shekoan *awass*, Favorlang *abass*, with the same signification.

The word *angon* for king is obviously the Chinese '*an-kung*,' which we have met with in the legend of the seals of several officials.²

It would be superfluous to go on with these comparisons, the similarities which we have been able to indicate in the numerals and in several words are all that the necessities of the case require.

Psalmanazar³ has completed his linguistic information with the text and translation of three prayers, the Lord's Prayer, the Apostles' Creed, and the Ten Commandments, which I consider simply as forgeries.⁴

71. To resume, it may be said, that Psalmanazar was not acquainted with any Formosan dialect himself, but that he had got hold of some notes⁵ written by an ignorant Portuguese mariner, who in his travels in the eastern seas, and probably

¹ *Orhnio* 'heaven,' is perhaps the same word as *Taunuwun* and *Tullun*, with the same significations as in the translations of the *Paternoster* by Junius and Gravius. Cf. below §§ 77-78.

² See above §§ 6, 18.

³ In the biography of Psalmanazar (*Encyclopædia Britannica*, ninth edit.) it is recorded that previous to the publication of his book he was employed by the Bishop of London to translate the catechism into the Formosan language, which he professed to know. Thinking that this translation might have been published by the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, I inquired from their editorial secretary, Mr. Edmund McClure, who kindly answered me as follows (27th Jan. 1887), "I am now just editing the minutes of this Society from 1698 to 1705, and I am familiar with all the matters dealt with during this period. There is nothing therein bearing upon a Formosan version of the catechism."

⁴ In the sixteenth century the Spanish missionaries had tried to settle in the island, and traces were found of them. Vid. Aguilar, *Annales de la Propagation de la Foi*, 1862, p. 112 sq.

⁵ B. Schulze, in his *Orientalische und Occidentalsche Sprachmeister* (Leipzig, 1748), gives in his work the Formosan numerals, a notice of the language and the alphabet (pars i. pp. 205, 104-105, and 103), which might have been borrowed from Psalmanazar himself, as they are very similar to his; but I think that they come from the same faulty source, apparently Portuguese, from which the celebrated forger derived his information, because the alphabet is more extensive than that given in his book. Cf. § 23 above, and my article on *A Native Writing in Formosa* in *The Academy*, 9th April, 1887, p. 259.

on the coast of Formosa, had there picked up some words, which he completed with some other Malay and Portuguese terms.

c. *From Dutch and Modern Authorities.*

72. Once settled in Formosa, the Dutch, as a matter of course for their purposes of colonization and evangelization, were led to learn the languages of the tribes with which they were brought into contact on the west coast, namely, at Sinkam,¹ Tavokam, Beklawan,² Sulang, Mattou, Tivorang, Favorlang, Takkeis, Tornap, Terenip, Assuk,³ Dorko, Tilocen, etc. Three languages or dialects, viz. those of Sakam, Sideia, and Favorlang, were more or less known to them.

73. Rob. Junius, who was a missionary at Sulang for 14 years, wrote in Formosan (?) a Catechism, which was published at Delft in 1645.⁴

Daniel Gravius, who is said to have laboured as a preacher in Formosa, between the years 1647 and 1651, translated the Gospels of St. Matthew and St. John, published at Amsterdam in 1661,⁵ and wrote in the Sideia dialect a *formulier*⁶ of the Christian religion, also published at Amsterdam in the following year. Let us observe that by a singular turn of fortune, these latter valuable works were published just at the time when the countrymen of the author

¹ Or Sinkkam, Cinekon, Sincam, Siccarn, Sicam, Zijkam, Sckam, Sakam, Sakkan, Sakkam.

² Or Beeloan.

³ Or Assock. Cf. Dr. O. Dapper, *Gedenkwaardig bedrijf der Nederlandsche Oost Indische Maatschappij in China*, Amst. 1670.

⁴ *Soulat i A. B. C. u. s. f. Katechismus in Formosanischer Sprache*, von Rob. Junius, Delft, 1645, 12mo. (24 pp.), quoted in Adelung's *Mithridates*, i. 578. Cf. §§ 77, 82 below.

⁵ *Het Heylige Euangelium Matthei en Johannis. Ofte Hagnau ka D'llig matiktik, ka na sasoulat ti Mattheus, ti Johannes appa. Overgeset inde Formosaansche tale, voor de Inwoonders van Soulang, Mattau, Sinckan, Bacloan, Tavokan, en Tavorang. 't Amsterdam, by Michiel Hartogh, Boeck-verkoper, inde Onse Hoogh-straat, inde Boeck- en Papierwinkel*, 1661. This exact title of this work was given for the first time by D. H. Kern. It was previously known in the literature concerning Formosa under the following: *Evangelia Matthei et Johannis in linguam Formosanam translata cum versione Belgica*. Op. Dan. Gravii, cum ejusdem prefationem. Amstelodami, 1661, 4to. Cf. J. H. Horne, *Introduction to the critical study and knowledge of the Holy Scriptures*, 9th ed. 1876, vol. v. p. 135; H. Cordier, *Bibliotheca Sinica*, p. 149.

⁶ *Putar ki Inai 'msing an ki Christang. t'Formulier des Christendoms, met, de verklaringen van dien inde Sideio-formosaansche taal*. Door Daniel Gravius. Amsterd. 1662, 4to.

were driven away by the pirate Koxinga from the seat of his former labours. It is from an analysis of the *Formulier* of Gravius that Klaproth¹ was enabled to write his notes *Sur la Langue des Indigènes de l'île de Formose*² in 1822, and subsequently to compile his *Vocabulaire Formosan*³ of 390 words, and his *Phrases en Formosan*,⁴ which therefore are exclusively in the Sideic dialect.

74. According to Dan. Gravius, the language he employed was spoken at Sulang, Mattan, Sinckan, Baeloan, Tavokan, Tevorang, and more or less also at Dorko and Tilosen. However, this language seems to have been wanting in uniformity, and several dialects were in existence. Therefore we cannot take his statement otherwise than in a limited sense, meaning that the language spoken of was looked upon by him as the standard of the region he describes. And we are sorry to say, the facts do not seem to justify his statement even as far as that. Rob. Junius, who was at Sulang, one of the localities mentioned by Gravius, wrote in another dialect than the Sideic of the latter; his dialect was most probably that of Sinkam, as shown by similarities of words with those of the manuscripts, and therefore was also the dialect that is now dying out among the Baksa Pepohwans.

75. The great relationship of the language of the manuscripts with that of the Baksas has been shown by Mr. E. Colborne Baber, who has pointed out several words in them, which are similar to those of the said dialect. I subjoin these words here with the corresponding Sideic terms available to show the differences:

		Baksa.	Sideic.
Silver	Vanitok	Manituk	
Cattle	Lohang	Lohang	
To declare	Masosoo	Masasu	
One	Sasaat	Sasaab	Saat
Eight	Pahpat	Pipa	Kauyppha
Ten	Kitiang	Keteng	Kytti

¹ "Je l'ai dépouillé entièrement." Such are his words, in his *Description de l'île de Formose (Mémoires relatifs à l'Asie, Paris, 1826, vol. i. pp. 321-353)*, p. 353.

² *Journal Asiatique*, Octobre, 1822, i. pp. 193-202.

³ *Mémoires relatifs à l'Asie*, vol. i. pp. 354-368.

⁴ *Ibid.* vol. i. pp. 369-374.

76. In order to make good my first statement regarding the dialect employed by Junius, I subjoin the following instances, and the two versions of the *Pater noster* by this missionary and Dan. Gravius. They were given by Adelung in his *Mithridates*, vol. i. pp. 580-582.

	JUNIUS.	GRAVIUS.	BAKSA.	SIDEIC.
Father	<i>Diam</i>	<i>Rama</i>	<i>Dama</i>	<i>Rama</i>
Heaven	<i>Vullum</i>	<i>Tounnoun</i>		
Day	<i>Wagi</i>	<i>Wä'i</i>	<i>Wagi</i> (sun)	
Liberate	<i>Sousiame</i>	<i>Hasumi-ei</i>		

77. PATER NOSTER, by Rob. Junius, 1645 :

Diam-eta ka tu Vullum, Luiugniang ta Nanang oho; Mahatongal ta tao tu Goum sho Mamatalto ki kamoienhu tu Nay, mama tu Vullum.

Pe-came ka caugniang Wagi Katta; Hamiecame ki Varaniang mameniang ma-inia ta Varan-ki tao ka mouro ki rüch emitang. Ine-came pondangadangaeh; Sonaimecame ki Litto.

Ka imouato ta gumaguma, Kallipuchang, Kasamayang Mikagua. Amen.

78. PATER NOSTER, by Dan. Gravius, 1661 :

Rama-yan, ka itsu Tounnoun koio ki Vullum, Pakou tik tik-auh lounmoulough ta Nanangoho; Pa-irou-an ta Pei-sasou-an-oho; Paamtan ta Kamoei-en-hou, mama tou Tounnoun, Kma-hynna tou Nai;

Phei-Kame Wä'i katta ki Paoul-i-an ka mamsing. Attaral-a-ta Käuiling-en-hau yniän, mama ka attaral-kame ta ymiän ki Käuiling-nian;

Inei-kame amilough tou K'poung an; Ka'am-hou ta Pei-sasou-an ta Peilpoung-eu, ta Keirang-an ki kidi, tou yhkagang Myddarynough. Amen.

79. The two texts are obviously written in dialects closely connected, but they are not one and the same language written by two different persons.¹ Many words

¹ Even admitting, as is here the case, that this language was still unwritten, and that the selection of special words for the rendering of new ideas led to personal differences.

are in common, such as: *ka* 'who, which'; *tu* 'in, on'; *mama* 'as'; *katta* 'this'; *oho* 'thine'; *ta* 'the'?; *kame* or *came* 'us'; *nay* or *naï* 'earth'; *nanang* 'name'; etc. Other words are nearly similar: *pe* (J.) and *phai* (G.) 'give'; *ine* (J.) and *inei* (G.) 'not'; *imou* (J.) and 'am-hou (G.) 'thine';¹ *litto* (J.) and *lyttou* (G.) 'devil'; while some words are altogether different: *eta* (J.) and *yan* (G.) 'our'; *luingniang* (J.) and *loumoulough* (G.) 'praised'; etc., etc.

80. The equivalence of sound in the transcriptions of *R = D* between the Sidic of Gravius and the Sinkan, now Baksa Pepohwan, of Junius and the MSS., is a regular one, as shown by the further examples given below. And it is not uninteresting that this equivalence should be extended to *S* in another dialect, exemplified by a list of 1072 words found in MS. in the library of the University of Utrecht by Dr. Van der Vlis, and described by him in a paper published at Batavia in 1842.² This other dialect, unnamed, seems represented by the speech of the Kanagou and Paichien of the present day.

81. The following list illustrates the equivalences spoken of in the three dialects:

	Sidic.	Van der Vlis.	Pepohwan.
Father	rama	sama	dama
Mother	rena	sena	tenu
Water	ralaum	salong	dalum
Thunder	rungdung	singding	dungdung
Tree	parannah	pesanach	
Foot	rahpal	sapal	dapal (pelam)
Great	irang	isang	
Two	ranka	(so) soa	duha.

82. Allusion has been made by Valentijn and other Dutch writers to a Sakam language,³ the one in which are written

¹ *Im* and 'am are probably another word; leaving *ou* and *hou*, which may be forms of *oho*, 'thine,' as above.

² *Formosaansche Woorden lijst volgens een Utrechtsch Handschrift. Voorafgegaan door Eenige Korte Aanmerkingen betreffende de Formosaansche taal. In Verhandelingen van het Bataviaasch Genootschap van Kunsten en Wetenschappen, 18de Deel, Batavia, 1842, 8vo. pp. 431-488.*

³ *Zaaken van Taijoan*, bl. 88, v.g. (i. Dr. H. Kern).

the manuscripts described above. Valentijn himself, in 1644, was commissioned from Batavia to collect a Sakam dictionary or vocabulary, in order that a Malay, Portuguese, Sakam and Dutch vocabulary might afterwards be constructed therefrom. But nothing seems to have been done, though the name of Junius has been, rightly or wrongly, connected with the work. Anyhow, the connection we have disclosed in these pages between the dialect employed by this missionary and that of the MSS. from Sinkiang or Sakam, shows that his *Katechism* was written in that special dialect.

83. The Favorlang, the other language of Formosa, which has been known to the Dutch occupiers, is quite distinct from the preceding dialects, though related to them. The chief work in that language is an important vocabulary, compiled in 1650 by Gilbertus Happart.¹ It was found in 1839 by Dr. W. R. van Hoëvell, in the archives of the Church Council at Batavia, and published by him in the eighteenth volume of Transactions of the Batavian Society of Arts and Literature, with some additional remarks.² In 1840, W. H. Medhurst translated it into English, and also published it at Batavia,³ the same year.

84. A manuscript with Favorlang texts has also been found at Batavia, but nothing beyond the *Paternoster* has been edited from it, and this in 1857 only, by E. Netscher.⁴

Here is this *Paternoster* in Favorlang, which may be compared with the Sinkam and Sideia versions which we have reproduced above :

¹ G. Happart was, according to Valentijn, missionary in Formosa from 1649 to 1652 and 1653 to 1656.

² The title is given above, n. This volume was, however, completed only afterwards, and bears the date of 1842. The *Woordboek der Favorlandsche Taal, waarin het Favorlangs voor, het duits Achter Gestelt is*, door Gilbertus Happart, occupies the pp. 31-381, and the remarks of Dr. Hoëvell, the pp. 382-430.

³ *Dictionary of the Favorlang Dialect of the Formosan Language*, by Gilbertus Happart; written in 1650. Translated from the Transactions of the Batavian Literary Society, by W. H. Medhurst, Batavia. Printed at Parapattan, 1840, 12mo. pp. 383.

⁴ *Tijdschrift voor Indische Taal-, Land-, en Volkskunde*, vi. 1857 (Dr. Kern). Adelung in *Mithridates*, i. 578, mentions two new works by Sim. van Breun and by J. Happart. As the latter's vocabulary has been published, that of Sim. van Breun is probably that from which Mr. E. Netscher has published an extract.

Namoa ta-man, ta masca paiya de busum, i-pa-dasa yoa moan, i-pa-saiya yoa $\chi\chi$ imit o ai, i-pa-iyoro yoa airab ma-ibas de busum ma-sini de ta χ anuma, epe-e namo-no piada i toro upo maatsikap soo abo-e namo ta taap o kakosi namoa ma-ibas χ anuma, namo m-abo ta masca pa rapies i namo, hai pa-sabas i namo, soo baras i namo, inai rapies ai, inan yoa mi χ o $\chi\chi$ imit o ai soo bar o ai soo adas ai ta-ulaulan. Amen.¹

85. The data which we possess of the other dialects and languages spoken in the island are still more unsatisfactory than those hitherto described. They consist of vocabularies of various length, some of them composed of only a few words, collected by various travellers in various places, at various times and with various spellings.² So that the diversity is great, and no scientific accuracy is attainable. And though we know thus far the existence of some twenty-two dialects, we are by no means at all certain that some more may not increase the unpleasant collection.

86. The most important by far of these vocabularies is that of the Tayal language (551 words), compiled by M. Guérin in the north of the Island and published in the *Bulletin de la Société de Géographie de Paris* in 1868.³ It consists of several hundred words, with some phrases and remarks which make it a most important document. The same traveller also collected six other small vocabularies in the same region and further south, namely, those of the *Shabogala*, *Bouïok*, *Tsoo* or *Tiboula*, *Sibouken*, *Kanagou*, and in the extreme south the *Kali*. Vocabularies of *Tsui-hwan*, *Sekhwan*, *Buhwan*, *Pelam* and *Pepohwan* have been compiled by Mr. J. L. Bullock, the longest comprehending 179 words.⁴ Mr. Charles Carroll, like Mr. J. L. Bullock, of H.M. Consular Service, has collected the numerals of tribes, 1) near Black Rock Bay (East), 2) near Sau-o Bay (North), 3) from the South, and

¹ Dr. Friedrich Müller, *Grundriss der Sprachwissenschaft*, ii. (2) p. 150.

² The differences still increased by the obvious misprints in several of the lists.

³ V^e série, t. xvi. pp. 466-495.

⁴ They were published in the *China Review* in 1874, vol. iii. pp. 38-46, J. L. Bullock, *Formosan Dialects and their Connection with the Malay*, reproduced by Mr. E. Colborne Baber in his note on Nine Formosan manuscripts, and reprinted as an appendix to the present papers.

4) near Tai-wan fu (S.W.) and forty-two words from the latter, which he published in 1871.¹

87. Short vocabularies of the *Paichien*, *Banga*, *Bantanlang*, and *Samohai*, with some of the Siboukn and Tibolak mentioned above² were published without any author's name in June 1867.³ Some Kali words and numerals have been given by Mr. R. Swinhoe in the same year.⁴ To Mr. J. Thomson we are indebted for vocabularies of the Pachien, Sibukun, Tibolal, Banga and Bantalang, Shekhoan, *Pilam* and *Baksa Pepohwan*.⁵ Mr. J. B. Steere has collected a vocabulary of 145 Pepohwan words at Kongana Island,⁶ and Mr. Geo. Philipps a score of Pilam words.

88. The following lists of pronouns and numerals will show their similarities as well as their differences :

PRONOUNS.

	I.	THOU.	HE.	WE.	YOU.	THEY.
Tsui-hwan	yako	iho	latoro	yamin	latawan	itiawan
Sek-hwan	yako	issu	issu	yami, ita	innu	yasia
Buh-wan	yako	issu	issu	yamo	.....	abaras
Pepohwan	ya-u	inuhu	.....	ya-u	inuhu	.....
Pelam	iko	yu	inadioa	itai	yu	inadioa
Favorlang	ina	iyo	ai, ixo	namo	yonu, ima	dexo
Tayal	konin	isson	simo	konin	isson	simo
Bouïok	taken	senon	.....	takon	sonon	.....
Tsoo	aho	sen	taïni	aho	son	taïni

¹ *Rambles among the Formosan Savages*, pp. 133-134, 164-165 of vol. i. *The Phoenix*, London, 1871.

² *The Sibaukann and Tiboula* of M. Guérin.

³ *Formosan Vocabularies*, in *Notes and Queries for China and Japan*, vol. i. pp. 70-71 (Hong Kong, 1867).

⁴ *Notes on Formosa*, in *China Mail*, Hong Kong, 27th Aug. 1867.

⁵ *Ten years' Journey in China and Indo-China*.

⁶ *The Aborigines of Formosa*, in *China Review*, 1875, vol. iii. pp. 181-184.

	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	
Tayal	kotoek	sajin	shioegal	pai-at	magal	taï-o	pitou	s'pattlo	taï-so	mou-po, or pong	Guérin
Tsao, or Tibula	tshoumi	loussou	toulou	saupouti	uimo	boni (?noui)	pitou	molou	sio	masseki	Guérin
"	chum	lusa	"	supat	lima	nauma	pito	mevarou	chuga	matl	
Shabogala	kou	roussa	tauo	soupat	tima	nato	pitou	aspat	takeisso	moulpo	Guérin
Siboukun	tashan	roussa	tao	pat	tina	noun	pito	mouaou	siba	tapan	Guérin
"	tashang	lusha	taou	p'at	"	noun	"	awou	siva	basan	Thomson
Black Rock Bay	ta-shan	loo-ssa	taoo	pat	lima	uoun	pitto	mwaoo	siba	bassan	
Kanagou	sau	sou	toro	pai	rima	neoun	pitou	arou	sioou	koumat	Guérin
Pachien	saou	sou	toro	pai	rima	neun	pito	miwarou	siwa	koumiath	Thomson
Sideia	sat, saat	ranha	tauro	hpat	rima	nuun	pytto	kauyplipa	natauda	kytti	Balbi
Taiwanfu	tse-au	loo	toroo	pat-ti	rima	niun	pitto	aroo	siwa	kumetlā	
Pepohwan	sasab	dula	turu	tabat	turima	tunum	pitu	pipa	kuda	keteng	Baber
"	sarat	dula	turo	dapat	da-rima	da-num	dapito	kuipat	....	kating	Thomson
Pepohwan	sasaat	dula	turu	tahat	turima	tunum	pitu	pipa	ruda	keteng	Steele
Pelam	sha	lua	tilu	pat	rima	num	pitu	waro	iwa	pulu	Baber
"	itu	lusa	taloh	sepat	lima	onam	pitu	alou	siva	pelapsang	Thomson
"	saat	ranha	tauro	hpat	rima	uun	pytto	....	....	....	Philippis
Banga	lenga	nousa	toro	patu	lima	neuma	pito	mevarou	bangato	pouroukou	Thomson
Bantanlang	denga	nousa	toro	patu	lini	neun	pito	mevarou	bangatu	pouronku	Thomson.
Sau-o Bay North	ita	loo-sa	too-roo	sir-pah	lima	innoom	pitto	aroo	siva	stivrine	Carroll

	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	
South	isa	loo-sa	too-loo	slipat	nima	unum	pitaou	na-loo	siba	tapulouk	Carroll
Samobi	itsa	lusa	torou	siptat	lima	unum	pilo	alon	siva	pozo	Thomson
Favorlang	atta	rea	taro	sapat	achab	talap	aito	ma-aspat	tanacho	tsehien	
"	watta	rea	toroa	naspas	axab	natap	naito	maspat	tanaxo	toxiet	Baber
Tsuikwan	taha	tasha	turu	spat	hriua	sturu	pitu	kaspas	tanaso	maksin	Baber
Sekhwan	adadamat	dusa	turu	supat	hasub	hasubuda	hasubidusa	hasubituru	hasubisupat	issit, shid	Baber
Bulwan	kial	dala	teru	süpüt	rira	mataru	pita	müssupat	....	wahal	Baber
Bouïok	ila	dousa	touro	supat	hasub	boudah	bi-dousut	bi-tomo	bisupat	isid	Thomson
Bouïok	aha	roussa	touro	sasserat	rassoun	saïboueh	saïboussin	makaïspat	rala	lampeuo	Guérin
							rahat				
Kali	tiron	tipat	treum	taïssi	manalan	aïgna	pecho	....	....	....	Guérin
Kali (South)	....	....	....	s'pat	lima	unum	patsoou	....	....	polo	Swinhoo
Unamed	saka	tshousa	toulou	soutbad	laleup	tsouloup	ana	patouloun	setouna	isit	Guérin
Tagalog Philip-pines	isa	dalana	talo	apat	lima	anim	pito	walc	siyam	sangponlo,	
Pampango	nisa	duha	tolo	upasu	lima	onon	pito	walo	siam	polo	
Abac, or Capul	addangan	duangan	talangan	patongam	linangan	annuan-gan	pitongam	walongam	siaman-gan	sampu	
										avantun	
Bissayo	usa	duha,	tolo	upat	lima	onon	pito	walo	siam	napolo	
		ruha									
"	uso	dua	tolo	upat	lima	onon	pitto	gualac	ciam	polo	
Mindanao	isa	daua	tulu	apat	lima	anom	patoo	walu	scaow	sampoolu	
Jagulo	isa	dalana	tallo	apat	lima	anim	pito	walo	siam	sampu	

d) *Position in general Philology.*

90. As to the position of the Formosan languages in the general classification, it has long been stated, from the lexicological affinities,¹ that the civilized agricultural inhabitants of the shores of Formosa spoke a Malayan language. Klaproth, and also Malte Brun,² on data chiefly belonging to the Sideia and kindred dialects, were able to go as far as that, and to show their affinity, not only with the Malayan tongues of the Indian archipelago, but also with the African Malay (Malagasy) and the Polynesian Malay (Tagalog).

Mr. J. Thomson has put side by side his Paichien, Sibucoun, Tibolal, Banga and Bantakang vocabularies, with the same words from the Malay of Singapore; also Shekhoan, Pilam and Baksa Pepohwan, each separately with Malay, and a comparative table of the numerals in the above-named dialects and language, with those of the Jagul and Bisaya (Philippines), New Zealand, Tikopia, Waigiui, Tonga, and Maw (Polynesia), and of the Arfours of Manado (Célèbes), which exhibit a complete relationship.

91. As to the parentage with the Malay exclusively, an analysis of the vocabularies given by Mr. Thomson has yielded the following results :

67 Baksa	words have	13 Malay affinities.
48 Pilam	„	10 „ „
45 Shekhwon	„	9 „ „
40 Bantakang	„	8 distant affinities.
34 Paichien	„	3 „ „
21 Sibucoun	„	2 „ „
9 Tibolal	„	0 „ „
38 Banga	„	5 „ „

So that the first three dialects on the list stand in closer relationship to the Malay than the succeeding ones; but the parentage must be looked upon as existing with the Indo-

¹ *Description de l'île de Formose, extraite des livres Chinois, in Mémoires relatifs à l'Asie*, 1826, i. 321-353, and *Vocabulaire*, 354-374.

² *Annales des Voyages*, 1809, t. vii.; also *Analyse de quelques Mémoires Hollandais sur l'île de Formose*, *ibid.* 1810, t. viii. p. 344.

nesian languages as a whole, and not with any dialect in particular. I find that Mr. J. Bullock had come to the same conclusion; in comparing ninety words of the various dialects from which he has collected the vocabularies reprinted below,¹ and the lists of A. R. Wallace, comprehending vocabularies of the Malay of Java, Bouton and Salayer of S. Celebes, Menado and Bolanghitam of N. Celebes, and Sangnir of Sula Islands, Mr. J. Bullock has found 31 words, or one-third, identical with some Malayan words.² The Pelam having the most, and the Pepohwan the next most similarities. But the comparison shows no connection with any particular dialect.

92. Dr. Arnold Schetelig was the first to study the language of the independent tribes.³ He came to the conclusion that these independent tribes, also called Senghwan, have only borrowed a sixth part of their vocabulary from their Malay neighbours, from whom they differ otherwise in language, and are physically closely allied to the continental people of China. W. M. H. in 1857⁴ has called attention to the relationship evidenced by the Kali numerals furnished by Mr. Swinhoe, and the Malay ones, in the case of four, five, six, seven, and ten.⁵

The Paiwans speak a language of the general type, and so do the Cariangans; while the Tipuns, avowed foreigners, have only accepted the Paiwan numerals, their language, says Mr. G. Taylor, being otherwise different.

93. The language of the black Diaramocks of the mountainous region inland is altogether unknown,⁶ and we are still without any other information than that given by

¹ See § 86, and the Appendix.

² J. Bullock, *Formosan Dialects and their Connection with the Malay*, i.e. pp. 38-41.

³ *Sprachen der Ureinwohner Formosa's*, in *Zeitschrift für Völkerpsychologie und Sprachwissenschaft*, vol. v. p. 437.

⁴ *Notes and Queries for China and Japan*, Aug. 31, 1867, p. 101. This note was the cause of two others, which appeared the following month (Sept. 30, pp. 122-123), from T. J. R.: *Common Origin of Formosans and Malays*, the title of which speaks for itself; and from Z.: *Kulee and Malay Numerals*, stating that the parentage is not so complete as desired by the author of the first note.

⁵ *China Mail*, Hong Kong, 27th Aug. 1867.

⁶ *The Aborigines of Formosa*, pp. 195-196.

Valentijn more than two centuries ago, that it is different from that of the other Formosans.¹

94. The late J. Logan of Singapore, writing in 1852,² made a comparison of the Formosan (Sideia, Favorlang) and several Philippine dialects, all of which he included in his North Indonesian subdivision. The dialectic differences of the Formosan connect it with the Pampangan of Luzon, and the most important formatives agree in all the essential points.

95. The late Von der Gabelentz in 1859³ wrote a valuable monograph, its object being to fix the place of the Formosan in the Malay class. Besides the original Sideia data, he was enabled to compare the Favorlang in the dictionary published in 1840. The great German scholar decided that the affinities of Formosan are Indonesian, and that they are not so exclusively Philippine as the geographical relations suggest.

96. The Abbé Favre,⁴ in his remarks added to the important paper of M. Guérin in 1868 on the Tayal dialect, concludes that the dialects of Formosa are of Polynesian (?) origin; the Favorlang being purer than the Tayal, which has diverged from the original type through its contact with the Chinese. I am not sure that this Polynesian origin is borne out by the paper of this scholar, as all the evidence he adduces consists of serious affinities of the Favorlang with the Malay and Javanese, which are also met with in a less degree in Tayal.

97. Dr. Friedrich Müller, in 1882, in his important, though I am afraid rather overvalued, large linguistic work, has included the Formosan in his Malayan division, and

¹ See above § 50.

² *Ethnology of the Indo-Pacific Islands: Language*. Part i. ch. iii. § vii. p. 150. (Singapore, 1852.)

³ *Ueber die Formosanische Sprache und ihre Stellung im Malaiischen Sprachstamm*, in *Zeitschrift der Morgenländ. Gesellschaft*, t. xiii. pp. 59-102.

⁴ *Notes sur la Langue des Aborigènes de l'île de Formose et Remarques sur le précédent Vocabulaire*, i.e. Mr. E. C. Taintor in his valuable paper on *The Aborigines of Northern Formosa* (Journ. North China Branch Royal Asiatic Society, 1875. vol. ix. pp. 53-88) has given a vocabulary of the Kabaran Pepohwan, and also one of the Yukan-Tayal.

made it one of the eleven languages¹ which he has compared together. But there is very little if anything new there, as his Formosan is the Favorlang, and his sole authority the monograph of Conon von der Gabelentz. (§ 95.)

Notwithstanding all these later efforts, the chief authority on the matter, still in advance by far, remains the late J. Logan, who wrote thirty-five years ago the work referred to above, and we can only complain of the deficiency of the documents at his disposal.

98. Therefore all the affinities hitherto pointed out connect the majority of the three groups of Formosan languages, Tayal, Sideic, and Favorlang, 1°) with the Indonesian and Pacific languages at large, and the Malayan languages in particular, with reference to the vocabulary, and 2°) with the languages of the Philippines from the standpoint of structure and morphology. But it must be said that though the existence of an important deviation from the Indonesian standard, supposed to have been caused by the influence of the Chinese immigrants, has been duly noticed, no affinities have been sought for the Formosan languages except in the south and west of the island. The mainland has been neglected, and no thought was given to the non-Chinese.

99. However, as early as 1853, the venerable Brian H. Hodgson, in his paper *On the Tribes of Northern Tibet and of Sifan*,² had shown the remarkable similarity of verbal formation by piled-up prefixes in the *Gyarung*, a language on the Tibetan frontier of China, and the Tagala of the Philippines. The affinity cannot be denied, but this simple fact, full of ethnological suggestion, has escaped the attention of the above-named scholars. Or, should they have come across Hodgson's statement, they have neglected it as a fancy of its author, which the geographical distance and the supposed presence of the Chinese in the intervening country from olden times, rendered utterly improbable and not worthy of examination.

¹ These eleven languages are the following: Tagala, Ibanag, Formosan, Battak, Malagasy, Aliur, Dayak, Malay, Javanese, Mankasar, and Bugis. Vid. his *Grundriss der Sprachwissenschaft*, ii. (2) pp. 87-160.

² *Journal of the Bengal Asiatic Society*, vol. xxii. 1853, p. 121, sq.

100. But now that the historical inhabitation of China by the Chinese is known to have been the result of a slow growth, the matter has taken a different complexion. In another place I have shown reason to believe, from the own avowal of the historical Chinese traditions, that the Gyarungs were nothing more nor less than one of the *disjecta membra* now driven away by the pressure of the Chinese growth, west, south, and also east, of a former nucleus of the native population of China, Indonesian in character at the beginning and gradually diverging from their former standard under the combined influences of their new surroundings, linguistical and others.¹

101. The Gyarung glossary exhibits numerous similarities with the Blue Miao and T'u man tribes now in Kucitchou, the Tounghus of Burma, in which case they extend to 25%, with the Tayal of Formosa and with the above-named Tagala. This remarkable connection would some years ago have proved unintelligible, while in the present day we may look upon it almost as not unexpected.

102. I have carefully compared the Tayal glossary with the lists of words available from the remnant tribes of the Aborigines, or non-Chinese tribes of the Middle Kingdom, and I have found with several of them the following proportion of similarities :

<i>Tchung Miao</i>	33 %
<i>T'u man</i>	25 „
<i>K'i-lao</i>	25 „
<i>Loi of Hainan</i>	25 „
<i>Ngan shun Miao</i>	20 „
<i>Blue Miao</i>	20 „
<i>Black Miao</i>	15 „
<i>White Miao</i>	10 „

103. These figures, with the exception of those concerning the last two names, which belong to a more distant group, exhibit an undeniable connection and larger affinity than

¹ Cf. *The Languages of China before the Chinese*, §§ 129-144, and 225.

with the Malayan groups. All these tribes, with the exception of the Li, are now located in the Kucitchou province of Western China, where they have been gradually removed or driven from their former seats in the centre and east of China. Unhappily the documents for studying the languages of these and other aborigines are pre-eminently deficient. They consist of lists of words of various lengths and various origins and dates, either casually quoted in the Chinese records, or purposely collected by them or by Europeans, with all their differences in time, place, writing and language owned by their authors.¹ In other words, as a matter of fact, they are the worst materials that could possibly be placed in the hands of the philologist, and permit very little, if any, insight on the structure of the languages they represent.

104. Another, though indirect, means of inquiry is the study of the influence of the native languages on the historical and regional evolution of the genuine Chinese dialects. As I have shown elsewhere, I have been able to ascertain that in former times, in the east of China, on the mainland, the native dialects used, in the construction of their sentences, to place the subject after the verb.² This remarkable feature is rather uncommon; it does not belong to the Kūenlun linguistic formation, which includes the Chinese and the Tibeto-Burmese groups; nor does it to the Mōn-Khmer and Taic-Shan families constituting the Indo-Chinese division of the Indo-Pacific stem; but it is a regular feature of the Indonesian, north division, and an occasional one of the Polynesian, both branches of the Oceanic languages belonging to the aforesaid Indo-Pacific stem. Therefore we may adduce from this fact the existence in the east of China of dialects of a north Indonesian character, existence which is further established by the similarities presented by the now removed Gyarungs and several tribes of Kucitchou.

105. Allusion has already been made to the system of

¹ Cf. T. de L., *The Languages of China before the Chinese*, §§ 2-7, p. 394-398, in *Transactions of the Philological Society for 1885-6*.

² Cf. T. de L., *ibid.* § 23, p. 406. And more fully in my other work, *Ideology of Languages and its Relation to History*, §§ 120-122, pp. 84-87.

prefixes superimposed one to the other, and also of infixes in the case of the verb in Gyarung, as in north Indonesian. Particular prefixes determining the condition of the sense of the word must also be noticed. For instance, in Gyarung, in 25 verbs I find that 17 begin by *ta*, the *a* often displaced by a vowel harmonizing with the word; in 27 adjectives, 26 begin with *ka-* or *ku-*, etc.; both prefixes are cognate to the similar prefixes *ta-*, *ti-*, *te-*, and *ka-* of north Indonesia, *ta*, *ti*, of Formosa, *tche* of the *Kih-lao* of Kueitchou, *k-* and *t-* of the other aforesaid Miao dialects, and the *k-* and *t-* of the Gyarung. All of them, derived from common parents, have been diversified in their value and use in the course of the respective evolutions of the languages which have them.

106. Scholars have already compared the *ma-* and *pa-* of Favorlang with the *mag-* of Tayal and the *pan-*, *pa-*, of Tayal, Malay, Javanese, Battak, Mankassar, Bugis and Dayak; the suffix *-an* of Favorlang, with a similar *-an* in Tagal and Malagasy. We may add the infix *-in-* of Favorlang and Tayal, with a similar one in Tagal, Javanese, etc. The known prefix *m-* of the Malay dialects we find appearing as follows in the Formosan dialects:

In the case of verbs:

<i>Favorlang</i> . . .	80 %	<i>Tayal</i> . . .	33 %
<i>Pepohwan</i> . . .	75 „	<i>Sekhwan</i> . . .	33 „
<i>Buhwan</i> . . .	60 „	<i>Pelam</i> . . .	20 „
<i>Tsuihwan</i> . . .	50 „		

In the case of adjectives:

<i>Pepohwan</i> . . .	100 %	<i>Buhwan</i> . . .	50 „
<i>Tsui-hwan</i> . . .	90 „	<i>Sekhwan</i> . . .	25 „
<i>Favorlang</i> . . .	80 „	<i>Pelam</i> . . .	25 „

107. In Tayal and Tsoo of North Formosa, class-prefixes fused with the word, *K-* or *G-*, *M-*, *b-* or *p-*, and *l* or *r*, are found in the vocabulary for all parts of the body. In Gyarung *k-*, *b-*, *r-* and *t-*, correspond in a general way, yet not in all the individual cases, because of the intervening causes of alteration on the two sides, with the similar *k-*, *p-*, *l-* and *t-* of the aforesaid Miao dialects of Kueitchou in

China.¹ The uniformity of system between the Formosan dialects, several Miao languages of China and the Gyarung, is made evident therefrom.

108. With regard to their ideology, hardly anything has been done excepting individual remarks. Therefore, making use of our convenient ideological indices,² we are enabled to establish the following list, which shows their similarities and differences, as far as documents permit, and which I extract from my *Ideology of Languages and its Relation to History*:

FORMOSA :

<i>Favorlang</i>	. . . . .	1	$\frac{3}{4}$	6	7	V.
<i>Tayal</i>	. . . . .	1	$\frac{3}{4}$	6	7	V.
<i>Tsoo</i>	. . . . .	2	4	6	7	V.
<i>Shobogala</i>	. . . . .	2	4	6	0	
<i>Sideia</i>	. . . . .	2	4	(6)	7	IV. V.
<i>Sinkam.</i>	. . . . .	2	4	(6)	7	IV. V.

CONTINENT :

Ancient Influence	. . . . .	2	0	6	7	IV. V. ³
<i>Gyalung</i>	. . . . .	1	3	5	8	III. (Hybrid, Tatar influence).
<i>T'u man</i>	. . . . .	1	4	6	0	(Mixed).
<i>K'ih-lao</i>	. . . . .	1	4	6	0	(Mixed).
<i>An-Shun</i>	. . . . .	1	$\frac{3}{4}$	6	0	(Mixed).
<i>Black Miao</i>	. . . . .	1	4	6	0	(Mixed).

¹ See on this question my remarks on the Gyarung in my book on *The Languages of China before the Chinese*, § 133.

² The explanation of these ideological indices is the following: The Arabic figures show the order of individual words, while the Roman figures relate to the arrangement of the simple or positive sentence.

- | | |
|------------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. Genitive and noun. | I. Obj. subj. verb. |
| 2. Noun and genitive. | II. Obj. verb subj. |
| 3. Adjective and noun. | III. Subj. obj. verb. |
| 4. Noun and adjective. | IV. Verb subj. obj. |
| 5. Object and verb. | V. Verb obj. subj. |
| 6. Verb and object. | VI. Subj. verb obj. |
| 7. Verb and subject. | |
| 8. Subject and verb. | |

So that 5 7 imply II.; 5 8 imply I. or III.; 6 7 imply IV. or V.; and 6 8 imply VI. only.

³ Genuine Chiuese, 1 3 6 8 VI.

<i>Blue Miao</i>	2	$\frac{3}{4}$	6	0	(Hybrid, Mōn influence).
<i>Loi</i> (Hainan)	1	4	6	0	(Mixed).

INDONESIAN :

<i>Tagala</i> (Philippines)	2	4	6	7	IV.
<i>Bisaya</i> „	2	4	6	7	IV.
<i>Pampaya</i> „	2	4	6	7	IV.
<i>Malay</i>	2	4	6	$\frac{8}{7}$	VI. IV.
<i>Dayak</i>	2	4	6	8	VI.
<i>Javanese</i>	2	4	6	$\frac{8}{7}$	VI. IV.

109. The above list is very telling, and will permit us to lead these long notes to a brief conclusion on a most difficult question, which I hope it contributes to elucidate.

It brings most important evidence that the dialects of Formosa, especially those of the North and West, are more closely related with a part of the former Non-Chinese population of Eastern China than with the modern Indonesian languages. This conclusion is supported by glossarial (§ 102), morphological (§§ 105–107), affinities, similarities of eustoms (§ 58), and also by anthropological craniometry, (§ 59). But we must take into account the diversifications which have been undergone by these languages in their respective surroundings, since the bygone age of their former unity. The Gyarung, in its Tibeto-Chinese location, has been affected by Altaic languages: Mongol and Turk.¹ On the other hand, the other languages have altered under the influence of a superimposition of languages of the same stem at various phases of their respective evolution; the Chinese influence has been at a minimum, and does not appear to have produced more than a change of position of the genitive, passing from Indice 2 to Indice 1. The Miao dialects have been influenced by the neighbouring tribes of the Mōn-Khmer and Tai-Shan families, while those of Formosa have mingled with emigrants from the Philippine

¹ Ideol. Ind., 1 3 5 8 II.

Archipelago and other islands. The Chinese influence there does not appear to have extended beyond their vocabulary.

110. The following scheme of classification will permit us to apprehend the relative position of the Formosan dialects with the other languages, cognate in various degrees, belonging to the INDO-PACIFIC STOCK OF LANGUAGES, and the stray affinities which pervade them throughout, and give to their relationship a character so intricate.

INDO-PACIFIC Stock, including two divisions:

I. The INDO-CHINESE subdivided into three branches:

- 1) *Mōn-Taïc*, including *a)* 7 Pre-Chinese dialects unmixed and mixed, and *b)* 11 Pre-Chinese dialects Hybridized and Hybrid.
- 2) *Mōn-Khmer*, including the *a)* Annamite or Cochinese, *b)* Palaong, *c)* Peguan, *d)* Khasi, *e)* Khmer group, *f)* Negrito Kamucks, etc., dialects.
- 3) *Taïc-Shan*, including four groups, *a)* Pre-Chinese, *b)* Ahom, *c)* Shan, *d)* Loacian Siamese.

II. The INTER-OCEANIC, subdivided into four branches:

- 1) *Indonesian*, including four groups, *a)* Pre-Chinese, *b)* Formosan, *c)* Tagalo-Malayan, *d)* Negrito-Actas.
- 2) *Micronesian* groups.
- 3) *Polynesian* groups.
- 4) *Melanesian* groups.

The dialects of Formosa may be provisionally subdivided as follows in three sections:

Tayal—Tsoo, Shabogala, Sibouken, Black Rock Bay, Kanagu, Paichien, etc.

Sideïa—Sinkam, Tai-wan, Pepohwan Baksa, Kongana, Pelam, Banga, Bantanlang, Sau-o Bay, Samolei (?).

Favorlang—Tsui-hwan, Sekhwan, Buhwan, Bouïok, Kali, etc.

APPENDIX.—VOCABULARIES (Reprinted from the *China Review*, August, 1874).

ENGLISH.	TSUI-JIWAN.	SEK-HWAN.	BU-HWAN.	PEFO-HWAN.	PELAM.	FAVORLANG.
1 I	Yako	Yako	Yako	Ya-u	Iko	Ina
2 Thou	Iho	Issu	Issu	Inuhu	Yu	
3 Ho	Laforo	Issu	Issu		Inadioa	Ai
4 We	Yamin	Yami, Ita	Yamo		Itai	Namo
5 You	Latawan	Imu			Yu	Decho
6 They	Itiawan	Yasia	Abarao		Inadioa	
7 My	Nak	Naki	Yako			
8 Thy	Mio	Nissua	Issu			
9 His	Tusai	Nimissu	Nakaga			
10 Our	Shakshunam	Nita	Kakash-aduk			
11 Their			Nataha			
12 Man	Sput	Sanh	Etluk	Amama	Atou	Sham
13 Woman	Minyawat	Mamais	Makaidil	Inina	Iduakomaishuao	Sini
14 Girl	Alalak	Rakihal mamais	Lakai makaidil		Babaian	Shiem mammali
15 Boy	Alalak	„ mamalung	Lakai risinao		Mainaian	Shiem badda
16 Wife	Taina	Mamais	Makaidil	Kiga-ung	Akomaishu atou	
17 Son	Alalak	Rakihal	Lakai	Alak	Walak	
18 Daughter	Minyawatalalak	Rakihal mamais	Lakai makaidil	Alak	Maiwalak	
19 Brother		Namah	Nakial	Nigaha	Wawadian	Aloasa
20 Sister		Soadji mamais	Swadzu makaidil	Bi-in	Balibali	Aloasa
21 Uncle	Tama	Baba	Mama			
22 Mother	Ina	Ina	Bubu	Jena	Ina	Nai
23 Father	Ama	Aba	Taina	Dama	Ama	Mau
24 Head	Puno	Punu	Tunuch	Bungu	Tangaro	Oena

ENGLISH.	TSUI-HWAN.	SEK-HWAN.	BU-HWAN.	PEO-HWAN.	PELAM.	FAVORLANG.
25 Eyes	Nasa	Dourik	Dourik	Mata	Mata	Charrina
26 Ears	Sarina	Sangira	Birüt	Tangira	Tangira	Not
27 Nose	Mujing	Mujing	Mohing	Gungus	Antingran	Ranied
28 Mouth	Lulit	Rahal	Koak	Mulut	Indan	Zien
29 Teeth	Nipin	Lipeung	Rupun	Walit	Birbir	Dorren
30 Lips	Bipi	Ruli	Padahung	Babibit	Ashma	Tazira
31 Tongue	Ama	Yohama	Hema	Dahlah	Ashib	Oroboa
32 Chin	Bibi	Waka	Bukului	Taktak	Nishmish	Ri
33 Beard	Bilu	Muduss	Muduski	Gingi	Niin	Arriborribon
34 Throat	Holaho	Bakung	Uduthing	Kuduak	Tango	
35 Neck	Ukan	Haho	Ahing	Tagu	Ayab	Tea
36 Shoulder	Kalafa	Abaha	Abatha	Pario	Asül	Chimotor
37 Arm	Bitrilin	Binangwan	Punguh	Pauk	Shiku	Rima
38 Elbow	Poko	Jiku		Dadukam	Rima	Apillo
39 Hand	Lima	Rima	Tuluding	Kagamus	Timush	Sini apillo
40 Finger	Tokatokash	Kakamua			Atingalan	Aso
41 Thumb	Kuku	Tatudu dzahama	Kukuh	Kalungkung	Ske	Arrabis
42 Finger-nail	Paku	Kalikuh	Turüng	Abu	Tagran	Asiel
43 Breast	Bantat	Yenbeuzeub	Papük	Paa	Paa	Poo
44 Leg	Kalu	Karao	Punguh	Dudu	Shungar	
45 Knee	Kakai	Ilass	Kapal papük	Tintin	Dapal	
46 Foot	Fatfat	Dadapal	Jitio papük	Kagamus	Atangalan	
47 Toe		Kakamudzu karao				
48 Toe-nail	Kaku	Kalikuh karao	Dara	Kalungkung	Danok	Tagga
49 Blood	Tatsom	Damuh		Gama		

ENGLISH.	TSUI-HWAN.	SEK-HWAN.	BU-HWAN.	PEPO-HWAN.	PELAM.	FAVORLANO.
50 Heart	Risi	Babuh	Tama bahak	Abu	Nirangran	Totto
51 Fish	Lotsoo	Alao	Churuk	Tug	Kurao	Zi
52 Deer	Knuan	Luhut	Tamat	Nang	Abiao	Binnam
53 Cow	Kalabas knuan	Balasa noang	Dapa	Loang	Agung	Nampa kokko
54 Hen	Lanao	Pataro	Rouduch	Tahuka	Turko	Mado or Zito
55 Dog	Atu	Wadzu	Hulin	Asu	Shuan	
56 Cat	Kalota	Balan	Niao	Luklao	Aniao	
57 Egg	Kalaso	Batu	Balung	Popak	Abetnum	Rini
58 Bird	Lungfah	Aiam	Bahani	Aiam	Aiam	Mampa
59 Feather	Kopur	Bukuss	Ubal	Ribing	Agumalaia	Chaar
60 Pig	Babui	Baruzak	Babui	Babui	Aliu	Babo
61 Snake	Tsolan	Udzeud	Kuzu	Bulai	Ouan	Man
62 Tree	Kavi	Kahoi	Kahoni	Bukung	Aput	
63 Leaf	Funfun	Kabako kahoi	Hazi kahoni	Haba	Abira	
64 Root	Pila	Hamens	Raparap		Ourat	
65 Flower	Bokai	Tulala		Isib	Sasar	Tullala
66 Fruit	Alentsomai	Madu		Mangus	Sasarn	
67 Grass	Smir	Simur	Shuduli	Uzu	Tarung	Aras
68 Banana	Pidfid	Benlibeul	Belibeul	Dum	Beulbeul	Bilpil
69 Sweet potato	Buna	Dadass	Burga	Tamani	Abua	
70 Rice	Laso	Lasu	Barass	Pak	Abrass	Dasso
71 Salt	Pahar	Pahar	Timu		Aiam	
72 Sugar	Yamadlu	Yamadlu			Aburnan	Tuppoos
73 Water	Tsarnin	Dalom	Kasia	Dalum	Anc	To
74 River	Waklass	Rahong	Dzadzung	Aguang	Brilduan	

ENGLISH.	TSUI-HWAN.	SEK-HWAN.	BU-HWAN.	PEFO-HWAN.	PELAM.	FAVORLANG.
75 Sea	Balakan	Awass	Chilung timu	Bauug	Raliaban	Abas
76 Lake	Kusal	Rumao	Chilung	Udau	Udan	Oetas
77 Rain	Kali	Mudal	Kuzuch	Rabu	Arangit	Raboe
78 Clouds	Barumbun	Rulung	Rulung	Dungdung	Drung	Bioa
79 Thunder	Harbuk	Kurass	Mabarua		Armung	
80 Lightning	Tisat	Malapend	Sassaina	Wagi	Kadao	Sisa
81 Sun	Fural	Lijach	Hidao	Buran	Idass	Idass
82 Moon	Tablatah	Ilass	Idass	Atating akai	Aburan	Baboan
83 Stars	Tatakale	Bintul	Kushun	Matakuh	Atior	
84 Day	Homhom	Liahian	Babien	Madung	Garum	Biini
85 Night	Hesial	Leunian	Lenedeuch		Karao	Marara
86 Light	Minumhom	Püdüsach	Makuun			Maodum
87 Dark	Apui	Seum	Hapunck	Apui	Apui	Chau
88 Fire	Marumun	Hapui	Karengcul	Labu	Ashuban	
89 Smoke	Usila	Adahi	Makaluch		Aabu	Abo
90 Ashes	Malasok	Heuruheur	Harung	Kaiu	Akaoi	Baron
91 Wood	Hudun	Kaboi	Dagizak paru	Bukung	Dinan	Shag
92 Mountain	Fwatu	Binayu	Batunuch	Batu	Barasa	Rato
93 Stone	Bunul	Batu	Banakail	Lapun	Abudük	Bonnad
94 Sand	Tsui	Bunadza	Pilat	Manituk	Apasho	
95 Silver	Baliss	Pilah	Hilui	Mani	Midung	Dippi
96 Iron	Mamanan	Kaba	Sinnadat	Ulut	Tadao	Silok
97 Knife	Snabunan	Tadao	Simbarangan		Akutan	Bottul
98 Spear	Funuss	Dadakuss	Sinnadat kana-	Takaili	Tadao	Tattabba
99 Sword		Matara tadao	dish			

ENGLISH.	TSUI-HWAN.	SEK-HWAN.	BU-HWAN.	PEPO-HWAN.	PELAM.	FAVORLANG.
100 Bow	Spalisan	Buzueh	Bahenek	Kuh	Baknan	
101 Arrow	Pihlat	Rawil	Budi		Timra	
102 Cord	Putut	Sariss	Sinuzuk		Atali	
103 Gun	Putum	Patuss	Halung	Lantu		Atippo
104 Powder	Kafo	Abu patuss	Kabulit			
105 Shot	Pilush	Haidang	Bali			
106 House	Taoun	Huma	Sapah	Hamadung	Aruma	Don
107 Roof	Tafuk	Tilap	Denamuch	Ahub	Karaobuan	
108 Door	Pitao	Rahawanan	Rahengun	Natap	Apitoun	Abak
109 Canoe	Hrutha	Parana	Ashu		Ashudan	
110 Paddle	Parutha	Arupa parana	Tataku		Mainash	
111 Good	Makitan	Reak	Malup	Magani	Inaba	Mario
112 Bad	Makarman	Sadial	Nakach	Mabulin	Inatai	Marapics
113 Sweet	Madabun	Tuhubuss	Sasibuss	Malami	Dalo	Machdo
114 Sour	Makaitho	Marinu	Tabashi	Maagmid	Asun	Mape
115 Bitter	Mahnar	Paijid	Mangihul			
116 Ugly	Mabokanor	Kalialakun	Seschaun	Madidung		
117 Hot		Madalass	Matatiluchidao	Mazalat	Biash	
118 Pretty	Makitan	Kiarun	Mabatunuch	Mabutira		
119 Long	Makurin	Halupass	Kanadish	Mahadat		Matsilo
120 Short	Lush	Ifatikul	Dehaku	Makusing		Mapapa
121 Big	Marawin	Mataru	Paru	Maizang	Matina	Mato
122 Little	Matapun	Tatik	Tikoh	Mausing	Makitung	Maromoromo
123 Round	Makarimosut	Karatich	Mariemuch	Marungneung		
124 Square	Nato	Supadzu kudzuk	Masasaput balai			Tadach
125 Warm	Matala	Mulalap	Matatiluch	Madalat		

ENGLISH.	TSU-HWAN.	SEK-HWAN.	BU-HWAN.	PEPO-HWAN.	PELAM.	FAVORLANG.
126 Cold	Masunlao	Lamik ¹³	Masekuich	Mahaumung	Lituk	Maasumak
127 No	Oa	Koah	Ukach	Akousai	Inian	Pa
128 Yes	Ani	Nahada	Balaiwa	Hai	Amao	Makarics
129 Run (verb)	Mushaida	Mitalam	Matugessa	Mahangai		Micham chatto
130 Smoke	Amakan tamako	Dadohai tamako	Makan tamako			
tobacco						
131 Eat	Amakan	Kakanai	Manakamakan	Input	Amkan	Micham
132 Drink	Mikchla	Dadohai	Nimah	Mudadarang	Tümkür	
133 Walk	Oshumpado	Dzadzakai	Makakaissa	Marisip		
134 Lie down	Masutl	Paharasai	Tarakarak	Mariku		
135 Sleep	Mapushkah	Mudamai	Mata kai	Mapatai	Medüng	Paichasarra
136 Die	Mathai	Purihadai	Mahokal	Madarang	Ua	Macha
137 Go		Mukusa	Musha	Mapunakuli	Alamo	Mbe
138 Come	Ititha	Mopuzah	Maidzach	Pilakuli		
139 Buy	Mushnao	Mobareo		Mirakukuli		
140 Sell	Afario	Mahabaroo		Mangi		
141 Weep	Thmanit	Mangidz	Leminish	Matawa		
142 Laugh	Masana	Mahatan	Mahulish	Ururao		
143 Sing	Makakuyash	Maturai	Mahoyesh	Masasnu		
144 Talk	Matlinula	Makakawasai	Marangao	Muuma		
145 Work	Aran	Maramai	Komopach			
146 Roast	Opushnara	Mohareub	Papurai	Juku		Pasoso
147 Boil	Opintala	Tataluk	Hamangut			Mado
148 Fish	Manitha	Matakapiess				
149 Hunt	Panok	Malup				Maribaribat
150 Fight	Mapathai	Mohazab		Malup		Mapiegh

ENGLISH.	TSUI-HWAN.	SEK-HWAN.	BU-HWAN.	PEFO-HWAN.	PELAM.	FAVOLANG.
151 Red	Makuthla	Lubaheng	Matanach		Mitaran	Makakan
152 White	Maputhi	Risilao	Bahagai		Burnan	Mausi
153 Yellow	Mapulao	Tabarak	Tanachmahabai		Malulu	Chogcho
154 Blue	Madishhun	Mangatah	Masama		Tangia	Matacha
155 Green	Madishhun	Turulich			Miraak	Makosum
156 Black	Makotsam	Turuhcul	Makaluch		Ududüm	Amisan
157 North	(No word)	Amisan	Tungaret		Daia	Soan
158 South	"	Rabahan	Tagacril		Timul	Bayan
159 East	"	Daia	Daia		Ami	Tsipan
160 West	"	Rahud	Hunat		Roud	Mapaa
161 Part	Tatabohat	Daho		Madah		
162 Many	Manasa	Dahohcuheul	Egu	Sasuan		
163 All	Mashta	Dadoa	Kamut	Akousai		
164 Few	Ladado	Inidaho	Bihuk			
165 When	Pandu	Kasain	Kanuan			
166 How many	Lakutha	Haima	Kanahainu			
167 Where		Kaisai	Mua			Posi
168 Who	Kouthan	Ima	Ima			Zhabaan
169 Half	Falfal	Masudzawadz	Chechekach			Natta
170 One	Taha	Adadumat	Kial	Sasab	Sha	
171 Two	Tusha	Dusa	Daha	Duha	Lua	
172 Three	Turu	Turu	Teru	Teru	Tilu	
173 Four	Spat	Supat	Süpüt	Tabat	Pat	
174 Five	Hrima	Hasub	Rima	Turima	Rima	
175 Six	Sturu	Hasubuda	Mafaru	Tununi	Num	Naito
176 Seven	Pitu	Hasubidusa	Pitu	Pitu	Pitu	

ENGLISH.	TSUI-HWAN.	SEK-HWAN.	BU-HWAN.	PEO-HWAN.	PELAM.	FAVORLANG.
177 Eight	Kaspat	Hasubituru	Müsupat	Pipa	Waro	
178 Nine	Tamaso	Hasubisupat		Kuda	Iwa	
179 Ten	Maksim	Issit, Shid	Nahal	Keteng	Pulu	Zehiet

Note.—A more complete idea of the Favorlang numerals may be formed from the following:

Once	Mantas
Twice	Mannawas
Thrice	Mannatorrous
Five times	Mannaspattil
Six times	Mannatapil
Eight times	Mamamaspatil (? Mannamaspatil)
Ten times	Mannateschiet

ART. XV.—*On the Revenues of the Moghul Empire.*

By H. G. KEENE, Esq.

Communicated through the Secretary R.A.S.

IT is not without sincere diffidence that I venture to lay before Oriental scholars the following remarks. It is my misfortune to find myself constrained to oppose the conclusions of one who, when I first took up the question, was the most accepted authority on the subject—the late Edward Thomas. That learned and distinguished man has recorded, in commenting on some former notes of mine (in the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*¹), that I treated the matter in so discursive a way that he was unable to catch my drift. On observing this, I wrote a fresh paper for the Royal Asiatic Society—which has been unfortunately lost—in which I strove to speak out in a manner that should leave no room for misconception. Unhappily Mr. Thomas is no more among us; and one is again in the old difficulty. A hesitating delivery of opinion, which was originally caused by deference to the justly-deserved reputation of the opposing advocate, is now, in a manner, called for by respect for the memory of the departed.

But *magna est veritas*; and the importance of the subject ought to be my excuse for saying that Mr. Thomas over-estimated the Moghul revenues, and supported his estimates by untenable argument. I desire to say it, with unfeigned respect for his great labours; but I submit that, if only my opinion be right, it is one that ought to be expressed. It is not only of scientific importance to know the truth; the

¹ J.A.S.B. July, 1878 (vid. *ibid.* vol. i. pt. i. 1881).

knowledge of it may have an exceedingly great political importance. It thus becomes necessary to state, as concisely as may be, the grounds on which I have been led to make these assertions.

In the first place, Mr. Thomas appears to assume that the rupee of those days is equivalent to two-twentieths of a pound sterling of English currency. Anglo-Indians know too well that such is certainly not now the case; but in point of fact it is only known to have been so during the first sixty years of the current century and a short preceding period when British commerce was beginning to work with weight upon Indian markets. In the reign of Aurangzeb, the last powerful Emperor, we learn from Manucci, the Italian physician, that a revenue of thirty-eight *krors* was at one moment¹ realized, and that this sum was tantamount to five hundred and eighty millions of *livres*. In another place the same writer reports that the rupee was equal to thirty *sols*. So Tavernier, in estimating the value of "The Great Table Diamond," tells us that it was "priced at five hundred thousand rupees, or seven hundred and fifty thousand *livres* of our money." We have then to imagine what proportion to our pound was borne by the French *livre tournois* of that period, one and a half of which formed the equivalent of the rupee.

Fortunately we have, in Justice's *Moneys and Exchanges*, London, 1807, an exact account of the relation between the French and English money of those days.² The pound sterling was "an imaginary sum" not coined, but expressing two hundred and forty pence: and fifty-four pence were equal in exchange to seventy-two *sols*. Hence the "imaginary" pound of two hundred and forty pence was equal to 320 *sols*, or 16 *livres tournois*; or, in other words, the *livre* was the sixteenth part of a pound sterling. Therefore the thirty-eight *krors*—which made Aurangzeb's *maximum* budget—were only equal to £36,250,000; and the ordinary

¹ In 1697.

² The book is in the Bodleian, and I am indebted for its use to the kind information of Mr. Thorold Rogers. Justice gives the values of 1703.

revenue—which was less both before and after—must be reduced proportionally.

India was bimetallic—to some extent at least—in the palmy days of the Moghul Empire. We learn from the *Ain Akbari* that, about the end of the sixteenth century, there was in existence a gold coin (it must have been more in the nature of a stamped ingot, for it weighed $91\frac{1}{4}$ tolas) worth one hundred “round *muhars* each weighing nearly as much as a rupee.” Elsewhere we find that half a tola of gold was worth four rupees. This gives a ratio of 8 : 1, just what was found in Japan when first opened to British commerce in 1860. During the seventeenth century the mines of South America poured silver into Europe, some of which must have found its way into India. According to the table given by Professor Bastable in the *Encyclopædia Britannica*, from 1545 to 1680 the silver currency of Europe was increased by over eleven thousand millions of francs; say four hundred and fifty millions of pounds sterling. Owing to this cause, perhaps—for some of the vast increase must have found Indian channels through Portugal and other countries—the Empire had adopted a silver currency in the time of Aurangzeb.

Next arises the question whether the estimates of our travellers represent the entire yearly receipts of the treasury, or whether they require to be increased—doubled according to Thomas—on account of receipts from other sources beside the land? For the proposed duplication no proof that I know of has ever been adduced. But I do not think that any addition whatever is to be made; and I believe that all legitimate articles of separate revenue are included in the estimates of contemporary Europeans, except where the contrary is distinctly expressed. No doubt more was *paid*, but it was not the revenue of the Empire. Some of the money collected stuck to the hands of the farmers and agents employed in the work. Other payments, in the form of gifts, fines and escheats, took place; but these were not made by the contributory in general, and were rather a part of the King's *peculium*, or Privy Purse, than a portion

of the public fisc. During about half a century there was a poll-tax levied on the Hindus; but there are no means of knowing exactly what amount reached the Treasury under this head. It was probably not above four *krors* of rupees.

I believe, further, that the revenue of the Empire rose, from one cause or another, from ten *krors* of rupees in Akbar's reign to whatever it reached in that of Aurangzeb; and that from about 1697 it again steadily declined. For the former estimate I cite 'Abul Fazl and Nizam-ud-din Ahmad, who were both fiscal officers of the Empire towards the end of Akbar's reign. The one says that all India, as ruled by the Moghul, yielded a revenue of "640 *krors* of *murádi tankas*" annually; and *murádi tanka* is a well-known accountant's way of describing copper coins of which sixty-four went to the rupee.¹ The other, in the *Akbarnáma*, gives detailed statements (which he calls *taqsim-jamas*), the total of which aggregates just under ten *krors*, inclusive of customs. It was to be expected that the two statements should agree; and I can see no reason for doubting that, in point of fact, they do. Coming to the reign of Akbar's son and successor, Jahángir, we are met with the view of a Dutch writer, J. de Laet, who is sometimes cited in support of a higher estimate. On this we need not linger; save to remark that de Laet was a mere compiler who had never been in India, and whose work abounds in errors. Hawkins, who puts the revenues of Jahángir at fifty *krors*, had local knowledge, but he was a mere mariner who is in direct opposition to an educated contemporary. Coryat, the eccentric but highly observant and intelligent Vicar of Odecombe, who was in Hindustan at the same epoch, states distinctly that the income of the Empire was forty millions of crowns of six shillings each, say twelve millions. Hawkins's estimate is from land only;

¹ Thomas is much puzzled by the term *murádi tanka*. But he himself shows elsewhere that the rupee was divisible by 64; and a coin of this value (called *pai* and weighing 100 grains of copper) continued to be struck in the name of the Emperor down to the present century.

which we may see to be extravagant by this one consideration. If a drunken trifler like Jahángir could derive fifty *krors* from land alone, how was it that his avaricious and able successor admittedly raised no more than from twenty-two to twenty-six *krors* from a more extensive area? One contemporary—the author of the *Bádsháhnáma*—puts Sháh Jahan's revenues as low as eighteen *krors*. Thevenot gives the revenue in 1666 as 376,000,000 *livres*; and Ramusio in 1707, after the annexation of the Deccan and the imposition of the poll-tax,¹ at thirty *krors*. It is therefore just possible that, ten years earlier, a maximum budget of thirty-eight *krors* may have been raised, as Manucci believed.

There is this obvious danger in forming excessive estimates on this subject, that we never can tell what nonsense might be stated, in Parliament or by the press, as to the capacity of the country. India is a very poor country, and its people are not represented in the Government. If, therefore, it were really believed that, with all the subsequent fall of money, the British rulers of India did not raise anything like the same (nominal) amount that was raised by the unscientific Turks of two or three centuries ago, pressure might well come, fraught with the most disastrous consequences. It has been laid down that the Moghul revenues rose, at last, to eighty millions of pounds sterling. What that would be equal to in modern money I do not exactly pretend to know. But it would be a sum the attempt to levy which could only end in some form of ruin.

¹ The poll-tax was imposed in 1677, and the Deccan annexed in 1688. These two sources combined may have added eleven *krors* to the revenue of 1666. But the Empire was in disorder by that time.

NOTES OF THE QUARTER.

(March, April, May.)

I. REPORTS OF MEETINGS OF THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY, SESSION 1886-87.

Fifth Meeting, 21st March, 1887.—Col. H. Yule, R.E., C.B., President, in the Chair.

Elections: Messrs. C. Capper and Holt L. Hallett, Resident Members.

After referring to the recent deaths of Sir Walter Elliot and Mr. Alexander Wylie, two distinguished Orientalists, the former of whom had been a member of the Society for about half a century, the President called upon Professor Douglas, in the absence of the author, to read Mr. Colborne Baber's paper on "Nine Formosa MSS." It described a batch of MSS. received from the island of Formosa, and obtained by the Rev. W. Campbell within the last three years, from the Pepohwan tribe, at one of the villages in the low-lying hill region eastward from Taiwanfoo. These Pepohwans had lost all knowledge of the language represented in the documents. They had removed inland to their present settlements some eighty years ago, their own ancestral territory being what was known under the Dutch occupation as the township of Sink-kan, a name still preserved in the large Chinese market-town of Sinkang, about 21 li (7 miles) N.N.E. of the city of Taiwanfoo.—Prof. Terrien de Lacouperie followed Professor Douglas in remarking upon the MSS. described, and read some notes in connection with the subject which, together with Mr. Baber's paper, would be prepared for publication in the Journal.—Sir Thomas Wade, Mr. H. Howorth, M.P., and others took part in the brief discussion which ensued; and the President, before closing the proceedings, expressed the thanks of the meeting to the authors of the papers.

Sixth Meeting, 18th April, 1887.—Col. H. Yule, R.E., C.B., President, in the Chair.

Elections: Professor W. Robertson Smith and Mr. William Simpson, Resident Members; the Rev. A. Sell, Professor Montet, and MM. Henderson and Wheeler, Non-Resident Members.

Professor Henri Cordier was invited to read a brief memoir which he had prepared on the "Life and Writings of Alexander Wylie." As the paper appears *in extenso* in the current number of the JOURNAL, the present Report will be confined to the remarks of speakers on the subject put before the Meeting.—Sir Thomas Wade, being called on by the President, replied that he should indeed feel himself culpable were he to remain silent. The last paragraph of Professor Cordier's memoir, in which the many proofs of the late Mr. Wylie's learning and industry were enumerated, had rendered it unnecessary that more should be attempted in that direction, and had indeed disposed of such matter as it might be deemed was more particularly within the province of the Society. Still, having known Mr. Wylie for upwards of thirty years, he should be unwilling to allow this opportunity to pass of bearing testimony to his possession of those qualities which had helped to make Mr. Wylie's labours so valuable; his courageous truthfulness, his generosity, and his modesty. He was essentially a self-taught man; recoiling before no difficulty; assailing it the moment he conceived that it was expedient to surmount it, with the first means that came to hand; though, commencing so many studies as he did, not in early youth but at a comparatively mature age, it was impossible but that his scholarship should in some instances be defective. Even as a Chinese scholar he is not perhaps to be placed on the first line. But the reader may be always sure that the subject treated of in any work of Mr. Wylie's has been conscientiously explored. The most valuable of his achievements, in Sir Thomas Wade's opinion, was his Notes on Chinese Literature. This is the first introduction to the literature of China of anything like the same extent and importance, and in almost any other country but England would hardly have escaped, if not official recognition, at least academical distinction. That it is less known than it deserves to be, however, is in part due, no doubt, to Mr. Wylie's modesty. He could never bear to hear himself praised without protesting.

Mr. W. Lockhart spoke as follows:—I am deeply interested in having the opportunity to express my admiration for my late friend and colleague, Alexander Wylie, with whom I have always been closely connected from the time, when, in 1846, I received him at

Woosung, and took him and the other friends who had voyaged with him from England, up the river to Shanghai. I fully endorse all that has now been said by M. Cordier and Sir Thomas Wade, and would emphatically commend the "Notes on Chinese Literature" as an indispensable help to all Chinese students. The labour spent on this book was immense, and the more it is known, the more highly will it be estimated. I had the pleasure of introducing Sir Emerson Tennant to Mr. Wylie. Having translated some passages in Chinese books for this gentleman's History of Ceylon, and finding that he needed further research made, I advised him to apply to Mr. Wylie, who signally helped him in completing his very valuable and useful work. In the same way I had the honour of introducing him to you, Mr. President, when for your great work on Marco Polo, you wanted information from Chinese sources, which as you know he so well supplied. In conclusion, I would thank you, Mr. President, for enabling me to express before this Society my feeling of great regard for the memory of one with whom I was so long associated, and whom I sincerely esteemed and loved.

The Very Rev. Dr. Butcher, formerly of Shanghai, added:—When one rises to speak on an Oriental topic in the presence of Sir Thomas Wade, one resembles in temerity the man who lectured on the Art of War in the presence of Hannibal. But I feel that I should be neglecting a duty if I failed to add a tribute to the memory of the distinguished man whom I knew for 17 years in Shanghai. I cannot speak of him so fully as Sir Thomas could do, for he was more closely connected with him than I was, but we were often together at the meetings of the North China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society, and though others more competent than I am can speak to the vastness of his erudition, I yield to none in estimation of his high character, his simplicity, his purity of motive, his deep devotion to duty. I can only say of him as was said of a good man lately taken from us: "There is no marble white enough to form a monument to his memory."

Some feeling words were added by the President, who bore testimony, from his own personal knowledge, to the value of Mr. Wylie's labours, and his worth of character: thanks were then passed to M. Cordier for his interesting memoir.

Seventh Meeting, 2nd May, 1887.—Sir Thomas Wade, K.C.B., Vice-President, in the Chair.

Election: M. Enrico Vitto, Vice-Consul at Aleppo of H.M. the King of Italy, as Non-Resident Member.

Surgeon-General Bellew read selections from a paper which he had prepared for the Society under the title of "Notes on the Names borne by some of the Tribes of Afghanistan." Commencing with the statement that the country now called Afghanistan was hardly known by that name until the establishment of the Afghan monarchy in the middle of the last century, he pointed to the fact that the new kingdom then created by the Abdali chieftain was not called the Afghan kingdom at all. Ahmad Khan Sadozi was crowned at Kandahar, not as sovereign of the nation, but as king of the Duráni people, who, in representing the ancient Drangæ of Drangiana, revived an apparently obsolete name. After referring to the little that was known of the Afghans, and briefly alluding to the increase of our knowledge regarding them and their country through the means of embassies, followed by war, military occupation, and partial annexation of their country, he proceeded to notice the names borne by some of the tribes now found in Afghanistan, offering suggestions for their identification with peoples bearing similar names, of whom mention is made in the works of ancient Greek and Latin authors. Of the two countries spoken of by Herodotus under the name Paetyia, one, on the western borders of Persia, comprised the Armenians, with the contiguous nations as far as the Euxine; the other, on the eastern frontier of Persia, bounded by the Indus,¹ comprised the Sattagydæ, the Dadikæ, and the Aparytæ. From the application of the name to two countries of similar physical conformation, situated at opposite extremes of the Persian empire, he advanced the conjecture that this similarity of geographical aspect possessed in common by both was significative of the meaning of the name itself, and that this notion appeared to be confirmed by the names which these two regions have respectively borne in subsequent times, as well as by the names applied collectively to the inhabitants of each, even up to the present day. Reviving an old discussion carried on by writers in the past century, on the affinity of Afghan and Armenians, Dr. Bellew, moreover, entered into an elaborate definition of the name Afghán as derived from the Armenian Alwán or Albán, written "Aghván," and referred to the close connection which formerly existed between the Eastern and Western provinces of Ancient Persia, as also to the fact that, during the reign of Cyrus, and the reigns of his immediate

¹ Ἀπὸ Πακτυικῆς δὲ, καὶ Ἀρμενίων, . . . τετρακόσια τάλαντα. Herod. Thalia, iii. 93. Also in the same chapter, 102: Ἄλλοι δὲ τῶν Ἰνδῶν Κασπατύρφε τε πόλει καὶ τῇ Πακτυικῇ χώρα εἰσι πρόσσυροι. . .

predecessors and successors, the wholesale transportation of nations and tribes from one part of the empire to another, often remotely distant, was an operation of by no means uncommon occurrence. After a brief notice of the different nations mentioned by Herodotus as comprising the several Satrapies of Persia, the lecturer observed that these names probably referred only to the dominant people in those satrapies with which they were associated, citing as evidence in point a passage in Alexander's history tending to show that there were in those days other tribes amongst the Aparytæ—the modern Afridí—who are not mentioned by the Father of History. The concluding part of the paper was taken up with short notes on tribes supposed to be of Greek descent, and on others representing the Persian inhabitants of the country.

Sir Henry Rawlinson, admitting the pains taken to make good the proposition, stated that he could not recognise the mode in which the conclusions had been reached as convincing, or exemplifying the true principle of appreciation. The subject, however, was one of considerable interest.—Dr. Stein followed with some remarks and illustrations, and thanks were passed to Surgeon-General Bellew for his paper.

Eighth and Anniversary Meeting, 9th May, 1887.—Sir Thomas Wade, K.C.B., Vice-President, in the Chair.

The President's written Address having been read by the Honorary Secretary, and the Report by the Secretary (see page I to VI), the adoption of the Report was proposed by Mr. G. W. Rusden, seconded by Mr. E. Delmar-Morgan, and carried *nem. con.*

Mr. Habib Auth. Salmoné took the opportunity of the discussion opened to say a few words on a subject which he had before touched upon in a paper read to the Society, and printed in the JOURNAL. He expressed the hope that, before long, the movement on behalf of the study of Oriental languages, referred to in the President's address, might have some definite and practical result, like the establishment of a special school or schools on the plan of those so successfully conducted on the continent, or in any other more convenient form. Why, he asked, should there not be in London—connected, if thought advisable, with the Imperial Institute—an Oriental college or school which might be held available to all classes of the community? Would not the founding of such an Institution be a very proper way of commemorating the Jubilee of the Empress of India, and was not this Society peculiarly fitted and qualified to take the lead in a matter of the kind?

Mr. Hyde Clarke continued the discussion, and was of opinion that the Asiatic Society had much in its power for promoting the cause of Oriental research. As regards any scheme to be put in execution with this particular object, he laid stress upon the provision that it should be of a practical character, tending to the pupil's advancement in political and commercial knowledge, as well as in literature.

Sir Henry Rawlinson observed that the Society had always entertained a strong feeling on the advantages of Oriental teaching in England, and its duty would be to support any reasonable measures taken for the formation of an institution like that foreshadowed by the previous speakers. Any suggestion that could be given them on the subject would meet with the most careful attention of himself and colleagues on the Council. This was a wealthy country, and its interests in the East were immense. It seemed strange, therefore, that it should possess no State-recognised institution for promoting the study of Eastern languages and literature. Referring to the then Chairman, as newly elected President of the Society, Sir Henry Rawlinson congratulated the Members on the selection that had been made. He trusted that during the presidency of the distinguished gentleman, whom he was not only satisfied, but proud to see in the post occupied—some distinct move might be made in the direction indicated. He gladly availed himself of this occasion, to wish their new President every success, and to assure him that his Council were prepared to aid him in his task to the utmost of their ability. In conclusion, he expressed a hope that Sir Thomas Wade would leave the Society in a position similar to that which it occupied in olden days, when presided over by intellectual giants; and that it might continue to compete with, if not surpass, other institutions of its class in usefulness and merit.

Sir Thomas Wade said that, in the absence of the retiring President, he would address a few words to the Meeting. He was sure that all present deplored the absence of Colonel Yule, and they could hardly break up without recording their unanimous feeling of regret at his inability to come among them. It was unnecessary for him to recall the many practical merits of Colonel Yule, or to refer to the vast range of his acquirements. His thoroughness, his assiduity, his devotedness to his office and all the duties of life, were well known to all. While one of those distinguished scholars to whom so much is owing by the world at large, he was at the same time a great credit to the land of which he was naturally proud.

Dr. Cust, in proposing a vote of thanks to their late President, observed that Colonel Yule had been constantly called upon to take an active part during his term of office, and the duties he had had to perform were very onerous. He had, however, conducted the work with great advantage to the Society, whose Members must deeply regret the cause of his absence on this occasion.

Mr. H. Howorth, M.P., in seconding the motion, urged that the Society would do well to formulate questions, and send them to be worked out by certain select men in India. He would wish to see it undertake translations from the Russian and other languages. Especially, in conjunction with the Royal Geographical Society, did he think great service might be rendered by this means to the cause of literature.

The vote was cordially and unanimously passed, and the proceedings terminated with the announcement that the Annual Dinner would be held that day in the Criterion at 7.30 p.m.

II. PROCEEDINGS OF ASIATIC OR ORIENTAL SOCIETIES.

Asiatic Society of Bengal, 1st December, 1886.—E. T. Atkinson, Esq., President, in the Chair.

Twenty-eight presentations were announced, and the election of an Associate Member, one death, and two withdrawals notified.

The Philological Secretary exhibited two gold and three silver coins, presented by the Bombay Branch of the R.A.S. The former were stated to be known as the Hun coins of Bijápur, the emblems of which had not been interpreted. They were described as of inferior gold, and had been referred to by Marsden and Tavernier, though neither date nor reign had been assigned. A Report was also read on a find of 405 old coins in the Maldah District—all silver rupees of periods between A.D. 1719 and 1806.

Of the papers read, one was entitled, "On probable Changes in the Geography of the Panjáb and its Rivers," and another, "Notes on Indian Rhynchota."

5th January, 1887.—E. T. Atkinson, Esq., President, in the Chair.

Thirty-two presentations were announced, and a re-election of an ordinary Member, and two withdrawals notified.

The Philological Secretary exhibited four ancient copper coins presented by Kaviráj Shyámal Das of Udaipur, and read a report on 67 round silver rupees, found in the Sagár district, of periods between A.D. 1556 and 1707.

Dr. Rájendralála Mitra read the extract of a letter he had received from Professor Max Müller, asking information as to whether in reference to the word *ekoṭibhāva*, analogies were found in Sanskrit for “the contraction *eka koṭi* into *ekoṭi*,” illustrated in English by *wholly* for *wholely*, and in Latin, by *nutrix* for *nutritrix*. He himself had no hesitation in saying that “the changes by which *eka koṭibhāva* can be reduced to *ekoṭibhāva* cannot be accounted for by any rule, general or special, in the Sanskrit Grammars.” Apart from Grammar, he had “ransacked the wide field of Sanskrit vocables, but with no better result.”

The papers read were a “Note on the Rice-juice sapper of Madras;” an “Account of the Ancient Town of Nagari, apparently the capital of Meywār before Chitor was built,” with three inscriptions attached; a “Brief Account of Tibet,” from “Dsam Ling Gyeshe,” the well-known geographical work of “Lama Tsanpo Nomankhan of Amdo,” and two more in the Natural History Department.

China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society, Shanghai, 30th November, 1886.—Dr. F. Hirth, President, in the Chair.

It was announced that seventeen new Members had been elected since the last meeting.

A paper by Mr. Herbert Allen, under the title, “Is Confucius a Myth?” was read by the Ven. Archdeacon Moule, and provoked a lively criticism. The speakers were the Rev. Ernest Faber, Archdeacon Moule, Dr. Williamson, the Rev. Mr. Muirhead, and Messrs. Ting and Playfair, all clearly believers in the Philosopher’s existence. Notwithstanding the one-sided character of the discussion, the Chairman remarked that the Meeting had been fortunate in hearing the opinions of recognised authorities on the subject mooted. The papers will be found noted among the contents of the Society’s Journal.

16th December, 1886.—Dr. R. A. Jamieson, Vice-President, in the chair. After notification of the election of four new Members, a paper was read by Dr. D. J. Macgowan on “Chinese Guilds or Chambers of Commerce and Trades Unions.” Some notion of its merits may be obtained from the laudatory observations of the speakers in the discussion which followed the reading, one of whom said: “All would agree that a more interesting paper had not been read before the Society for many years. It was such papers as Dr. Macgowan’s that they would like more particularly to have in the Society.” A vote of thanks to the author was

carried by acclamation, and reference made by the Chairman to the instructive remarks it had elicited from other members present. Further allusion to it will be made in the notice of the Shanghai Journal.

Société Asiatique, Paris, 14th January, 1887.—M. E. Rénan, President, in chair. After the election of seven new Members, M. Halévy gave some account of the Semitic word *raṭan*; M. Berger communicated the results of his investigation of the Neo-Punic inscription of Altiburos; and M. Pognon described a Punic inscription on an ancient dish found at Tripoli, in Barbary, the authenticity of which he had no reason to doubt.

11th February, 1887.—M. E. Rénan, President, in the chair. Three new Members were elected. M. Berger traced an apparent analogy between a Neo-Punic inscription recently discovered at Delos with that presented at the last meeting by M. Pognon, M. Halévy dwelling on a particular word he had himself interpreted in the former. The result of his further studies of this class of inscriptions was also stated by M. Berger.

11th March, 1887.—M. E. Rénan, President, in the chair. The death was notified of M. l'Abbé Girard, a scholar who had published a translation of the Psalms from the Hebrew text, and left a manuscript rendering of the Rig Veda from the Sanskrit. M. Oppert presented the translation of a Babylonian tablet of Nabuchodonosor regarding a slave named Barichel. M. Graff made a statement on the formation of Egyptian proper names; and further communications were addressed to the meeting by M. Clermont Ganneau, M. Zotenberg, and M. Berger.

III. CORRESPONDENCE.

1. *Buddhist Remains at Guṇṭupalle.*

MASULIPATAM, *5th March, 1887.*

SIR,

The following note on newly-discovered Buddhist remains may interest the readers of the Royal Asiatic Society's Journal:—

The Ordnance Survey Map of the Godāvāri District of the Madras Presidency shows a group of hills about twenty miles north of Ellore, a large town situated between the Godāvāri and Kṛishṇā Rivers, just at the spot where the irrigation areas of both rivers meet, and a few miles north of the large drainage lake known

as the Kōlēru (*Anglicé Colair*). On the west side of a small ravine running upwards into these low hills from the cultivated plain is a group of rock-cut remains, regarding which very little has as yet been made known to the public. So far as I am aware, nothing was known of them till 1881, when I alluded to them in my *Lists of Antiquities, Madras* (vol. i. pp. 35, 36), the only information at my disposal being the following. A native correspondent first wrote of some remains at Guṇṭupalle, stating that there was a temple here cut into the hill-side. "The roof of the temple was so artfully carved as to form rafters and reepers. In the centre of the temple there is a square stone pavement of four yards length and one yard height. On this pavement there is a dome of one yard and a quarter height; a *liṅgam* was constructed on this dome. On each side of the temple at distances of 100 and 70 yards the hill was cut into walls and halls of forty yards length and six yards breadth. In one of these halls there is a small cave through which the water with which the *liṅgam* has been bathed is said to have come formerly. There is a Hindu festival here every year at the *Śivarāṭtri*." To this I added the note: "From the description given above it might fairly be conjectured that the remains are those of a rock-cut Buddhist monastery and *chaitya*, with a Dāgoba in the centre of the latter under a vaulted roof. At any rate it should be carefully examined." Shortly after this I received a letter from Dr. W. King of the Geological Survey, telling me of some remains at Nāgalapalle, in the same range of hills. His description led me in my *Lists* to enter the remains as different from those at Guṇṭupalle, but I afterwards came to the conclusion that the place he referred to was the same as that at Guṇṭupalle, and personal inspection shows that it was so. The confusion arose from the temple being located by different writers in different villages.

On my return to duty, after furlough, in October of last year, having been posted to the Kṛishṇā ("Kistna") District, I took advantage in the Christmas holidays to see these temples for myself. Inspection proves the group to be, as was supposed, pure Buddhist, and though it is probably of no architectural importance, being merely a *replica* of well-known forms further north, its interest lies in the fact that it is the only group of the kind yet known to exist in the Madras Presidency. As the mere fact of its existence at a point so far South may interest the readers of the Royal Asiatic Society's Journal I have put together these few notes regarding it. My friends Mr. W. C. de Morgan and Mr. H. Moss, both skilled in engineering

work, very kindly drew the plans, while I made the accompanying rough sketches, in the hope that by means of these crude illustrations, all doubt as to the nature of the remains in question might be removed. [See Illustrations 1 and 2 attached.]

Guṇṭupalle is a small village in a very out-of-the-way tract, the route to which runs along a road north of Ellore for twenty-one miles to the old foot of Kāmavarapukōṭa (fair tope for camping) and thence, on a village field-path five miles due west to the base of a line of low hills which forms the southern boundary of a somewhat extensive patch of forest-land. The ravine already mentioned leads from the plain northwards into the forest, and is shut in by a ridge that connects the two scarps. Ascending a rough rocky stairway at the head of the little ravine, the visitor turns to the left and finds himself in front of the *Chaitya* cave. This is a small circular chamber, with a simple façade somewhat resembling the more elaborately decorated "Lomas Rishi" cave in Behar,¹ but with one striking difference. The jambs of both inner and outer doorways of that cave slope outwards from top to bottom; here the inner door-jambs slope inwards from the top, following the curve of the outer horse-shoe arch in its lower half, while the outer door-jambs are perpendicular. Above the inner door is a projecting roof-like member, similar to that in the Lomas Rishi and other caves.

The chamber is circular, having a domed roof with sixteen deep ribs and three concentric bands, apparently intended to represent the under-side of the sacred umbrella. Occupying almost the entire space of the chamber, and leaving a space of only one foot and a half width all round, for *pradakṣhaṇa*, is the dagoba, seven feet high. On its summit is, as described by my native correspondent, an object resembling a *liṅga*. This may be accounted for in two ways. It is, perhaps, possible that the Tee in this case was not a portion of the dagoba itself, cut out of the solid rock, but that it was lifted to the summit of the dagoba on occasions of ceremony, and held in its place by this solid stone pin. On the other hand, it is remarkable that in one of the Tūljā Lēṇa group of Buddhist remains near Junnār,² to which group Dr. Burgess especially likens these Guṇṭupalle caves, one of the chaityas presents,

¹ Fergusson's *History of Indian and Eastern Architecture*, p. 109. *Cave Temples of India* (Fergusson and Burgess), p. 39.

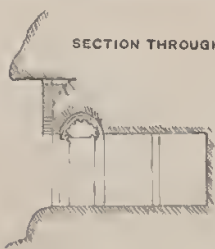
² *Indian Antiquary*, vol. vi. p. 33, *Memorandum on the Buddhist Caves at Junnār* (Burgess).



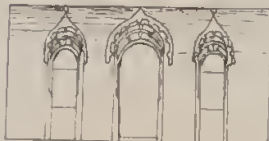
VIHARA CAVES AT GUNTUPALLE GODAVARI DISTRICT.

SECTION THROUGH A B

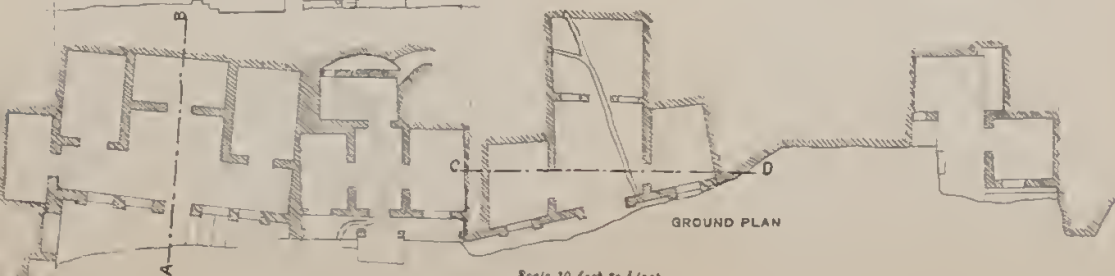
SECTION THROUGH C D



ELEVATION OF PART.



ELEVATION OF PART.



GROUND PLAN

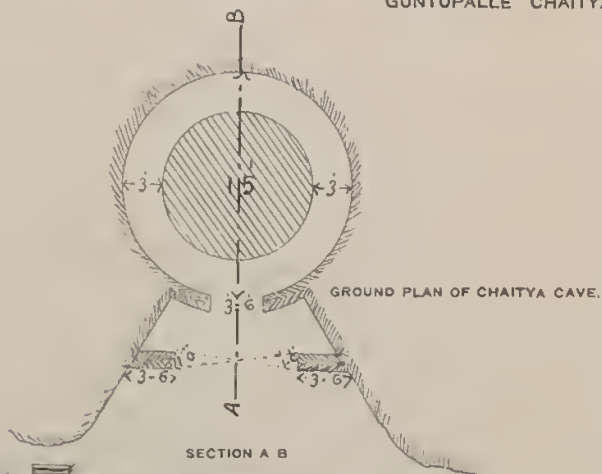
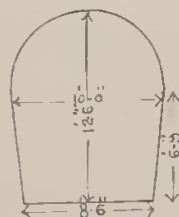
Scale 10 feet to 1 inch.



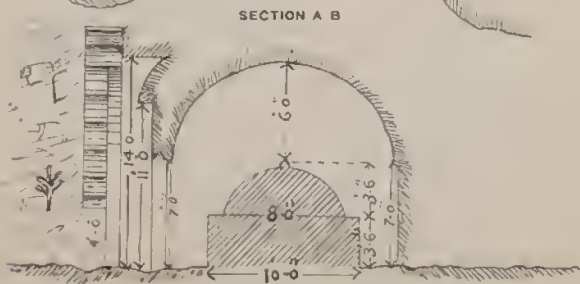
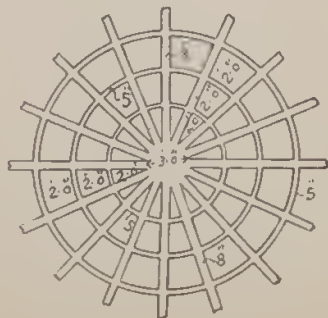


GUNTUPALLE CHAITYA CAVE.

OUTLINE OF ARCH
OF FRONT (FACADE) OF
CHAITYA CAVE.



ARRANGEMENT OF CIRCULAR RIBS OF ROOF
ABOVE OAGABA IN CHAITYA CAVE.



apparently a similar peculiarity, which is thus described in the *Cave Temples of India* (p. 252). "The dagoba is perfectly plain but its capital has been hewed off to convert it into a huge *liüga* of Siva, and even the dome is much hacked into, while some of the pillars have been notched and others broken." Whatever be its origin, the object at Guṇṭupalle is undoubtedly now-a-days worshipped as a *liüga*, and is supposed to have a peculiar efficacy in cases of barrenness.

Just outside this *chaitya* cave lies the ruined base of a structural dagoba of a few feet diameter. To the south is an extensive cutting which bears traces of its having been originally a group of cells, the partition walls of which have been cut away.

In the north lies a series of *Vihara* caves, plan and elevation of which are roughly given in the illustration. There are four sets of cells, consisting each of an entrance hall with chambers at the sides. Doors and windows are uniformly surmounted by the horse-shoe ornament. In the cells are stone benches. Some doorways were apparently closed with wooden doors. In one place is a short inscription of two lines, the letters of which have been much defaced. The characters may be of about the first century A.D. or a little later. In two places are rock-cut channels leading outwards from a crack in the rock at the back of the cells.

Passing beyond this group of cells up a rough path the visitor arrives on the summit of the ridge that shuts in the ravine on the north. Here the jungle is thick, but it is plain that the remains are extensive. There are quantities of massive bricks. In one place apparently stood a dagoba or stupa surrounded by pillars, several of which are still standing, while others are to be seen fallen amongst the grass. Along the ridge, it would seem, stood a row of dagobas neatly constructed of cut stone. The bases still remain. Some of the pillars are carved in a simple style. All about lie fragments of carved stones, and debris; while, about the centre of the ridge is a large brick *stupa* in very fair preservation.

Such is a rough account of the remains at Guṇṭupalle. We refrained from any excavations or other interference, and I am therefore unable to describe more than what appears on the surface. It remains for the Archæological Survey fully to report on the monument.

R. SEWELL.

The Secretary of the Royal Asiatic Society.

2. *Tsuh fu*.

BRITISH MUSEUM, 6 June, 1887.

SIR,

Professor Beal, in a note to his article on "The Buddhist Pilgrim Fa-hien," in the last number of this Society's Journal, writes, by a *lapsus calami*, in reference to the passage in which Fa-hien describes the dimensions of the statue of Maitreya Bodhisattva, "Professor Douglas has pointed out that the Chinese symbol *kea* is equivalent to *fu* the instep." As this statement is likely to lead to misunderstandings, perhaps you will allow me to state what I did say. I pointed out that in the passage referred to—然後乃成像, 長八丈, 足趺八尺—the expression 足趺 *tsuh fu* means the instep of the foot; the symbol 趺 being equivalent to 跗. This I affirmed on the authority of (1) K'ang-hi's standard dictionary, of (2) the *Pei wän yun fu*, and (3) of its use in this sense in the early literature of the country.

(1.) Under the character 趺 K'ang-hi says that 趺 is equivalent to 跗—"與跗同." He then quotes the phrase 白華絳趺, and appends the note "趺與跗同," i.e. 趺 is equivalent to 跗.

(2.) So completely do the compilers of the *Pei wän yun fu* consider the characters identical that they arrange the examples of their uses under the one character 趺.

趺, then, is the equivalent of 跗; and 跗 we are told by K'ang-hi is "the upper part of the foot"—"足上也," or "the back of the foot"—"足背也." It is otherwise expressed in the commentary on the ancient medical work, the *Ling ch'u king*, as "the face of the foot"—"足面爲跗." 足跗, then, means "the instep," and is commonly used in that sense. But 跗 is equivalent to 趺, therefore 足趺 is the instep.

And (3) I find it used in this sense in the following passages in the *Hou Han Hwa t'o chung ts'ang king* "足趺趾踵膝如斗十日須知難保守" i.e. "When the instep, the toes, the heel and the knee are like a bushel measure [i.e. so swollen as to form a round mass], ten days [of life], it should be known, will be with difficulty preserved." And again "足趺乃胃經所行之處," "The instep is the place to which the stomach artery goes."

Another rendering has been suggested for *Tsuh fu* in the above

passage, viz., "at the base from knee to knee of the crossed legs," but as this would make a seated cross-legged figure ten times as high as the space between the points of the knees, it is obvious that Fā-hien cannot have intended to give the expression any such acquired meaning. Besides, the literal translation of the words is all that is required to make their significance perfectly plain. In the several Greek and Buddhist statues which I have measured, I find the proportion of the instep to the height of the figure to be the same as that given by Fā-hien, viz. one-tenth. And anatomically this is correct.

ROBERT K. DOUGLAS.

The Secretary of the Royal Asiatic Society.

IV. OBITUARY NOTICES.

Only in the second year of his membership, the Society has to regret the loss of Dr. *José Nicolau da Fonseca*, President of the Sociedade dos Amigos das Letras in Goa, a Portuguese gentleman of considerable literary attainments. His death occurred before the close of last year, but was not notified for some months later. An instructive volume from his pen, containing "an historical and archæological sketch of the city of Goa," was presented to the Library of the Society by the author, through our late President, Colonel Yule.

Alexander Wylie.¹—It is with deep regret we record the death of Mr. Alexander Wylie, whose name is well known, both in Europe and the United States, wherever the Chinese language has been studied. One of the most modest and unobtrusive of men, he was at the same time persevering and earnest, as well as intelligent in carrying out all work in which he was engaged, whether in the study or the printing office; and it was the combination of these qualities that won for him the regard and esteem of all who knew him, and enabled him to do the large amount of work he accomplished, both in China and afterwards in England. He was also an unselfish man, always desiring to help others in every way that was possible; and many are under great obligations to him, in respect especially to philological work. He was born on the 6th April, 1815, in London; to which city his father had come from Scotland, towards the close of the last century, settling in business in Drury Lane. He was educated partly in Scotland,

¹ Communicated by W. Lockhart, Esq.

where his early life was spent, and partly in London. Apprenticed, when old enough, to a cabinet maker, he passed, while in this business, some months at Hatfield, restoring the library at Hatfield House, which had been considerably damaged by a fire. He was also much engaged in seeking out and selecting old carvings in wood, and travelled in Germany and France, in pursuit of objects of this character; afterwards recombined and formed into various articles of beauty and taste. In speaking of Mr. Wylie, it is impossible to separate his religious life from his ordinary life, as with him religion was at all times the inspiring motive.

At this time he became a member of the Church of Scotland, attending the place of worship in Crown Court. Having entertained a strong desire to go to China, presumably as a missionary, he devoted himself assiduously to the study of Chinese. Dr. Legge, alluding to this part of our friend's life, says that he called on him in 1846 wishing to obtain more guidance in the prosecution of the knowledge of that language, and in the course of conversation it transpired, that having obtained at a book stall Prémare's *Notitia Linguae Sinica*, he had learned Latin so as to be able to understand it, and had become deeply interested in the subject. He afterwards obtained a New Testament in Chinese, and endeavoured with much success to gain a knowledge of the meaning of its characters. He also put together in the form of a vocabulary all the words he had so laboriously acquired, and the little dictionary thus formed is a relic of great interest, and is reverently kept as a testimony of his untiring assiduity. It so happened that the Delegates of various English and American Missionary Societies were engaged on what is called the Delegates' Version of the New Testament in Chinese, the British and Foreign Bible Society having engaged to print the book. Dr. Legge was anxious to procure the services of a man to take charge of the London Missionary Society's printing office in Shanghai, where the work was to be done, and eventually Mr. Wylie was engaged and sent to the office of Sir Charles Reed, to study printing for several months, preparatory to his going to China as the paid agent of the London Missionary Society. The printing of the Sacred Scriptures, however, was done at the cost of the Bible Society, and from 1855 to 1861 that Society paid Mr. Wylie's salary. He left England April 6, 1847; arrived at Shanghai August 26, 1847, and at once entered on the work of the printing office.

He was married to Miss Mary Hanson in 1848. She had been a

missionary in Kaffirland for seven years, but had been obliged to return to England on account of the war. She followed Wylie to China, and they were married at Shanghai, but she died the following year, 1849, leaving him with a daughter a few days old, who was early sent to England to the care of relatives. About 1860 he was the means, in conjunction with the Rev. Dr. Edkins, of establishing at Shanghai the local branch of the Royal Asiatic Society, at whose meetings he read a number of valuable papers, on various subjects in which he was deeply interested, as the list of his writings appended sufficiently testifies. He left Shanghai in November, 1860, arriving in England in February, 1861. In 1863 he returned to China as the agent of the Bible Society, for the organization of plans to forward the circulation of the Sacred Scriptures in Chinese throughout the country. He travelled by way of St. Petersburg through Siberia to Peking. On arriving at Peking he was asked by Mr. Lockhart what he thought of the inscription on the Archway in the pass at Kiu-yung kwan, in which he had formerly been so much interested. He said he did pass through an archway, in the dusk of the evening, but did not notice the inscription on the walls, and was much astonished that he should thus unconsciously have passed through the place he had so long wished to see. Letters had been sent to Kiachta, to tell him exactly the position of the place, but they had missed him. The first thing he did was to get men to return with him to obtain rubbings of the Inscription, a work which after great exertion, then, and on a later visit in 1867, with the help of Dr. Edkins, was successfully accomplished. These form the series of the Kiu yung kwan Inscriptions, now in the British Museum, and which are described in the paper for the R.A.S. on this subject, the title of which is in the List. Wylie was the first Englishman of our time who came to Peking viâ Russia and Siberia. He arrived at Shanghai in November, 1863, and spent the next fourteen years in the service of the Bible Society. His head-quarters during this period were there with his friends, the Rev. Wm. Muirhead, and Rev. J. Thomas, but he took extensive journeys into the interior, arranging his work, and also twice visited Japan. In 1868 he took a long journey, in company with the Rev. Griffith John, through the then almost unknown provinces of Hoopih, Sze-chuen, and Shensi. In this way at various times, he travelled in seventeen of the eighteen Provinces of China, carrying on his work as long as possible, both by personal effort, and by superintending and directing the labours of several foreigners and

natives connected with him; and what he undertook was thoroughly and effectually done.

In 1877, on account of failure of eyesight, Wylie returned to England, and, retiring from active labour, settled at Hampstead, where he resided till his death. His daughter, who now for the first time found a home with him, was his nurse, companion, and helper during all the time of his blindness and illness.

He was taken ill in 1883, became totally blind, and gradually very feeble, and for the last two years was entirely confined to his room. He was always placid and cheerful, and did not suffer pain. Towards the last his mind used to wander very much, and generally reverted to the active scenes of his earlier life. He peacefully died February 6th, 1887.

Sir Thomas Wade writes: "A better man I think I never knew, whether in what he laid down to be done, or what he did in his own province of Sinology. In both Bibliography and Archæology he was greatly valued, and I have heard scholars of note admit their obligations to him. Colonel Yule is perhaps the one of whom I am thinking more particularly. I wish thus to show my respect and regard for the man himself." Dr. Legge, after eulogising his various writings, concludes by saying: "In social life he was eminently blameless, and helpful to very many, never seeking his own things, but only the promotion of the great object to which he had consecrated his life. He made many friends, and not a single enemy. Few have more fully realised the ideal of a self-made man." Of him it might truly be said, as of Nathaniel, the Israelite, that he was one "indeed in whom was no guile." He was faithful and true to his Christian profession, whilst occupying a foremost rank as a Chinese scholar.

WORKS IN CHINESE AND TRANSLATIONS.

Arithmetic for the Young, 1853.

De Morgan's Algebra, 1858.

Loomis's Geometry and Differential and Integral Calculus, 1859.

Euclid's Elements of Geometry. The first six books were translated by Père Ricci, and the others by Mr. Wylie, completing the work, 1865.

Herschel's Outlines of Astronomy, 1874.

Whewell's Elementary Treatise on Mechanics, 1867, Translation of.

Treatise by Maine and Brown on the Marine Steam Engine, 1871.

CATALOGUE OF WORKS BY MR. WYLIE RELATING TO CHINA AND THE EAST.

Translations of the Ts'ing-wan-ke-mung; a Chinese grammar of the Manchu Tartar language, 8vo. Shanghai, 1855.

Memorial of Protestant Missionaries, 8vo. 1867, Shanghai.

Notes on Chinese Literature, 4to. Shanghai, 1867; a most valuable work, and the one by which Mr. Wylie is best known in Europe, and of service to all Chinese students, containing the best catalogue raisonné of the Imperial Library extant.

Edited Chinese Buddhism for his friend Rev. Dr. Edkins.

Memoranda of Journey to the Yellow River in 1857.

Account of the Ancient Mongolian Bronze Astronomical Instruments in the Peking Observatory, 1878.

A long article on China and Chinese Literature for the *Encyclopædia Americana*, in 50 pages.

On an Ancient Inscription in Chinese and Mongol from a Stone Tablet at Shanghai. Read before the N.C.B.R.A. Society, May 21st, 1855.

Sur une Inscription Mongole en Caractères Pa-sse-pa, par Mr. A. Wylie (traduit de l'Anglais par G. Pauthier), 1862, C.B.R.A.

On an Ancient Inscription in the Nen-chih Language, Shanghai, May, 1858.

Remarks on Some Impressions from a Lapidary Inscription at Kin-yung-kwan on the Great Wall near Peking. Facsimiles exhibited May 6th, 1864.

Translations and Remarks on an Ancient Buddhist Inscription at Kiu-yung-kwan, in North China. Royal Asiatic Society, December, 1870.

Recherches sur l'Existence des Juifs en Chine.

Eclipses Recorded in Chinese Works.

Itinerary of Journey through the Provinces of Hoo-pih, Sze-chuen and Shen-si with Rev. Griffith John in 1868.

The Overland Journey from St. Petersburg to Peking, 1863.

Nov. 1st, 1865. A Letter giving an account of a Journey, when he was attacked by Pirates, and another Letter on a Journey from Hankow to Ching-too, and the Return Journey from Ching-too to Hankow.

Notice of Seu Kwang-ke.

The Nestorian Tablet in Se-gan-Foo.

Itinerary from Wang-kea-Yung at the Yellow River to Peking.

Notes on Embassies; also papers translated from Chinese on the Interviews of Foreign Envoys. On Extension of Privileges in Chiua, and Chinese Manifesto for the Extermination of Barbarians.

Chinese Coins of the Ta-tsing, or present Dynasty of China, a most valuable contribution to the subject treated.

Statistics of Protestant Missions in China, Dec. 31, 1863, and also for 1864.

Chinese Chronological Tables.

An Article in the *North China Herald*, May 14th, 1859.

A Review of Dr. Eitel's Handbook for the Students of Chinese Buddhism.

A Review of Dr. Edkins' China's Place in Philology.

The Siberian Route to China (*Times*, Aug. 26, 1864).

To Peking via Siberia (*Pall Mall Gazette*).

A Review of a Book of Chinese Drawings brought from Peking by Mr. Thompson.

A Review of a Chinese and English Vocabulary in the Pekinese Dialect by George Carter Stent.

The Bible in China, pamphlet, 1868. An interesting though brief account of Christian work in China, from the earliest times, going back to the Nestorians, and finally describing the method of the translation of the Sacred Scriptures into Chinese, and the plans for the circulation of the same throughout the country.

Paper on the Israelites in China in vol. i. *Chinese and Japanese Repository*, 1863-4.

Various other short papers were written for the *Chinese Recorder*, *North China Herald*, *Shanghai Courier*, and other periodicals.

(A review.) On Rondot's Notice du Vert de Chine. A translation of a Custom House Proclamation.

Papers on Competitive Examinations and Magnetic Elements in China.

General Statement respecting Affairs at Nan-king (translation of a placard).

- History of the Treaty between China and Russia from the *Shing-woo-ke*, or Wars of the Manchus, by Wei-yuen of *Shaou-yang* (translated).
 Supplementary Remarks on Russian Affairs, from the same author as above.
 The Subjugation of *Chaou Seen* (Corea). A paper read at the Italian Congress of Orientalists in September, 1878.
 The Catalogue of the London Mission Library.
 Imperial Despatch on the British Proclamation regarding the Rebellion.
 Notice on New Mathematical Works.
 Memoire traduit de l'Anglais par M. l'Abbé Th. Blanc. et annoté par M. G. Pauthier. (Extrait des Annales de Philosophie Chretienne, Nos. 50 et 51, Fevrier et Mars, 1864.) (Chinese and Japanese Repository, vol. i. Nos. 1 and 2, July and August, 1863).
 Translation of Whewell's Elementary Treatise on Mechanics, 5th October, 1867. (A review or introduction of Dr. Edkins' translation.)
 Translation of Euclid's Elements, Book VII. to Book XV. (Introductory letter.)

The last work on which he was engaged was the History of the Han Dynasty in two portions. The first, on the Tseen Han Shoo, is the history of China, during the two centuries before Christ by Pan Koo. The first and second chapters are about the Heung-noo, whose ancestor was the great Yu founder of the Hia Dynasty. They were a nomad race, probably the ancestors of the Eastern Turks.

The other chapters deal with the tribes of South and South-Western China and Corea, also Thibet, Yarkand, Khotan, and Kashgar. This volume is complete, and appeared in the Anthropological Society's Journal.

The History of the How (or After) Han embraces the period A.D. 25 to 220, and takes up the history where the Tseen Han left it, written by Fan-ye; it treats of the tribes and nations on the North-East seaboard of China, and the territory now known as Manchuria and Corea. Also of the subjugation of the various tribes in the South, bringing them under the control of the rulers of China. Three chapters have been published in Monsieur Cordier's *Revue de l'Extrême Orient*, 1882. The fourth chapter, treating of Western regions, Rome and India, also of the introduction of Buddhism into China, is finished in manuscript, and it is hoped that the whole may yet be published in one volume.

As an instance of the indomitable perseverance of Mr. Wylie, it is thought suitable to give briefly an account of the way in which the above was written during his constantly increasing blindness. The first part of the Tseen Han was written in China, and as he was very desirous of completing the second part, he taught his daughter to find characters in the dictionary.

As his blindness increased, she wrote characters she could not find in the dictionary in large size, and he tried to recognize them

with more or less success; but by and bye, when he became quite blind, she had to draw the characters on his hand, and he would thus manage to find out what they were. When a certain number had been found, she would read them out altogether, and he translated the sentence, and she then wrote it down. In this way the chapters were translated, at the rate of two pages of Chinese text a day, as often as he was well enough to work.

Any Chinese scholar can easily understand how difficult it must have been for a blind man thus to translate a work such as that above described.

We have to record with great regret the death of *Sir Walter Elliot*, K.C.S.I., LL.D. and F.R.S.,¹ for half a century a Member of this Society, which occurred at Wolfelee, near Hawick, on the 1st of March last. An obituary notice would have appeared in the last number of this Journal, had the time available admitted of the preparation of such an account of the leading facts of his career as appeared to be called for, alike by his distinguished public services, and by the literary and scientific work which formed one of the chief interests in his busy and useful life.

Walter Elliot was born in Edinburgh on the 16th January, 1803. He was the son of James Elliot, of Wolfelee, Roxburghshire, a member of a junior branch of the old Border family of Elliot of Lariston, and through his mother, Caroline Hunter, he was a great-grandson of the Earl of Cromartie, who forfeited his title and estates in 1745. Walter Elliot's early education was conducted, partly in Cumberland by the Rev. James Traill, afterwards a Government Chaplain in the Madras Presidency, and partly at home under a private tutor, after which he spent some years at a school at Carr House, near Doncaster, under the Rev. P. Inchbald, D.D. In 1818 he was sent to Haileybury College, having obtained a writership in the service of the East India Company at Madras. He reached India on the 14th June, 1821, and two years later was appointed to the public service, after having been granted the honorary reward of 1000 pagodas for proficiency in the Tamil and Hindustani languages. His first appointment appears to have been that of Assistant to the Collector and Magistrate of Salem; but very shortly afterwards he was transferred to the Southern Mahratta country, then administered by the Government of Madras, and was appointed an Assistant to the Principal Collector and Political Agent, Mr. St. John Thackeray, continuing to serve in the Southern Mahratta country,

¹ Communicated by Sir A. Arbuthnot, K.C.S.I.

chiefly at Dhárwár, until 1833, when he returned to England on furlough. In the first year of his service in that part of India, he was present at the insurrection at Kittúr, when the Political Agent, Mr. Thackeray, and three officers of a troop of Madras Horse Artillery, sent there to maintain order, and a large number of the men, were killed; Walter Elliot and Stevenson, a brother Assistant, being made prisoners, and detained for several weeks in the hands of the insurgents, at great peril of their lives. In the latter part of Elliot's service in the Southern Mahratta country, that territory, which it had been intended to retain under the Madras Presidency, was annexed permanently to Bombay, and Elliot, in the ordinary course, would have been re-transferred to a Madras district, but at the special request of Sir John Malcolm, then Governor of Bombay, he was allowed to remain until he left India on furlough. During the nine years that he spent in the Bombay Presidency, Elliot made several journeys in Western India, meeting Mr. Mountstuart Elphinstone at Sattára in 1826, and Sir John Malcolm at Bījapúr in 1828. He also made a tour in Gujarát in 1832. Leaving Bombay on the 11th December, 1833, in company with Mr. Robert Pringle, of the Bombay Civil Service, he returned to Europe by way of the Red Sea, landing at Kosseir, and riding across the Egyptian desert to Thebes, whence, taking the Nile route as far as Cairo, he crossed into Palestine, and was present in company with the late Hon. Robert Curzon, the author of 'The Monasteries of the Levant,' at the exhibition of the Holy Fire in the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, when so many people were killed (Curzon's *Monasteries of the Levant*, ch. 16). After visiting Constantinople, Athens, Corinth, Corfu and Rome, he reached England on the 5th May, 1835. In the autumn of the following year he again embarked for India as Private Secretary to his relative, Lord Elphinstone, who had been appointed Governor of Madras, and the remainder of his Indian service was spent in the Madras Presidency. In conjunction with the Private Secretaryship, he held the appointments of Member of the Board of Revenue and of Translator to Government in the Canarese language, officiating as Secretary to Government in the Revenue Department during the last few months of Lord Elphinstone's government.

During the years immediately succeeding Lord Elphinstone's retirement from the Government, which took place in 1842, Elliot was employed upon the ordinary duties of a member of the Board of Revenue; but in 1845 he was deputed to investigate the condition of Guntúr, one of the districts commonly known as the

Northern Sirkárs, where there had been a serious falling off in the revenue and a general impoverishment of the people, caused, as Elliot's inquiries proved, by the wasteful extravagance and extortion of the Zemindárs, and by the malversation of the native revenue officials, over whose proceedings a very inadequate supervision had been exercised by the English revenue officers of the district. Elliot's recommendations, involving, amongst other matters, a complete survey and reassessment of the district, and the permanent resumption of the defaulting Zemindariés—which had been already sold for arrears of revenue, and bought in by the Government—were sanctioned, although upon terms less liberal to the Zemindars than Elliot had proposed, and at the instance of the Court of Directors, who pronounced a high encomium upon the ability with which he had conducted the Guntúr inquiry, he was appointed Commissioner, with the powers of the Board of Revenue in all revenue matters, for the administration of the whole of the Northern Sirkárs. In this responsible charge he remained until 1854, when he was appointed by the Court a member of the Council of the Governor of Madras. He finally retired from the Civil Service and left India early in 1860.

As a member of the Council, Elliot's duties, though not more arduous, were of a more varied character than those which had devolved upon him as a Revenue officer. While necessarily devoting much time and attention to, and bringing his long experience to bear upon, the important revenue questions which came before the Government from time to time, there were many other subjects of great public interest with which he was required, and was eminently qualified, to deal. Among these were the question of the education of the natives of India, and such matters as the relations of the British Government in India with Christian Missions on the one hand, and with the religious endowments of the Hindus and Muhammadans on the other hand. With the natives he had throughout his service maintained a free and friendly intercourse, recognizing the many good qualities which they possess, and ever ready to promote measures for their benefit. Among those whom he regarded as valued and trusted friends, there was more than one native gentleman, with whom he had been associated either in his official duties or in his literary and scientific researches. Native education was a subject to which Elliot had paid considerable attention when Private Secretary to Lord Elphinstone, under whose Government the first practical measures were taken for imparting

instruction in Western literature and science to the natives of the Madras Presidency, and during the intervening years he had lost no opportunity of manifesting a warm interest in native schools. He had also been, throughout his Indian life, a cordial friend, and, in his private capacity, a generous supporter of Christian Missions. One of the most valuable minutes recorded in the Council in connection with the working of the celebrated Education Despatch of 1854, and especially in connection with the development of the Grant-in-Aid System, of which he was a staunch advocate, proceeded from Elliot's pen. While Senior Member of Council, it devolved upon him, owing to the illness of the Governor, Lord Harris, to preside on the occasion of the public reading at Madras of the Queen's Proclamation, issued on Her Majesty's assumption of the direct Government of India.

Valuable as he was as a public servant, the branch of Elliot's work which has a special interest to the members of this Society is that with which he occupied the greater part of his leisure time, viz. investigations into the archæology and the natural history of India. At a very early period of his residence in the Southern Mahratta Country, so far back as 1826, Elliot commenced his archæological inquiries. Working in concert with a young Brahman, named Rungá Ráo, who was attached to his office, and who entered into all his pursuits, joining him in his hunting and shooting expeditions, and with the aid of a gumástah, or native clerk, belonging to the village in which he principally resided, Elliot mastered the archaic characters in which the old inscriptions were written, and during the remainder of his life in India devoted much time to deciphering and translating the inscriptions found by him in various parts of the country. In Zoology, Ornithology and Botany he took the keenest interest. In 1837 he published in the Journal of this Society a paper on Hindu inscriptions, and from that year to the last year of his life he was a frequent contributor to one or other of the journals which deal with the objects of his favourite researches. The Madras Journal of Literature and Science, the Indian Antiquary, the Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, the Journal of the Ethnological Society, the Transactions of the Botanical Society, the Journal of the Zoological Society, the Reports of the British Association, the Berwickshire National Club Journal, the Proceeding of the Antiquarian Society of Scotland, all contain contributions, some of them numerous contributions, from his pen, the results of

accurate and intelligent observation, recorded in a clear and popular style. His most important work is his treatise on the coins of Southern India, published in 1885, when the author was in his eighty-third year, which forms Part II. of the third volume of the *International Numismata Orientalia*, and contains an interesting account of the ancient races and dynasties of Southern India, derived from the inscriptions and coins which have been discovered. A remarkable fact connected with this treatise, and with all Elliot's later compositions, is that when they were written, the author, who had been extremely near-sighted all his life, was all but blind, latterly quite blind, and had to depend upon the pen of an amanuensis to commit them to paper, and upon the eyes of relatives and friends to correct the proofs. His collection of South Indian coins, about 400 in number, and a collection of carved marbles belonging to a Buddhist Tope at Amrávati, which he made when residing in the Guntúr District in 1845, are now deposited in the British Museum, where the marbles are placed on the walls facing, and on each side of, the grand staircase. Three folio volumes of translations, with other valuable MSS. matter, drawings, etc., perished in a vessel laden with sugar, which, encountering a hurricane off Mauritius, shipped a great quantity of sea-water, which wetted the sugar, and penetrating the tin-lined cases, destroyed their contents.

On some points of Elliot's character, such as his untiring industry, his eagerness in the pursuit of knowledge, his sound judgment in affairs, an estimate may in some measure be formed from this brief notice of his public life and avocations. His character was not less admirable in the relations and duties of private life. Deeply impressed by the truths of Christianity, but in this and in all other matters perfectly free from ostentation or display; possessing a singularly calm and equable temper; bearing with unfailing patience and resignation in the latter years of his life a deprivation which, to most men, with his tastes and with his active mind, would have been extremely trying; a faithful husband; an affectionate father; a staunch friend, and a kind neighbour, he furnished to all around him an example of qualities, which, if they were less uncommon, would make this a better and a happier world. During the last twenty-four years of his life he resided principally in his home at Wolfelee, taking an active part in parochial and county business, and dispensing a genuine and refined hospitality to his friends and acquaintances. At his house, which was quite a museum, he was

always glad to receive and instruct persons who were engaged in his favourite studies. His intellectual vigour remained undiminished literally to the last hour of his life. On the morning of the day of his death he dictated and signed with his own hand, a note to Dr. Pope, the eminent Tamil scholar, stating that on the previous day he had read (*i.e.* heard read) with much appreciation a notice of Dr. Pope's forthcoming edition of the Kural, and that notwithstanding loss of sight and advancing years, his "interest in Oriental literature continues unabated," and enquiring whether his correspondent could suggest any method of utilising certain "disjecta fragmenta," connected with the late Mr. F. W. Ellis, which he had collected many years before. In the evening he died, with little or no suffering.

In recognition of his services in India, Walter Elliot was created in 1866 a Knight Commander of the Order of the Star of India. In 1877 he was appointed a Fellow of the Royal Society, and in 1878 he received from the University of Edinburgh the degree of LL.D. He was a Deputy-Lieutenant and Magistrate for Roxburghshire. In 1839 he was married at Malta to Maria Dorothea, daughter of Sir David Blair, Bart., of Blairquhan, who survives him, and by whom he has left three sons and two daughters.

Sir William Patrick Andrew, K.C.I.E., was a comparatively recent Member of the Royal Asiatic Society, having only been elected in May, 1882. But his long connection with India and Indian Railways, and the active part taken by him in laying before Parliament and the public the important question of establishing a link of communication with our Eastern possessions by means of the Euphrates Valley, have rendered his name familiar to the most superficial English readers of modern Oriental annals. Author of many pamphlets on the above, his favourite theme, and considerations thereto appertaining, he has on one or two special occasions brought out a more ambitious publication—such, for instance, as "India and her Neighbours," which appeared in 1878. In this he expressed the strong opinion that if we failed to connect the Mediterranean with the Persian Gulf, Russia would connect the Persian Gulf with the Black Sea. Sir William Andrew was the only surviving son of the late Mr. Patrick Andrew, of Edinburgh, and was the founder of the Sind, Panjáb and Dehli Railway. He died on the 11th March, in the eighty-first year of his age.

The *Rev. James Long*, whose death took place on the 23rd of March in London, had been for some six years a Member of the

Royal Asiatic Society, and was a frequent and interested attendant at the meetings. Indeed, the discussions of Oriental questions, whether literary or political, had a strong attraction for him, wherever held, and his presence had become familiar at the Indian Association, Indian Section of the Society of Arts, and at the United Service Institution; also, when a subject such as the Russian advance towards the Indian Frontier was on the *tapis*. He has been justly described as "a true friend of India and her people, and an earnest student of her literature, her social, family and village life." According to a brief notice in Trübner's Literary Record, Mr. Long "was ordained in 1839 by Bishop Blomfield, and shortly after went out to India as a missionary in the service of the Church Missionary Society." Here he spent a great part of his life, seeking not only to minister to the spiritual wants of the natives, but to improve their social condition at the same time. In 1861, he "got into trouble," and was fined and imprisoned in Calcutta for translating a native drama reflecting upon the tyranny of the indigo-planters. His paper on "British Proverbs," read in February, 1875, and printed in the R.A.S. Journal, Vol. VII. p. 339, was eminently characteristic of the writer, who set a high value upon the subject he had treated. "Proverbs," he argued, "which are probably coeval with the discovery of writing, survive the overthrow of empires, and the desolations brought by conquerors." They "photograph the varying lights of social usages; the experience of an age is crystallised in the pithy aphorism." Mr. Long died at the age of seventy-three, much regretted by those who could recognize sterling worth and power of research under a somewhat rough exterior.

It is our painful duty to record the decease of one ripe in years and in learning, but for only a very short time a Fellow of the Royal Asiatic Society. The Venerable *Benjamin Harrison*,¹ for forty-two years Archdeacon of Maidstone, passed away on the 25th of March last in his eightieth year, after a life of continued intellectual and physical activity.

Mr. Benjamin Harrison, his father, a retired merchant, for many years Treasurer of Guy's Hospital, lived in one of those picturesque old houses on Clapham Common, of which so few now remain; and here was his son brought up until he entered as an Undergraduate at Christ Church, Oxford. After the usual course of study,

¹ Memoir communicated by the Rev. R. Milburn Blakiston, M. A.

he took his B.A. degree in 1830, obtaining a First Class in Lit. Hum. and a Second Class in Mathematics.

The study of Oriental languages was a favourite one with him, and he obtained the Kennicott Hebrew Scholarship in 1831, and the Pusey and Ellerton Hebrew Scholarship in 1832. He studied Semitic languages for some time in Paris, under a then celebrated teacher; and although he did not proceed very far with Arabic and Syriac, yet his proficiency in Hebrew was remarkable. He had been a favourite pupil of Dr. Pusey, the Regius Professor of Hebrew at Oxford, and, on several occasions when the Professor was absent from Oxford, his place in the lecture room was filled by Benjamin Harrison. His critical knowledge of the Sacred Text of the Old Testament was so notorious that he was unhesitatingly selected as one of the Revisers of that Book. At the meetings of the Revision Company during the many years over which their task was spread he was a very assiduous attendant; and it was a great gratification to him to have lived to witness the publication of the results of this labour of love. For ten years, 1838-1848, he was the domestic chaplain of Archbishop Howley, himself no mean Oriental scholar, and during this time he exercised that wise counsel for which he was so well known, in advising George Augustus Selwyn to accept the proposal to go forth as the first Bishop in New Zealand.

Archdeacon Harrison was a man of books. Archbishop Howley bequeathed his library to him, and so did Sir R. Inglis, Bart., M.P., and he also possessed those which had belonged to his father. In addition to these he purchased many himself: and to the last he kept himself *au courant* with the literature of the day.

We have only space to add a few words about his sweet, gentle, amiable disposition. He was kindness itself. No one in trouble shrank from consulting him, and never would the interview be without comfort to the distressed one. He was overflowing with lively wit, and his fund of anecdote seemed inexhaustible. It may truly be said of him that he died respected and beloved by all who knew him.

Among the losses, by death, to the Society during the last quarter, that of a distinguished Honorary Member, *Professor A. Stenzler*, demands special notice. He died at Breslau on the 27th February, aged 79. The *Academy* of March 12 designates him as "the last of those who may be called the founders of Sanskrit scholarship in Germany"; adding, "the present generation of

young Sanskrit scholars in England know little of him and of the good work he did in his day." Messrs. Trübner have kindly placed the following brief memoir of the deceased Professor at our disposal:—Adolf Friederich Stenzler was born on July 9th, 1807, at Wolgast, in Pomerania. He studied divinity between 1826 and 1829, at Greifswald, Berlin and Bonn, but soon turned to a more congenial study, viz. Oriental languages. His knowledge of Sanskrit was second to none in those early days of philology, and after having edited Specimens of Brahma-Vaivarta Purâna, he visited the Paris University for a year, and then came to London, where he was engaged in literary work at the old East India Company's Library. In 1833 he received the post, which he held till the end of his life, of Professor of Sanskrit at the Breslau University. He was also engaged as sub-librarian at the Breslau University Library from 1834 to 1872. Professor Stenzler was of an amiable and obliging disposition, and had a large circle of friends and acquaintances. He was in London during the Second Orientalists' Congress in 1874. The following is a list of his most important works:—

Brahma-Vaivarta-Purâna. Specimen. Textum e. Cod. MSS. Bibliothecae Regiae Berolinensis edidit. 4to. Berlin, 1829.

Raghuvansa Kalidasae Carmen, Sanskrit et Latine. 4to. London, 1832.

Kumâra Sambhava, Kâlidâsae Carmen, Sanskrit et Latine. 4to. Berlin, 1838.

Juris criminalis veterum Indorum Specimen. 4to. Breslau, 1842.

Mricchakatika, id est curriculum figlinum Sudrâkæ regis fabulae, Sanskrit edidit. 8vo. Bonn, 1847.

De Lexicographiae Sanscritae principii Commentatio. 8vo. Breslau, 1847.

Gajnavalkyas Gesetzbuch (Sanskrit und Deutsch). 8vo. Berlin, 1849.

Pâraskara. Ein Bruchstück aus Paraskara's Darstellung der häuslichen Gebräuche der Iuder (Sanskrit text, translation, and notes), nebst einem Glückwunsch von Freiherrn A. von Humboldt. 4to. Breslau, 1855.

Commentationis de domesticis Indorum ritibus particula. 4to. Breslau, 1860.

Ueber die Wichtigkeit des Sanskrit-Studiums und seine Stellung an unseren Universitäten. 8vo. Breslau, 1863.

Indische Hausregeln. Sanskrit und Deutsch. I. Acvalâyana. 2 parts. 8vo. Leipzig, 1865.

Sanskrit Texte mit Vocabular. Für Anfänger. 8vo. Breslau, 1868.

On the Hindu Doctrine of Expiation (Transactions, Congress of Orientalists, 8vo. London, 1874).

Elementarbuch der Sanskrit Sprache, Grammatik, Text, Wörterbuch. 8vo. Breslau, 1880.

Çri Gautamadharmasûtram, the Institutes of Gautama, with an index of words. 8vo. London, 1876.

Megha-Duta (Cloud Messenger). Gedicht von Kâlidâsâ mit Kritischen Anmerkungen und Wörterbuch. 8vo. Breslau, 1885.

M. Stenzler was elected an Honorary Member of the Asiatic Society in 1873. In justice to his memory, a further extract from the appreciative notice in the *Academy* is here recorded: "Those who knew Stenzler personally, knew how the sterling nature of his

literary works reflected only his own sterling character. He was an honest scholar and a perfect gentleman, conscious of his own worth, but free from any self-assertion or boasting. . . . No one ever suspected him of intrigue, and there was nothing he loathed so much as to see the sacred cause of learning betrayed by those who ought to have been the first to defend it. He belonged to no clique, he never levied tribute from his pupils, he never joined any mutual admiration society. He worked as long as it was day; and to the very last year of his life he was a devoted teacher and unselfish guide to all who had an honest desire to study the ancient language and literature of India in the same spirit in which he had studied it—as a critical scholar, a historian, and a philosopher. His life was bright and serene, and full of useful activity to the very end.”

V. EXCERPTA ORIENTALIA.

Journal of the China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society.—vol. xxi. (Nos. 3 and 4)¹ is full of instructive and interesting matter. The first and most important article is that by Dr. Macgowan on Chinese Guilds or Chambers of Commerce and Trades Unions. Two parts fairly exhaust the subject expressed in the title, and a third treats of agricultural labourers, agrarianism and the “Contentment of the Proletariat of China”—contentment described as “the result of a legitimately-begotten Conservatism”—again explained to be “a Conservatism whose sire was Radicalism, which, more than 2000 years ago, in the form of the one revolution of China, opened the way to rank and power of every qualified man.” The other papers are “Is Confucius a Myth?” and ‘Ta-ts’in and Dependent States, by Mr. Allen: “Philological importance of Geographical Terms in the Shi-Ki,” by Dr. Edkins: “Reply to Mr. Allen’s paper on Ta-ts’in and Dependent States,” and “Chinese Equivalents of the letter ‘R’ in foreign names,” by Dr. Hirth. Notes and Queries, Literary Notes, and Correspondence follow, but these do not call for any special notice.

The *Journal of the Straits Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society*, bearing the date of June, 1886, but published in 1887, has a bibliography of Siam by Mr. E. M. Satow, C.M.G.; Sri Rama, the Fairy tale of a Malay Rhapsodist, by Mr. W. E. Maxwell, C.M.G.; and a Portuguese History of Malacca, reprinted from the *Malacca Observer*, and annotated by Mr. D. F. A. Hervey. In the Occasional Notes, a review of a treatise by Mr. H. A. Hymans on the Sultanate of Siak, relates to one of the largest of the Malay Independent

¹ Part 2 of vol. xix., received in the last quarter (April), belonged to the year 1884, though only received here in 1887. Parts 1 and 2 of vol. xxi. were noticed in January.

States on the East Coast of Sumatra. The Notes and Queries, though printed separately, are issued with the Journal. Henceforward they will be merged, it is understood from a final footnote, in Captain Temple's "Indian Notes and Queries."

The *Journal Asiatique*, huitième série, tome ix., No. 2 (Février-Mars, 1887), contains both the text and translation of a curious Coptic document of the thirteenth century, contributed by M. Amélineau, giving an account of the martyrdom of Jean de Phanidjôit. There is also an additional contribution from M. Bergaigne on "La Samhita du Rig Veda." A brief notice of the former will be given under the head of "Egyptology."

German Oriental Society, vol. xl. part 4, contains, besides reviews, notes and miscellaneous information:—1. Mu'tadid as Prince and Regent, a historical heroic poem by Ibn el Mu'tazz, edited, illustrated and translated by Carl Lang. 2. Dr. M. Klamroth, on Extracts from Greek Authors in al-Yakûbi. 3. Fr. Philippi, the pronunciation of the Semitic Consonants ; and ' ; a treatise on the nature of these sounds. 4. P. v. Bradke, a contribution to the study of old Indian religion and philology. 5. G. Bühler, further remarks on Böhtlingk's articles on Vasishtha. 6. Chr. Bartholomae, on the transcription of Indo-Iranian sibilants. 7. A. Hillebrandt, on the Veda Ritual. 8. A. Ludwig, on three passages from the Rig Veda. 9. The same writer, on meanings of Veda words.

Bibliotheca Indica.—The following *fasciculi* of the *Bibliotheca Indica* (New Series, Nos. 595 to 607) have reached the Royal Asiatic Society during the quarter.

Sanskrit.—1. The Nirukta with Commentaries, ed. Paṇḍit Satyavratā Samāsrāmī. Vol. iv. fasc. ii.

2. The Asvavaidyaka, a treatise on the diseases of the Horse, compiled by Jayadatta Sūri; ed. Kavirāja Umeśa Chandra Gupta Kaviratna. Fasc. iv. v.

3. The Vivādaratnākara, ed. Paṇḍit Dinanātha Vidyālankāra. Fasc. v.

4. Vṛihannāradiya Purāṇa, edited by Paṇḍit Hṛishīkeśa Sāstrī. Fasc. iii.

5. The Varāha Purāṇa, ed. Paṇḍit Hṛishīkeśa Sāstrī. Fasc. i.

6. The Kūrma Purāṇa, ed. Nīlmaṇi Mukhopādhyāya Nyāyā-lankāra. Fasc. iii.

7. Ashtasāhasrikā Prajñāpāramitā; discourses on the Metaphysics of the Mahāyāna School of the Buddhists, by Rājendralāla Mitra, LL.D., C.I.E. Fasc. i.

8. The Mīmāṃsā Darsāna, with Commentary of Sāvara Svāmin, ed. Maheśachandra Nyāyaratna. Fasc. xix.

9. The Sruta Sūtra of Lāṅkhāyāna, ed. Dr. Hillebrandt. Vol. i. fasc. iv.

10. Chaturvarga-Chintāmaṇi, by Hemadra, ed. Paṇḍita Yogesvara Smṛitiratna and Paṇḍita Kamakhyānatha Tarkaratnakara. Vol. iii. part. i. Pariśeshakhanda. Fasc. xvi.

Persian.—Zafarnámah, by Mauláná Sharfú'd-dín 'Alí Yazdí, ed. Maulavi Muhammad Iahdád. Vol. i. fasc. vii.

And four numbers of the Old Series (256 to 259), being a Biographical Dictionary of Persons who knew Muhammad, by Ibn Hajar, ed. (in Arabic) Maulavi Abdu'l Hai. Fasc. xxxii. to xxxv. vol. iii. Nos. 11, 12, 13, and vol. ii. No. 10.

Archæology.—A reprint from the *Madras Christian College Magazine* for December, 1886, furnishes an excellent account of the ruins of Vijayanagar, capital of the mediæval kingdom of that name, situated on the south bank of the Tungabhadrá, some 32 miles N.W. by W. from Bellary. Preceded by a short sketch of its history, there is a detailed description of its religious buildings, streets, palatial structures, private houses, tombs and fortifications, which will interest the archæologist, although nothing is certified to belong to a period before the fourteenth century A.D., in the first half of which the Vijayanagar dynasty was founded. The *Dhannakarta* of the *Srī Pampāpatīsvāmi* Temple at Hampi states that inscriptions exist, proving that the *gōpma* of the inner *prakāra* of the temple was built in A.D. 1199, when the village of Hampi was given in grant to the temple by a certain Bodayya Rāja; but the statement still remains to be proved, for it is not borne out by any available testimony. Fergusson mentions a tradition that an earlier city was founded by Vijāya Rayal in A.D. 1118. There is, however, no evidence of whole buildings to support a theory to this effect, and that of fragments, though favourable to this belief, is inconclusive.

The February number of the *Indian Antiquary* contains the conclusion of "The Dakhan in the time of Gautama-Buddha," by the Rev. Thomas Foulkes; as of Mr. Murray-Aynsley's "Discursive Contributions towards the Study of Asiatic Symbolism"; a "Gaya Inscription of Yakshapala," by Professor Kielhorn; "Why the Fish Talked," by the Rev. J. Hinton Knowles; and the conclusion of Mrs. Grierson's "English-Gipsy Index." In the "Miscellanea," Mr. Fleet discourses on "Hindu Dates," and Mr. Grierson on Continental periodicals treating of Oriental subjects, and what are called "Tatah Kim Verses." Under "Book Notices," Mr. Grierson reviews Fasciculus I. of Dr. Hoernle's *Uvasagadasao*, edited in the original Prakrit, adding, "all scholars must hope for another instalment at an early date of a work begun so well." Professor Kielhorn also praises the "neat edition of the Siddhānta-Kaumudi brought out by the proprietor of the Nirṇayasāgar Press, and to be bought for four shillings, while the Calcutta edition costs eight times as much. The number for March opens with Mr. Fleet's "Lunar Fortnight of Thirteen Solar Days," which he finds to be "the bright fortnight of the month Jyēsthā (May-June) of Saka Samvat 1800 (A.D. 1878-79), the Bahudhānyu *samvatsara*;" Col. Jacob on "The Vasaduva and Gopichandana Upanishads;" Mr. Howorth's "Chinghiz Khan and his Ancestors," part xxxiii.; "Silver Copperplate Grant of the Maharaja Rudra

dasa," by Pandit Bhagwan Lal Indrajī; "The Villages mentioned in the Gujarat Rathor Grants," Nos. iii. and iv., by Professor Bühler; "Notes on the Mahabhashya," by Professor Kielhorn; and "Folk-lore in Southern India," by Pandit S. M. Natesa Sastri. In the "Miscellanea," Mr. Fleet continues his "Calculation of Hindu Dates," and Mr. Grierson his "Progress of European Scholarship." The Book Notices comprise the "Tarka Kaumudi of Langakshi Bhaskara, by Professor Kielhorn. In April, Mr. Shankar Balkrishna Dikshit, of the Bombay Educational Department, treats of "The Method of Calculating the Week Days of Hindu Tithis and Corresponding English Dates;" Mr. Howorth supplies the last of his learned papers on "Chinghiz Khan and his Ancestors," winding up with an eloquently-argued deduction that "the progress of civilization is not continuous;" Mr. Fleet continues his illustrations of Sanskrit and Canarese Inscriptions," by describing the Parla-Kimedi Grant of Indravarman, already noticed in 1884; Mr. Rehatsek discusses a "Letter of the Emperor Akbar asking for Christian Scriptures;" and Pandit S. M. Natesa Sastri contributes No. xvi. of his Folk-lore in Southern India. The number is closed with a review of Professor Legge's translation of the "Li Ki" (Sacred Books of the East, vols. xxvii.-viii.). Three articles of interest, viz. Mr. Fleet's on "The Scheme and Equation of the Years of the Gupta Era;" "The Legend of Tulasi as told in Southern India by the Orthodox," under the initials R. D. M.; and "The Maurya-Passage in the Mahabhashya," by Professor Bhandarkar, combine with the "Miscellanea" to make up the May number. Under the last head is a reprint of the proceedings of the Aryan Section at the Seventh International Congress of Orientalists held in Vienna during the autumn of 1886.

The Quarterly Statement of the Palestine Exploration Fund for April contains a sketch and descriptive note of the Sakhrāh, or Summit of Mount Moriah, and the following articles:—1. On the Tomb of Philip d'Aubigné at Jerusalem, by M. J. E. Hanauer. 2. Notices of the Dome of the Rock and of the Church of the Sepulchre by Arab Historians prior to the First Crusade, translated by Mr. Guy Le Strange. 3. Notes by Captain Conder. 4. A Remarkable Tomb, described by M. Schick, and 5. Conclusion of the paper called "Middoth, or the Measurements of the Temple." In the introductory Notes and Queries one item of intelligence is important. This is, that Herr Schumacher has traced the whole wall of Herod's City of Tiberius, three miles in length and of oblong shape. Dr. Wright's letter to the *Times* forwarding the Rev. Mr. Eddy's report of the discovery of a tomb temple at Sidon, is reprinted with additional particulars. Professor Porter, of the American College at Beirut, referring to one of the tombs, says "that he saw nothing to equal it in the collection at Athens, and very little in sculpture finer anywhere."

Hebrew and Semitic Languages.—In the *Academy*, 19th March, the Philology Notes mention the recent discovery of a Hebrew

inscription at Riva, dated A.D. 620, to be published by Professor Müller of Vienna. They also notice a laudatory review of Dr. Neubauer's *Catalogue of Hebrew MSS. in the Bodleian*, contained in the Russian *Voskhod*. In the *Athenæum* of the same date, Prof. T. W. Davies, writing from the Haverfordwest Baptist College, on the 7th March, asks whether the time has not come to establish a British Institute of Hebrew, "the object being to promote the study of the language, and of other Eastern tongues that help in the understanding of the Old Testament language and literature." The writer very aptly cites the success of the American Institute, which, though nominally for Hebrew only, "seeks to help forward the study of the allied languages—Syriac, Chaldee, Arabic and Assyrian." It moreover undertakes to provide for the teaching of Hebrew and cognate languages "by correspondence and otherwise." The last expression, perhaps, needs a somewhat closer definition; but the subject is clearly one deserving of serious attention. In the *Athenæum* of the 2nd April, Professor Davies, continuing the discussion, refers to the German *Morgenländische Gesellschaft*, which publishes the *Literaturblatt für Orientalische Philologie*, expressing his ignorance of the existence of any English Society with a like "specific object in view." Mr. Hyde Clarke sees in our Indian service an effective body of Orientalists, and thinks the Professor would do well to enlist those among them "who return home as well as those who remain on duty." In stating, however, that "our Asiatic Societies are supported by Indians, and not by our University men," he applies a rule which, even at the present moment, admits happily of notable exceptions.

Arabic.—The *Journal Asiatique* for February and March has the following note from M. H. Zotenberg:—

Galland's translation of the Thousand and One Nights contains several tales now celebrated, such as Zainu'l Aşnám and the king of the Genii, 'Aláu'd-dín or the Wonderful Lamp, the blind Báábá 'Abd Allah, Sídí Noûmán, 'Alí Báábá and the Forty Thieves, the two Sisters jealous of their younger Sister, and certain others of which the original text is unknown. They are neither to be found in the editions of Habicht, Bulak or Calcutta, nor in any manuscripts of a European library. It has been erroneously supposed that all these tales are included in the fourth volume of that particular copy three volumes of which after Galland's death became the property of the king's library. This fourth volume contained, in all likelihood, the greater portion of the story of Kamaru'l-Zamán (the commencement of which is in vol. iii), that of Gháním, that of the Sleeper awakened, and that of the unhappy Lover confined in a mad-house, which Galland never translated: because there is reason to suppose that the first part of the Arab MS. of the National Library (1716), written by the Syrian monk Charis, is transcribed from it.

The narratives in the later volumes of Galland's selection are traceable to another origin; as may be inferred from the under-

mentioned facts obtained from the Journal edited by the learned translator:—

1. The tales published by Galland in the second part of vol. ix. and vols. x. xi. and xii. were related to him at the beginning of 1709 by a Christian Maronite of Aleppo, named Hanna, who had accompanied the noted traveller, Paul Lucas, to Paris;

2. Galland entered in his Journal a full analysis of these tales;

3. The Maronite Hanna made over to Galland an Arabic text of some of the number, notably the story of the Wonderful Lamp, which he declared he had written from recollection;

4. Galland, in 1710–1711, translated from this text the story of the Wonderful Lamp, and perhaps the tales of the Blind Bába, Sidí Nouman and Khoja Hasan at Habbál. He edited also the others, i.e. the story of 'Alí Bába and the Forty Thieves, of 'Alí Khoja, of the Enchanted House, the Prince Ahmad and the Fairy Pari Banú, and the two jealous Sisters, from the narratives of Hanna entered in his Journal.

Such is the way in which these stories came to the knowledge of the French translator. But it is important to ascertain their Oriental origin; for it is quite clear that they are not inventions of the Maronite of Aleppo; moreover, M. Zotenberg believes that the communications made to M. Galland were not wholly extemporized by Hanna, who must have possessed a written copy.

M. Zotenberg then intimates to those interested in the matter that there is an Arabic text of 'Aláu'd-dín and the Wonderful Lamp in a MS. of the Arabian Nights recently acquired by the National Library. This MS. comprises also the story of the Awakened Sleeper, hitherto to be found only in the abridged edition of Habicht, of Zainn'l-Aşnám, which had been translated by Petis de la Croix from the Turkish version of the book entitled *الفرح بعد الشدة* and included in vol. viii. of Galland's work without his knowledge.

The MS., in many respects of high value, which has just enriched the French collections, is from the pen of Michael Şabbágh, written in the commencement of the present century; and M. Zotenberg thinks he can identify it with one belonging to M. Caussin de Perceval, which the learned M. Fleischer used in 1827, when reviewing the Tausend und Eine Nacht of Habicht. It is copied from a Baghdad MS. of 1115 Hijra (A.D. 1703), as certified in a final note reproduced by Şabbágh. As that volume of Galland's translation which contains the story of the Wonderful Lamp only appeared in 1712, the authenticity, that is, the "continuity," of the Arab text can scarcely be doubted. It is added that Michael Şabbágh has copied faithfully and completely from the original, even imitating its material arrangement.

M. Zotenberg proposes to supply shortly further details of this version of the Arabian Nights.

One of the present year's periodicals issued from the Leiden Press (Brill) is the *Critica Arabica* of Dr. Carlo Graf von Landberg,

avowedly a work of pure love, without *arrière pensée* of hostility or profit. Brother Orientalists who wish to possess it may, we are told in the Preface, be supplied with it gratuitously; while those whose works are criticised in it are invited to send their replies for publication in its pages. In the first number are a notice of Müller's *Al-Hamdāni*; De Goeje's *Kitābu'l Baldān*; Houtsma's *Ibn Wadih* (*Al Ya'qubi*), and Dr. Snouck Hurgronje's *Proverbs and Idioms of Makka*. The first and last are written in German, the two others in French. M. de Goeje had replied to the comments upon his work, but did not wish his MS. published. The editor's counter-reply, however, shows the general drift of the learned Professor's arguments.

From the same brochure, we learn that King Osear II. has postponed the period for receiving MSS. in response to his offer of prizes (alluded to in Vol. XVIII. Part III. of the Journal, July, 1886) to the 1st January, 1890. The subjects stated were, it may be remembered: 1. A history of Semitic languages; 2. A description of Arab Culture before the time of Muhammad. It is now apparent that there will be many learned competitors, Christian and Muhammadan, for the second award. As regards the first, the field will, probably, be restricted to Europe.

Le Hadhramout et les Colonies Arabes de l'Archipel Indien, by M. L. W. C. Van den Berg, is a volume of great interest as regards geography, ethnology and language. Our information on the tract of mother-country to which it refers is more or less incidental, though one work, that of Heinrich von Maltzan, bears directly upon it, when treating of the exploration of M. de Wredé in 1843. If we compare its description in the pages of Wellsted's *Travels*, or the map attached to Gifford Palgrave's *Central and Eastern Arabia*, with that now afforded by letterpress and illustrations, in this late issue from the Government Press of Batavia, we scarcely recognize that one and the same locality is intended. But the more important part, as the main object of the publication, is that which treats of the colonists in the Indian Archipelago. The spirit of roaming and enterprize which takes the Hadramaut Arabs from the land of their birth, not only to the comparatively near coast of Abyssinia,¹ but to the islands of Java, and to Sumatra, Singapur, and Borneo, is well worthy the historian's attention in its results, and, viewed in this respect only, the present volume supplies admirable data for history. But instruction is abundant on other points also; and the lives and works of the more intellectual and educated Arab colonists are among the particular passages which render the volume a fitting subject for consideration in the pages of the Royal Asiatic Society's Journal.

The *Academy* of 12th March notices with much favour the second and third volumes of Lady Burton's Household Edition of

¹ See Munzinger's Journey through the Afar Country, *Journal Roy. Geog. Soc.* vol. xxxix. pp. 190-211, on the Hadarema in Amphilla.

the Arabian Nights, containing the story of Kāmaru'l-zamān and of Sindbad the Seaman and Sindbad the Landsman, and introducing a large number of minor tales not included in Lane's edition.

The Political Agent at Maskat has forwarded to the Society a paper on the dialect of Arabic spoken in the principality of Oman, prepared by Surgeon-Major O. S. Jayakar, Civil Surgeon at the Station. As pointed out by Colonel Miles, owing to its remote position and its isolation by a broad desert from the rest of the Peninsula, Oman possesses a very peculiar dialect containing many antique and strange words, which are either unknown or used in a different sense in other parts of Arabia. Explaining that the paper consists of two parts, one exhibiting the grammatical variations, and the other containing a vocabulary to illustrate the first part, he adds that Dr. Jayakar's opportunities of studying the dialect have been exceptional, and as this officer has been enabled to put forward much information that will be new to Arabic scholars, he believes that the MS. will be welcomed as a valuable contribution to Arabic philology.

Assyriology.—M. Carl Bezold's *Zeitschrift für Assyriologie* for January contains, independently of the *Sprachsaal*, *Bibliographie*, and notices of books, the following six articles:—Franz Reber on Old Chaldaic Art; J. N. Strassmaier on Two Babylonian Treaties of the Time of Nabouid; G. Hoffmann, who under the comprehensive title of *Namen und Sachen*, supplies critical notes on Biblical and other readings; C. F. Lehmann on two Edicts of King Asurbanipal; H. Winckler on a Text of Napolassar; and P. Jensen's "Hymnen auf das Wiedererscheinen der drei grossen Lichtgötter."

The *Babylonian and Oriental Record* has appeared for April and May, and shows a long list of collaborators. To No. 6, Mr. Pinches contributes an interesting translation of Babylonian Tablets referring to the apprenticeship of slaves: R. Q., a "Retrospect" on the subject of the Hittite Inscriptions: Mr. Baynes, a paper on the "Eranian Origin of the Tentonic Concept of Deity;" Prof. de Harlez, a continuation of his "Iranian Studies," and Dr. Casartelli, No. 1 of "Pehlevi Notes." No. 7, the May issue, contains Dr. Casartelli's "Two Discoveries of Chosroes;" Professor and Dr. Revillont's "Sworn Obligations in Egyptian and Babylonian Law:" and an abstract of two of Professor Sayce's recently delivered Hibbert Lectures. It would be satisfactory to see some modification in the outer appearance of this new periodical. The pages of the *Zeitschrift für Assyriologie* are not so long and broad, but the Leipzig Journal has a more attractive and convenient form, and may commend itself as a fitting model.

Syriac.—Chwolson, in the Transactions of the Imperial Academy of Science of St. Petersburg, April, 1886 (xxxiv. No. 4, *Syrische Grabinschriften aus Semirjetschie*), gives an interesting report on Nestorian epitaphs found in two Syrian cemeteries recently discovered. These are situated about 540 werst west of Kulddha, and 420 werst south of Kashgar. The tombstones are small and rude,

mostly marked with a cross, and the epitaphs are in Nestorian character. The Turkish words and names which occur in them are the only difficulty in their interpretation, and indicate that the persons interred were chiefly Tartar converts of the Nestorian Christian missionaries. The dates on the headstones are in the Seleucid era, and vary between A.D. 858 and 1338. Four of the original tombstones have been sent to the Museum in the Palace of the Ermitage. Professor Chwolson has obtained photographic copies of 14 other inscriptions. The Russian Government has sent instructions to have the remaining tombstones collected and photographed.

Hittite.—Some three columns of the *Academy* of May 21st are taken up with an interesting notice by Professor Sayce of Captain Conder's *Altaic Hieroglyphs and Hittite Inscriptions* (Bentley), a book which has been awaited with interest. In the hypothesis put forward by the author, his reviewer observes the following three assumptions: (1) That there is a connection between the Hittite hieroglyphs and Kypriote syllabary which enables us to find certain phonetic values among the former by comparison with equivalents among the latter. (2) "That the pictures out of which the Cuneiform characters have developed have the same origin as the Hittite hieroglyphs and Kypriote syllabary, and thus throw light on several of the Hittite forms." (3) That the grammar and vocabulary of the Hittite texts is "neither more nor less than Akkadian." As regards the first of these assumptions, Professor Sayce allows that the connexion of the Hittite and Kypriote characters is a fact generally accepted by the palæographical authorities. The second he considers untenable, and that there are no sufficient grounds for comparing together Hittite hieroglyphs and Babylonian characters. As to the third assumption, while admitting that the language of the inscriptions is not Semitic, he thinks it quite unlikely that we should discover Akkadian words "in a recognizable condition among distant tribes in Northern Syria and Kappadokia," and proceeds to illustrate the misapprehension under which Captain Conder appears to have laboured in supposing such words to lie concealed under Hittite symbols. In summing up his conclusions, the Professor gives credit to the learned and gallant author for having advanced the solution of the problem, adding—"His observation that 'a series of groups (of characters) followed by a single emblem indicates a packet, so to say, forming one expression,' is very happy. He is also possibly right in seeing a personal pronoun in the character he would read *ne* (my *e*); and his comparison of certain Hittite characters with the Kypriote *re*, *ni*, *ta*, *li*, and *te*, is attractive. Equally good is his observation that the important words—nouns and verb-roots—are apparently distinguished by larger emblems than the grammatical syllables prefixed or following."

At the Académie des Inscriptions, M. Henzey read a paper on certain specimens of so-called "Hittite" art discovered near Aidin.

Of these the more important are described in the *Revue Critique*, 14th March, to be cylinders and seals, recalling, from the designs engraved on them, the art of Chaldæa and Babylonia.

Sanskrit and Aryan Tongues.—The *Academy* of March 26 notes the purchase by the Bodleian Library of 465 Sanskrit MSS., mostly post-Vedic, acquired by Dr. Hultsch during a recent visit to Kashmir. There had been added, moreover, to the above-named Library some twenty MSS. obtained through Prof. Thibaut of Banâras. Both collections would, probably, be catalogued by Dr. A. A. Macdonell, on completion of the concise, practical Sanskrit dictionary which now occupies his attention. The same paper announces a forthcoming new edition, from the Nirmaya-sâyar Press at Bombay, of Bâna's *Kûdambari*, "with a full commentary, and an *editio princeps* of Vâtsyâyana's *Kâmasâtra*, together with a commentary entitled *Jayamangalâ* by Yaśodhara." Professor R. G. Bhandarkar, one of our Honorary Members, who attended the Congress of Orientalists held last autumn in Vienna, has been reading a paper at Pûna on Sanskrit studies in Europe. The *Academy* of April 2nd reports the Professor's remarks as follows:—Since the discovery of Sanskrit, the Europeans, especially the Germans, had "devoted themselves with untiring energy to the study of its language and literature, and to the solution of various problems suggested by it." Attributing the revival of Sanskrit studies in India largely to the action of European scholars, he found these last to "possess a critical acumen in which Hindu Pandits are entirely wanting." *Au reste*, the following conclusion is worthy of record: "The English were the first to discover Sanskrit, but the Germans have now almost entirely monopolized Sanskrit learning in Europe." They were the "Brahmans of Europe, the French the Kshatriyas, and the English the Vaisyas. Even in England the best Sanskrit scholars are Germans."

Professor Jolly has, in the *Academy* of 16th April, an appreciative and elaborate notice of Professor Bühler's translation of the Laws of Manu, which forms the twenty-fifth volume of the Sacred Books of the East.

Seven notices of works in part iii. vol. iii. *Literatur-Blatt* will interest students of Sanskrit and Indian languages. They are:—E. Kuhn on Seshagiri Shastri's Notes on Aryan and Dravidian Philology; Holtzmann on Protap Chandra Roy's Mahabharata of Krishna-Dwaipayana Vyasa; W. Jacobi on Dr. Solf's "Die Kaçmir-Recension des Pancâçikâ;" Zachariæ on Franke's Hemacandra's Lingânuçâsana; Jacobi on Pischel's Rudrata's Çrngâratalaka and Ruyyaka's Sahridayalilâ; Leumann on Jacobi's Ausgewählte Erzählungen in Mâhârâshtri; and Kuhn on Grierson's Bihar Peasant Life.

Among new publications may be noted L. Scherman's Philosophische Hymnen aus der Rig- und Atharva-Veda-Sanhitâ vergleichen mit den Philosophemen der älteren Upanishad's, Strassburg, Trübner. E. Sénart's Etudes sur les Inscriptions de Piyadasi,

tom. ii. et dernier, Paris, Leroux. Pânini's Grammatik, Hrsg. übers. erläutert etc., v. O. Böhtlingk, 7 Lfg., Leipzig, Haessel.

Persian.—In the review of Mr. F. F. Arbuthnot's Persian Portraits, published in the *Academy* of 2ud April, Mr. C. E. Wilson describes the selections given as "thoroughly successful and interesting attempts to bring out all the real spirit and force of the originals, and to give thought for thought instead of phrase for phrase, or merely dry and uninteresting explanations." With reference to the author's lament that many locally celebrated Persian writers had never been introduced to the home public, the reviewer concludes his notice with making known the significant fact that he himself had on his hands at the time of writing, "a translation of the whole of the Baháristán of Jámí," for which he had "in vain awaited a publisher since its completion in 1877."

Mr. Whinfield's *Masnavi-i-Manavi*, or the spiritual couplets of *Mauláná Jalálu'd-din Rumi*, affords a new proof of the great attraction which Sufi mysticism presents to Englishmen whose tastes and linguistic attainments enable them to appreciate the Persian poets in the original. The Song of the Reed, so gracefully Anglicized by Sir William Jones about a century ago, has, together with other poems by its author, been reproduced in our tongue by Robinson, Redhouse, Palmer,¹ and it may be many more; and now, again, it reappears in a new English dress as the prologue of a volume which is one of the latest contributions to Trübner's Oriental Series. In its present form the Masnavi, though a declared abridgment, is a comparatively full translation. Unlike the late Professor Palmer's, which, in the few specimens given, exhibited a combination of narrative and moral, Mr. Whinfield's book, separating the two, contains "abstracts of the principal stories and a literal translation, line by line, of the principal doctrinal morals."

Au article by Mr. Edmund Moutet ou "La Religion et le Théâtre en Perse" opens No. 3 of M. Jean Réville's *Revue de l'Histoire des Religions*, tome xiv. The penultimate sentence expresses the opinion that if Persia is ever enabled to regain a position among nations worthy of her past history, the revolution will possibly be due to the renovation of her literature by means of the drama. Is it not rather a question of regeneration than renewal?

Literature in India.—No. cxxiv. of Selections from the Records of the Government of India, Home Department, Serial No. 4, "Reports on Publications issued and registered in the several Provinces of British India during the year 1885, published in Calcutta during the current year," has reached the Society. It is full of statistical interest, and otherwise valuable and suggestive. The two Reports included in it are all dated in 1886; those from the Central Provinces and Háidarábád in the month of February; from

¹ Published ten years ago. See the "Sufi Poets of Persia," Pall Mall Gazette, 24th January, 1877.

Assam and Maisur in March; from Bengal and Burma in August; that from the North-West Provinces (including Oudh) in April; Madras in May; the Panjáb in June; and Bombay in September. Irrespectively of the usual information obtained from the Calcutta Review, which usually affords data more or less directly bearing upon the progress of the Indian mind, a brief notice of the results achieved by the Departmental machinery applied in India to educational purposes, and tabulated in the State Record, may not be unacceptable. The Provinces are placed according to the order assigned them in the summary of Reports:—

Madras.—753 books and pamphlets and 119 periodicals, published in 1885, giving a total of 872, show an excess of 54 publications—that is, of 9 books and pamphlets and 45 periodicals on the numbers of the previous year. Of the whole 872, more than two-thirds are in the current vernacular languages—principally Tamil, thus, for the greater part, Telugu, Malayalam, and Canarese—and more than one-sixth in English and other European languages. A small proportion consists of books in Indian classical languages, and of much the same number in more than one language. 340 are original, 79 translations, and 453 republications. The subjects treated are divided into sixteen heads:—Art, Biography, Drama, Fiction, History, Language, Law, Medicine, Miscellaneous, Poetry, Politics, Mental Philosophy, Religion, Science (Mathematical and Natural), Travels. From an average of ten years, the most significant increase appears to be that shown under Science; nor is it at variance with such result to find that Drama, Fiction, and Poetry are on the decline.

Bombay.—1527 books and 496 periodicals, published in 1885, giving a total of 2023, show an excess of 394 publications on the numbers of the previous year. Of these nearly 92 per cent. are in Eastern languages—notably Maráthi, Gujaráti, Urdu, and Sanskrit—and somewhat more than six per cent. in English. Nearly half the Maráthi and more than half the Gujaráti are first editions of original works. In the former case the favourite subject is Poetry; in the latter, the greater number of publications come under the head “Miscellaneous.”

Bengal.—2309 books and 422 periodicals, published in 1885, giving a total of 2731, show an excess of 341 publications on the numbers of the previous year. Of these more than two-thirds are in the vernacular languages spoken in the province, 208 in the Indian classical language, 322 in more than one language, and 317 in English. Nearly 80 per cent. of the whole are original, and 56 per cent. in Bengáli. The greater number of publications come under the head “Miscellaneous”; after which Religion, Language, Poetry, and Fiction deserve special mention.

N.W. Provinces and Oudh.—The total number of registered publications is 1290, being 526 more than shown in the previous year, and the highest for any year on record. About 40 per cent. are in Urdu, 22 per cent. in Hindi, and 8 per cent. in Persian (mostly re-

publications). The proportion of original works is greater for new editions than first issues, and applies mainly to "Language."

Panjab.—1566 publications were catalogued in 1885, or 31 more than registered in the previous year. Of these more than half are in Urdu, more than a seventh in Hindi, and a little less than a seventh in Panjābi. The largest number, over 25 per cent. of the whole, come under the head of Poetry, but the report assigns no high position to these, and some 70 per cent. are republications.

Central Provinces.—The return shows only 1 English, 1 Sanskrit, and 1 Hindi publication.

British Burma.—68 publications are registered for this province, of which 29 are on Religion, 16 on Language, and 13 on History. Of these, less than half are first editions of original works.

Assam.—The return shows only 12 works, or a decrease of 4 on the previous year, i.e. 1 original Sanskrit work on Religion, 1 original Assamese drama, and 2 Assamese publications under Poetry; 7 "Miscellaneous" works in Bengali, and 1 work on Religion in Bengali and Sanskrit together.

Maisūr.—The total number for 1885 is 125, of which two are periodicals, being a decrease of 18 on the previous year. They are thus summarised.

In the vernaculars spoken in the province :

Kannada, 65 ; Telugu, 4 ; Tamil, 2 71

In Sanskrit 38

Bilingual, i.e. English and Kannada, 1 ; Kannada
and English, 1 ; Sanskrit and Kannada, 14 16

Arranged according to the subjects treated, the largest number fall under Religion (31) and Language (29); Mental and Moral Philosophy have 16; Poetry and Drama 13 each; Fiction 5; Law 4; History and Natural Science 3 each; Biography, Medicine and Mathematical Science 2 each; Arts 1; and Miscellaneous 1. Of the whole 27 are educational and 98 non-educational. In the Civil and Military Station of Bangalur 16 works, including 2 periodicals, were published. This shows a decrease of 42 on 1884, possibly occasioned by the removal of troops to the N.W. Frontier and Burma. Four of the works are in English, 2 in English and Tamil and Telugu and English, 2 in Tamil, and the remaining 8 in Hindustani. The majority of publications are on Religion, all in Hindustani.

Haidarabad.—The report shows that 18 first editions of original works were published in 1885, being 1 less than the figure of the previous year. They consist of 11 numbers of a monthly agricultural magazine, 5 numbers of the "Berar School Paper," an educational periodical, and two publications on crops.

Calcutta Review.—Of the ten articles, other than quarterly summaries and notes, which make up the April number of this journal, that by M. Parbati Churn Roy on "High Education in Bengal" is not the least worthy of attention, and bears out the observations made in our last issue, on "the marvellous indications

of the advance of education in India during the last thirty years," as contained in the well thought out contributions of intelligent natives to English periodical literature. Laying stress on the wonders in this respect of a stirring half-century, the writer certifies that "though the amount allotted in the budget to the item of Public Instruction has increased more than seventyfold since 1835, Government still finds it difficult to meet the growing demands of the country." No doubt he is right, and there is ample cause for congratulation at the past, and for renewed exertions in the future. The fact brought out that, while a percentage of 5.6 of the revenue in Great Britain and Ireland is expended on Education, not 2 per cent. of the revenue of India is given in that country for a similar purpose, offers no cause of legitimate complaint, and the extraordinary increase of educational expenditure in 50 years is no warrant for a further outlay that would bring up India to the home figure. As it is, progress has been sufficiently rapid, and it is pleasant to find that M. Parbati Churn Roy, while defending the Government from the charge of extravagance, considers the wisest statesmanship to lie "not in disturbing the present line of policy, but in regulating it so that it might yield better results in the future." An article from the same pen on Financial and Administrative Reform in India; one by Mr. A. Stephen on Imprisonment for Debt; Mr. H. G. Keene's views on his own question, "Are Islam and Civilisation Irreconcilable?"; Mr. Percival on Buddha as a Philosopher; Mr. D'Cruz on the Education Code for European Schools in Bengal; Dr. Cust's Report of the late Vienna Congress; a Ruskinian Address by Mr. Spencer; and the usual summaries and critical entries make up a very respectable number.

India.—Miscellaneous.—In the *Academy* of the 5th March, Mr. Keene reviews the continuation of Elphinstone's History of India, edited by Sir Edward Colebrooke, and lately published by Murray. Though pointing out certain disadvantages under which the work must labour, owing to the long and eventful period which has elapsed since the date of original writing, the reviewer pronounces it to be "a valuable record of a stirring time, penned by a man whose lightest opinion about Indian topics was once sought as an oracle, and is still superior to that of any other writer who has approached the subject."

Dr. Rost's letter, in the same number of the same review is, in one sense, a strong argument in favour of lending MSS. from Government or Public Libraries to scholars and students. He states that during a period of several years, many thousands of loans have been effected from the India Office Library, and not a loss recorded. And highly important, in connection with this statement, is the learned librarian's assertion that, except for existing arrangements, "numerous editions of texts and other works based on our (i.e. the India Office) collections of MSS. would either have been impossible, or at least not possible to their actual extent." On the

other hand, however, Mr. Warren's plea, a week later, on behalf of readers at the Bodleian who go up to Oxford expressly to inspect certain books and documents, and are told they are out on loan, is not without reasonable claim to consideration.

Congress at Stockholm.—His Majesty Oscar II. had entrusted to the organising committee of the Vienna Congress the election of a president and organising committee for the ensuing Congress at Stockholm; but the decision came to was that the Stockholm committee should elect its own president. The latter is thus constituted:—

Professor E. Tégner, of the Swedish Academy, Lund.

Dr. Fr. Fehr, *pastor primarius* and President of Consistory, Stockholm.

Professor Almkvist, Upsala.

Professor J. Lieblein, Christiania.

Dr. Count Carlo von Landberg, Stuttgart (Stockholm).

According to the last-named authority, from whose *Critica Arabica* this information has been obtained, a hope has been expressed that the Congress would hold one sitting in the capital of Norway.

China and Dutch Indian Settlements.—Through the kindness and courtesy of the Government of the Netherlands the Society has received the first and second sections of part i., Dr. G. Schlegel's valuable *Nederlandsch-Chineesch Woordenboek in de Tsiang-Tsui Dialect*: also a newly-published work of M. Van den Berg, entitled 'De Inlandsch Rang en Titels op Java en Madoera.'

Egyptology.—The *Academy* for March 12th contains a letter from Mr. Greville Chester, mentioning various places up the Nile where inscribed Ostraka are still to be found, and making an appeal to Englishmen to raise, by private subscription, a sum sufficient to bring to England the noble head of Ramses given to our nation by Muhammad Ali. It appears that there is some talk of erecting the head on a pedestal at Memphis, where it would be exposed to the knives of tourists and the stones of the Arab boys. March 26th gives a letter from Mr. Flinders Petrie on "Rock Graffiti in Upper Egypt," and under the heading "Art and Archæology" speaks of Mr. Petrie at Thebes taking a series of photographs and paper casts of the typical heads of foreigners in the great bas-relief tableaux of Luxor, Karnak, the Ramesseum and Medinet Habu. We are further told that he has photographed and "squeezed" a variety of similar types at Silsilis and other places. The ethnological series will comprise some 250 to 300 heads, including the finest known examples of types of Libyans, Ethiopians, Amorites, Hittites, Sardinians, Ionians, etc. Mr. Petrie has also taken paper casts of that which, as the *Academy* has it, "may be called the oldest botanical work in the world," viz. the representations of foreign trees and plants brought to Egypt by Thothmes III. in the course of one of his Arabian campaigns, all of which are sculptured with the minutest attention to botanical details on the walls of a chamber

in the great temple of Karnak. The plant, or tree, is in most instances given on a small scale complete, with accompanying sculptures on a larger scale, showing the leaves, fruits, and seed-pods precisely as in the botanical works of the present day. April 23rd has an account of the Necropolis at "Tell el Yahoodieh" by M. Naville, together with an informal report on the same subject from Mr. F. Ll. Griffith, and some remarks from Miss A. B. Edwards as to the possible Babylonian origin of some of the apparently foreign-shaped vases and coffins. May 7th, under head "University Jottings," announces that Professor L. Dickerman will take a class for the ancient Egyptian language and study of hieroglyphs at Chautauqua College, New York, during the summer session of 1887. In addition to these classes, Prof. Dickerman will deliver a series of four lectures to the students of Chautauqua on "The Life, Work, Art, Architecture, and Religion of the Egyptians." May 14th publishes a letter from Mr. Ernest Gardner in answer to criticisms made by Professors Kiehlhoff and Hirschfeld on Naukratis Inscriptions. In the same *Academy* Miss Edwards gives some account of M. Maspéro's "Bulletin Critique de la Religion Egyptienne," which has special reference to the ceremonial rites at funerals and other solemn occasions, and is to appear in the number for May and June of the "Revue de l'Histoire des Religions." In the *Academy* for May 21st, Miss Edwards has a glowing review of M. Maspéro's "L'Archéologie Egyptienne," and May 28th tells of the exhibition to the Cambridge Antiquarian Society of a few of the skulls from the large collection recently made in Egypt by Mr. E. A. W. Budge for the Anatomical Museum of the University.

The two numbers of the *Revue de l'Histoire des Religions* for November and December, 1886, and for January and February, 1887, contain a lengthy article by M. E. Amélineau, entitled "Le Christianisme chez les Anciens Coptes." The writer is evidently displeased and disgusted with the Copts for being Egyptians. He takes great pains to show that the Copts retain many of the old religious ideas and beliefs under the new garb of Christianity; but he does not appear to approve either of the old or of the new state of things. He makes out that the Egyptian religion old and new is a very selfish bit of bargaining—so much is performed during a short lifetime here in order to win a good time in the future. But he states that the monks in Paradise were found by those who visited them still leading the religious life; that they prayed, sang, read the Scriptures at the same hours of the day and night as on earth. We question whether life such as this should be called a purely selfish end. M. Amélineau appears to have arrived at thoroughly despising the Copts, because, like the old monuments, they are too changeless. His advice to them would not be "Show yourselves to be worthy of your ancestors," but rather "Shake yourselves free from the superstitions of past centuries—forget your origin—the great purpose of Christianity is the progressive elevation of humanity."

The same contributor has in the *Journal Asiatique* the reproduction of a Coptic document with French translation and remarks. The MS. is one of two (the other is the Life of the Patriarch Isaac), which have apparently lain unnoticed in the Musée Borgia till last year, when they were brought to the notice of students in a lecture delivered at the Egyptian Institute in Cairo by M. Amélineau. The "Document" given in the *Journal Asiatique* is "Le Martyre de Jean de Phanidjoit." It is important as being the latest Coptic work yet known. The martyrdom is said to have taken place on April 29th, 1209 A.D., and the account is written by a priest named Mark in 1210. It is divided for church reading, and appears to be read in the Coptic churches now on the day of the martyrdom.

Le Muséon for January and for April has articles by M. F. Robiou on "La Religion Egyptienne." The number for April contains three hieroglyphic inscriptions from Boulak, with translations and remarks by Karl Piehl.

In the *Revue Critique* for May 23rd M. Maspéro criticises M. L. Oberziner on Sun Worship amongst the Ancient Egyptians.

The March and April numbers of the *Monatschrift für den Orient* give the continuation and ending of A. v. Schweiger-Lerchenfeld's "Cultur-Einflüsse und Handel in Aeltester Zeit." The number for May has an article on Karabeck's communications from the Archduke Rainer Papyrus.

Amongst new books on Egypt we note: E. M. Coemans, *Manuel de la Langue Egyptienne, Première partie, Les Ecritures Egyptiennes*, Gand. E. Toda, *Estudios Egiptológicos*, 3 parts, Madrid. Ph. Virey, *Études sur le Papyrus* Prisse, le livre de Kaqimna et les leçons de Ptāh Hotep, Paris, Vieweg. Dr. Alfred H. Kellogg, *Abraham, Joseph, and Moses in Egypt*, Trübner. A. J. Butler, "Court Life in Egypt," Chapman & Hall.

Numismatics.—An interesting notice of a catalogue of the Oriental coins in the Rumianzof Museum at Moscow, by a young Russian student, M. Trutowski, appears in the *Athenæum* of the 16th April. Although the work is said to present "an unnecessarily large number of slips and oversights," it is anticipated that such shortcomings will be corrected by experience and study, and the début of the new numismatist is warmly welcomed. "The Rumianzof Cabinet," according to the *Athenæum*, "contains 4980 coins, of which 2760 belong to the dynasty of the Khans of the Crimea, but 1400 of these are effaced and illegible. There are 963 Ottoman coins of little interest, and 415 specimens of the Golden Horde, mostly well known. The rest consists of Sassanian and other Pahlavi coins, a couple of hundred issues of the Khalifs, the same number of Sāmāni Governors of Samarkand, and some examples of the Tāhiris, Ilek Khans (44), Seljuks, rulers of Volga Bulghar, and other dynasties, with 100 coins of the Shahs of Persia. The Krim Khans and Ileks are the most noteworthy part of the collection."

Vol. xxii. of the *Encyclopædia Britannica*, issued in June, contains

many papers of interest to students of Asiatic subjects. Among these may be mentioned "Sunnites and Shi'ites," by the late Spitta Bey and Professor A. Muller; "Syr Darai," by Kropotkine; "Syria," by Professor A. Socin, and "Syriac Literature," by Professor W. Wright, LL.D. The first is so interesting and instructive that readers might wish it were fuller: the second is mainly of geographical interest, and relates both to the river and province: the third is by a practised hand, ensuring a fitting treatment: and the last opens a mine of information and learning from which few if any could have selected the more notable specimens with as much discrimination as the writer of the article.

NOTES CONTRIBUTED BY THE HON. SECRETARY.

Asia.—The British and Foreign Bible Society has published a Gospel in the language of the Pangasina, spoken by one million in the Island of Luzon, in the Philippine Islands. The translator is Señor Alonzo of Seville, a long resident in the islands.

Africa—Professor Reinisch, of Vienna, has published in the German language two volumes on the language of the Afar or Danakil. The first volume contains Texts collected by the author on the spot, the second a Dictionary. Both are of the greatest importance, and prepared in the best style. It belongs to the Hamitic Group of Languages.

Professor Rene Basset of Algiers has published a manual of the Kabail language in the Zouave dialect spoken by the indigenous inhabitants of Algeria. It is a Hamitic Language, and totally distinct from Arabic. The Manual consists of a Grammar, Texts, Bibliography, and Vocabulary. It is a most satisfactory work, and is in the French language.

The Christian Knowledge Society has just published in the English language a dictionary of the Nika language spoken near Mombasa in East Africa. It belongs to the Bantu Family. This work was compiled by the late Rev. J. Rebmann, of the Church Missionary Society, during his long residence in that country.

Dr. Sims, of the Livingstone Mission on the Congo, has just published in the English language a Vocabulary of the Yalulema language spoken in the Aruwini, Lolami, and Mawembe districts of the Upper Congo. It belongs to the Bantu Family. The book is accompanied by a small map of the Congo, indicating the precise locality where this language is spoken. Dr. Cust has presented a copy to the Library of the R.A.S. (East London Institute for Home and Foreign Missions, publishers.)

The Hon. Secretary has also published at his own charges at the Christian Knowledge Society a Vocabulary of the language spoken by the savage Fan tribe who occupy the region north of the River Gabun and the French Protectorate in South Africa, West Coast. The renderings of the words are in the Spanish language. It is pre-

sumed to be of the Bantu family. The compiler is a Spaniard, Dr. Osorio, who had resided some time in the country, and who called upon the writer of these notes to help him to publish his vocabulary. As it seemed of value, was certainly genuine, and filled up a great gap in our existing knowledge, Dr. Cust consented to do so, as his contribution to the extension of our knowledge of Africa.

Among this year's books on African Languages, mention should be made of three published at Vienna: *The Manuel de la Langue Tigräi*, by M. Schreiber; the *Lingua Afar nel Nord-Est dell' Africa*, by Giovanni Colizza; and *Die Bilin Sprache*, by Leo Reinisch. The Tigräi is spoken in Central and Northern Abyssinia; it is Semitic, and a sister language of the Tigré, both springing from the old Ethiopian, or Giz. Along the shores of the Red Sea, and in the islands between the Bay of Adulis and Gulf of Tajirah, is the tribe known to outsiders as Danakil, to the members themselves, Afar. Mention has already been made of Professor Leo Reinisch's volumes on this tribe. In the general scramble for Africa, Italy laid hands on Assab, a port of the Red Sea, and Government was induced to send young Italians to acquire the language of the neighbouring tribes with a view to annexation. Hence Signor Colizza's work, a most complete one, and a valuable addition to science. The vocabulary of the Bilin, a language spoken by the Bogos tribe on the northern frontier of Abyssinia, is a masterly production, written in German.

*Grundriss der Sprachwissenschaft, von Dr. Fried. Müller.*¹—Vienna, Holder, 1886.

The completion of this remarkable and epoch-making work deserves a notice, though totally inadequate to the greatness of the subject, and the comprehensive manner, in which it has been treated. Six years ago the first volume appeared, and the author promises two additional volumes by way of appendix. But the subject of the Science of Language expands year by year, and this noble work forty years hence will be as far below the high-water level, as the famous Mithridates of Adelung and Vater, which astonished the world in 1817, and is now entirely out of date.

To this work there is no Index, and there are no Language-Maps. It cannot for one moment be considered to embrace our linguistic-knowledge of the world, as the author restricts himself to those languages of which he has competent Grammars. It is obvious that at the present moment a very large proportion of Languages is represented by Vocabularies alone, and a certain proportion, though known to exist, is unrepresented by any linguistic document. The

¹ Contributed by Dr. R. N. Cust.

book is therefore a survey of our knowledge of the Science, as far as Grammars have been compiled, and is therefore an inadequate representation of the World's store of the Form of Speech in actual use by Mankind.

Then there is an inherent difficulty in the method adopted, which is meant to combine Ethnological and Philological results. It is obvious that Race is innate, and cannot be changed either by Nations or individuals, and that Language can be changed even without leaving the Native Country, of which we have a notable instance in the Fellahs of Egypt, and the English-speaking Negroes of West Africa.

It can truly be said that no such a thesaurus of language can be found in any other work, ancient or modern, and no Library is complete without it. The main body of the work consists of careful analyses of the Phonology and Grammatical Forms of every language of which the Sounds and Forms have been brought to book. Texts are in most cases supplied with interlinear translations, and careful grammatical notes. To few, if to any one, has it been given to possess the acumen required for such a task, and the industry to carry the author up to the point of knowledge which would supply the characteristic features of the language, and then drop the subject, and pass on to an entirely different specimen of Sound-Lore, Word-Lore, and Sentence-Lore. If the question arose as to the Grammatical Construction of any language in South Africa, North America, the Extreme Orient, or the South Sea Islands, the student has only to turn to the page assigned to that language, and he will find the phenomena set forth after a careful diagnosis, and a reference to the authority, thus enabling the accuracy to be tested.

The order in which the author grapples with his subject is the ascending one. He commences with Mankind, as he is found in the lowest round of human culture, but the language of such races is sometimes found to be superior, as a language, to the culture of the race.

In the first volume he treats of the Woolly-haired races, and passes under review the Bushman, the Hottentots of South Africa, and the Papuans of New Guinea. Thence we rise to the great variety of African Negro Languages spoken in the tropical Regions North of the Equator, and the wonderful Bantu Family, which occupies the whole of South Africa South of the Equator, allowing for the Bushman and Hottentot Enclaves.

In the second volume we find an account of the Straight-haired

Races: the Australians, and the Hyperboreans, the Jenisee-Ostyak, the Ainu of Japan, the inhabitants of the Aleut Islands, and the Eskimo. To them succeed the long row of American indigenous languages from the North to the extreme South of that Continent.

In the second part of the same volume are passed under review the languages of Polynesia, Melanesia, and Malaysia, the great Altaic Family of High Asia, the Japanesc, Korean, the Tibeto-Burman Family, the Tai Family, the Khasia in the Himalaya, the language of Annam, and the languages of China. The vast area traversed in this section indicates how brief, summary, and inexhaustive must be the survey even of the series of languages, of which Grammars have been compiled.

In the third volume we get a glance, but a glance only, at the great Nuba-Fulah Family of North Africa, and Dravidian of South India; the Basque of the Pyrenees, the languages of the inhabitants of the Caucasus; the Hamitic language of North Africa, and the Semitic of Asia, and we are landed at last in the familiar Region of the great Aryan Family, and touch ground.

The book is avowedly a continuation of the author's highly esteemed "*Allgemeine Ethnographie*." We cannot doubt that to the appendices promised in the autumn, there will be added a long row of additional volumes, to be incorporated in a second edition of the whole work in their proper places in the Narrative.

There is room for an abundance of criticism in detail, and there will be no severer critic of the work than the author himself, but he has to be congratulated on accomplishing his task.

ADDRESS TO THE QUEEN FROM THE ROYAL ASIATIC
SOCIETY ON THE OCCASION OF HER MOST
GRACIOUS MAJESTY'S JUBILEE.

The draft having been revised in the manner suggested as appropriate to the circumstances,¹ the following Address was forwarded to the care of the Home Secretary :—

¹ Previous to the preparation of the above, the following letter from the President to the Secretary of the Society, dated 11th June, 1887, had been circulated for the information of Resident Members :—

DEAR SIR FREDERIC GOLDSMID,

In the matter of the Address to the Queen which we discussed when we last met, it is clear to me that no action can be taken without the consent of the Society, or at least of the Council, expressed or understood. Now the next meeting of either is not until the 20th inst., the day before the Jubilee. I feel that I owe the Society an apology for not having brought the question to its notice on the 16th ult. My excuse must be that it was entirely owing to the indisposition of our late President that I was placed in the chair on the 16th, and that I had hardly had time to acquaint myself with the duties devolving on me in that position. However, as I cannot but suppose that attendance at a special meeting in the next few days would be inconvenient to many, I propose to request you, as Secretary, to acquaint the Resident Members of the Society that it is contemplated to present an Address to Her Majesty. This Address, I presume, it will be my duty as President to prepare. It will be a purely formal document, but in order to guard against an appearance of undue assumption of responsibility on my part, I shall ask Sir Edward Colebrooke and Sir Henry Rawlinson to associate themselves with me in the consideration of the draft.

I cannot suppose that there will be a dissentient voice in the Society regarding the propriety of presenting an Address to Her Majesty on such an occasion as the Jubilee, and I trust that, safeguarded as it will be by the opinions of the eminent coadjutors whom I am inviting to assist me, the Society will be content to leave the draft in my hands.

I remain, etc.,

THOMAS FRANCIS WADE.

ADDRESS.

MADAM,

At a time when from every side Your Majesty's subjects are hastening to tender their congratulations upon the completion of that half century of rule, which, both morally and materially, has been so blessed throughout Your dominions, it would appear doubly incumbent on the Royal Asiatic Society to pray Your acceptance of its tribute of duty and affection.

For while, in common with other learned associations, this Society has been, since its first foundation, encouraged by the patronage of the Sovereign, it is under Your Majesty as Empress of India that its labours have acquired for it a special claim to be regarded as a body identified with the interests of Your Majesty's subjects in the far East.

That the same measure of prosperity that has distinguished Your long reign may be continued throughout the years yet in store for Your Majesty, is the sincere and earnest hope of those on whose behalf, as members of the Asiatic Society, I humbly beg, Madam, to lay this Address before Your Throne.

I have the honour to be,

Madam,

With the profoundest respect,

Your Majesty's most obedient humble servant,

THOMAS FRANCIS WADE,

President Royal Asiatic Society.

The Address having been laid before the Queen, its acceptance was notified to the President in the following letter :—

WHITEHALL,
30 *June*, 1887.

SIR,

I have had the honour to lay before the Queen the loyal and dutiful Address of the Royal Asiatic Society on the occasion of Her Majesty attaining the fiftieth year of her reign, and I have to inform you that Her Majesty was pleased to receive the same very graciously.

I am, Sir,
Your obedient Servant,
HENRY MATTHEWS.

The President of the Royal Asiatic Society,
22, Albemarle Street, W.

CONTENTS OF VOL. XIX. PART IV.

[NEW SERIES.]

ORIGINAL COMMUNICATIONS.

	PAGE
ART. XVI.—Tho Miryeks or Stone-men of Corea. By Prof. TERRIEN DE LACOUPERIE, Ph. & Litt.D., M.R.A.S. (<i>With a Plate</i>)	553
ART. XVII.—Tho Pre-Sanskrit Element in Ancient Tamil Literature. By E. S. W. SENĀTHI RĀJĀ, LL.B., M.R.A.S.	558
ART. XVIII.—Were Zenobia and Zebbā'u Identical? By J. W. REDHOUSE, M.R.A.S., C.M.G., Litt.D., etc...	583
ART. XIX.—Tho First Maṇḍala of the R̥ig-Veda. By FREDERIC PINCOTT, M.R.A.S.	598
ART. XX.—Origin and Development of the Cuneiform Sylla- bary. By G. BERTIN, M.R.A.S.....	625
ART. XXI.—The Babylonian Chronicle. By THEO. G. PINCHES, M.R.A.S.	655

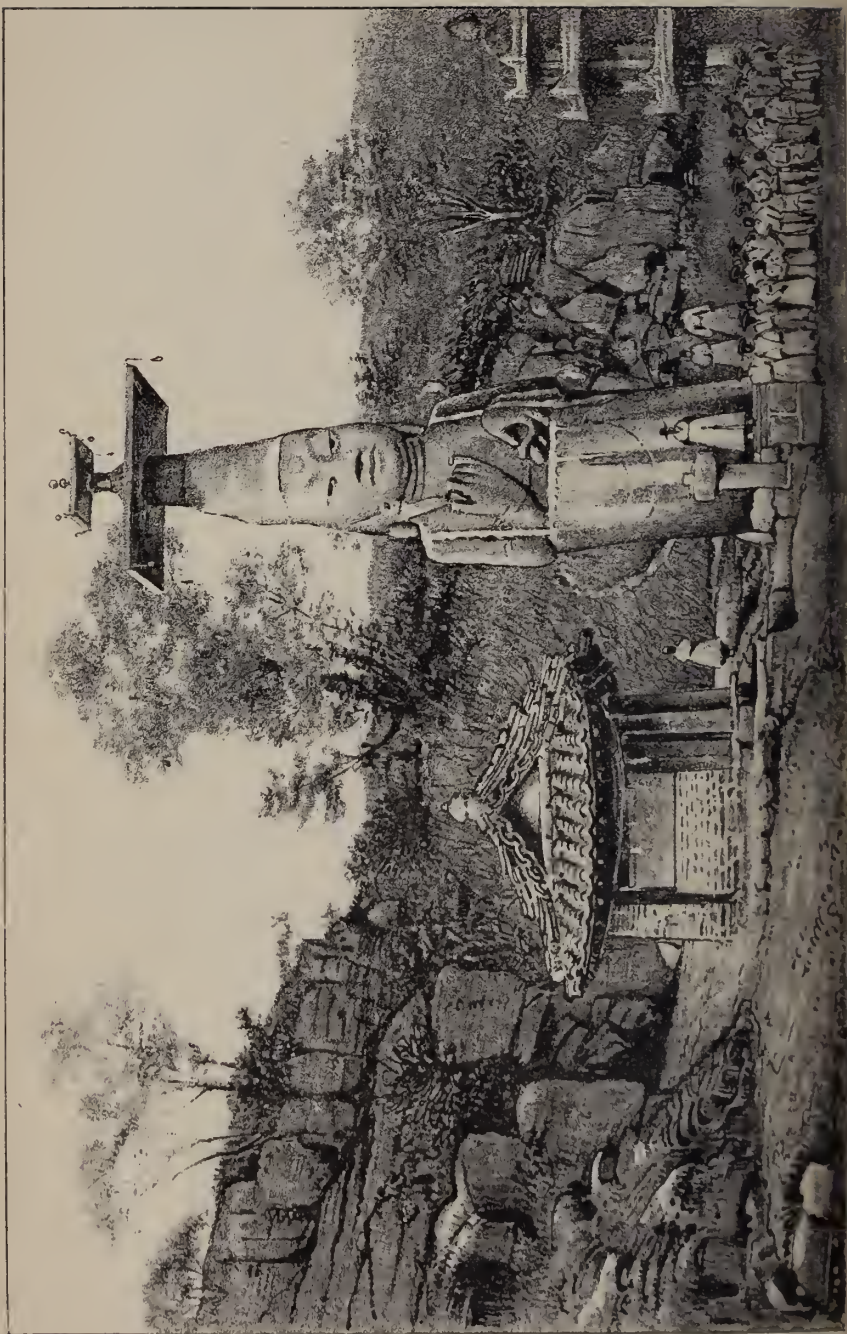
NOTES OF THE QUARTER

1. Reports of Meetings of the Royal Asiatic Society, Session 1886-7	682
2. Proceedings of Asiatic or Oriental Societies	682
3. Correspondence—(1) The Persian for Rouble, by Capt. T. G. de Guiraudon. (2) The Bibliography of Africa, by Capt. T. G. de Guiraudon	686
4. Obituary Notices	687
5. Excerpta Orientalia	691
6. Notes contributed by the Hon. Secretary	706
7. Special Committee, Royal Asiatic Society	714

INDEX.....	721
------------	-----

LIST OF MEMBERS	i-xxii
-----------------------	--------

[With this Part is also issued the Title-page, Table of Contents,
and List of Illustrations for Volume XIX.]



JOURNAL

OF

THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY.

ART. XVI.—*The Miryeks or Stone-men of Corea.* By Prof.
TERRIEN DE LACOUPERIE, Ph. & Litt.D., M.R.A.S.

COREA, which was till lately the last but one of the “Forbidden Lands,” is now slowly unfolding its archæological treasures to the gaze of travellers.

I.

One of the most, if it be not indeed *the* most interesting of these remains of bygone ages, are the Miryeks, which are huge half-length human figures carved in stone, and looked upon as relics of a religion of former times. The largest of those seen by M. Carles¹ during his recent travels in the country are between Ko-yang and Pha-ju; they are about 25 feet high, cut out of some large boulders in the middle of a fir wood in a hill-side.

One of these has a round, the other a square hat, which peculiarity shows, perhaps, that the former is meant to represent Heaven, or the male element of Chinese philosophy; the latter Earth, or the female element.

The largest hitherto known is at Un-jin, near the Keun river, in Chöl-la-To. The figure is estimated to stand 62 feet high; the body and head (according to a photograph² taken by Lieut. G. C. Foulk, U.S.N.) would seem to resemble the idols in Buddhist temples, but the cap is different. A column about 10 feet high runs up from the head, giving support to an oblong slab about the same length. On this

¹ Cf. M. Carles, *Recent Journeys in Corea*, J.R.G.S. 1886.

² Reproduced on the Plate herewith.

stands a smaller column supporting another slab, and from the corners of the two, bells are pendent by chains.

II.

The word *Miryek*¹ is simply rendered by 'Stone-man,' and consequently does not seem to afford any clue as to the actual signification of these huge statues; for the fact likewise of (according to Mr. Carles' authority) their possessing no other appellation would show that their primitive destination was forgotten by the people. Besides, the word is perhaps not Corean at all, as it does not yield to any satisfactory etymology. It is in fact the expression by which the Coreans read the two Chinese ideograms 石人 taken together as a single term, and not individually, as in that case the two corresponding words would be *sok in* in Sinico-Corean, or *tol saram* in Corean proper. This peculiarity suggests that the expression *miryek* existed in Corea, in its special adaptation to the huge stone statues, without having preserved its original meaning, previous to the adoption of the Chinese characters;² when it was necessary to select such characters in this special case, no other explanation could be found but the blunt description which was purposely indicated by the Chinese ideograms above quoted. Should this suggestion be accepted, it implies that the religion which had caused the erection of the statues was either forgotten or in the shade at the time. *Miryek* may be a foreign word of which the origin might cast some light on the origin of the statues themselves; the Corean phonesis hardly discriminates *n*, *l*, *r* one from the other, and their looseness of articulation under that respect is so great, that the dictionary has only one class for the words beginning by these three consonants, which, however, are distinguished in writing. Making

¹ The dictionary of the Missionaries simply says: "*Miryek*, 石人, Statue de Pierre, Grande idole de Pierre."

² The Coreans have the only real alphabet of East Asia. It consists of 14 consonants (9 simple, 5 aspirate) and 11 vowels (7 simple, 5 complex). Klaproth has found that it was introduced in Pek-tsi in 374 A. D. (*Aperçu de l'Origine des écritures de l'Ancien Monde*, p. 25), but he has not given his source.

allowance for this lack of precision, *miryek* is so much like the Turki *meniak*,¹ 'great,' or 'prince,' that it may be connected with it. The relationship of the Korean with the Turki and other Altaic languages is real, though remote,² so that, after all, the word may not be an importation, and simply be a common heirloom; but the probabilities here are the other way, and further investigations and discoveries in Corea cannot fail to throw some light on the matter.

III.

The curious double cap of the Miryek of Un-jin is highly suggestive of two of the currents of tradition which are met with in Corea, whilst the oblong slab and its pendants remind us of the old Chinese dress cap as illustrated in the ancient rituals;³ the repetition of such a thing on a smaller scale above, and their arrangement on a central column, were obviously suggested by the Indian Pagoda-umbrella. There is no doubt that the Miryek of Unjin is Buddhist. The position of the hands,⁴ and especially the mark between the eyebrows (i.e. the *urna*, one of the 32 lakshanas or characteristic physiological marks by which every Buddha may be recognized),⁵ are, I think, conclusive.

Un-jin (the Eun-tjin of the missionaries' map),⁶ near the Keun Kang, or river within the province or *To* of Tcheyoung = Tcheung, and in proximity to, but not within the limits of that of Chöl-la-To (Tjyen-la-to), Ko-yang and Pha-ju (Hpa-tju) at 40 and 80 li N. of the capital, as well as Unjin, all three places where Miryekes still exist, were formerly parts of the Pek-tsi state, where Buddhism (introduced about the end of

¹ *Meniak* is also the name of tribes in the east of Tibet. Cf. my book *The Languages of China before the Chinese* (London, 1887), § 173.

² Cf. Dr. Heinrich Winkler, *Uralaltaische Völker und Sprachen* (Berlin, 1884), pp. 70-72.

³ Cf. the plates of the *San Li t'u*, or simply the illustrations in G. Pauthier's *Chine*, pl. xxxv., or S. Kidd's *China*, pl. i. and xiii.

⁴ For the Buddhist's position of the hands cf. E. v. Schlagintweit, *Buddhism in Tibet*, ch. xiv. And also the plates in Hoffman's *Buddha Pantheon*.

⁵ E. J. Eitel, *Handbook of Chinese Buddhism*, p. 61. The Pagoda-umbrella is probably connected with the idea of the revolving-pagoda.

⁶ In the *Dictionnaire géographique de la Corée*, 2nd Appendice of *Dictionnaire Coréen-français* Yokohama, 1880, 8vo.).

the fourth century) was conspicuous for the number and splendour of its monuments, in the ages immediately succeeding—according to the Chinese notice of the country in the dynastic annals of the Northern Sung (420-478 A.D.).¹

IV.

The existence of such big statues is interesting in connection with similar or somewhat similar ones which have been erected in other countries in honour of the Gautama Buddha, in ancient times. The huge statues at Bamian have lately been described in this Journal.² But others are still unknown or have not been studied. In the *Burma Gazetteer*, compiled by Major H. R. Spearman, the frontispiece is a photograph representing the ruins of a colossal image of Gautama at Zaing-ga-naing.³ Leaving aside instances of late date, which offer little interest here, we may mention some early cases hitherto unnoticed.

In 419 A.D., Kung-Ti, the last Emperor of the Chinese Dynasty of the Eastern Tsin, being a faithful Buddhist, melted away ten million pieces of *ho* money,⁴ and made a statue in metal of 60 cubits in height for the *Wa Kung* temple.⁵ In the same century, we hear through the annals of China and those of Annam about huge Buddhist statues in the country of Lin-yh, otherwise Lâm-âp, corresponding notably to the modern provinces of Ninh-binh and Thanh-

¹ The fragment appears without acknowledgment as usual in Ma-Tuanlin's *Wen hien t'ung kao*. Cf. D'Hervey de Saint-Denys, *Ethnographie des peuples étrangers à la Chine* par Ma-Touan-Lin, vol. i. Genève, 1876, p. 279.

² *The Rock-cut Caves and Statues of Bamian*, by MM. M. G. Talbot, P. J. Maitland, and W. Simpson, *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, Vol. XVIII. 1886, pp. 323-350.

³ *British Burma Gazetteer*, vol. i. The statues of 'Buddha entering Nirvana,' or 'sleeping Buddha,' i.e. recumbent, instead of sitting down or erect, belong probably to another wave of the Buddhist statuary. Such, for instance, as those mentioned by Col. H. Yule, *The Book of Ser Marco-Polo* (2nd edit.), vol. i. p. 223. According to tradition, the first statue of Buddha seated was made during the lifetime of Gautama. Cf. *Dsandan dsou yin domok*, Légende de la statue de Bouddha, traduite du Mongol, by A. Ivanowski (*Le Muséon*, 1883, vol. ii. pp. 93-104).

⁴ In the text: *tsien wan ho* 'a thousand myriads ho.' The latter I understand to be the name of the current money as it was for several centuries previously. Cf. my work on *The Coins of China in the British Museum*, etc., vol. i. p. 383.

⁵ *Tsin shu*, in *Tai-ping yü-lan*, bk. 657, f. 3.

hoa of Annam.¹ The records of the latter country state that the Lâm-âp professed the religion called *Mê-cân*, and that they worshipped huge gold and silver statues, some of which were more than ten *mètres* (?) in circumference.² The Chinese records, on the other hand, state simply³ that one of the kings of Lin-yh, a believer in the everlasting principles of India, caused statues to be cast in gold and silver, ten half-cubits in height.⁴ The word *Mê-cân* is perhaps an alteration, and intended to represent *Magadha*, the country of Gautama Buddha. Maritime intercourse was active in former times between Indo-China, the Indian Archipelago and the northern coasts. It is from this intercourse with Japan in the third century, that the Chinese have first heard of Formosa, the Philippines, the Archipelago, etc.⁵ And nothing would be surprising should an early spread of Buddhism in Corea have come by this maritime way, thus causing, as in Indo-China, the erection of the *Miryeks*. The countenance of these huge statues may be found at fault in various details with the standard imagery and statuary of Buddhism, but these differences have obviously resulted from their peculiar surroundings in this remote corner of N.E. Asia.

¹ Cf. the *Hoang viet địa dư chí* (Official Geography of Annam), vol. i.

² I translate from P. J. B. Truong Vinh-ky, *Cours d'histoire Annamite*, vol. i. (Saigon, 1875, 16mo.), p. 29, as I have not the original text at hand. I doubt the *mètres* of the translation.

³ Cf. *Nan she* or Southern history (420-589 A.D.) in *Tai-ping yü-lan*, bk. 786, fol. 4 v.

⁴ This unsatisfactory statement is perhaps a misrendering only. The text says: 大 + 十 + 圍 *ta shih hwei*; the latter word means circumference, and also a measure of half a cubit.

⁵ Cf. my *Formosa Notes*, § 34.

ART. XVII.—*The Pre-Sanskrit Element in Ancient Tamil Literature.* By E. S. W. SENĀTHI RĀJĀ, LL.B., M.R.A.S.

It has been the almost invariable remark of certain scholars who have devoted their attention to the study of the old Tamil literature,² that it seems, to judge from its actual state and form, to have had no commencement. Unlike the languages and literatures of other peoples, which pass through various stages of natural development before arriving at maturity, the high dialect of the Tamil has apparently sprung up into full-grown manhood from the very instant of its birth, like the fabled offsprings of *rishis*, without traversing the intermediate states of infancy and youth. The philologist has before him a language which, to borrow the words of an eminent lexicographer,³ is "in its poetic form more polished and exact than the Greek, and in both dialects, with its borrowed treasures, more copious than the Latin;" but of the origin and growth of which he seeks in vain to catch a glimpse through the veil of impenetrable darkness which hangs over it. If we go back to the earliest source of existing literature, we find it to be a grammatical one. In fact, the author of *Tolkāppiyam*, perhaps the oldest grammatical work extant, is alleged to have been the immediate disciple of the mythical Agastya, the reputed author of the Tamil language itself.⁴ Beyond Agastya all is obscurity. But what seems inexplicable is the division of the Tamil

¹ Read in part before the meeting of 28th June, 1887.

² Vide the remarks of Dr. Pope in a speech delivered before the Madras University.

³ Dr. Winslow's *English-Tamil Dictionary*, Preface, p. vii.

⁴ See the *Tamil Bhārata* of Villipittūran.

language by the supposed first grammarian, and following his example by Tolkâppiyam,¹ into three dialects, a poetical (Içai), a dramatical (Nâḍagam), and a colloquial one (Iyal). How are we to account for the existence of such a threefold division of the language before the commencement of all literature? What was the object and utility of such a classification at almost the birth-time of the language? What was the basis upon which the grammarian proceeded to establish the above distinction? for he could not surely have evolved it out of his own "inner consciousness." These are questions which suggest themselves on the very threshold of any inquiry into the origin of the Tamil literature.

Of the above difficulty two solutions are proposed; one of traditional, and the other of recent origin; but neither of which seems to be capable of bearing the light of criticism. To the orthodox Hindu believer there is nothing surprising in the whole matter; the solution is very simple, it was done by a stroke of miracle; for to a *muni* like Agastya nothing was impossible. Did not the same sage, though no higher than one's thumb, drink the whole ocean in one sip, and sink down the Vindhya mountain with the mere pressure of his toe? Different sects vied with each other in claiming the invention of the Tamil language for their favourite divinities, though all of them are unanimous in regarding Agastya as the mouthpiece of their respective deity. To the Çaivas it was Skanda who vouchsafed to reveal the language as well as its grammar; to the Buddhists, if we are to believe Buddhamittra,² the author of *Vîraçôṛiyam*, a standard grammatical treatise, it was Avalokiteçvara who condescended to make this linguistic revelation. In the opinion of the Arhatas, Tamil is one of the eighteen languages revealed by

¹ Tolkâppiyam, chap. i., with the commentary of Natchinârkinîyâr, manuscript belonging to the Bibliothèque Nationale at Paris.

² *Vîra-çôṛiyam*, introductory stanza, which runs as follows: "Âyum gunat' Avalokitan pakkal Agattiyan kêt'. Eyum puranik' iyampiya tim Tamil. . . ." Dr. Burnell ascribes the composition of *Vîra-çôṛiyam* to the eleventh century, apparently from the fact that a certain Vîra Chôla flourished at that period. According to an anecdote occurring in connection with the Skanda Purâṇa (Tamil), the work was in existence in the eighth century A.D.

the omniscient Jīna. At this day, however, it is inadmissible that even so great a personage as Agastya, notwithstanding all the supernatural aids he was favoured with, could have invented a language and launched it forth into the world ready-made. We are forced to go upon the supposition that the Tamil had a natural birth and development like all other languages.

By the side of this theory of divine inspiration, there is another of recent¹ birth, which, so far as its chances of probability are concerned, might, I think, well contest the palm with the former. It offers on many points a striking analogy to the former, and appears to be based much on the same fundamental principle, revelation excepted. According to this hypothesis, the *Āntamil*² is an artificial style. In the former theory the whole language was the invention of or at least revealed by the instrumentality of one man; in the latter the poetic dialect only can claim that characteristic speciality, the inventors in this case being a certain number of poets and grammarians of the ninth century A.D. This theory would thus confer on the Tamils the unique distinction of a people whose poetical sentiment, not content with its natural expression in intelligible language, gave vent to itself in a conventional gibberish!

I need hardly say that both of the above-mentioned theories are to my mind far from being satisfactory. The language of a people, whether it be poetical or colloquial, can no more be created by one man than by the deliberate consent of a number of men. At least, experience does not seem to confirm such a supposition. On the contrary, it seems to grow up with the people unconsciously, and to undergo its changes slowly, varying in the rapidity of its

¹ See Dr. Burnell's South Indian Palæography, p. 142.

² Dr. Burnell seems to confound *Āntamil* with *Isai* (poetic) Tamil. The poetic language was no doubt derived from *Āntamil*, but the terms are not synonymous. *Āntamil* words sometimes undergo in poetry certain modifications, which are caused by the exigencies of euphony and metre. These changes are called *ceyul vikāram* (poetic changes), and the language is then technically called *Isai* Tamil. But such abnormal variations are not of the essence of *Āntamil* itself. *Āntamil* was at first the dialect of a particular district of the Tamil country.

movement according to the march of the nation, to whom it serves as a vehicle of expression. It is for the advocates of the latter theory to prove that *Çentamil* was an exception, and to furnish historical evidence of the age and circumstances in which and the persons by whom the compact was entered into, of creating *Çentamil*, and of the exceptional circumstances which justified it. For my part I am unable to discover traces of such a convention, either express or tacit, in the whole field of *Çentamil* literature.

Not to speak of the unnatural singularity of the above hypothesis, there are two or three strong objections against it, which, as it seems to me, decisively stamp it as improbable.

1. It throws no light on the division of the old language into the three varieties of *Iyal*, *Içai* and *Nâḍagam* by the very first grammarian, to whom existing literature, in common with tradition, ascribes the first work of that kind.

2. In a *sasana* belonging to the Jews of Cochin,¹ which Dr. Burnell assigns to the ninth century, the language employed is much like the modern Tamil. If modern Tamil was in current use in the ninth century, and *Çentamil* was an artificial language invented only in the ninth, how are we to account for the existence in the latter of words common to the whole Dravidian parent stock, but which are unknown to the colloquial idiom? The Telugu and Canarese must have been separated from the Tamil more than 2000 years ago,² as Dr. Caldwell has ably demonstrated in his Comparative Grammar of the Dravidian Languages; yet words belonging to the two former abound in *Çentamil*, while they seem to be unknown to the current language of the present day as to that of the ninth century. For instance, the following words amongst many others are in common use in Canarese and Telugu, while in Tamil, though they are unknown to the daily idiom, they are of very frequent occurrence in the poetic dialect:

¹ See a copy of it in Burnell's South Indian Palæography, p. 140.

² See Caldwell's Comparative Grammar of the Dravidian Languages, Introduction.

	Çentamil.	Canarese.	Telugu.
Child	Çiçu	Kusu	Shishuvu
Mother-in-law	Atte	Atte	Atta
Nurse	Tâdi	Dâyi	Dâdi
Father	Tande	Tande	Tandri
Ear	Çevi	Kivi	Cevi
Body	Mey	Mai	...
Cow	Â	Akalu	Âvu
Nail	Ugir	Uguru	Goru
Field	Pulam	Hola	Polam
Water	Nîr	Nîru	...
House	Mane, illam	Mane	Illam

Indeed, it seems almost possible to construct a complete *Çentamil* vocabulary out of Telugu and Canarese alone. On the supposition that *Çentamil* was an invention of the ninth century, the question arises, whence did the Tamil classical writers derive their vocabulary? It could not have been from the prevailing language of the ninth century, for a hundred years previously modern Tamil was already in use.¹ We cannot also admit the hypothesis that the old authors coined them consciously from Telugu and Canarese, for there is no reason why they should not have adopted by preference words from Sanskrit, which was already held in high esteem throughout all India as a literary language. Nor could we suppose that they introduced Telugu and Canarese words into their poetic dialect, knowing the affinity of the two former to the Tamil language, for it is only modern philology which has revealed their relation to one another as cognate languages, and thus dispelled the errors of old grammarians, who regarded all Dravidian languages as mere derivatives² from Sanskrit. If there was no *Çentamil* before the ninth century, it is impossible to explain how words now found only in languages separated from the Tamil more than 2000 years ago, were preserved during the interval of nearly 1000

¹ South Indian Palæography, p. 142.

² See Ândhraçabda-chintâmaṇi, i. 14-18; Manu, x. 43-44; Mahâbhârata Çântiparvan, etc.

years, so as to be incorporated into a literature which came into being about the ninth century.

3. The above theory does not accord with the little we know of the history of the Tamil people. In the absence of all means of verification I will pass in silence the records of native authorities, according to which more than 200 Pāṇḍiyas¹ are said to have reigned at Madura before the commencement of the fourteenth century. It would, however, be well to bear this circumstance in mind, to see how far it is corroborated by external evidence. The Mahāvanso² uniformly refers to the Tamils of the Pāṇḍiyan country as possessing a national existence and civilization anterior to that of the Singhalese, and mentions that Wijaya, the first king of Ceylon, married the daughter of a Pāṇḍiyan about the sixth century B.C. The fact of the Pāṇḍiyan kingdom figuring as a well-established monarchy at that period argues to its having been in existence for some two or three centuries at least previously. In the time of Buddha, the principal Dravidian countries appear to have been on a par with those of the North in point of moral and material progress.³

Megasthenes,⁴ the ambassador of Seleukos Nikator at the court of Pataliputra in Northern India (302 B.C.), could not have heard of the kingdom of Pāṇḍiya in the extreme South, if it had not attained considerable power and reputation in his days. The Mahābhāshya⁵ of Patanjali (second century B.C.) speaks familiarly not only of the Pāṇḍiya and Chola countries, but also of particular towns and rivers in the South, as Kānchi and Kāvēri. The kingdoms of Pāṇḍiya, Chola and Kerāla are also met with in the inscriptions⁶ of Asoka (250 B.C.). The fragments of Eusebius allude to two embassies sent by Pāṇḍion to Augustus, and Strabo⁷ men-

¹ Madura Sthala Purāṇa; Irayanār Agapporul, etc.

² See Turnour's Mahāvanso, pp. 55-57.

³ Lalita Vistāra; Mahāvanso, pp. 59, 67, 73.

⁴ Schwanbeck's Megasthenes.

⁵ The Mahābhāshya of Patanjali, Benares edition, p. 82.

⁶ Tablet II. of Asoka Inscriptions, "Evam api samantesu yathā Choda, Pāṇḍa, Satiyaputo, Ketaliyaputo," etc.

⁷ Strabo, Traduction française par La Porte du Theil.

tions that Chera,¹ another Dravidian prince, sought also the friendship of the Romans. Pliny² speaks of the kingdom of Pâṇḍiya (A.D. 77) and its capital Madura.³ Ptolemy (second century A.D.) and the *Periplus Mari Erythræi* of Arrian (third century A.D.) equally refer to the three Tamil kingdoms as the most prominent in the South. Indeed, Porus in the North and Pâṇḍiyan in the South seem to have been the two most powerful monarchs⁴ of India whose fame overshadowed the rest in the time of the Greek supremacy in Western Asia. Varâha-Mihira,⁵ the astronomer (404 A.D.), makes allusions to the kingdoms of Pâṇḍiya, Chola, Kerâla, Karnataka, Kalinga and Ândhra, all of which were Dravidian, and to the rivers Kâvêri and Tambraparni in the South. Fa-Hian,⁶ the Chinese traveller in India of the fourth century, heard of a powerful kingdom in the South, which Mr. Ferguson has identified with the Pallava kingdom, a recognized seat of the Tamil language. The testimony of Greek and Roman writers attest that Kolkai,⁷ the ancient seaport of the kingdom of Pâṇḍiya, was a great emporium of commerce. According to Chinese⁸ authorities, in A.D. 500 an ambassador, Leam Woo, came from South India to China, who gave them to understand that trade was carried on between Southern India and the Roman Empire. Arab historians⁹ agree as well in affirming that maritime commerce existed from the earliest times between the Phœnicians and Arabs on the one hand and the Pâṇḍiya and other kingdoms in the South.¹⁰

¹ *Κηροβολλος*, whose capital was *Καροῦρα*. The Sanskrit termination *putra*, added to the Dravidian *Chêra*, shows that Southern India was already brought under Brahmanical influence.

² *L'Histoire Naturelle de Pline, par Poinssinet de Sivry, Livre vi.*

³ Table X. of Ptolemy.

⁴ Strabo, vol. v. bk. xv.

⁵ Dr. Kern's Translation of *Brihat Sanhitâ*, Journ. Roy. Asiat. Soc. Vol. VI. An inscription of the Châlukya dynasty dated 490 A.D. shows the existence of the Chera, Chola and Pâṇḍiya monarchies towards the close of the fifth century. See Journ. Roy. Asiat. Soc. Vol. V. p. 343.

⁶ Beal's Travels of Fa-Hian.

⁷ Ptolemy's Table X.

⁸ Journ. Roy. Asiat. Soc. Vol. VI. p. 458.

⁹ See also Marco Polo, by Colonel Yule, vol. ii. pp. 267-275.

¹⁰ According to M. Chabas, in the reign of Thothmes III. (seventeenth century B.C.) of Egypt, Phœnicians had commercial intercourse with India (*Études Egyptiennes*, p. 120).

From the *Çentamil* words found in the Hebrew¹ Bible as terms to designate peacocks, apes, etc., brought by ships from Tarshish, it has been inferred that commercial intercourse had been going on between the Tamils and the Phœnicians as early as the days of Solomon, king of the Hebrews (1500 B.C.).

To suppose that a people who had commercial and sometimes political relations with Phœnicians, Greeks, Romans, Chinese and Arabs from very early times, and who were in contact for centuries with one of the most refined of languages, the Sanskrit, and who had well-organized kingdoms of their own, as historically attested from at least the sixth century B.C., to suppose, I repeat, that such people had no literature of their own till the ninth century A.D., seems to me, to say the least, to be running counter to all probability. It is difficult to believe that the kingdom of Pāṇḍiya, sung by poet and bard as the cradle of *Çentamil*, had continued to exist from before the sixth century B.C., and had produced no literature during its palmy days until its old age and decrepitude in the ninth century A.D., when there was nothing capable of giving such an impulse.²

The various considerations referred to above seemed to me sufficient to reject the theory of *Çentamil* being an artificial language of the ninth century, and to search for a more rational explanation of it. The only method capable of rendering any trustworthy data appeared to me to be the comparative one, which has so often been employed with the most fruitful results.

Whatever doubts one might entertain as regards the period anterior to Asoka, we know to a certainty from the inscriptions³ of that monarch that Sanskrit and North Indian

¹ Dr. Caldwell, Introduction to the Comparative Grammar of the Dravidian Languages.

² In the fourth century Fa-Hian found Brahmans and heretics in Java, and the old Kawi literature seems to contain Sanskrit words in a Dravidianized form. See Fa-Hian's Travels by Beal, p. 168, and South Indian Palæography, pp. 132-133. This would indicate that the old Javanese colonists were either Tamils or Telugus, and that Sanskrit influence and culture had spread through South India long before.

³ Asoka Inscriptions, Tablet II.

influences had penetrated to the Tamil countries in his time (third¹ century B.C.). Now, Sanskrit being the only language to which Tamil was indebted, if we deduct from the Tamil language and literature what she has borrowed directly or indirectly from her wealthy neighbour of the North, the remainder must evidently be her pure Dravidian patrimony, of which she must have been in possession at the latest in the third century B.C. Taking, therefore, the inscriptions of Asoka as the basis of our calculations, a hasty process of comparison of the Tamil literature with that of the Sanskrit brings to light some important facts.

1. That the ancient Tamils had an alphabetical system of their own independent of Sanskrit.

Almost all the Indian languages, whether ancient or modern, even Pali and Singhalese, as well as Canarese, Telugu and Malayâlam, have borrowed the Sanskrit alphabetical system. This artificial adaptation, while it gives an apparent completeness to the phonetics of those different languages, has been in many cases utterly unsuited to their wants. Thus some of the letters are useless to them, as there are no words in the language which admit of the employment of those letters, while others are pronounced without any regard to their phonetic values from a national defect of organ on the part of those among whom it has been attempted to naturalize sounds alien to their language. The Tamil² language on the other hand is free from this artificiality, a circumstance which, I believe, must solely be attributed to the fact that the Tamil alphabetical system has not been elaborated under the auspices of Sanskrit gram-

¹ The Pali and Magadhi might have had some no very considerable influence on the Tamil. There are some words in Tamil which seem to be derived from Sanskrit through Pâli or Magadhi. Perhaps they were brought by Buddhist and Jaina missionaries.

² Dr. Burnell seems to have arrived also at the conclusion that the Tamil alphabet was not derived from the Sanskrit. The process by which he infers it is somewhat different. He appears to have drawn the conclusion from the meagreness of the Tamil alphabet as compared with the fullness of that of the other Dravidian languages, which have modelled their alphabetical system on the Sanskrit. It may well be doubted whether it is an advantage to the Telugu for instance to have a theoretically complete system of alphabet, while in practice several of the letters are not used at all, or are all pronounced alike by the people.

marians. If they had any hand in it, it is improbable that they should have adopted for it a system different from that which they have employed for the other cognate Drâvidian languages of Telugu and Canarese.

Palæographically,¹ too, the ancient Tamil written alphabet called Vatteruttu has been found to be independent of the characters in which Sanskrit and other North Indian languages have been written at different times.²

The obvious inference is that the Tamils had an alphabetical system of their own before they came in contact with Sanskrit or Pali. The Asoka inscriptions imply that they possessed a knowledge of a written alphabet in the third century B.C., for it would be the height of absurdity to issue proclamations by means of inscriptions to the Pândiya, Chola and Chera monarchs, if the latter could not decipher written characters. The Lalita³ Vistâra, a work translated into Chinese in the first century A.D., seems to confirm the above view, for among the sixty-four alphabetical systems which Buddha is said to have learnt in his infancy, is included the Drâvida or Tamil. From this fable relating to the supernatural linguistic attainments of Buddha we may draw one rational conclusion at least, viz. that at the time of the composition of the Lalita Vistâra, its author or authors knew of the existence of a Tamil alphabet.

2. Another important fact which is elicited by comparison is that the *Çentamil* versification was independent of Sanskrit.

¹ See South Indian Palæography, p. 51.

² Lalita Vistâra, Edition Foucaux, Annales du Musée Guimet, Adhyâya X.

³ The modern Tamil alphabet is, according to Dr. Burruell, an adaptation from the Grantha alphabet of the tenth century, which again is derived from the Chera alphabet of the third (see South Ind. Palæogr. p. 46). It seems to me, however, on a comparison of the Vatteluttu used in the Cochin Sâsana, with the Tanjore inscriptions of the tenth century, that the modern Tamil characters, allowances being made for the individual peculiarities of writers, might with more probability be said to be derived from the Vatteluttu by a natural process of development than to have been copied from the Grantha.

The introduction of printing has effected considerable modification in Tamil characters. In a deed of the date of 1737, which belonged to my seventh paternal ancestor, Kuruli Kâvala Sênâthi Râja Mudaliyar, the characters employed seem to resemble those of the tenth century more than those of the present day. The same remark applies to all documents of the last century that I have met with in the north of Ceylou. What change, when compared with the eight centuries preceding!

The metres of the former were radically different from those of the latter. While the sister Drâvidian languages, the Telugu¹ and the Canarese, have literally borrowed almost all the varieties of ganachchandas and matrâchchandas from Sanskrit, the *Çentamil* has preserved intact her ancient metres of *Agaval*,² *Veñpâ*, *Kalippâ* and *Vanchippa*.³ Nâgavarma⁴ in his rules of Canarese prosody constantly cites Pingala and other Sanskrit grammarians as authorities, while Tolkâppiyam, the oldest known Tamil grammarian, knows no higher tribunal than the still older *Çentamil*⁵ poets. The Âryâ, Vaitâlîya, Anushtubh, Gâyatrî, and other ordinary Sanskrit metres, have not their corresponding equivalents in *Çentamil*, and are incomprehensible to it, while they are closely imitated by Telugu and Canarese poets. Of the six constituent parts of a verse, as enumerated by *Çentamil* grammarians,⁶ *eruddu*, *açai*, *cîr*, *talai*, *adi* and *toḍai*, the fourth (*talai*), so valued by Tamil poets, is altogether foreign to Sanskrit poetry. Of the 43 varieties of *toḍai*, the *mônai* and *edugia* are not at all met with in Sanskrit, while there are vestiges⁷ of them in Canarese, a fact which leads me to the inference that old Canarese poetry originally resembled that of the *Çentamil*, although it was gradually recast on a Sanskrit mould. In short, *Çentamil* versification is purely Dravidian, its genius is utterly distinct from that of the Sanskrit, and the whole is free from any foreign admixture.

It is almost a truism to say that the earliest records of all nations are preserved in their national poetry. That the Tamils have been no exception to this rule is proved by their

¹ See Brown's Telugu Grammar.

² See Yâpparungalam and Karigæ.

³ See Kittel's Canarese Prosody of Nâgavarma.

⁴ The hackneyed phrase in Tolkâppiyam is '*enmanâr pulavar*' (so say the learned or poets).

⁵ I do not include *maruḍpâ*, which is not recognized as a separate and distinct metre by the oldest authorities. It is only a mixture of Veppa and Asiriam or Agaval.

⁶ See Yâpparungalam. (See Dr. Pope's Tamil Grammar, and his edition of the Kurral.)

⁷ According to Kêśava, in the first period of the Canarese poetry as it exists at the present day, each verse-line in its second letter bears an alliteration, this being the same for all the four lines. (See Kittel's Nâgavarma.) This alliteration is identical with the *edugai* of the Tamil poets. Compare also Yâpparungalam on *mônai* and *edugai*.

metres and versification, the only department which has been free from Sanskrit intrusion. The possession of numerous varied and polished forms of verse independent of any Sanskrit model leads to the inevitable conclusion that *Çentamil* had a literature of her own before her contact with Sanskrit. Without a poetic literature metres and rules of versification are meaningless. If that literature had come into being only about the ninth century, as some have supposed, it would be a mere imitation of the Sanskrit in form and substance, as it is in Telugu and Canarese. This point established, it becomes easy to explain why the author of *Tolkâppiyam* makes frequent allusion to old poets, and cites their authority. If Agastya had been the first inventor of *Çentamil*, or the first author who composed in it, his disciple would simply have quoted his master as the supreme arbiter on all points.

Viewed by this light, the distribution of the old language into three dialects of poetic, dramatic and colloquial, by the earliest grammarians, becomes intelligible also. Of the many old dialects of the Tamil language, one which had originally been the local *patois* of the tract of land lying between Karuvûr on the East, Maruvûr on the West, the river *Vaigai* on the South, and the river Marutam on the North, had, by some fortunate coincidence of circumstances, been singled out among others, by poets for the purpose of versification.¹ A certain amount of national literature, consisting for the most part of war-songs and love-ballads, continued to be produced in it. The language thus employed by a succession of poets and bards to celebrate the victories of their heroes or their loves had naturally come to be regarded as classic, and acquired the name of *Çentamil* (elegant Tamil), while the other dialects were called *Koḍuntamil* (or barbarous Tamil). Thus even at the present day many of the words employed in the Malayâlam language will be considered vulgar by the

¹ There were in ancient times thirteen Tamil nâdu or countries, of which the one enclosed in the limits described was called Çentamil-nâdu. The other twelve Koḍuntamil-nâdu are the following: Tenpânḍi, Kuttam, Kuḍam, Kalkâ, Vēṇ, Pūḷi, Panri, Aruvâ. Aruvâvadatalai, Cidam, Malâdu and Punnâdu. (See Beschi's Çatur-Agarâdi.)

Tamils, and some of them might even shock ears unaccustomed to hear them. The poet or grammarian naturally concerned himself with *Çentamil*, and took no account of *Koḍuntamil*. As early as the first Tamil grammarians of Sanskrit schools commenced their work, they found the *Çentamil* itself already differentiated into a poetic and a colloquial form. In every language the exigencies of rhyme and metre have a tendency to separate the poetic style from the living language. In Tamil and other Indian languages where verses are *sung* and not *read*, the rules of euphony compel words to undergo still more serious transformations. The extreme fondness of Tamil poets and writers for classical and archaic forms made them retain many of the terms long after they had become totally obsolete. The earliest grammarian whose works are preserved to this day noted down the language as it was in his time. To the spoken language of his day he gave the name of 'Iyat'¹ Tamil (natural or ordinary language), to the classical 'Içai' Tamil (poetic), and to the mixture of the above two half-verse and half-prose used in dramatic representations 'Naḍaga'² Tamil (dramatic). There is nothing artificial in it, the whole process seems to repeat itself in almost every language where poets or writers do not draw their terms from the living language and continue to live in the past only. Agastya or the poets of the ninth century jointly or severally could no more have created the *Çentamil* than they could have the Himalaya Mountains. Agastya can be said to be the father of *Çentamil* in one sense only; he was the first probably to introduce a grammatical system founded on a Sanskrit prototype. It was in all likelihood an imitation of some standard Sanskrit grammarian, as Tolkâppiyam avowedly is of the Aindra Vyākaraṇa. Before him there was an alphabetical system, a literature, and perhaps grammars, which probably were less scientific in their method of treatment than the production of Agastya.

¹ See Tolkâppiyam, chap. i.

² Among the ancient Tamils dramatic representation was always accompanied by dance. The verses were first employed in a declamatory form, and immediately afterwards were sung in a chorus by the whole band of musicians, and the actor, who went round the stage dancing.

It is also now easy to account why the *Çentamil* vocabulary is so copious, and contains words more easily understood by Telugus and Canarese than by its actual owners. The truth is that *Çentamil* has in a certain measure preserved forms common to the whole Dravidian parent-stock before the differentiation of the latter into separate languages. Such of those ancient words as have been employed by a succession of *Çentamil* poets having become fixed in the poetic language have come down to us obsolete, while some of them by a freak of accident having continued as terms of every-day life among the Canarese and Telugus remain so to the present time.

The fact that the language of the eighth century is nearly modern is perfectly in accord with and confirmatory of what we have seen above of the history of the Tamil language. There is nothing uncommon in the fact that the language should have undergone slow evolution from the days of Solomon and the Phœnicians, and have assumed its nearly modern form about the eighth century of the Christian era. What seems remarkable is that there should be only so little difference between the language of the eighth century and that of the present day—a characteristic indication how language like everything else has changed only very slowly in India, and what length of time was necessary by this slow process for the transition from the old *Çentamil* to modern Tamil.

I said that the language of the eighth century is seen to be nearly modern, for I find on examining copies of the *sâsanas*¹ of the Cochin Jews and Persians, that they contain a certain proportion of classic terms and forms. I have noted the following among others: *Vidutta*, *Kilpark'*, *tenpark'*, *naḍātti*, *yālaninrā*, *nōkkip'*, *pāynda*, *melpark'*, *irvisaitta*, *olivinri*, etc. These forms are very valuable as affording additional proof that the older forms of *Çentamil* were not

¹ See South Indian Palæography, pp. 140, 142. If the *Çentamil* had been an artificial style, it is difficult to conceive how *Çentamil* words and forms could have been employed in *Sâsanas*, which are generally written in the plainest language possible.

in the eighth century in a state of formation, but of gradual disappearance. For if the tendency of the language in the eighth century was to introduce the new forms of words which is styled *Çentamil*, with the stimulus given to that supposed innovation in the ninth and the succeeding centuries, we should have more of those words in daily use now than during the eighth century. The truth, however, seems to be the reverse of this. The language, instead of marching in that direction, seems to be receding from it, and divests itself daily and unconsciously of the older *Çentamil* words and forms.

From what has been said above, it results, then, that the ancient Tamils were in possession of an alphabetical system and a certain amount of literature independent of Sanskrit. The *Çentamil* having received a partial culture during an indefinitely long period, had become divided into a poetical and colloquial dialect even so early as the time of Agastya. The age of Agastya¹ was in reality a new era in the history of Tamil literature. It was then that Sanskrit influence first began to be felt. Northern religions and social institutions were introduced, and the Brahmanical priesthood, and in its train Buddhists, Nirgranthas, Ajîvakas, and other sects began to pour upon the South. It was then that grammars modelled on those of Vedic schools were first propounded by Agastya and his followers. It was then that literature exclusively Drâvidian was replaced by Northern traditions and legends. The national literature was slowly modified, its legends transformed, its heroes amalgamated with or lost in the personality of those of the North, and its gods absorbed with a change of name into the Brahmanical pantheon. This process of gradual change and assimilation

¹ By Agastya I do not of course mean the mythological personage who drank the ocean, and who is supposed by ignorant people to be still living in the Pôdya mountain. I only speak of the historical predecessor of Tolkappiyam, and the author of the grammatical treatise called Agattiyam, quotations from which are cited in old grammars. It has been the fate of all eminent men in India at all times to have their whole history overclouded by and lost in a host of absurd legends. The childish stories current of the great Panini, of his distinguished successor Patanjali, and indeed of all celebrated men of antiquity, are familiar to students of old Indian literature.

was a *fait accompli* before the second century A.D., for in Ptolemy and in the Periplus of the Red Sea, the most Southern point of India is known by its Sanskrit name of Kumari.¹ The soul, then, of the old Drâvidian literature had taken its flight with the advent of Sanskrit, while the body only has survived with a new life infused into it. The old language only, the *Çentamil*, that which served as a medium of thought to ancient Tamil poets and bards, remains unaltered, for it could not be easily changed. It had already become fixed, it was rich in resources, it had many different kinds of verses and metres full of rhythm and euphony. It was in some sort the language of the Dravidian troubadours. It was impossible to recast it on a Sanskrit mould, as was done with regard to Canarese and Telugu. So it was left untouched, and has survived to this day unconscious of its origin, and a puzzle to the philologist.

Are there any traces, however small, it may be asked, of this older purely Drâvidian literature? In spite of the complete transformation which the ancient Tamil literature has gradually and almost imperceptibly undergone, the comparative process is again going to reveal to us some interesting vestiges of it in the existing literature of the present day. It is the grammatical authors alone who have preserved many of the old peculiarities, and can furnish a trustworthy clue. The Tamil grammarians from the time of Agastya have incorporated, it seems to me, into their grammatical treatises, composed on Sanskrit models, a portion of

¹ The theory of Dr. Caldwell that Jainism must have existed as an undeveloped esoteric faith in the eighth century, and as some considerable portion of the early Tamil literature which we possess is Jaina, the oldest Tamil work could not have been older than the eighth century, is no longer tenable at the present day. Such a hypothesis was no doubt in accord with what little was known of the Jaina sects at the time when the "Comparative Grammar of the Dravidian Languages" was first written. Asoka inscriptions now clearly prove the existence of the Nirgrantha Jains in the third century B.C. Varaha-Mihira in the fifth century A.D. gives even the form and appearance of Jain idols (Dr. Kern's *Brihat-Sanhitâ*, chap. 58, 45). Iliwen Tshang testifies that during his visit to India the Nirgranthas were more numerous in the South than elsewhere (see *Voyages des Pelerins Bouddhists*, par Stan. Julien, vol. vi. p. 119). See also Colonel Yule's "Marco Polo," vol. ii. p. 271, for an able discussion of the age of Sundara Pâṇḍiyan, in which the Colonel assigns that king to the eleventh century, and not to the fourteenth, as does Dr. Caldwell.

the old Dravidian literature¹ called *Poruḷ* (பொருள்) which does not properly fall within the scope of grammar in general. *Poruḷ*, literally meaning a thing or object, was in this case limited in its application to two out of the whole range of physical objects or human events which could exercise the intellect or imagination of a people. They were *love* and *war*. The reason of this to us curious distinction is obvious. Turn wherever we may in a primitive society, *love* and *war* were the two *things* or *objects* pre-eminently so called, to which all others were subordinated. They alone were the two themes capable of arousing the enthusiasm of a poet or the strains of a bard. Accordingly we find the grammarians, following in the wake of poets of olden times, classify all possible themes of poetry according to the notion of primitive times under the two categories of *Agap' Poruḷ* and *Purap' Poruḷ*, or Internal and External Economics of man. The sum and substance of the former was love, while the second related exclusively to war.

The *Purap' Poruḷ*² gives us a curious idea of the political organization of the ancient Drâvidians. According to it all their science of public or state affairs was summarized chiefly under the head of war, which consisted of nine branches: 1. Seizing and carrying away the cattle of the enemy. The victor in a sortie of this kind was entitled to certain military honours, and was crowned by his chieftain with a garland of the flower called *Vedchi*. 2. Recovering the cattle carried

¹ My materials relating to the subject of *Poruḷ* are drawn chiefly from *Irayanar Agap'poruḷ* and *Nambi Agap'poruḷ*, two works of classical authority. A manuscript copy of the former of these works I have been able to consult at the Bibliothèque Nationale by the kindness of M. Feer, and a copy of the latter belonging to the British Museum has been kindly placed at my disposal by Mr. Bendall. According to Dr. Burnell, Nambi, the author of the *Agap'poruḷ*, probably lived before the eleventh century (South Indian Paleography, 127, 2).

² According to *Irayanâr*, *Agap'poruḷ* *Purap'poruḷ* *Pannirupadalam* is the name of an older work on the subject. I am not aware if copies of it exist at the present day. It is said to have been a production of the first *Çangam* of Madura, a literary body founded under the auspices of the old Pândiyas, and held in the same high esteem throughout all Tamil countries as is accorded in France to the distinguished and learned assembly called the Académie Française. There were three of these *Çangams* at different periods of the Pândiyan rule, and *Agattiyân* (or *Agastya*) is said to have been a member of the first Academy of Madura, which is alleged to have continued to exist during the reigns of 81 Pândiyas. No literary production was supposed to be of any merit unless it had first received the approbation of the *Çangam*.

away by the enemy. The warrior who thus vindicated the honour of his chief and people, had the distinction of being crowned with a garland of *Karandai* or sweet basil. 3. Invading the territory of the enemy. The aggrieved or the aggressor, as the case may be, desires to settle a pending dispute by the arbitrament of war, and marches on the enemy. To the warrior who in an attempt of this nature successfully attacks the enemy is reserved the honour of wearing a garland of *Vanchi*. 4. The next stage is resisting an invading enemy. He who offered a valiant resistance to the assailants was entitled to a garland of *Kānchi*. 5. Defending one's fortress. Those who distinguished themselves in that undertaking wore a garland of *Noch'i*. The enemy who is besieged is forced by necessity or otherwise to fight. 6. So the next head is fighting. Valiant men, who courted danger and flew to battle, adorned themselves with a garland of *Tumbai* (*Phlomis indica*). 7. The next stage is gaining the victory, and the heroes who had by prowess of arms vanquished their foes, wore proudly garlands of *Vāgai* (*Mimosa flexuosa*). Victory, however brilliant, would be useless unless the enemy was rendered powerless. 8. So the last step was taking possession of the fortified places of the enemy. The warriors who succeeded in this sort of exploit were crowned with garlands of *Uḷṇai*¹ (*Illecebrum lanatum*).

I need hardly say that the state of society which we infer from the above carries us back to remote times, to the beginnings of Drāvidian society, to a semi-agricultural and nomadic state, when the chief wealth of a tribe consists of cattle.

Agap' Poruḷ treats of love, and is conventionally divided into three heads. The first two of the three heads, though

¹ Wearing long hair was an ancient Drāvidian custom, and warriors are described as wearing flowers on their *kondai* (knot of hair) after their victories over the enemy. The Singhalese, among whom the custom is in vogue at the present day, have evidently copied it from their neighbours, with many other customs, habits, and even elements of civilization. It was certainly not a Brāhmanic custom, and could not be said to have been imported from Magadha. The imitation seems to have taken place very early, for Agathomerus, a Greek geographer of the third century A.D., describes the Singhalese as cherishing their hair like women. The Singhalese word itself *kondai*, signifying a knot of hair, is manifestly borrowed from the Tamil.

introduced incidentally to play a subordinate part to the third, are, it seems to me, of the utmost importance historically, as furnishing an insight into the constitution of the ancient Drâvidian society in pre-Sanskritic times. The most notable points we gather from them were the absence of caste, and of organized kingdoms with crowned chiefs. There were then five different communities, scattered in various parts of the country, and living apart by clans, each having its own tutelary deities, chiefs, habits, and manner of living. With the introduction of the Brahmanical sacerdotalism the names of the indigenous deities were gradually replaced, it seems to me, at least in poetical compositions, by those of the Vedic, an innovation which was naturally to be expected. Those communities were: 1. Marutanilamâkkaḷ or agricultural tribes. 2. Kurinchimâkkaḷ or semi-agricultural tribes. 3. Mullaimâkkaḷ or pastoral tribes. 4. Neydamâkkaḷ or fishing tribes, and 5. Palaimâkkaḷ or nomad tribes.

1. Marutamâkkaḷ or agricultural tribes. They consisted of *uṟavar* (ploughmen), who inhabited fertile and well-watered spots called *marutanilam*, so called from the *maruta* trees (*Terminalia alata*), which flourish in the vicinity of water. Their tutelary deity lost his local name and was merged in the personality of the Vedic Indra.¹ They lived upon rice, which they produced, and drank the water of rivers which ran past their fields. Their occupation consisted of sowing, ploughing, reaping, and celebrating festivals. On festive occasions, and in marching to war, they beat a drum called *parrai*.² They had also a kind of stringed musical instrument on which they sang a tribal air

¹ I venture to think that Dionysus, said by Megasthenes to have been worshipped by the inhabitants of the mountains, was not Çivâ, as is generally supposed, but Skanda, and that Hercules, worshipped by the people of the plains, was not Vishnu, but Indra. This seems to result from the fact that the first northern colonists to the south identified the god of the Drâvidian mountaineers with Skanda, and the god of the agricultural tribes with Indra, designations which they must have given in conformity with the usage of the north.

² The ancestors of *parrai*yar (Pariahs) of the present day, the beaters of *para* (drum), which is still their occupation in remote country villages, were originally the slaves of the *Vellâlar*, and their chief occupation from the remotest time seems to have been beating the drum. In patriarchal and martial times they beat the war-drums of the agricultural tribes, and at the present day they discharge the same functions more peaceably on certain festive and other occasions.

called *marutam*. Their towns were called *perûr* (large village) and *mûdur* (old village), and their chiefs were called *ûran* (lord of the village) or *kiṛavan*¹ (elder, owner).

It seems from the above that the termination *ûr*, added to the names of large towns and even districts at present (as Tanjâvûr, Nallûr), was originally the name of agricultural villages.

Also the word *kiṛavan* seems to throw some light on the origin of the Pâṇḍiyas. The words *kiṛavan* and *pâṇḍiyan* are in *Āntamiḷ* synonymous, and at first meant an old man or elder. When nomad communities settle down to agriculture, the old men, who were before burdens to their descendants, become their acknowledged heads, and begin to exercise at first a sort of patriarchal authority over them. With the increase of family this power augments, and he becomes a chieftain. The first of the Pâṇḍiyas appears to have been precisely one of those patriarchs of an agricultural community, as his name seems to imply, who perhaps by conquering some of the adjoining tribes had become a sovereign. This seems to be confirmed by tradition, which describes the first of the Pâṇḍiyas as a Vellâḷan, the principal landowner caste in all Drâvidian countries. It was no doubt the first Brâhmanical adventurers from the North, who, finding an apparent similitude of names, traced some connection between the Pâṇḍavas of the North and Pâṇḍiyas of the South, and assigned the latter to Chandravamsa.

I also conjecture that Madura, the ancient capital of the Pâṇḍiyas, was only a Sanskritized form of *Mûdûr*, the old name for the town of an agricultural community. The

¹ Kira = paṇḍu = old. The word *kiṛavan* seems to contain a vast lore of ancient history in itself. Thus in *Āntamiḷ*, *kiṛavan* 'an old man,' comes gradually to signify 'a chief,' perhaps with the evolution of society from a nomadic to a settled state. Then it comes to mean 'a proprietor,' implying appropriation of land by the lords of the tribes. The word *pâṇḍiyan*, anciently the synonym of *kiṛavan*, had advanced in parallel lines with the latter until it came to signify 'a chief,' and then has become fixed by becoming the designation of a particular dynasty of kings. The word *kiṛavan*, less fortunate than its rival *pâṇḍiyan*, came latterly to signify a mere village chief (see *Periya Purâna*). In its third stage, meaning 'a proprietor,' *kiṛavan* has found a synonym in *Uḍaiyân* (lit. 'proprietor'), a term which still continues to designate 'a village head man' among the Tamils. The latter word (*Uḍaiyân*) has itself been luckier than *kiṛavan*, for after the fall of the Pâṇḍiya dynasty a succession of Uḍaiyâr reigned for a time at Madura.

spelling *Μοδουρα* given by Ptolemy shows that the transformation had taken place very early.

2. Kurrinehimâkkal, or semi-agricultural communities. They lived in hilly districts called Kurrinchi, a name equally derived from the trees called *Kurrinchi*, which abound in rugged hilly districts. They worshipped a god who was identified with Skanda.¹ The name Kurraver, by which they have been known, is preserved to this day, being applied indiscriminately to mountaineers, foresters, snake-catchers, basket-makers, etc. The tracts of land they inhabited abounded in forests of the odoriferous sandal-wood, in which roamed ferocious tigers, bears and elephants, and thronged with swarms of beautiful peacocks² and parrots. They fed upon bamboo, rice and millet, which alone their barren tracts were capable of yielding, and drank the pure waters of mountain streams. Their tribal tune was a melodious one called *Paṇ*, which they sang to the accompaniment of a flute. They marched to battle to the sound of a drum called *tonḍagam*, under their chiefs called *Chilamban* or *Verppan*. Their towns were but modest clusters of huts, and were appropriately styled *Çirrukuli* (little huts). The termination *kudi*, it is to be remarked, has survived to our day in the names of towns and villages.

3. Mullaimâkkal, or pastoral tribes. They inhabited jungle tracts of land called *mullai*, and worshipped a deity who corresponded to Krishna,³ perhaps on account of his

¹ It is curious that the worship of Skanda, so far as we now know, seems to have preceded other forms of Īvaism in the South. Even in the Vedas the name of Skanda appears to have been more ancient than that of Siva. See Chândogya Upanishad, Prapâthaka 8, Khanda 1: "They call Sanatkumâra Skanda, yea Skanda they call him."

² The peacock, represented as the vehicle of Skanda, was perhaps of Drâvidian origin, and was not improbably first in usage among the mountaineers of Southern India. The god and the vehicle both seem to have belonged to the mountain tribes in a peculiar manner, and were perhaps first associated together by them. Varaha-Mihira in the fifth century represents Skanda as mounted on a peacock (see Brihat Sanhitâ, chap. 58). The idols of Īva and Skanda are also mentioned in Patanjali, who lived in the second century B.C. See Weber, Ind. Stud. xiii. p. 344.

³ The worship of Krishna seems to have been very ancient in India. His oldest Drâvidian counterpart was probably a local deity, perhaps *Karuppan* (the dark one), who is even now worshipped among low castes. (See an interesting discussion on Christianity and Krishnaism by Weber, Ind. Stud. vol. i. p. 400,

dark complexion. Their land was the abode of stags, hares and wild fowls, on which they fed, as well as on the produce of their cattle and grains, which they obtained by exchange. Grappling with bulls, dancing hand in hand with young cowherdresses on luxuriant meadows where their cattle grazed, and playing on their flutes the tribal air of their clans called *cāḷāri*, such were the favourite pastimes of the youthful cowherds. They lived in villages called *pāḷi* (from *pāḷu* 'sing'), so named perhaps from the clamorous songs and joyous sounds in which their inhabitants delighted, in addition to their bucolic sports. The word *paḍi* again is preserved in the names of many towns and villages in Tamil-speaking countries. Their tribal drum was called *pambai*.

4. Neytamākkal, or fishing tribes. They lived along the sea-coast in small fishing villages called *pattanam* or *pāḷkan*. Their occupation consisted in fishing, fish-curing, and salt-making, and fish entered largely into their daily consumption. They paid adoration to a god who was the Dravidian counterpart of Varuṇa. They made use of a drum similar to that of the pastoral tribes, and played a flute called *viḷari*. Their chiefs were called *cerppan* or *pulamban*.

Here we find a curious account of the history of the word *pattanam* or *patnam*. Originally applied to small fishing villages, *patnam* now designates only large towns and cities, such as Čennapatnam (Madras), Muslipatam. This is evidently from the circumstance that fishing villages generally rose to importance by maritime commerce, and very often attained the proportion of large cities. It seems also extremely probable that all the towns on the sea-coast bearing the termination of *pattanam* (or its abbreviation of

168, and a masterly refutation of it by Barth, *The Religions of India*, pp. 218-223. Also see Monier Williams, *Indian Wisdom*, p. 153.) From the occurrence of the name of Krishna in connection with pastoral tribes, even among the Dravidians, we are led to infer that he was considered as patron of the pastoral tribes in Northern India, and was so identified by the colonists from the north. The omission of his name in the Vedas was perhaps owing to the fact that he was not an Aryan god in the earliest times, and was only worshipped by the surrounding aborigines in the North. The name of Krishna occurs however as early as the time of Pāṇini, fourth century B.C. (Pāṇini, iv. 3, 87).

patnam), and all the cities in the interior with the particle *úr* (written also *oor*, *ore*) affixed to their names, were originally the seats of Drâvidian colonies. The antiquity of the form *úr* is attested by Greek¹ geographers, who refer to Kârûr, Thellur, and other towns in South India. The other term *pâkkam*, employed to denote fishing villages, remains also in use to the present day, but is limited in its application only to comparatively small towns.

The word Cêrppan, by which the chiefs of fishing villages were known, reminds us of one of the old titles of the Pâñḍiyas, who claimed to be Kumari-Cêrppan² (the Cêrppan of Kumari). This title must no doubt have been assumed by a Pâñḍiyan, on his conquest of the coast of Kumari (modern Cape Comorin) from its maritime chief. The emblem of fish which figured on the banners of the Pâñḍiyas might have been derived from that source, or it might be traced to astrological influence.

5. Pâlainâkkal or Nomadic tribes. They inhabited desert tracks, having eagles, doves, and kites as neighbours, and lived on hunting and plundering the adjoining countries. They were called the ferocious Vêdar, and they chased tigers with the help of a species of wild dog, which they trained for that purpose. Their chiefs were called Kâlai and they worshipped the goddess Kâlî. Their habitations were called *kurumbu*, their martial air *pancuran*, and their war-drum *tuḍi*.

This last class might not improbably have been the predecessors of the Drâvidians themselves, and of the same stock with the Veddahs of Ceylon, as their name indicates. They were no doubt the historical ancestors of the Thugs, Kaḷlar, and other plundering tribes, and were identical with the nomadic³ *Sôrai* of Ptolemy, *Qórar* being the old Tamil word for plunderers. The names of their villages are preserved in such names as Kurumbacônnum (Coombaconum,

¹ See Ptolemy, Table X.

² See Viramandulavan-Nigandu, Makkal-pêrt' togudi.

³ According to Ptolemy the river *Χαβηρος* (Kâvêri) flowed through the land of the *Σοραι* (Sôrai), and *Αρκατον* (Arcot) was their capital. They had an emporium called *Χαβηρις* at the mouth of the Kâvêri river.

modern), Kurumbukôtlai, etc. Tondaimandalam, of which the ancient capital was Kâñchi, is said to have been conquered from the nomadic tribes by a Chola lieutenant called Adondai, and to have been distributed by him to clans of Vellâlar. The name of Kâñchi already occurs in Patañjali, and some of the names of places given to them by the Vellâla colonists are to be seen in Ptolemy's tables. Kâñchi afterwards became the capital of the celebrated Pallava dynasty, to which are attributed the works of Amarâvati and Mahâ-mallapura.

It is very interesting to observe that in India, where everything becomes fossilized, the five different tribes above enumerated have continued to exist side by side for centuries, some of them even to the present day, with their characteristic habits and manners. There are still people called Kaḷḷar (thieves) and Marravar, descendants of the old nomads, and Kurraver or foresters.

The distinction of caste¹ was unknown to the ancient Drâvidians, and was of course introduced by Northern colonists. Before the introduction of the caste system, the patriarchal communities of the South had become organized states. One at least of the chiefs of the agricultural communities, a *kiravan* or *pâṇḍiyan*, had subdued the neighbouring chiefs with the help of his clans, called Vellâlar, and had assumed regal power in this *Mudûr* (or Madura). The conquered lands were naturally divided among the Vellâla clans, who became a class of hereditary landowners,² and reduced the neighbouring tribes to a sort of quasi-feudal dependence. The caste distinction brought by the Brahmans, although it was in theory the same as in Northern India, was radically different in practice among the Drâvidians, and continued to

¹ This is borne out by the fact that no express mention is made of any caste. No allusion is made to Brahmans, Kshatriyas, Vaisyas, or Sudras. The only distinction is between the high (Uyarntôr) and the low (Irîntôr). So there were only patricians and plebeians, lords and slaves, as we find in all primitive communities, and no caste.

² Papers on Mirasi Rights, Ellis. Also Journ. Roy. Asiat. Soc. Vol. I. p. 296. Tondaimandalam is said to have been colonized by Vellâlar, among whom the land was divided in Kâniyâdchi (absolute ownership), with eighteen Kuḍimakkal as their servants.

go upon the old lines of tribal distinction.¹ The reason why Manu styled the Drâvidian Vellâlar as degraded Kshatriyas was doubtless owing to the fact that the first Brahman settlers found them almost in exclusive possession of land like the Kshatriyas of the North, while they practised none of the external rites and ceremonies incidental to that caste. As in primitive society, external forms and rites were of the highest importance, those who failed to practise that rigorous formalism were naturally regarded as degraded.

¹ The Singhalese, who had borrowed most of their social and political institutions, laws, arts, and sciences from the Tamils, have adopted the distinction of caste also on the same model as the Tamils. Their castes too have nothing in common with the fourfold division of the Âryans of Northern India. Even the word Vellâla, which designates the highest caste among them, is undoubtedly no other than the Tamil Vellâlar. They are equally indebted to the same source for the word *mudaliyâr*, much prized among them as a title of honour.

EDITORIAL NOTE.

It is but fair to state that, owing to unavoidable causes, the foregoing paper has not had the advantage of the writer's personal revision. Dr. Pope, Professor of Tamil at Oxford, one of our most distinguished members and contributors, has very kindly checked the transliteration of native words: but there has been scarcely any, even literal, modification in the text of the original MS.

ART. XVIII.—*Were Zenobia and Zebbā'u Identical?* By J.
W. REDHOUSE, M.R.A.S., C.M.G., Litt.D., etc.

THE French translators of the "Meadows of Gold and Mines of Gems," by the Arabian traveller and writer Mes'ūdiyy, who composed this book in A.H. 332 (A.D. 943), refer their readers, in their general index, from the name of Zebbā'u, which they have unaccountably transliterated as "Zibba," to "Zenobie," though they never once use this latter name in the eighteen pages (vol. iii. pp. 181-198) of the work devoted to the history of this princess. Neither have they said one word in their notes to that part of the volume to show how Zebbā'u may be identified with Zenobia. (But see the concluding passages to this paper on p. 596.)

Possibly, some other continental writer, of whom I confess myself entirely ignorant, may have discussed the question, and to his own satisfaction clearly established the identity of the two princesses, who, though nearly contemporaneous, were not quite so, whose territories were not quite the same, whose capitals were distinct, and whose reported histories differ widely from one another.

The system of transliteration of Arabian names used by those translators, too, is exceptionally incorrect, even when we admit that every one is free to adopt or invent for this purpose such system as he may prefer, so long as he does not corrupt the names. Both Jewheriyy and Fīrūzābādiyy, in their lexicons, give the names of Zebbā' and Jedhīma (which, in the usual inaccurate system, would be written Zabbā or Zabbā and Jaḍīmah or Jaḍīmah), and there is really no excuse for corrupting them into "Zibba" and "Djodaimah."

Other vicious transliterations abound in this work. I pass them over in silence here, and gladly hasten to offer my tribute of admiration for the generally successful manner in which the difficulties of the translation have been surmounted. The onerous task of collating and editing the Arabic text, again, has been extremely well performed, and the warmest thanks of Orientalists have been abundantly merited on the whole, so as greatly to increase one's regret at feeling compelled to find fault with a mere detail.

I have observed that the eminent scholar, Professor W. Robertson Smith, in his recent, very learned treatise on Kinship and Marriage among the Early Arabs, has adopted the theory of the identity of Zebbā'u and Zenobia. I feel, therefore, doubly bound to weigh the discrepancies with the greatest care, and to lay my difficulties before the Royal Asiatic Society with the utmost diffidence. Should there be a possibility for the Members of that learned body and for Orientalists in general, here and on the continent, in India and in America, to judge that I have not done wrong in directing their attention to the apparent incompatibilities that have caused me to doubt, I shall be amply repaid for the labour of preparing this paper; and in any case, I venture to hope they will pardon any excess of zeal in seeking for the truth, if they are led to conclude that I have not succeeded in fully establishing my contention.

Mediæval writers generally, and eastern mediæval authors in particular, are not very accurate or discriminating in relating the details of events that occurred before their time, or in countries other than their own. We have to weigh, as is indeed so necessary even with accounts of our own contemporary domestic events, one statement with another, and thus determine as best we may what we consider to be the truth. For example, here is our gossiping Mes'ūdiyy, a kind of Arabian Herodotus, who relates, on the one hand, how 'Amr son of 'Adiyy, nephew of Jedhīma the Leper, killed Zebbā'u

in about the twenty-fifth year of the Sāsāniyy dynasty, A.D. 251, founded the Lakhmiyy succession at Hira, and reigned a hundred years, goes on then to give in detail the list of his successors and the length of every reign, until Khusew-Perwīz (King of Persia from A.D. 590 to 628) put an end to the series by causing its last prince, Nu'mān, to be trodden to death under the feet of an elephant exactly five hundred years later, i.e. in A.D. $251 + 500 = 751$; to which must yet be added a period of somewhat more than 26 years for an unknown remnant of the reign of that king, and the 26 that elapsed after him before the Arabian conquest of Persia in A.D. 651. If we allow only four years for the remnant, we shall arrive at A.D. 781 instead of 651; that is, Mes'ūdiyy has exaggerated the Lakhmiyy period by 130 years. On the other hand, he has curtailed the reigns of the Gassān line from thirty-four princes to twelve; he names seven only of these, Nos. 3, 5, 9, 20, 26, 29, and 34 of the chronological table to be found further on, and he does not give the length of the reign of any one of them. He thus reduces the house of Gassān to a mere fraction of its totality, while its rival of Lakhm is made to appear more ancient and more important than it really was.

To put my readers in a position to judge of all the phases of the question known to myself, it may be of interest to them to be informed that although, as above stated, the notes to the eighteen pages of Mes'ūdiyy's *Meadows of Gold* directly concerned with the history of Zebbā'u give no clue to her identification with Zenobia, a note to an incidental recurrence of her name on p. 275 of the same volume gives a reference to the valued work of an eminent French Orientalist, M. Caussin de Perceval, entitled "*Essai sur l'histoire des Arabes avant l'islamisme*," etc., published in Paris in 1847, and in which the learned author, to his own satisfaction (as observed above), and in agreement with a previous "conjecture" by the equally esteemed *savant* M.

Saint-Martin, has, not "proved" that Zebbā'u was not Zenobia, but has on the whole, by *admittedly surmised* alterations, additions, suppressions, and omissions or suppositions of dates, admissible, perhaps, in conjectural history, come to the conclusion that "le personnage de Zebbâ (not "Zibba" as in the "Prairies d'Or," etc.) . . . m'a paru offrir une telle ressemblance avec Zénobie, que j'ai cru pouvoir identifier les deux héroïnes."

This belief of M. Caussin de Perceval, and the previous conjecture of M. Saint-Martin, are, so far as I now know, the grounds for identifying Zebbā'u with Zenobia, and under these circumstances I can but submit to my readers what I have been able to gather from various sources, remark that 'Ibnu-Quteyba and 'Ebū-'l-Fedā' are equally defective with Mes'ūdiyy as to the Gassān princes, and then leave the main question of the identity or otherwise of Zebbā'u and Zenobia to be settled in candid minds by what is herein set forth, or by other more convincing arguments, should such be forthcoming.

In the first place, the Ṣiḥāḥ of Jewheriyy and the Qāmūs of Firūzābādiyy both describe 'Ez-Zebbā'u (the female hirsute one) simply as "queen (or princess, melika, مَلِكَة) of 'El Jezīra, آلِجَزِيرَة, who is accounted one of the kings or princes of the tribal or local communities مُلُوكِ الْأَوَائِف (among whom the empire of Darius was parcelled out on the death of Alexander the Great)." But a difficulty is created at this early stage of the inquiry, by the details added, I believe, erroneously, by the very learned Turkish translator of the Qāmūs, in all probability from sources respecting which no information is given. The Turkish Qāmūs says as follows, besides several other meanings of the word:

"Zebbā'u is the name of a woman who formerly was queen or princess (melika) of Jezīretu-'bni-'Umer, and one of the princes of the local communities; she had very long and abundant tresses of hair, being named Zebbā'u for this reason.

Jezīmetu 'l-'Ebreṣh (Jezīma the Leper), king or prince of Hira and 'Aubār, had killed the father of Zebbā'u, and had taken possession of his territories. But Zebbā'u, with much trouble, had regained her dominions and had managed to compass the destruction of Jezīma himself, as is related in books of history and in books of proverbs. The proverb: 'For a purpose did Qaṣīr cut off his own nose,' took its rise out of her history."

This amplification of the story by the Turkish Qāmūs assumes that the "Jezīra" mentioned in the Ṣiḥāḥ as well as in the Arabic Qāmūs, and which usually (besides other significations) means *Mesopotamia*, here stands for the town of Jezīretu-'bni-'Umer. This is the ancient "Bezabde," a strongly fortified city on a rocky island in the river Tigris, some seventy or eighty miles above Mewṣil (*Mosul* of maps), and in latitude 37° 27' N. longitude 42° 2' E., in the neighbourhood of Jebel Jūdiyy, the "Ararat" on which, according to all Arabian legend, Noah's ark rested on the subsidence of the deluge; our modern Christian Ararat in Armenia being unknown to Arabians. The assumption is probably founded on some legendary basis, but it is not in accordance with the details of the story of Zebbā and Jedhīma, as given by Mes'ūdiyy, where the river Tigris is not once alluded to, the Euphrates alone being there in question.

Mes'ūdiyy's account might now be given, as re-translated by myself, had a few more pages been available, but in default of space, reference, if required, must be made to the French versions. The passages I had selected show how unreliable are the stories told by Arabian authors relating to times anterior to Islām. Here we have a Sumeyda', son of Hewber, king of the Amalekites, and fighting against Joshua son of Nun (about fourteen hundred years before our Era); and then we have his son 'Udheyna made king by the Romans. If this 'Udheyna be intended for the Odenathus of

Roman History, husband of Zenobia, and murdered with her suspected privy in A.D. 266, the story would appear to suppose that Sumeyda's life extended to the ultra-Methuselah period of about 1600 years, though it may be contended that 'Udheyna, the son of Joshua's contemporary, was not the same person with the 'Udheyna of whom the Zebbā'u of Mes'ūdiyy was the great-great-great-granddaughter.

I find in Numbers xxvi. 32, mention made of a contemporary of Joshua who was named Sumeyda', **اَلْشَّمِيْدَع**, **שְׁמִידָע**, rendered "Shemida" in our version. The two names are evidently one, and this one had perhaps been foisted into Arabian history by some zealous Jewish convert to 'Islām in its very early days. I do not find that Joshua fought the Amalekites in any other battle than that at Rephidim, and no king's name is mentioned there. The Shemida of our version was a Jew, chief of a family that was a branch of the half-tribe of Manasseh.

But the 'Udheyna who was a king under the Romans, and was great-great-great-grandfather to Zebbā'u, could not be Odenathus husband to Zenobia. Neither, by Mes'ūdiyy's account, could she be the Roman Zenobia, wife and widow of Odenathus, who had had a former husband before Odenathus, and a son named "Waballath" or "Athenodorus" by that husband. From this alias we may infer that the son's correct Arabic name was Wehbu-'l-Lāt, the Gift of (the goddess) Lāt, **اَللَّات**; and that Lāt was considered to be Athene, Minerva, as far as he was concerned. Zebbā'u was a virgin when wooed by Jedhīma the Leper, her father's slayer; she must be supposed to have been so when she put him to death; and there is no mention of her having changed her condition after that event, until she fell a victim herself to the plot of Qaşir. Whereas the Roman Zenobia, twice a wife, had two families; for "her surviving son" was made king of a petty state in Armenia, and "her daughters were married into noble Roman families."

Jedhīma is said by Mes'ūdiyy to have lived twenty-three years during the reigns of Artaxerxes son of Bābek, and of Sapor the First, son of Artaxerxes. This Artaxerxes is held by chronologists to have become king of Persia in A.D. 226, reigning till A.D. 240, and being succeeded by Sapor, who died in A.D. 273. Jedhīma, then, must have been put to death by Zebbā'u in A.D. 249, and she may have been killed by 'Amr, nephew to Jedhīma, with the help of Qaṣīr, in about A.D. 251; whereas Zenobia was captured by Aurelian in A.D. 273, the year of Sapor's death, and was carried to Italy in A.D. 274, never again quitting the land of her exile. That is to say, Zebbā'u the virgin was killed twenty-three years, or so, before Zenobia, the twice-married wife, widow, and mother of sons and daughters, was carried alive, as captive, to Rome. Can it be possible, under these circumstances, that Zebbā'u was Zenobia?

Another very markworthy difference between the two queens is, that while Zenobia was queen of Palmyra, the Tedmur of the Hebrews and Arabians (تدمُر, تَدْمُر, which words appear to be related to *destruction*, and have no connection with the date-palm or the dry date-fruit, تَمَر, تَمَر, as some have said they have), with a dominion extending to the frontiers of Bithynia, the city of Zebbā'u was on the west bank of the Euphrates, somewhere between Circesium and Thapsacus. Tedmur is never once mentioned by Mes'ūdiyy in his story of Zebbā'u, nor does he mention Zebbā'u in his notices of Tedmur. This would be surprising if Zebbā'u were Zenobia, for Tedmur has always been famous among the Arabians, as the city built for Solomon by his vassal genii.

Zebbā'u is only a nickname, meaning the hirsute or long-haired woman. Her real name is said to have been Nā'ila, نَيْلَا; and out of the nickname Zebbā'u one cannot possibly form the word Zenobia, though we have seen that Odenathus is a corruption of the Arabic 'Udheyna. We may conjecture

that Zenobia was a corruption of Dhenūb, but this name is applied only to a long-tailed horse or mare, as dheneb signifies a *tail*. Even if Dhenūb were used as a woman's name, it would have been corrupted into Denubia or Denobia, not Zenobia. There is an Arabic woman's name, however, that could, imaginably, become Zenobia, and this is the name Zeyneb. One of the wives and one of the daughters of Muḥammed bore this name, which is now very much used in 'Islām. Muḥammed is said to have endearingly modified the name of that wife into Zunāb, as we say Maggy for Margaret, etc.; and from Zunāb to Zenobia is not so violent a transition. Local Syrian modifications yet nearer to Zenobia may be, or may have been in use; but Zebbā'u never, in my estimation, could have become Zenobia, or Zenobia become Zebbā'u.

There is a difficulty arising between the alternative stories given above from Mes'ūdiyy, in one of which he explicitly states that Zebbā'u was a virgin when Jedhīma wooed her, and says nothing afterwards of her marrying or having a child until she was killed by 'Amr, Jedhīma's nephew. In the other, however, he mentions a Zebbā'u, whose son was commonly known by her name only; i.e. he was commonly called *the son of Zebbā'u*, though it is a matter of doubt whether this *son of Zebbā'u* was 'Amr son of Ṭarīb, the father of our Zebbā'u, who killed Jedhīma, his slayer; or whether he was Ḥassān son of 'Udheyne, son of Ṭarīb, son of Ḥassān. There is an obscurity about 'Udheyne, as there is a mention of 'Udheyne son of Sumeyda', and of 'Udheyne son of Ṭarīb. But these are all given as ancestors, more or less remote, of the 'Amr who was the father of our Zebbā'u. Jedhīma killed her father, 'Amr, after many battles, for which no dates are given; and then Zebbā'u killed Jedhīma in the twenty-third year of the Sāsāniyy dynasty, A.D. 249, being killed herself not very long afterwards by his nephew, say in A.D. 251, twenty-three years before Zenobia was carried to Rome. Any former

Zebbā'u, therefore, must have lived at a date more remote still from that of Zenobia's captivity, and be so much further removed from identity with Zenobia. If a Zebbā'u were really mother of Ḥassān son of 'Udhey^{na}, such Zebbā'u and such 'Udhey^{na} must have lived more than a hundred years before Zenobia and Odenathus.

Mes'ūdiyy, then, writing in A.H. 332 (A.D. 943), leaves the question very strongly decided against the possible identity of his Zebbā'u with the Roman Zenobia of Palmyra.

In the History of the Resūliyy dynasty of Yemen by Ḥasan son of 'Aliyy, 'El-Khazrejiyy, of which a unique manuscript copy exists in the Library of the India Office, a gift of Warren Hastings, there is recorded in the preliminary chapter, from an older work by 'Ebū-'l-Ḥasan Ḥamza son of Ḥasan, of 'Ispāhān, supplemented from other writers, the whole list of thirty-four princes of the Gassān line who acted as viceroys of Rome in trans-Jordanic Syria, from the time when they overcame their Selīḥ predecessors in that high office, until the last of the line was expelled from the province by the victorious hosts of 'Islām in the time of the second caliph, 'Umer son of 'El-Khaṭṭāb, in about A.D. 639. The Resūliyy dynasty claimed to be the descendants of the fugitive; and for this reason the ancient history of the line possessed a special interest for them. The length of the reign of each Syrian prince of the house of Gassān is given, with a few exceptions, so as to reach a total of 616 years.

The third king of the Syrian line, Ḥārith the Great, is apparently the "Aretas the King" of 2 Corinthians xi. 12, who ruled for twenty-two years. The conversion of St. Paul at Damascus is put in A.D. 35, when he had to escape thence by stealth, by reason that "the governor under Aretas the king kept the city of the Damascenes, desirous to apprehend" him.

But this king, Ḥārith the Great, was also father-in-law to Herod Antipas, tetrarch of Galilee, murderer of John the

Baptist, to whom Pilate, according to St. Luke, sent Jesus before he delivered him over to the Jews for execution. When Herod took to wife the profligate Herodias, the wife of his own brother, the daughter of Hārith quitted him in disgust, and Hārith invaded the territory of Herod, inflicting a defeat on his forces. This must have been before A.D. 38, when Herod, after the death of Tiberius, went to Rome and was exiled, first to Gaul, and then to Spain, where he died. It was, perhaps, about the year A.D. 34, after the death of John the Baptist and the crucifixion. Herod had then been tetrarch about thirty-four years, having been appointed on the death of his father B.C. 4. If Hārith began to reign as late as A.D. 33, one year before he punished Herod, then, as his father, 'Amr son of Jefna, reigned only five years, his grandfather Jefna, the conqueror of the Selīh tribe, will have died in A.D. 28, only five years after the date of his victory, as $639-616 = \text{A.D. } 23$, the date of the commencement of the Gassān supremacy. This being accepted as, at any rate, approximately correct, the dates of reigns of the Gassān princes will fall as in the following table:—

CHRONOLOGY OF THE SYRIAN PRINCES OF GASSĀN.

		B. C.
1. Jefna 1, son of 'Amr, son of 'Āmir becomes prince	17	
		A. D.
„ defeats the Selīh tribe and becomes king	23	
„ dies, having been prince and king 45 years	28	
2. His son 'Amr I. reigns . . . 5 years, dying	33	
3. His son Hārith I. the Great (Aretas), reigns 22	„ 55	
4. His brother Tha'leba reigns . . 17	„ 72	
5. His son Hārith II. the Halting, reigns 20	„ 92	
6. His son Jebela I. reigns . . . 40	„ 132	
7. His son Hārith III. the Less, reigns 10	„ 142	

		A.D.
8. His son Mundhir I. reigns . . . 3	dying	145
9. His brother Nu'mān I. the Great, 15	„	160
10. His brother Nu'mān II. the Younger, 13	„	173
11. His brother Jebela II. reigns . . . 34	„	207
12. His brother 'Eyhem I. reigns . . . 3	„	210
13. His brother 'Amr II. reigns . . . 26	„	236
14. The son of Nu'mān (9), Jefna II. 3	„	239
15. Nu'mān III. grandson of Mundhir (8), reigns 1	„	240
16. Nu'mān IV. son of 'Amr bin Mundhir bin Mundhir (VIII). 27	„	267
17. Jebela III. son of Nu'mān, reigns 16	„	283
18. Nu'mān V. son of 'Eyhem bin Hārith, reigns 22	„	305
19. Nu'mān VI. son of Hārith bin 'Eyhem, reigns 18	„	323
20. Mundhir II. son of Hārith bin 'Eyhem, reigns 32	„	355
21. Mundhir III. son of Nu'mān, reigns 19	„	374
22. 'Amr III. son of Nu'mān, reigns 33	„	407
23. Hujr, son of Nu'mān, reigns . . . 26	„	433
24. Hārith IV. son of Hujr, reigns . . . 12	„	445
25. Jebela IV. son of Hārith, reigns . . . 19	„	446
26. Hārith V, son of Jebela, reigns . . . 21	„	485
27. Nu'mān VII. son of Hārith, reigns 37	„	522
28. 'Amr IV. 'Ebū-Shemir, reigns . . . 25	„	547
29. 'Awf, son of 'Amr 'Ebū-Shemir, 45	„	592
30. 'Eyhem II, son of Jebela bin Hārith, reigns 29	„	621
31. Mundhir IV. son of Jebela bin Hārith, reigns 1	„	622
32. 'Amr V. son of Jebela bin Hārith, 10	„	632
33. Jebela V. son of Hārith bin Jebela, 4	„	636
34. Jebela VI. son of 'Eyhem bin Jebela, 3	expelled	639

Ḥamza of 'Ispāhān wrote contemporaneously with Mes'ūdiyy; and Khazrejiyy compiled his history in Yemen about the year A.D. 1400, while a prince of the Resūliyy dynasty was still reigning there. Ḥamza distinctly states that thirty-four princes of the Gassān line ruled in Syria from Jefna I. to Jebela VI., and gives the period of each prince's rule, with two exceptions. By some fatality, however, a few of the princes are omitted in the Khazrejiyy manuscript, and these have been inserted here from other authors quoted by Khazrejiyy, of a less complete character. The two reigns left unrecorded in Ḥamza's list as to their duration have been of advantage, as they have permitted hypothesis to be used in their cases, to bring the total to conform to three known or reported facts, related by quite independent authorities.

We have, in the first place, the king Aretas mentioned by St. Paul. We have that same king warring successfully against Herod; and we have the facts that Pilate sent Jesus to Herod before the crucifixion; as also that Herod went to Rome after the death of Tiberius. These events fix approximately the date of the rule of Aretas (Ḥārith the Great, son of 'Amr son of Jefna).

The second fact is that Muḥammed is said by one writer to have been "sent" during the rule of 'Awf son of 'Amr 'Ebū-Shemir. Now, as 'Awf died in A.D. 592, after a rule of forty-five years, this "sending" of Muḥammed, usually understood as meaning his being commissioned to announce 'Islām, must here mean his birth, which happened in A.D. 571, in the "year of the elephant" of 'Ebreha, while Khusrew Nūshīrewān was king of Persia, who died in A.D. 579. If we are to take the "sending" as the prophetic mission, we must put it in the reign of 'Eyhem II., son of 'Awf, since the mission is dated in A.D. 610, when Muḥammed was forty years of age, and while Khusrew Perwīz ruled in Persia.

The third fact is the expulsion or voluntary exile of

Jebela VI., in A.D. 639, after he had embraced 'Islām, and had accompanied the caliph 'Umer, on his return from Jerusalem, to the pilgrimage at Mekka. He was there performing the circumambulation of the Cubical House, his mantle was inadvertently trod upon by a man behind him, and he inflicted on the offender a blow in the face that knocked out some of his teeth. The injured man carried his suit before the caliph, who suggested to Jebela that he should compensate the man privately. Jebela urged due consideration for his princely rank; but 'Umer told him that all Muslims being brethren and equals before the law, he should himself feel bound to command open compensation if the complainant were not privately satisfied and so silenced. Jebela asked for a remand till the morrow, and this was accorded. He then decamped by night, repaired to Antioch, renounced 'Islām, and rejoined the Christian fold, fleeing shortly afterwards to Constantinople in the suite of the Roman Emperor Heraclius.

If the foregoing chronological table be approximately correct, then the thirteenth prince of the Gassān line, 'Amr II., son of Mundhir son of Hārith the Less, who ruled twenty-six years, was lord of the Arabians of trans-Jordanic Syria when 'Erd-Shīr son of Bābek founded the Sāsānian monarchy of Persia in A.D. 226; the fifteenth, Nu'mān III., who ruled only one year, was prince when Sapor I. succeeded in A.D. 240; the sixteenth, Nu'mān IV., was ruling when Odenathus was murdered in A.D. 266; and the seventeenth, Jebela III., who reigned sixteen years, was on the throne when Sapor died in the same year that Zenobia was captured by Aurelian, A.D. 273, and carried to Rome in A.D. 274. But the father of this Jebela, the above-mentioned Nu'mān III., must have been still reigning when Jedhīma the Leper was put to death by Zebbā'u in A.D. 249, twenty-three years after the accession of 'Erd-Shīr son of Bābek, and also when Zebbā'u was killed in turn by Jedhīma's nephew, 'Amr son of

'Adiyy, in about A.D. 251, twenty-three years before Zenobia was carried to Rome, never to return.

There is, however, a most important remark to offer here with respect to the date of Zebbā'u and of her death. Ḥamza of Isfāhān is far more correct and careful in his chronology than is Mes'ūdiyy, as has been shown by his list of the princes of Gassān, and the remarks on the exaggeration of Mes'ūdiyy in his list of the Lakhmiyy princes of Ḥīra. But this exaggeration requires, according to Ḥamza's account of the Lakhmiyy dynasty, to be still further corrected in a way that throws the date of the death of Zebbā'u back nearly a century, and removes her far away from the time of Zenobia. It must be remembered that Ḥamza was really contemporaneous with Mes'ūdiyy, his book having been finished eighteen years only later than the date A.H. 332, so frequently adduced by Mes'ūdiyy in the Meadows of Gold. The correction is this: According to Ḥamza, instead of Jedhīma's having been killed and having been succeeded by his nephew 'Amr son of 'Adiyy in the year A.D. 249, the ninth year of Sapor I., and 23 years after the accession of Artaxerxes, Jedhīma was killed at such time that, out of 'Amr's total reign of 118 years (60 only being allowed to Jedhīma), ninety-five were past when Artaxerxes became king of Persia. Zebbā'u must then, by this chronology, have been killed by 'Amr about A.D. 156, in the reign of the Roman Emperor Antoninus Pius, one hundred and twenty-three years before Zenobia was defeated by Aurelian. The lengths of reigns assigned by Ḥamza to the Lakhmiyy princes that reigned at Ḥīra after the death of 'Amr son of 'Adiyy, added together, make a total of 419 years, or more than thirty years over what is required to bring us up to the invasion of Ḥīra by Khālīd son of Welīd and the final overthrow of the Lakhmiyy dynasty. But as a reign of 114 years is given by Ḥamza to 'Imru'u-l-Qays, the successor of 'Amr son of 'Adiyy, those 31 years may be well deducted, so as still to leave him a

reign of 83 years, whereas Mes'ūdiyy gives him but a modicum of sixty, the length of reign of his son 'Amr, according to Ḥamza.

Should these details of the reigns of the Syrian viceroys of the Gassān line be found on investigation to be moderately correct, they will form in themselves a not uninteresting chapter of history, and may help to fix the date of many an obscure event connected with the Roman domination in Syria, and with the fortunes of Christianity there. The true history of the rival line of Lakhm at Ḥīra, descendants of Jedhīna's sister and her son 'Amr son of 'Adiyy, may be deduced from the contemporaries of the two lines, and from the known dates of the Sāsāniyy sovereigns of Persia; and hence the date of many an Arabian event may become determinable. It is not a little singular that no mention of Zebbā'u or Zenobia is found in them.

ART. XIX. — *The First Maṇḍala of the R̥ig-Veda.* By
FREDERIC PINCOTT, M.R.A.S.

THE paper which I formerly wrote on the R̥ig-Veda¹ was merely intended to lay down the general principles which guided the ancient Arranger of that venerable collection of poems. It was my good fortune to be the first to lay before scholars the following discoveries :—

1. That the hymns of the R̥ig-Veda are arranged in the order of their diminishing length.

2. That the First Maṇḍala differs from the rest, and that it possesses a special arrangement of its own.

3. That Maṇḍalas II. to VII. are uniform in character.

4. That the hymns of the Ninth Maṇḍala are manifestly arranged according to the metre and length of the hymns.

5. That certain long hymns in the R̥ig-Veda can be resolved into short sets of verses.

6. That the Tenth Maṇḍala consists of, at least, two collections, showing a distinct mark of cleavage between the 84th and 85th hymns.

I am, of course, pleased to find that my views have obtained general acceptance, and that M. Abel Bergaigne has founded upon them two interesting papers in the *Journal Asiatique*.² My present purpose is to carry the matter further, by endeavouring to clear the way for a clear apprehension of the nature of the First Maṇḍala.

M. Bergaigne thinks my original suggestion about the First

¹ *Journal of the Roy. Asiat. Soc.*, Vol. XVI. Part II.

² Sept.-Oct., 1886, p. 183; Feb.-March, 1887, p. 191. As the whole of M. Bergaigne's papers are based on my discoveries, it would have been more courteous had that gentleman made a more prominent allusion to me than an obscure reference at the end of the first paper, for the purpose of dissenting from an unimportant detail in my long article.

Maṇḍala rather risky. It is, according to him, an “ingénieuse mais très-aventureuse hypothèse.” Three years ago I pointed out certain facts which indicated that the First Maṇḍala was a ritual, consisting of hymns selected from those of the various families of Rishis to whom other Maṇḍalas are ascribed. M. Bergaigne does not attempt to discuss this view; he simply dismisses it with an epithet, and in its place he supplies an elaborate exposition of the Maṇḍala, in the course of which he is driven to divide the book into sections, to split up single hymns into fragments, to imagine interpolations, to reject hymns altogether,¹ and having, by these hazardous courses, produced a number of clusters of hymns, he ends with the statement that, “on n’aperçoit qu’une seule succession à laquelle il semble possible d’attacher quelque importance.” Thus the entire explanation ends, to all intents and purposes, in a *fiasco*. In proof that I do not exaggerate, I cite M. Bergaigne’s final remark on this Maṇḍala:—“Il est impossible qu’une samhita aussi systématique que celle qui comprend les Maṇḍalas II.-VII., ait commencé originairement par le Maṇḍala I. tout entier, sous sa forme actuelle. . . . Je ne vois donc que deux hypothèses possibles : ou bien le Maṇḍala I. a été ajouté tout entier après coup ; ou bien il se composait primitivement d’une seule collection, qui est devenue le noyau autour duquel se sont groupées successivement les autres.”

This plain statement of defeat surely renders it desirable to adduce some of the additional evidence which I formerly withheld, confirmatory of my apparently bold assertion, that the First Maṇḍala is, in reality, an orderly ritual. To make this clear, I will first indicate the influence under which the Sanhitâ was arranged; next, I will show that the First Maṇḍala is, in a way, eclectic; thirdly, I will point out unmistakeable evidence of orderly arrangement; and, lastly, I will adduce some proof of its ritualistic character.

1. It has long been known that the Ângirasas were greatly concerned in the arrangement of the entire Sanhitâ, and in

¹ At the end of his second paper, M. Bergaigne gives a list of 184 hymns, and parts of hymns, in the Rîg-Veda which he regards as interpolations.

the development of the ceremonial generally.¹ A very large number of the hymns in the Rîg-Veda are directly ascribed to members of the Angiras family; and this also was the family which gave canonical sanction to the Atharva-Veda;² which must have been done at an early date, for the book is mentioned as a Veda in the Śatapatha-Brâhmaṇa. The Śāṅkhâyana-sûtra (xvi. 1) particularly associates the Angiras family with the Soma.³ Shadguruśishya intimates, in one of his anecdotes, that the Âṅgirasas claimed authority over Maṇḍalas not ascribed to members of their family. It is related that Śaunahotra (of the Bhâradvâja branch of the Angiras family) pleased Indra, who thereupon changed his name to Gṛtsamada, and caused him to be born in the race of Bhṛigu, and to become the seer of the Second Maṇḍala. This tale seems obviously designed to show that the Second Maṇḍala owes its existence to an ancient representative of the Angiras family. A further indication of union between the Âṅgirasas and the Bhârgavas is found in the fact that the Atharva-veda—the special child of the Angiras family—is known as the “Bhṛigvangiras,” as well as the “Atharvâṅgiras,” thus associating the name of Bhṛigu with the production.⁴ Again, the story of Śunahsépha is calculated to show how deeply the Vaiśvâmitras are indebted to the Âṅgirasas, and indeed owe their very Brahmanhood to the dominant family.

The foregoing facts show that the Angiras family claimed an interest in nearly the whole of the First Maṇḍala, the Second, Third, Fourth, Sixth, Eighth, and portions of the Ninth and Tenth Maṇḍalas. A very similar state of things is found in the case of the *Ādi Granth*. That book is well known to have been arranged by the fifth Guru, Arjun; and, having counted the verses, I am able to state that, out of the 15,575 stanzas

¹ In the 83rd hymn of this Maṇḍala Gotama makes the following statements about his family: “The Âṅgirasas first prepared the sacrificial food, and then, with kindled fire, (worshipped) with a most holy rite: they, *the institutors* (of the ceremony), acquired all the wealth of Paṇi, comprising horses, and cows, and (other) animals.”

² See the 80th hymn of this Maṇḍala.

³ See Prof. Max Müller's *Ancient Sanskrit Literature*, p. 38.

⁴ *Ibid.* p. 446.

which the book contains, no fewer than 6204 stanzas were composed by Arjun, the Arranger, himself.

The predominating influence of the Angiras family is further indicated by the fact that, of the Forty-nine Gotras into which the faithful were divided, no less than thirty-eight are those of Ângirasas, and their friends the Vaiśvâmitras and Bhârgavas. Surely here is enough to prove the powerful influence of this great family, and to relieve one of any charge of venturesomeness in ascribing the arrangement of the Rig-Veda to Angiras influence. In the First Maṇḍala this is yet further marked by the *exclusion* of Âtreya hymns, and by the *inclusion* of both branches of the Angiras family.

2. The eclectic character of the First Maṇḍala is demonstrated by the fact that it contains hymns of *seven out of the eight great families of Rishis*.¹ This, to my mind, is conclusive on the question. No other portion of the Rig-veda is of this mixed character. The Eighth Maṇḍala (which contains hymns by four families) is in no respect representative; for nearly all its hymns are by Ângirasas, the only exceptions being *one* by a Kâśyapa, *one* by an Âtreya, and *three* by Bhârgavas.

The First Maṇḍala was certainly intended to bring together representatives of the various families of Rishis. There are hymns by the Vaiśvâmitras, by both the Gautama and the Bhâradvâja branches of the Ângirasas, by the Vâsishṭhas, by the Kâśyapas, by the Bhârgavas, and by the Âgastyas. The hymns of these families are arranged in a definite order, as will be shown further on. The only family excluded is that of the Âtreyas; but there are reasons which satisfactorily account for this exclusion.

In the first place, the theology of the Rig-veda is pre-eminently Solar; and this is strikingly apparent in the First Maṇḍala. The Rishis represented in this Maṇḍala are, all of them, authors of hymns to Agni, the typical Solar deity. It is

¹ The Śatapatha-Brâhmaṇa reckons only *seven* Brahmarshis, by omitting Agastî from its list; but Agastî is a Devarshi of the highest rank, and the progenitor of an orthodox Gotra or family.

also clear that the Ângirasas were specially interested in the Solar cult; indeed, one of the names of Agni is "Angiras," and, in the 21st hymn of this Maṇḍala, Agni is said to have been "the first Angiras R̥ishi."¹

Atri is the only Maharshi *who never hymned the flaming Agni*. Some of Atri's descendants did celebrate Agni, as is seen in the Fifth Maṇḍala; but Atri himself was the patron of the Moon, not of the Sun. In my former paper I pointed to the legend that the Moon was produced from the flash of Atri's eye. The special connection of the Âtreyas with Lunar worship is emphasized by the fact that the first hymn of their Maṇḍala is by Budha, the regent of the Moon; and an indication of conversion to Ângirasas views is plainly shown by the second hymn. This curious poem alludes to the tradition that its author Vṛiśa, of the Atri race, who was Purohita to the Ikshvâkus, through unskilfulness killed a Brahman child. It was not until Vṛiśa had acquired the *Ângirasa*-mantra that he recovered intelligence and restored the boy to life. The seventh verse of this hymn says, "Thou hast liberated the fettered Śunahśepha from a thousand stakes; for he was patient in endurance; so, Agni, free us from our bonds." Here we have the R̥ishi of a race specially devoted to the Moon, offering laudation to Agni, the Solar representative, for a boon conferred on the Ângirasas. Translated into history, this tradition obviously means that the devotees of a Lunar cult were won over to the Solar cult under Angiras influence. This original connection with Lunar ideas is, in itself, a sufficient reason for exclusion from a specially Solar ritual, such as the First Maṇḍala appears to be. But there is another and more cogent reason for the exclusion of Âtreya hymns from that book.

¹ Here it may be pointed out that the names of the families represented in the First Maṇḍala themselves indicate Solar attributes; thus, Bhrigu "the scorching," Angiras "the swift," Viśvâmitra "the universal friend," Vasishtha "most wealthy." The meaning of Agasti is doubtful; the suggested rendering, "mountain-thrower," is more than problematical. On the other hand, the meaning of Atri "the devourer," and that of Kaśyapa "with black teeth," may imply allusions to Lunar eclipse. These are probably mere coincidences; but they curiously accord with the rest of the evidence adduced. Atri may mean "the devourer (of clarified butter)," and Kaśyapa's having been the first human pupil of Agni, would connect these two also with Solar worship.

The Atreyas were the friends of the Gaupâyanas,¹ who were dismissed from their office of Purohita to the Ikshvâku race. They made themselves obnoxious in consequence of their dismissal; but were punished by the incantations of their rivals, who are termed *mâyâvin* "possessors of magic arts." When we remember that the Ângirasas were the Rishis of the Atharva-veda, we see, in this tradition, the record of an enmity between the believers in, and the disbelievers in, the magic formulæ of the Atharvans; and, as the Ângirasas ultimately gained the ascendancy, they excluded from their ritual the hymns of their opponents.

But this tradition has another phase. We know that Viśvâmitra and Vasishṭha were the rival orthodox Purohitas of the Ikshvâkus, and that Viśvâmitra was connected, in an especially cordial manner (by the Śunakṣepha affair), with the great Angiras family. Here we have an additional reason for the exclusion, from an Ângirasas ritual, of the hymns written by the friends of those who had been dismissed by the Ikshvâkus, the patrons both of themselves and of their friends the Vaiśvâmitras.

The exclusion of the hymns of the Âtreya family from the First Maṇḍala is certainly remarkable; but the reasons given above are sufficiently cogent to account for it. It may be objected that it is not an easy thing to reject the hymns of an undoubted Devarshi, and unsettle the traditions of so conservative a faith as that of Brahmanism. To this I reply, that the Âtreyas do not seem to have been popular. They founded only two Gotras out of the Forty-nine, and were thus, apparently, but little known. Furthermore, the Lunar devotees may have been held to be sufficiently represented by the hymn of Kaśyapa, the pre-eminent Rishi of the Soma. The fact that the very centre of the Maṇḍala is given to the representative of the Soma or Lunar cult may well be held to have satisfied the claims of both the Âtreyas and the Kâśyapas.

The rejection of Atri's family necessarily reduced to six

¹ This is plainly shown by the inclusion of the Gaupâyana hymn in the Fifth or Âtreya Maṇḍala.

the number of families taking part in the ritual. A change in number is a far more patent fact than a change of names. There is abundant evidence to show that the ancient originators of Brahmanism were spoken of as the Seven Rishis. In order to make the First Maṇḍala conform to this recognized number, after the rejection of Atri, the simple expedient was adopted of admitting both branches of the Angiras family. The Seven Rishis are not always mentioned under the same names. Conflicting lists of names are given in different works; and, although some of these varying names are equivalents of each other, the diversities are sufficient to show that the only thing settled was the number Seven. This number was preserved, as we have seen, by dividing the Ângirasas into two branches.

3. As to the arrangement of the First Maṇḍala, my hypothesis is, that the Angiras family of worshippers of Agni by means of Soma, placed the *only hymn invoking Agni written by the peculiar Rishi of the Soma* (Kaśyapa), as a centre, in conjunction with the antique poem of the so-called Râjarshis, addressed to *Indra*. On each side of these they placed *their own hymns* to Agni and Indra, bearing the name of the progenitor of their race, the Devarshi Kutsa.¹ Outside these again were placed hymns from *the other branch of their family*, thereby monopolizing the posts of honour. Two other families were then admitted, one on each side, flanked by other collections of Ângirasa hymns; ending, at the two extremes, with the hymns of two other families. Whether my explanation of the *reason* is the right one, or not, the *fact* is indubitable, that the family clusters are arranged in the order I have stated.

I have conceived that this very methodical arrangement was intentional, and for liturgical purposes of an eclectic character. It is certainly remarkable that hymns of the

¹ The hymns are said to have been 'seen' by Kutsa, of the race of Angiras, or the son of Angiras; but the relationship of these remote progenitors is decidedly problematical. Kutsa may have been an old, or specially influential, member of the Bhâradvâja family, and may have been accounted a Devarshi in consequence; or, being already accounted a Devarshi, hymns ascribed to him may have been selected to represent the Bhâradvâja family. It is remarkable that Yâska, in his *Nirukta*, quotes *Kautsa* as a heterodox disbeliever.

Seven Rishis should be found arranged in this peculiar manner; and it is difficult to imagine that this could have occurred through mere accident, or that it could have been purposely done except for a liturgical object.

A startling confirmation of the truth of my suggestion is found in the fact that the *Âdi Granth* of the Sikhs is arranged on precisely the same system; and this was done, undoubtedly, for liturgical purposes. The *Âdi Granth*, as I showed in my paper last July, consists of three parts; the first contains the sacred texts used in daily prayer, and this is certainly of a liturgical character; the second contains the various Râgs, the equivalents of the Maṇḍalas II.-VII.; and the third part consists of a supplement, not unlike the Eighth, Ninth, and Tenth Maṇḍalas. In this case, no doubt whatever exists as to the principle of arrangement, and it is, therefore, not unreasonable to conclude that similar causes produced similar effects in the case of the Rig-veda. I must confess that the more I study the First Maṇḍala, the more clearly does its liturgical character appear, and to abandon my hypothesis in favour of the explanation proposed by M. Bergaigne seems to me like quitting a Copernican to return to a Ptolemaic system. The orderly arrangement of this Maṇḍala will be further explained in the next paragraphs.

4. The foregoing facts make it clear to my mind that the First Maṇḍala is a collection of hymns intended to represent the families or Gotras of the Seven Rishis, the grand originators of the Brahmanic faith, and to unite in a single ceremonial observance the entire body of the orthodox. The next point to ascertain is, whether this Maṇḍala is really ritualistic in character. I have spoken of the difficulties and complications into which M. Bergaigne is driven by his rejection of my suggestion that the hymns are clustered round a centre represented by the hymn of Kaśyapa. Let any one compare M. Bergaigne's attempt with my simple exposition, and ask himself which is the more venturesome. I simply lay down the facts as we find them, which arrange themselves in the following manner :

- | | | |
|---------------------------------|---|----------------|
| 5. Vaiśvâmitra hymns | } | Hymns 1-98. |
| 4. Bhâradvâja hymns | | |
| 3. Vâsishṭha hymns | | |
| 2. Gautama hymns | | |
| 1. Bhâradvâja hymns (Kutsa) | | |
| 0. Kaśyapa and the Five Ṛishis. | | Hymns 99, 100. |
| 1. Bhâradvâja hymns (Kutsa) | } | Hymns 101-191. |
| 2. Gautama hymns | | |
| 3. Bhârgava hymns | | |
| 4. Gautama hymns | | |
| 5. Agastya hymns | | |

Here we have a perfectly regular system, without the least tampering with the text. In the centre we have Kaśyapa's Soma hymn, outside which the rest is arranged in sets of hymns balancing each other; the intention to place Kaśyapa's hymn in the centre being markedly shown by Kutsa's hymns to Agni being separated from his hymns to Indra for this purpose.¹

The subject-matter of the various hymns lends further support to this theory of arrangement. Towards the commencement of the Maṇḍala are hymns speaking of the efficacy of ritual observances, and these are followed by the remarkable hymns describing the process of manufacturing Soma. The fully prepared juice is then lauded in the 91st hymn; and then come supplications for the forgiveness of sins; followed by a hymn which speaks of generating fire from wood. Then comes Kaśyapa's verse, "We offer libations," followed by prayers asking freedom from sin; and these are succeeded by historical instances recounting the efficacy of sacrificial observances. These indications of methodical arrangement of matter require further investigation; but, so far as they go, they tend still further to show that the prevailing idea in this Maṇḍala culminates in the hymn of Kaśyapa.

¹ In proof that the early Hindûs were familiar with this system of placing ceremonial observances on each side of a medial act, I cite what the Satapatha-Brâhmaṇa says of this arrangement of the Purushamedha sacrifice: "Thereof the Agnishtoma is the first day; the next is the Ukthya; the next is the Atirâtra; then comes the Ukthya; and next the Agnishtoma; thus it is enclosed on both sides by the Ukthya and the Agnishtoma."

It will be seen that, starting from Kaśyapa, the hymns of this Maṇḍala fall naturally into five clusters on each side of it; and, therefore, the entire Maṇḍala consists of eleven divisions. These divisions exhibit themselves on mere inspection, and do not call for the smallest interference with the preserved text. It is an incontestable fact that there are eleven divisions, five on each side of a medial one, whether any special significance attaches to that fact, or not. The mere coincidence of these eleven divisions in an assortment of hymns representing the families of the Seven Rishis, instantly calls to the mind of every student of ancient Brahmanism the old Puroḷāśa offering in eleven receptacles.

With respect to this number 11, the Śatapatha-Brâhmaṇa tells us that, at the Purushamedha, "for the initiation (there should be) *eleven* animals fit for Agni and Soma; for them there should be *eleven* sacrificial posts; *eleven* syllables are comprised in the Trishtubh metre. The Trishtubh is the thunderbolt—it is vigour . . . In the rite of consecration there should be *eleven* victims . . . because the victims are *elevenfold*, therefore, verily, is all this creation *elevenfold*. Prajâpati is *elevenfold*; all this is truly Prajâpati; all this is the Purushamedha, which is the means for the attainment and subjugation of all this." This quotation is sufficient to show that an important sacrifice was really divided into eleven parts, and that a ritual might be expected to follow such an arrangement.

Orderly arrangement is, furthermore, indicated by the fact that the hymns of Kutsa are divided into two portions; those addressed to Agni being placed before the 99th hymn, and those to Indra after it. If we consider the 99th hymn as the medial act of a ceremonial, we then find that the hymns placed in immediate contiguity to it, on each side, are those bearing the name of *the great Devarshi representing the very family under whose influence we have excellent reason for believing that the entire Sanhitâ was arranged*. Again, if we consider the verse of Kaśyapa as a dividing line, we find that the Âprî hymn of the Bhâradvâjas occurs on one side of that line, and the Âprî hymn of the Gautamas on the

other side, thus conferring very special distinction on the Angiras family. Yet again, it cannot fail to attract attention that, on one side of Kaśyapa's hymn there are two sets of Bhâradvâja hymns and one of Gautama, while, on the other side, quite systematically, there are two sets of Gautama hymns and one of Bhâradvâja. It would, indeed, be most remarkable if all this were the result of pure chance; more especially, when we remember that the hymns of Kutsa are quite peculiar in this fact of division, and that the effect is to place the praises of Agni and Indra on each side of a central hymn on the Soma, in conformity with the dictum that Agni and Indra share the Soma between them.

Patient investigation will, no doubt, reveal further confirmatory details; in the meantime it is well to point out that the First Maṇḍala admits of division into eleven parts in another way, still without the least tampering with the text. This is effected by simply utilizing the fact that the hymns of Agastî are in three clusters, viz. those addressed to Indra and the Maruts (hymns 165-172); those celebrating Indra and the Aświns (hymns 173-183); and those devoted to Agni and the Sun (hymns 184-191). Room is found for these new divisions by bringing together the hymns of each family, thus absorbing a cluster of Bhâradvâja hymns on one side of Kaśyapa, and a cluster of Gautama hymns on the other side, in the following manner:

1. Vaiśvâmitra hymns (1-10).
2. Bhâradvâja hymns (11-64 and 95-98).
3. Vâsishṭha hymns (65-73).
4. Gautama hymns (74-94).
5. Kaśyapa and the Five Rishis (99, 100).
6. Bhâradvâja hymns (101-115).
7. Bhârgava hymns (128-140).
8. Gautama hymns (116-127 and 141-164).

Hymns of Agastî.

9. Indra and the Maruts (165-172).
10. Indra and the Aświns (173-183).
11. Agni and the Sun (184-191).

This last method of classification satisfies the rule of the Aitareya-Brâhmaṇa, that the Puroḷāśa is offered in eleven receptacles, eight of which belong to Agni, and three to Viṣṇu. There is no difficulty with respect to the first eight divisions; they are all specially consecrated to Agni by beginning with that deity's hymns; for even the verse of Kaśyapa is addressed to Agni, although invoking a blessing on the libation of Soma. With respect to the hymns of Agastī, a careful inspection will show that there is nothing fanciful in this suggested division into three parts. They separate readily and naturally into clusters of 8, 11, and 8 hymns respectively. But a real objection to considering the hymns of Agastī as the portion of Viṣṇu lies in their subject-matter. There seems no reason why hymns to Indra, the Maruts, the Aświns, Agni, and the Sun, should be held to represent Viṣṇu in particular. Of course, as the Viṣṇu of the Vedas is the deity of the fire on the hearth, while Agni is the ethereal or heavenly fire, the last portion may be held to celebrate the earthly or material fire, bearing the oblation from earth to heaven. It seems to me, however, far more probable that the entire ceremonial was completed in eleven acts, which were simply allotted in the proportions of 8 and 3 without particular reference to any part of the ritual. As a fact, furthermore, the material offering was divided into eleven portions in eleven platters, and the rule of division has, probably, reference solely to that fact, without involving a corresponding division of the hymns which accompanied the offering.

It is not a little remarkable, however, that the First Maṇḍala admits of division into eleven parts in a manner which separates the whole Maṇḍala into three well-defined clusters, with an Angiras Âpri hymn in the first and last; and Kaśyapa and its companion hymn occupy the centre of the middle cluster. This also is effected without the least interference with the text:

- | | | | |
|---|--|---|-------------------------|
| { | 1. Vaiśvāmītra hymns. | | |
| | 2. Bhâradvāja hymns (with Âpri hymn of Kanwas). | | |
| | 3. Vâsishṭha hymns. | | |
| { | 4. Gautama hymns. | { | |
| | 5. Bhâradvāja hymns | | 6. Kaśyapa's hymn. |
| | 8. Gautama hymns. | | 7. Hymn of Five Ṛishis. |
| { | 9. Bhârgava hymns. | | |
| | 10. Gautama hymns (with Âprî hymn of Ângirasas). | | |
| | 11. Agastya hymns. | | |

Here, again, we find that by taking the hymns in the order of their occurrence, they fall into three clusters of threes, making nine sets of hymns, into the midst of which two special hymns are inserted, making altogether eleven divisions. It will, furthermore, be perceived that the middle set contains a selection of Bhâradvāja hymns (the very family which arranged the Sanhitâ), on each side of which is a selection of Gautama hymns (representing the other branch of the same influential race). In the cluster which precedes, we find Bhâradvāja hymns in the middle, flanked by Vaiśvāmītra and Vâsishṭha hymns (opposing family representatives); while the cluster which follows the medial set contains Gautama hymns as a nucleus, with Bhârgava and Agastya hymns as supporters.

These three clusters certainly present a systematic grouping, having Ângirasas hymns as the nucleus of each; the medial cluster being entirely Ângirasas in origin; while the two outer clusters are flanked by hymns from other families.

I must also call attention to the fact that the Âprî hymn of the Bhâradvâjas falls near the middle of the first cluster; and the Âprî hymn of the Gautamas near the middle of the third cluster; while the remarkable hymns numbered 6 and 7 are exactly in the middle of the central cluster.

There are several hymns in the Maṇḍala which intimate that a threefold division of the sacrifice was a familiar idea to the ancient Brahmans. The 34th hymn abounds in specifications of *threes*, particularly mentioning a “*threefold* act of

worship"; and the 47th hymn speaks of the "*thrice*-heaped sacred grass." The expression "*thrice eleven* divinities," which several times occurs, seems to connect the numbers 3 and 11 together.

The foregoing facts tend to prove still more plainly that the First Maṇḍala is systematically arranged; for, in whatever way we test it, we find that it presents features of regularity. This can only be the case when objects recur in an orderly series. Under such circumstances, from whatever point the search may start, an orderly succession is detected. The initial fact of orderly arrangement having been ascertained, the discussion can be narrowed to the discovery of the correct starting-point.

The arrangement which I think the true one is that set forth in my first paper, in 1884, where I place five sacrificial acts on each side of a middle point. The dogmatic allotment of eight of those parts to Agni, and three to Viṣṇu, on account of the Gâyatrî metre and the three mythological steps, seems to belong to an epoch when the primitive ideas had become clouded with misapprehension.¹

There is one argument against the ritualistic character of the First Maṇḍala which demands consideration, and that is the fact that it contains three Âprî hymns. We know that each family was particular in the use of these hymns, and each claimed the right to introduce its own Âprî hymn at the sacrifices. If the First Maṇḍala is a general ritual, how is it that it contains, not seven Âprî hymns, one for each family, nor one Âprî hymn of the dominant party, but three Âprî hymns? As regards two of them we need feel no surprise; for they are the Âprî hymns of the two branches of the Angiras family; one of them being placed before, and the other after, the medial point marked by the hymn of Kaśyapa. The predominant influence of the Ângirasa renders this quite intelligible. Nothing can be more natural than the desire to include both these representative hymns;

¹ The legend that Viṣṇu stepped three times is found in the 22nd hymn of this Maṇḍala; but the steps were taken "to uphold righteous acts," and Viṣṇu was aided in the performance "by the *seven* metres," without allusion to the eight Gâyatrî feet.

one to be rehearsed towards the beginning, the other towards the end, of the ceremony.

But these two hymns exhibit a striking peculiarity. They consist of twelve and thirteen verses, respectively, whereas all the other Âprî hymns in the Rîg-veda contain only eleven verses each. The ordinary Âprî hymns invoke the Sun under either the name *Tanûnapât* or *Narâśansa*; *these two hymns alone invoke the Sun under both those names*, and this occasions their extra length. Here we have another plain proof, not only of orderly arrangement, but of designed eclecticism or selective combination. These two hymns were intended to express both forms of adoration; the verse invoking *Tanûnapât* gratifying the Agastyas, the Vaiśvâmitras, the Kâśyapas, and the Jamadagnyas; while that invoking *Narâśansa* must have been pleasing to the Bhârgavas, the Âtreyas, the Vâsishthas, and the Bâdhryaśvas. This fact of *double invocation*, in the case of two Âprî hymns, just where (on the ritual theory) we should expect such a phenomenon to appear, is too remarkable to be set aside as a mere accident.

With respect to the third Âprî hymn, it is sufficient to remark that it is found among the hymns of Agasti at the end of the First Maṇḍala. This small batch of hymns contains all the hymns of the Rîshi Agasti; and, if his Âprî hymn were not placed among them, it would have no place of rest in the canon, according to my theory of the arrangement of the Rîg-veda. This of itself is sufficient reason for its present position. There is only one other hymn of the Agastya race in the Rîg-veda, and that is one addressed to Soma in the Ninth Maṇḍala; accordingly, if the Âprî hymn of this family were rejected from the First Maṇḍala, it would have to form a Maṇḍala by itself. Furthermore, as the First Maṇḍala contains *all* the hymns of each Rîshi whose hymns are included in it, there would be no valid reason for rejecting this hymn, which is ascribed to Agasti himself.

It is, at the same time, worth remarking that, according to the suggested division of this Maṇḍala into eight and three parts, respectively, the Âprî hymn of the Agastyas would fall

in the latter part, hypothetically devoted to Vishṇu. This would give eight parts and two Âprî hymns to Agni ; and three parts and one Âprî hymn to Vishṇu. Another fact, of which more will be said presently, is that there are twice as many verses of the Agastyas in this Maṇḍala, as there are verses of the other Rishis, with the exception of the Ângirasas. This fact indicates, possibly, a partiality, which might also have been extended to the admission of the Âprî hymn of that family. On this point further investigation is needed. But surely there are sufficient facts in support of my hypothesis, to warrant the serious consideration of my views on this point.

The interesting question here not unnaturally suggests itself, why the head of each family should not have been selected as its most fitting representative. Why, for instance, should Madhuchchhandas be chosen to represent the Vaiśvâmitras, instead of Viśvâmitra himself? In this particular case we have the legend that Madhuchchhandas was the eldest of the sons of Viśvâmitra, who consented to recognize the leadership of Śunahśepha, after his adoption by their father. He received a special blessing in consequence of this dutiful conduct ; and the prominent position assigned to his hymns as the first in the Maṇḍala is in conformity with the indications of the legend. Close upon the heels of the hymns of Madhuchchhandas come those of Śunahśepha himself, the first two of whose hymns are those which specially celebrate the circumstances which made him the link between the Ângirasas and the Vaiśvâmitras. This, of course, emphasizes the distinction conferred upon Madhuchchhandas, by implying that the story of Śunahśepha was in the mind of the Arranger, when he placed these hymns near each other.

It is not improbable that other circumstances, which at this distance of time do not readily catch attention, may have led, in a similar way, to the selection of the other Rishis as the representatives of their respective families. It is even possible that the term Śatarchin, applied to these Rishis, may indicate that, of all members of their families, their hymns approach nearest to a total of 100 *riches*. This is, in reality,

the case. The founders of the families far exceed that number of verses, and other members of the various families fall far short of that number. Those selected will, upon examination, be found to be the Rishis whose total *riches* approach nearest to 100 of any member of their respective families.

But there is another very remarkable fact connected with this name Śatarchin, which appears to indicate the true meaning of the term. If the stanzas of the First Maṇḍala be added together, the total number is 1973; and, as this number is ascribed to nineteen Rishis, by dividing the total among them, we get 103 for each, with 16 for a remainder. Thus, by dividing the total of *riches* among the total of *Rishis*, we find rather less than 104 for each of them. This is sufficiently good ground for ancient writers to speak of the Rishis of the First Maṇḍala as Śatarchin, or "possessors of 100 *riches*."¹ Should this indeed prove to be the reason for calling these Rishis Śatarchin, it at once proves also that the hymns of Agastī form an integral portion of the First Maṇḍala. On totally different grounds I have already shown that they are a necessary part of the First Maṇḍala; but the name Śatarchin, in the sense here pointed out, would effectually dispose of M. Bergaigne's suggestion that Agastī's hymns should be severed from the rest, and treated as a separate Maṇḍala, in accidental union with a heterogeneous collection of poems.

Another very singular fact is revealed, by estimating the totals of the *riches* in the First Maṇḍala. We find that the

¹ It may be only a coincidence, but still it deserves notice that the number of stanzas which M. Bergaigne proposes to reject from the First Maṇḍala as interpolations, amount to 177; but as he hesitates about rejecting the tenth stanza of Hymn 45, we may reduce this number to 176. He would, however, reject the whole of hymns 162-164, which specially relate to the Horse-sacrifice; and he would also omit the last hymn (191), addressed to the Sun. These are just the hymns which I consider specially significative of the true character of the Maṇḍala. However this may be, they comprise 103 stanzas, which, deducted from his total rejections 176, leave 73 as remainder, exactly the number which 1973 is in excess of 1900 stanzas, which would allow 100 *riches* to each of the 19 Rishis. It would thus appear that M. Bergaigne's investigations tend to strengthen my conclusions generally. The above certainly shows that if hymns 162, 163, 164, and 191 be considered integral parts of the First Maṇḍala, and the remaining 73 stanzas be rejected which M. Bergaigne holds to be interpolations, we get exactly the 1900 *riches* needed to provide the Rishis with 100 each.

quantities contributed by the different families bear relative proportions the one to the other; and the proportions which they bear to each other are exactly those which my previous arguments would have led the student to expect. The totals of the *riches* are as follows:—

Kāśyapas	1
The Five Rishis	19
Vāsisht̥has... ..	91
Bhārgavas... ..	100
Vaiśvāmitras	110
Agastyas	229
Gautamas	594
Bhāradvājas	829

Total 1973 *riches*.

Here we find that the apostle of the Soma is represented by unity; the Vāsisht̥has (the orthodox *antagonists* of the Ângirasas and their friends) are in a minority; the Bhārgavas and Vaiśvāmitras (*friends* of the Ângirasas) have more space accorded to them; while double their number of *riches* is allowed to Agasti, who sings of Agni and Indra exclusively (a champion of the Solar cult); but four times the space is given to the Gautamas, and eight times the space to the Bhāradvājas. It must not be forgotten that Kutsa's hymns are placed on both sides of the middle of the Maṇḍala, and that he was a Bhāradvāja. This fact, and the enormous preponderance of Bhāradvāja verses in the Maṇḍala seem conclusively to prove that the Maṇḍala, and probably the entire R̥ig-Veda, as we possess it, were arranged by the Bhāradvāja branch of the Ângirasas, and that Kutsa's hymns are, in reality, placed in the post of honour, on each side of the 99-100th hymn, which indicates when the libation of Soma was poured out.¹

¹ I am, of course, aware that the particular Śākhâ preserved to us is that of the Śâkalas, and this appears to have been the Śākhâ followed by Śaunaka, of the Śunaka-gotra, of the Bṛigu race. But this does not imply that the text we possess is the Bhārgava version, and therefore unsuitable as a foundation for

It is now necessary to examine this middle point a little more closely, in order to show that, like every other feature of this Maṇḍala, it lends its quota of proof to the hypothesis that the First Maṇḍala is a devotional ritual.

In the first place, as I pointed out three years ago, the libation of Soma was unquestionably the most solemn moment of the sacrifice ; and in the orderly arrangement of the hymns of the First Maṇḍala we find that the medial hymn consists of a single verse, plainly asking the blessing of Agni on the Libation then being offered. This remarkable hymn is ascribed to Kaśyapa, the pre-eminent Ṛishi of the Soma, and therefore the most appropriate Ṛishi to memorize when the Soma was being offered. All the hymns of the Kāśyapas, but two, are invocations of Soma. The two exceptions are this very hymn to Agni and one to Indra in the Eighth Maṇḍala. This single-versed hymn is addressed to Agni as *Jātavedas* "the knower or possessor of all creatures"; and this very epithet, by which Agni is here invoked in the act of offering the libation, is an additional testimony to the eclectic character of the whole Maṇḍala. It implies that the offering was made for all creatures, and was, therefore, accompanied by hymns from the Ṛishis of all sections of Brahmanism. "Let us offer libations of Soma to Jātavedas," is the prayer ; that is, let us worship the one who knows all clans, before whom there is no difference of family or race, he who is the owner and knower of all creatures. It is in some such form as this that we should expect the libation to be made, if it were indeed offered in the name of an entire community ; and the fact that these remarkable words occur as the very middle of the Maṇḍala strengthens the conviction that they indicate the middle

arguments relating specially to the Bhâradvâjas ; for the Prâtisâkhya of this Śâkhâ claims to follow the Sanhitâ of the Śaṣirîya-śâkhâ. Now Śisira and Mudgala, both founders of Bhâradvâja Gotras, are cited as two of the five students of the Śâkala School who propagated varying recensions of the Rîg-veda ; hence I infer that the Bhâradvâjas were intimately associated with the Śâkalâs. Śaunaka, also, though reckoned an adherent to the Śâkala School, yet openly differed from the Śâkalas on various points.

ceremony of the sacrifice,—the pouring out of the libation,—and also that the office is arranged on eclectic principles.

I have held that the words of Kaśyapa were used at what I believe to be the moment of offering the Soma ; because he is the peculiar Ṛishi of the Soma, because of the nature of the words themselves, and because of their medial position. We have not only the evidence of our senses, that nearly all the Soma hymns handed down to us are by members of the Kâśyapa family ; but we have also the express declaration of the Aitareya-Brâhmaṇa, that the Kâśyapas conquered the Soma-juice for the benefit of creatures. This is good evidence to show that almost in Vedic times it was acknowledged that the Kâśyapas were the representatives of Soma worship.

There is, however, another and equally cogent reason for placing Kaśyapa in the middle as the leader in sacrifice. Kaśyapa was recognized as the first human teacher who received sacred knowledge from the gods themselves. We find, by the lists of revered teachers preserved in the Vanśa-Brâhmaṇa and the Śatapatha-Brâhmaṇa, that traditional knowledge passed through a long line of teachers, who received divine truth one from another, until, in the remote past, the list ends in Kaśyapa, who received the secrets directly from Agni himself. These instructive lists of teachers afford something like historical evidence that the early Brahmans held that their system of belief had its origin from Kaśyapa ; at any rate, he was certainly regarded as the Father of the Faithful. This high antiquity and venerable position, as the ultimate link in the chain of union between heaven and earth, renders Kaśyapa the most suitable of all the Ṛishis to be the leader in the greatest sacrificial ceremonial. The extravagant veneration felt for Kaśyapa is reflected through all stages of Sanskrit literature, and finds its expression in the legends of the Viṣṇu-Purâṇa, in which Kaśyapa is fabled to have been the husband of Diti, the parent of the Maruts, the progenitor of the Âdityas, if not the very Creator of the Universe. It is this name, written thus deeply in the Brahmanical system, that we find placed in the very middle of the First Maṇḍala, as the point around

which all the rest is clustered. It is such a personage as this that we should expect to find in such a position; and the fact that we do find this honoured name there affords the most conclusive proof that my theory as to the arrangement of this book is the true one.

In immediate connection with this single verse of Kaśyapa on the Soma libation, comes the very remarkable hymn of the Five Rishis. In my former paper I said but little of this hymn, because I was then laying down the broad principles of a subject entirely new. My object then was to show the general system of the arrangement of the entire Rig-Veda; and, in the course of doing so, I merely indicated some of the conclusions to which my principles would probably lead. But, now that I am dealing particularly with the First Maṇḍala, and calling attention to the numerous facts which concur to prove its ritualistic character, it becomes needful to examine more fully this peculiar hymn.

The first thing that arrests attention, in contemplating this hymn, is its composite authorship—it is the only hymn of the First Maṇḍala with more than a single Rishi. This hymn is supposed to have had five Rishis; of whom, however, almost nothing is known. It happens that the name of one of these Rishis is given as Ambarīsha, who is said to have been the king of Ayodhya who purchased Śunahśepha for the purpose of sacrifice.¹ If this identification be correct, it affords some clue to the distinction conferred upon it; for there can be no doubt that the incident of Śunahśepha, and the bond of union created between the Vaiśvāmitras and the Ângirasas, had a marked influence on early Brahmanism. The fourth verse of this hymn specially praises Indra as “the most Angiras of the Ângirasas.” This, of course, may mean, as Sāyaṇa suggests, “the swiftest of the swift”; still

¹ It deserves remark, however, that Ambarīsha is, also, the name of one of the ancestors invoked by the Kautsa-goṭra of the Bihāradvāja race. Was this ancestor and the king of Ayodhya the same person? The lists of Goṭras and Ancestors preserved to us date however from only the Sūtra period of Sanskrit literature; and we know that, long before that time, the meaning of many Vedic words and expressions had become matter of speculation, and the subjects of improbable fables.

the use of the word *angiras* in this way may have had its influence in placing the hymn in the prominent position in which we find it. But it seems perfectly clear that a stronger reason lay in the fact that it celebrates Indra and the Maruts in an especial manner. We know positively that Agni along with Indra and the Maruts share the Soma between them; and here, just where other reasons have led us to conclude that the Soma was offered, we find the remarkable verse of libation offered to Agni, immediately followed by this peculiar hymn celebrating Indra and the Maruts.

The hymn consists of nineteen stanzas, the first *fifteen* of which end with the refrain, "May Indra, with the Maruts, be our protection." It might almost be inferred that the statement of the 72nd hymn of this Maṇḍala must have special reference to this particular composition. Thus it is seen that both the middle position and the nature of these two hymns answer precisely the conditions requisite to give them the characters I assign to them.

But this is not all. It will be seen that this hymn of the Five Rishis changes its character after the 15th stanza. Up to that point each stanza ends with the same refrain, but the refrain disappears from the last four stanzas. This peculiarity of *fifteen* stanzas leads to the reflection that something turns on the number 5. The number 15 may consist of five threes, or of three fives; and it will instantly recur to the mind that this Maṇḍala is divided, by the families of its Rishis, into two sets of five, with the two hymns now under discussion as a point of separation. This implies that some special significance may have been associated with the number 5. The 12th stanza of this hymn of the *Five* Rishis seems to direct our minds to an exact understanding, by lauding the Soma on the ground that it "inspires the *five* classes of beings." These five classes of beings have been held by Sâyaṇa to mean the four castes and the Nishâdas;¹ in other words, they

¹ It is clear from other hymns of this Maṇḍala that by this term is meant all the dwellers on earth; thus the 7th hymn says that "Indra rules over the five classes of the dwellers on earth;" and the 89th hymn, wishing to express the universality of Aditi, says, "Aditi is all the gods; Aditi is the five classes of

represent the community at large, and this precisely tallies with my discovery that the entire Maṇḍala is of a corporative character. It was intended to unite in one common act of worship all sections of the community; and the "five classes of beings" were typified by five ceremonial acts before the libation, and by five similar acts after it; while at the most solemn moment of the sacrifice they were specially mentioned in a hymn consisting of three parts of five stanzas each, or of five parts of three stanzas each, and a Supplementary group of four verses.¹

On directing attention to this Supplement, it will be seen that the tone of the hymn changes. In the former part, Indra is celebrated as the bestower of rain, the god of the thunder-clouds, the fertilizer and sustainer,—he is, in short, hymned as the farmer's friend. In the Supplement, though still styled "the showerer," he is celebrated as the god of war; and his aid is sought in the subjugation of very human foes. This is one of the hymns which contain unmistakable allusion to the conquest of the aborigines by the fair-complexioned Aryans. I do not wish to assert that this Supplement is an addition to a previously existing poem; for I am well aware that sudden changes of style and subject are common enough in the R̥g-veda; still, it deserves notice that, in the present case, this change of style takes place just after we pass the sets of five verses, and the special refrain of the hymn.

There can, however, be no objection to the idea of a designed introduction of the warlike character of Indra into the ceremonial; on the contrary, it makes the principal act of worship more complete. Accepting these four stanzas as part of the original arrangement, we should have, in the middle of the ritual—(1) the praises of Agni (fire, warmth,

men;" and the 117th hymn says that Atri was "venerated by the five classes of men," meaning that all mankind honoured him.

¹ It deserves remark that the Śatapatha-Brāhmaṇa expressly tells us that the sacrifice is *fivefold*. The words are: "The Purnamedha occupies five days, and is the greatest rite of sacrifice. The sacrifice is fivefold, and fivefold are the sacrificial animals; five are the seasons included in the year. Whatever is fivefold in celestial matters may be obtained through this."

and comfort), who is also asked, in his military capacity, to "consume the wealth of those who feel enmity against" the Aryans; (2) the libation of Soma; (3) the praises of Indra and the Maruts for both agricultural and military success.

The supplemental character of the last four stanzas of the hymn of the Five Rishis deserves remark more from its interference with any idea that might be based on the significance of the numeral 5. There is, however, a further point to remark, which is, that the names of the so-called Five Rishis do not occur in the first fifteen stanzas. They are found in the seventeenth verse, as part of what I call the Supplement. I am not disposed to consider these stanzas as a later addition, on that account; much less, to deem them spurious. I would rather seek to discover their meaning. These five names are asserted to be those of Râjarshis, possibly because the name of one of them agrees with that of a King of Oudh; for little else is known of them. This interpretation appears to rest on the word *Vârshâgir*, which, with grammatical correctness, has been held by commentators to mean "descendants of Vrishagir." It has never occurred to any inquirer to suggest that these words are not necessarily patronymies at all. In the note to my former paper I pointed out that *Vârshâgir* would mean, equally well, "descendants of the adorers of the sprinkler," and that this would very fitly designate those who praised Indra as "the showerer," or rain-god, *in the manner of this very poem*. If we extend this process to the other names, we shall see that they also are significative in a very unexpected way. The word *Rijraśva* means "the horse of the leader," or the horse of sacrifice; *Ambarîsha* is a cooking utensil for frying or broiling; *Sahadeva* is "the bearer," or "carrying deity," a common term for the sacrificial fire; *Bhayamâna* is the decoction or preparation of "fear," or "anxiety," not an inappropriate name for the Soma itself; while *Surâdhas* is plainly "the receptacle of the Soma." These translations enable us to see the reason for the introduction of the word *rjiraśva* into the 16th verse. That verse praises the long-limbed coursers of Indra, and asks that they may be made

specially beneficent to Rijraśva. There seems to be no particular reason why one of the supposed Five Brothers should be specially selected for benediction; or why the *horses* of Indra should be likely to become his exemplars; but, if we see in this word a mention of the *horse of sacrifice*, then we have a fact of the greatest interest. When translated by the aid of my interpretations, verses 16 and 17 read as follows:—"The long-limbed, decorated, and celestial, red and black Coursers, harnessed with satisfaction to the yoke of the chariot in which the Showerer of Benefits is conveyed, (are) for the benefit of the Sacrificial Horse, distinguished among the armies of mankind. O Indra, the Showerer, the Adorers of the Showerer, the Sacrificial Horse and his accompaniments,—the Cooking Utensil, the Fire, the Soma, and the Soma-receptacle,—address this propitiatory praise to thee."

It will be seen that Indra, throughout this hymn, is called "the Showerer," which confirms my interpretation of the name *Vârshâgir* "the adorers of the showerer"; and the compliment paid to Rijraśva, as "distinguished among the armies of mankind," confirms the opinion that the word implies a troop-horse, "the horse of the leader," the finest charger selected for sacrifice. The interpretations given to these words indicate that the sacrifice for which the First Maṇḍala was arranged was none other than the famous *Āśvamedha*. The arguments which lead to this conclusion are greatly fortified by the positive knowledge we possess that the 162nd and 163rd hymns of the First Maṇḍala actually were rehearsed at the *Āśvamedha*. We also know that this was the most solemn sacrifice in which Brahmanism ever engaged, that it dated from remote antiquity, and was, from its supposed efficacy and the splendour of its ceremonial, the sacrifice most likely to call for a Vedic ritual.

It must not be lost sight of that, at the *Āśvamedha* sacrifice, there were twenty-one posts, the eleventh of which was called *Agnishṭha*, because standing nearest to the fire. This plainly informs us that there was one *yûpa* or post near the fire, and that the others stretched away, *ten* on each side;

this gives two posts to each of the *five* ceremonial acts I have spoken of, still further confirming my theory. The Taitirîya-Brâhmaṇa tells us that “*ten times eighteen*” heads of animals were required for the Aśvamedha, which again brings two fives before us in connection with this sacrifice. It will also be noticed that “*ten times eighteen*” are 180. Now, there are 191 hymns in the First Maṇḍala, that is, $180+11$; from this it might be inferred that 180 hymns were each accompanied by the slaughter of an animal, and that *eleven* (again this figure 11) were repeated without sacrifice. Can it have been that one hymn out of each of the eleven sets into which I have shown that the Maṇḍala is divided was a simple prayer, introduction, or doxology? At the Aśvamedha a human being was offered, and therefore the peculiarities of a Purushamedha attach to it, as noticed in a previous part of this paper.¹

The conclusions to which my interpretations and arguments lead are so startling, that the premisses on which they are based will receive, and ought to receive, the keenest criticism; but they are far too numerous, and far too cogent, to be set aside with a contemptuous allusion. We find that the First Maṇḍala has preserved to us the ritual of the famous Horse-sacrifice, which is admitted to have been the most solemn ceremonial of ancient Brahmanism. The Maṇḍala itself, by its repeated mention of Brahman, Adhvâryu, Hotṛi, and Potṛi priests, shows that a complicated ceremonial existed before the formation of the Sanhitâ. It is such a ceremonial as that of the Aśvamedha, and only such a ceremonial as that, which could influence the arrangement of the Rîg-veda; and it will require serious argument and solid facts to shake the weighty and numerous considerations which I have adduced in support of my discoveries that:

1. The First Maṇḍala is an eclectic ritual.
2. That it is orderly in its arrangement.
3. That it expresses eleven acts of worship.
4. That the eleven acts are placed five on each side of a medial one.

¹ See pp. 607 and 620 note.

5. That the medial point is the hymn of Kaśyapa, together with the hymn of the Five Ṛishis.
6. That the so-called Five Ṛishis are not historical personages, but are the names of the principal facts in the famous Horse-sacrifice.
7. That the ritual of the First Maṇḍala was intended to unite in one act of worship the "five classes of beings," that is to say, all sections of the community.
8. That there is good ground for believing that the Maṇḍala is the ritual of the Aśvamedha.

In the course of arriving at these conclusions, I have never been driven to amend the text handed down to us. Throughout my elucidation I am able to accept the text as it stands; and, although I do not pretend to have explained all the details, or to have actually demonstrated in an incontestable manner every suggestion which I have advanced, yet I do maintain that I have brought together such an accumulation of evidence that it will require the strongest of testimony to shake the conclusions which I have sought to establish.

ART. XX.—*Origin and Development of the Cuneiform Syllabary.* By G. BERTIN, M.R.A.S.

INTRODUCTION.—Graphic development.—Pictorial stage.—Influence of material used for writing.—Primitive arrangement of the signs.—Change of order and position.—Modern order of the columns.—Decay of the primitive images.—Confusion of the signs.—Archaic and ornamental styles.—Fanciful archaic.—Cursive writing.—Period of its invention.—Phonetic development.—Figurative stage.—Second stage.—Phonetic complements.—Determinatives.—Third period.—Akkadian values.—Phonetic determinatives.—Prefixes and determinatives.—Compound ideograms.—Akkadian phonology.—Its influence on the values attributed to the signs.—Fourth period.—Sumerian values.—Phonetic decay.—Fifth period.—Semitic renaissance.—Lists of words and signs.—Ecclecticism.—Syllabic determinatives.—Pictorial origin of the signs.—Theories on its origin.—Akkadian theory.—Semitic theory.—Egyptian theory.—Pre-historic theory.—Knshite theory.—Egyptian and Babylonian signs.—Symbolism.—Phonetic changes.—Change of meanings.—Illustrations.—Syllabaries derived from the Babylonian one.

PALÆOGRAPHY never attracted much the attention of Assyriologists, and in only a few cases have they either turned their mind to the origin, growth and development of the Cuneiform syllabary. M. Menant, who tried in his grammar¹ to give a list as complete as possible of all the signs of various styles and epochs, has unfortunately accepted many doubtful characters, and has not distinguished the really archaic from the ornamental style. F. Lenormant,² who specially studied the Babylonian syllabaries now in the British Museum, has done much to elucidate many points, but his observations bear only on a few characters, and have for principal object to ascertain the values and meanings in order to help the decipherer in reading rightly the inscriptions. He made a great step no doubt in attributing exclusively certain values

¹ *Manuel de la langue Assyrienne*, Paris, 1880.

² *Etude sur quelques parties des Syllabaires Cunéiformes*, Paris, 1876. *Les Syllabaires Cunéiformes*, Paris, 1877, etc.

of the characters to Akkadian and others to the Assyrian texts, but other works seem to have claimed his attention, and he did not follow up the subject.

In my previous paper,¹ a few words only were said about the development of the Cuneiform syllabary, and nothing about its origin, because these two questions are too important to be treated incidentally. I now propose to take them, but will first follow the evolutions of the syllabary; for it is important that they be well understood before discussing the question of origin.

The development of the Cuneiform syllabary and the modifications and adaptations it underwent, may be considered under two aspects; what may be called the graphic and the phonetic aspects, that is, the material modifications brought to the writing and those brought to the phonetic values given to the characters.

Graphic Development.—The first stage of the writing was pictorial,² objects being drawn not only to represent the objects themselves, as hand, foot, house, tree, but also abstract ideas and actions, as the forearm and fist for power, the mouth for speaking or language.

The writing being little by little abbreviated and decayed, the images meant became unrecognizable, as in Egyptian hieratic, and also as illustrated by the letters of our alphabet; for instance, A is derived from the Egyptian emblem of divinity, the hatchet, through the Phœnician aleph, and has preserved very little of the primitive image.³

There are no Babylonian documents which take us back to this first stage, but its existence is not doubtful, as in many cases the figure of the object represented is still visible in the linear or even cuneiform signs.

The material used for writing had naturally a great influence on the changes brought to the forms of the signs. At first probably papyrus, leaves, bark or other similar material was used,⁴ but at an early date the Babylonians

¹ J.R.A.S. Vol. XVIII. Part III.

² This has been recognized by the first Assyriologists, Sir H. Rawlinson, Dr. Hincks, Norris, Dr. Oppert, etc.

³ Origin of the Phœnician Alphabet, London, 1882, p. 26 *et seq.*

⁴ Sayce, *Use of Papyrus*, etc., S.B.A. Trans. vol. i. p. 343 *et seq.*

adopted clay, so abundant and so easily obtained. The use of clay as writing material, combined with the use of a square wooden style,¹ gave to all the lines a peculiar form, and originated the Cuneiform writing, each line having the form of a nail or wedge.

At about the same period stone was also used as a writing material; in that case, for some inscriptions at least, the scribe preserved to the signs a more primitive form; curved lines were rare, but in the Cuneiform style they are impossible. For this reason the linear inscriptions often give us forms nearer to the pictorial stage.²

One of the most important modifications, brought on by the use of clay as writing material, is that which affected the grouping of the characters and the direction of the writing. As I have already noticed,³ the inscriptions were at first written in horizontal columns, each column was divided by small divisions running from right to left, and in each of these divisions the signs (three, four or more in number, but forming one word or one connected expression, as *powerful king, son of so and so*, etc.), were grouped rather irregularly, the first sign of the expression, however, being always placed at the right hand top corner; representing each sign by one cipher, the following diagram will give an idea of the grouping.

1	2	1	3	2	1	4	1	4	1	2	1	3	1	Col. I.
2		3			4	4	2		3	4	3	4	2	
		4				5	3	5	2					
3	2	1	2		1	4	1		1	3	1		1	Col. II.
4					3		2	3	2		2		2	
						6	5	3					3	
etc.											4	3	1	Col. III.
													2	

¹ Mr. Pinches has noticed that on the tablets the grain of the wood impressed by the style is often visible.

² In some cases the linear inscriptions seem to have been copied from a Cuneiform copy, and the linear character wrongly transcribed; the same has happened in Egyptian, where the scribe or carver had hieratic copies for the texts he had to engrave on the stone. In many cases he transcribed the wrong hieroglyphs.

³ J.R.A.S. Vol. XVIII. p. 422.








When clay was used to write on, and a square piece of wood as style, the scribe was necessarily brought to turn the tablet, and to place what used to be the right hand side at the top.¹ As a consequence of this change, the columns ran from left to right, and the divisions in each column from top to bottom. The irregular grouping of the characters was still preserved, but then the first sign of each group appeared to be placed in the left hand top corner of each division, in consequence of the shifting of the tablet. The scribes preserved for a long time the ancient habit of dividing the tablet into small columns, so small in fact that many words could not have been written in one line if they had wished to do so; little by little they gave up this practice, and when the columns were more extended, the irregular grouping became impossible; they therefore adopted the plan of placing all the characters after one another from left to right; the division lines were preserved only to mark what we call paragraphs. In some Omen tablets, no doubt, by tradition and in a few and exceptional cases, these division lines are retained and used as in the old documents.

In writing afresh any old tablet, or in copying proper names, or quoting from ancient records, the scribes had naturally to restore to the words the phonetic sequence of the signs irregularly grouped in the original texts; this was easily done for all phonetically written expressions; but when the scribes came to compound ideograms or compound ideographical expressions, the elements of which had no relation to the pronunciation of the group, often, perhaps by ignorance or either because the position of these compounding elements had no importance as long as they carried to the mind of the reader the expression meant, they copied these groups irregularly, one or two characters being by so doing transposed. For instance, as I have already noticed, the name of the town of Lagash,² written by means of a com-

¹ This observation is due to the Rev. Mr. Tomkins (though I do not think it was ever printed), at one of the meetings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology.

² J.R.A.S. Vol. XVIII. p. 422.

The characters are all and always reversed in the same¹ way, what was the right hand side became the top.

There are two facts to be always borne in mind when we examine these early forms of characters: it is that generally the part represents the whole of an object or being,² and that all the objects or beings always in profile face the right; for instance, "man" is represented by the trunk and head  with the ribs marked; it became placed on the back in lineary , in archaic Babylonian , in modern Babylonian . An animal, especially a "dog," was represented by the head and neck , which became reversed , and in Cuneiform .

The characters as impressed on the clay by the wooden style were very peculiar and far from being clear; each wedge was formed by an indentation having a sharp edge on the left hand top side, but the other side was formed by an inclined plane. When several wedges were impressed near one another, they overlapped, so to say, each sharp edge cutting each sloping edge of the previous wedge.³

When the character is complicated, it makes its decipherment rather difficult.

To imitate these wedges the stone engravers adopted the conventional regular wedge of the lapidary inscriptions, and it is this style which has been adopted also as the standard by modern Assyriologists for their publications.

As it has been said above, the system of Cuneiform writing, that is, that made on clay by means of a square wooden style, seems to have been in practice before any of the inscriptions which have come down to us, for in some stone inscriptions the engraver has given a Cuneiform appearance to the lines, and even in the oldest dated inscription, that of Sargon of Agade, the characters are Cuneiform. The linear characters





¹ This is *without* exception. It is an erroneous supposition that any influence was exercised by the shape and size of the characters (vide J.R.A.S. Vol. XV. p. 279).

² Dr. Birch noticed it for the earliest Egyptian texts.

³ This is very visible in photographs, but could only with difficulty be represented in a woodcut.





are not besides a mark of antiquity, as the material used to inscribe on greatly influenced the scribes. When the stone was soft and the scribe careless, the characters were often linear and badly formed, as the careful engraving of each Cuneiform wedge required much time. We have of the same king linear and Cuneiform inscriptions. In some cases also inscriptions were written in linear characters to give them an archaic appearance.

The Cuneiform characters were primitively most elaborate; at first the scribe seems to have endeavoured to represent with the straight lines the object meant, but in course of time, through the natural desire to abbreviate and simplify, the characters were more and more decayed till the stage of the later Babylonian Empire, where the most complicated groups are reduced to a few wedges, as we have seen for the sign for "man."

In some cases it happened that two groups quite different were brought by decay to one form, as the Ninevite  and , often confounded by the scribes; the first comes from the image of a garden , and the latter from that of a tower .¹

G. Smith was of opinion that in other cases the Babylonian scribes had created a kind of graphic doublets to differentiate two phonetic values of the same polyphonic sign.²

The number of wedges in each sign and their position varied according to the time and the locality. The study of palæography became for this reason a special branch, for the difficulties were as great for the Babylonians as for ourselves. Lists of these variations were drawn up; one which has come down to us gives twenty different variants of the same character.³

¹ Pinches, Proc. S.B.A., June, 1886. The author points out that the difference was kept up more clearly in the Babylonian style, in which  =  and  = ; see also Zeitschr. für Keilschr. vol. ii. p. 153. For other examples, G. Smith, *Phonetic Values*, p. 4.






² *Phonetic Values*, London, 1871. p. 3.


³ Pinches, *Archaic Forms of Babylonian Characters*, in *Z. für Keilschr.* vol. ii. p. 149 *et seq.*

It is to be noticed that the difference between the Cuneiform signs at Babylon and Nineveh was great enough to make a transcription necessary. In the case of the very old Babylonian documents copied by order of the Assyrian kings, the Ninevite scribes, sometimes unable to transcribe a sign, merely copied it.

The archaic style, as our old English, was often used as ornamental; it was, for instance, always the one used on seals. One syllabary gives in the archaic style the signs to be explained, using it as a kind of italic.





The old form of characters used as an ornamental writing has been also employed by several kings, and the inscriptions which affect the oldest or rather the most elaborate style are after that of Antiochus. In one of his inscriptions Nebuchadnezzar has in the same way adopted an archaic style.

In the case of this ornamental archaic we must be very careful, for often the scribes have adopted signs which they believe or assume to be archaic, but really invented by them. For instance, in the inscription of Nebuchadnezzar the sign for sacrifice  is written by this group , intended no doubt for the representation of a Zigarat, as represented on the monuments , but placed on the side, the scribe being under the impression that the sign was the representation of a temple.¹ But the real archaic form was in linear before it was placed on the side , which represents a blazing altar with the libation or the blood of the victim running down .

The explanations which the Babylonian scribes tried to give of the origin of the signs are all of the same misleading character, if we judge from those given in the fragment of a tablet now in the British Museum;² for instance, the sign , which has the meaning of hand, arm, limb, wing, power, etc., is explained as being derived from three different



¹ This observation is due to Mr. Pinches.

² Published by the Rev. Mr. Houghton, in his paper S.B.A. Trans. vol. iv. part ii.

objects, the first looking as a quiver , the second, difficult to determine, may be a jug, and the third appears to be a throne, the scribe being no doubt uncertain, gave the three alternatives; but if we go back to the most archaic  and the linear form , we have clearly the representation of the fore-arm and fist , with an ornamental sleeve.

In the private documents the writing decayed more rapidly after the Persian conquest. The tablets of this period are very roughly written, but the decay attained its highest point under the Greek and Parthian kings. The documents of these periods are almost illegible, and require a special study.


The decay of the Cuneiform writing is well illustrated by the private documents: letters, contracts, receipts and the like. The alteration was slow and insensible, though uninterrupted; a simple but careful examination of the writing of a private document is sufficient in fact to fix its approximate date.

The oldest private documents, those of the time of Hammurabi, have the highest palæographical interest.¹ The characters of these documents seem to be the connecting links between the old complicated and the modern characters, all the wedges which were at a later date left out are faintly impressed, but those which remain are deeply marked, for instance, in the sign  *na*, the three inner lines are faint, and the others give the modern form .




Phonetic Development.—The modifications which the syllabary experienced, as to the values given to the characters, and the way in which those were combined, were less capricious, and resulted to a great extent from the phonetic peculiarities of the languages or dialects to be expressed. Considered under this aspect, the syllabary went through five different periods, during each of which modifications were brought

¹ All the contract tablets of this period have been published in autography by Dr. Strassmaier in the Transactions of the Congress of Orientalists held at Berlin; his copies give a fair idea of the originals; when one knows how difficult these are to read, he cannot be surprised in finding some mistakes.

either to the values of the characters, or to the way in which they were used.

The first period, which may be called the figurative stage, has left no documents, so it would be entirely speculative if the texts of later date did not contain figurative expressions. At this period of the syllabary, the signs were all taken as ideograms, the foot , for instance, represented not only this part of the body, but was used also to express the idea of 'to stand,' 'to walk,' 'to journey,' etc.; the context only could give the value of the character used. This purely figurative stage has been preserved in the proper names and in some parts of the Omen tablets, as for instance in the name of Nabuchadnezzar:—

The first two characters mean 'the god shining forth,' and express the planet Mercury in the morning, considered as the announcer or proclaimer of the day, in Babylonian *Nabu*;  is 'thing,'  is 'fixed' together, 'what is fixed,' i.e. 'boundaries,' in Babylonian *Kudurru*; the last character  means 'to protect,' and is to be read as the imperative in Babylonian *uṣur*; the whole name is therefore to be read *Nabu-kudurru-uṣur*, 'Nebo! protect the boundaries.'

It is evident that such a pure figurative, or rather ideographic, system of writing could not be maintained for a long time, and the writers soon found the necessity of specifying by one way or another the value which they wished to attach to the signs.¹ They did so exactly as the Egyptians and Japanese, by means of phonetic complements, just as we do ourselves when we add a syllable after the ciphers to express the ordinal numbers, 1st, 2nd, 4th, etc.

This is the second period of the syllabary, or the stage of phonetic complements.

The greatest number of the characters of the Babylonian syllabary had, as we have seen, several pronunciations and meanings, and each word ideographically represented had besides different forms according to its grammatical

¹ Also in Egyptian we have no example of purely figurative texts.

relation, to determinate the way in which the ideogram was to be read, the Babylonian repeated the final sound of the word. The sign $\rightarrow\text{𒌦}$ had the values of 'god' *ilu* and 'heaven' *šame*; when they wanted to write the latter, they placed after the ideogram another character having the phonetic value *e*: $\rightarrow\text{𒌦} \text{𒂗} = \text{šame}$. In the same way 𒌦 , among its ideographic values, had that of 'to fix,' in Babylonian *šakānu* in the infinitive; when the scribe wanted to express the third person of the aorist *iškun*, he wrote after the ideogram another character 𒌦 , giving the phonetic ending *un* of the verbal form, to be pronounced $\text{𒌦} \text{𒌦} = \text{iškun}$.

We may here notice that the Babylonians never went, in the use of the phonetic complements, as far as the Egyptians, who not only expressed the final sound by a phonetic sign, but often placed before the ideogram another sign giving the initial sound.¹

Besides the use of final phonetic complements, the Babylonians had another graphic contrivance in common with the Egyptians, that is, the use of determinatives; but it is, however, much more limited, as the determinatives are found prefixed regularly only to proper names of men and women, names of gods, cities, countries, stars, rivers and months, and may have been pronounced in many cases. The Babylonian differ from the Egyptian determinatives also as to position, they are always placed before and not after the words.

It is difficult to determine at which period the use of determinatives was resorted to, for it seems to have slowly grown with the desire for clearness. For instance, determinatives placed before proper names of men, 𒌦 , and before those of women, 𒌦 , appear only after the reign of Hammurabi. The use of determinatives may also have been the outcome of the adaptation of the Semitic syllabary by the Akkadians, though these determinatives were generally pronounced in Akkadian.

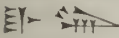

¹ At the later Babylonian period we find, however, in some cases what might be called a phonetic determinative prefix, but it is only to make certain the pronunciation of a syllable which is doubtful, as $\text{𒌦} \text{𒌦} \text{𒌦} \text{𒌦} \text{𒌦}$ *e-iš-tin* for *eštin* 'one,' and $\text{𒌦} \text{𒌦} \text{𒌦} \text{𒌦}$ *u-ul* for *ul* 'not.'






The third period begins with the Akkadian invasion of Mesopotamia. The Akkadians spoke, as far as we can judge, and as generally admitted by Assyriologists, a Turanian agglutinative language having nothing in common with the Semitic tongue of the Babylonians; after the more or less prolonged struggle required to subdue the Semites, they acquired peaceful possession of the country, and adopted the civilization of the conquered race. Their first care was no doubt to adopt the system of writing of the Semites; it was so much more easily done that the writing was still at the figurative or ideographic stage; they had therefore only to take the Babylonian signs and read them in their own language, as we did ourselves for the ciphers borrowed from the Arabs: ∇ *šakānu* 'to place,' was read *gin*, $\rightarrow\text{—}\text{—}\text{—}$ *ilu* 'god,' was read *dinir*.





As a consequence of the use of phonetic complements, the Babylonians had been obliged to employ their signs sometimes ideographically and sometimes phonetically; the Akkadians in adopting the system of writing were naturally brought to adopt the phonetic values of the signs when not used ideographically, and also to give to such signs the phonetic values obtained by the Akkadian readings. To remedy the obscurity resulting from such a polyphony, the Akkadians imagined to write inside or after the ideogram its pronunciation, a system which was also resorted to by the Egyptians,¹ and we call these phonetic groups by the same name adopted by Egyptologists—phonetic determinatives. The Akkadians, who borrowed the word for 'price' *šimu* from the Semites, written primitively by the sign \asymp , wrote inside it, its pronunciation, or rather their pronunciation of it, $\ll \nabla \rightarrow\text{—}\text{—}$ *še-am*, and the sign became $\asymp \ll \nabla \rightarrow\text{—}\text{—}$.




Often, however, the Akkadians were satisfied in writing inside or by the side of the sign its Akkadian phonetic complement, thus inside the sign for mouth \asymp , used to express language, they wrote when so used $\text{—}\text{—}\text{—}$ *me*, phonetic complement of *eme* \asymp , in Babylonian *lišānu*.




¹ In Egyptian the phonetic determinatives follow the words.

One of the most curious peculiarities of the writing of this period is that a certain number of words are read backwards like *lu-gal* 'man great,' written in archaic characters clearly  *gal-lu*, and *ap̄su* written  *su-ap*. But this comes from the fact that the Akkadians, as I have shown in my previous paper, changed and partly reversed the ideological order of their language; these compound ideograms had been invented, perhaps, before the change, and then retained after by tradition.





On account of its agglutinative character, and the use of the phonetic determinatives, the Akkadians gave a great development to what may appear at first sight a system of determinative prefixes. The words are easily decomposed into their compounding elements; for instance,  *gis-uru* 'a beam,' which passed in Babylonian with the same meaning, is evidently formed of  *gis* 'wood' or 'tree,' and of  *uru* 'strong.' The first of these two words enters into the composition of many others:  *gis-za-ra* 'the door post,' in Assyrian *giš-zir-ru*;  *gis-bar* 'the barra tree,' in Assyrian *giš-bar-ru*.



In time the first formative element was either neglected in the pronunciation through phonetic decay, or considered as a determinative aphone, as in the following words, which passed into Assyrian at a time when the first element  was not pronounced at all:  *gis-si-gar* 'a wooden lock,' in Assyrian *ši-gar*;  *ša-kā-na* 'a wooden bolt,' in Assyrian *šakanaku*;  *apina* 'foundation,' in Assyrian *epinu*, and many others.



In the same way  *u* 'plant,'  *ku* 'clothing,'  *za* 'stone,' etc., which formed the first element of many words, came to be considered as determinative prefixes.

When the phonetic complement gave the pronunciation of the whole word, the ideogram was easily mistaken for a determinative prefix, or even considered as such by the Akkadians themselves, as was no doubt the case for the word for 'horse,' written by the sign for 'ass,' followed by the phonetic pronunciation *kurra*   . In the case of this particular word, we must remember that the horse was

unknown to the Semites before the Akkadian invasion; when the new comers wished to express with the ideographic writing of the Semites the idea of their new animal, they naturally took the ideogram for the most important beast of burden of the Semites, the ass, but to distinguish it they wrote the whole name as a phonetic determinative.

When trying to analyze Akkadian words, great care must be taken not to confound compound ideograms with compound words; the former are very abundant in the Akkadian texts, and Assyriologists in some cases have committed serious mistakes in taking ideographic for phonetic elements. The name of the camel might be given as an example. It is written    , which has been explained as meaning 'the beast of the sea,' but it is rather 'the beast with water in a hollow,' no doubt an allusion to the peculiarity of this animal, which carries water in a special receptacle. If this compound ideogram, formed only to give a notion of the animal meant, was read phonetically, it would be *ansa-a-ab*, but it is to be read *gammalu* in Assyrian.



The Akkadian phonology had a great influence on the values given to the characters, not only on account of the new words translating the ideograms or signs, but also through the peculiarity of the sounds of this language, which at first certainly did not correspond with the Semitic sounds. All the letters of the Babylonian language have been weakened. The simple aspirate  often disappears entirely, the  is no more an aspirated guttural, and its existence in Assyrian words is often difficult to detect, and is apparent only by its influence on the character of the vowel.

There is a phonetic peculiarity of Akkadian which had a greater influence still on the phonetic values of the Cuneiform characters. In Akkadian, as also in a few languages of the same stock, the consonants when at the end of a closed syllable become obscure, and the letters of the same order are confounded in a kind of intermediary sound; the consequence was that a character having as value a close syllable, as  *bat* or  *mas*, was used to express also the sounds *bad* and *baṭ* or *maš*, *maṣ* and *maz*.

The Akkadian consonants also have not the clearness of sound of the Semitic ones ; the same signs are used often to express different syllables, *pu* or *bu*, *sa* or *za*, etc.

These peculiarities contributed not a little to throw confusion into the syllabary, but it had not the same importance for Akkadian as for Babylonian, because Akkadian at all periods was always written much more by means of ideograms than the Semitic language of the post-Akkadian period.




The fourth period is the one during which the Sumerians made use of the Cuneiform syllabary. The Sumerians, who took the power after the Akkadians, spoke a similar language, or rather a dialect of the same language. There are no grammatical, or at best very few, differences between Akkadian and Sumerian, but only phonetic variations, and, as Akkadian was written chiefly by means of ideograms, the Sumerians had only to read their ideograms with their own pronunciation. By doing so they naturally attributed new values to the characters, values given by the phonetic expressions in their own dialect. All the Cuneiform characters acquired, therefore, as new values all the phonetic variations of Sumerian :

 *gar* became *mar*.
 *kim* „ *dim*, etc.

The consequence was to double the number of values attached to each character, already polyphonic in many cases.

The confusion resulting from this polyphonism caused naturally a greater tendency towards phonetism, and in the Sumerian texts we find a greater number of words written phonetically. There was, however, a great difference still between the phonetism of this period and that of the pure Assyrian and later Babylonian empires. The phonetism of the Sumerian texts is as a rule but the development of the principle of phonetic determinatives ; in many cases the words, though phonetically written, are preceded or followed by their ideograms.

During this period, and perhaps also during the preceding one, another cause came to add still more to the polyphonism,

that is, the phonetic decay. In all unwritten languages, and also in those written by means of ideograms, the phonetic decay is very rapid, as in the symbols used to represent the words there is nothing to keep visible the real or conventional pronounciation; the frequent invasion of Kassites and their domination at various times may have contributed to accelerate the phonetic decay, especially as in Kassite there appears to have been a tendency to abridge all words by dropping a consonant placed between two vowels. At any rate, we see the phonetic decay at work in Akkadian and Sumerian, even at the literary period of these languages; if there was no other evidence than that taken from the syllabary, it would be conclusive; for instance, the sign  had at first the value *gur*, it was weakened in *gur* or *hur*, then in *mur* (*wur*), and finally in *ur*; in the same way  *giš* became *iš*; the sign , with the meaning of 'flower,' was to be read *kuš*, and its phonetic value *u* came perhaps through the same process of decay by the loss of the initial and final consonants.

The fifth period of the syllabary, which began with the age of Sargon of Agade or some time before, was the result of the adoption, by the Semites of the renaissance, of all the values attributed to the characters in the previous ones, a kind of eclecticism, so to say.





The Semites, during the long rule of the Akkadian and Sumerian dynasties and their struggle with the Kassites, appear to have lost all clear remembrance of the first age of their independence, and to have accepted the notion that their masters the Akkadians had initiated them in every art and science; they looked at the Akkadian pronounciation of the ideograms as the primitive one. The age of literature was over; the Semitic writers seem to have exhausted their resources during the Akkadian and Sumerian periods, when the Patesi, encouraging fine arts, received at their courts poets and prosators of the two races. The Semitic renaissance was the age of grammarians and commentators.

The new school of scribes classified the signs of their complicated syllabary, giving to them names drawn from the

Akkadian vocabulary, wrote lists of Akkadian words or expressions explained in the Semitic language, and also inter-linear translations of the Akkadian and Sumerian literary productions.

A careful survey of the syllabaries and word-lists, as they have come down to us, leaves no doubt as to the period in which they must have been written. The words, for instance, are classed not according to the Akkadian, but the Semitic root system, and in the lists of verbal forms the third person is always given first, as is customary among Semitic grammarians.

The Babylonian scribes classified also the Cuneiform characters according to a certain order,¹ but, as in some lists certain groups are left out, it is difficult, before more documents are found, to determine according to which principle.








The Semites at any rate adopted the graphic system, with all the modifications and alterations brought on by their predecessors, not only the new phonetic values, but, as we have seen, the graphic variations and additions, and often took even with the ideogram its Akkadian or Sumerian phonetic complement: *šar* was written   *lugal-la*, the Akkadian word with its phonetic complement; in the same way   *hur-ra* stands for *hubullu* 'pledge,' just like in English *No.* (the French abbreviation of *numéro*) has been taken to mean 'number.'




In the historical inscriptions the scribes, having clearness as one of their objects, gave a greater development to phonetism, but in the trade documents, in which the writers wanted to economize space and time, ideograms are very common, and also ideograms with Akkadian phonetic complements, even down to the latest age of the Cuneiform writing.







This strange use of a foreign phonetic complement had no doubt for object to determine more precisely the Semitic word which was to be read, and the Akkadian word with its phonetic complement was really considered as a compound ideogram.

The use of the real phonetic complements was not resorted

¹ Dr. Peiser first pointed it out.

to by the Semitic scribes as much as in the second period; though it has not disappeared entirely from the historical texts; it is rarer, and generally the phonetic complement is merely the ending of the word, and often only a vowel. *Sibe* 'seven,' is written  , *amelutu* 'servant or slave,' kind of abstract formative of *amelu*, is written    , really a combination of the ideogram for *amelu* , with the termination *u-tu*.




An important fact must be mentioned, which appears, however, to have escaped the notice of the Assyriologists, that is, that the Semites of the historical period have taken the values of the signs much more from their Sumerian than from their Akkadian readings; for instance, the sign  has generally the Sumerian value *mi* attributed to it, and not the Akkadian value *gi*. In the same way  is more often to be read *dim* than *kim*,  *dib* than *dug*, etc.

The Semitic scribes made a curious use of the phonetic complements, which in that case might be called syllabic determinatives; when they had to use a polyphonic sign, like  or , and when there might have been a doubt as to the value meant, they added another sign giving the end of the syllable,   was without doubt to be read *rab*, the second sign being *ab*. It shows that the first is to be read *rab* and not *gal*; in the same way we found for *šal*  , really written *šal-al*.


During the Greek and Parthian periods the same complicated system of writing was preserved, but there is a tendency to omit the determinative prefixes. Often these prefixes are neglected before the names of gods, stars, months and others. In the astronomical tablets the use of ideograms is so much a matter of course that a set of characters were chosen to indicate the signs of the Zodiac introduced by the Greeks.


Origin.—There is very little doubt of the pictorial origin of the Cuneiform characters; it was so natural, and indeed so evident, that the first Assyriologists did not fail to notice it at the very outset of their study, but no attempt was made to demonstrate it scientifically before the Rev. Mr. Houghton

took up the subject.¹ This writer was certainly very happy in some of his identifications, but the progress of Assyriology has shown that he was also wrong in many, as in some cases he took compound ideograms for simple, and simple for compound.



There is also an important rule, which was unknown to the Rev. Mr. Houghton, and which must not be lost sight of when the characters are identified; it is that all the figures of men, animals, and objects are always represented in profile² and looking to the right, as in Egyptian; for instance,  'the mouth,' *ka* in Akk. and *pu* in Bab., is the decayed form of , which appears to be a representation of the opened mouth, with the upper lip covered with a moustache . The signs for 'man' and 'dog' or animal in general are also, as we have seen in the early part of this paper, derived from pictures in profile.



A great many signs still resist our analysis, but enough of them can be identified to leave no doubt on the principle which guided the inventors of the writing. It will not be out of place to give here a few examples:



 used ideographically for 'by the side of,' archaic form

, being the hand and fore-arm .

 ideogram for 'man,' especially 'servant,' archaic

lineary form , representing the legs of a man walking .³

 ideogram for 'corn' or any other seed, archaic lineary form , representing an ear of corn.⁴

 ideogram for 'child,' archaic form , lineary form



, being the breasts with flowing milk .



¹ S.B.A. Trans., vol. vi. part ii.


² As far as the signs are explained. Prof. Terrien de Lacouperie has been wrongly informed, when he states that the figures face the reader (J.R.A.S. Vol. XV. p. 279).

³ This last form is taken from the fragment of a very archaic inscription which was in the British Museum, but this stone was mislaid when Mr. Budge had the partition of his room raised, and it has not yet been found, in spite of the efforts of Mr. Pinches.

⁴ These identifications are due to Mr. Pinches.

𐎶𐎶 ideogram to express 'to multiply,' archaic lineary form , representing a fish throwing its eggs 

𐎶𐎶 ideogram for 'hollow,' by extension of 'the abyss,' archaic lineary form , being the representation of a well or cistern as still constructed by the Arabs .

𐎶𐎶 ideogram for 'to inundate,' lineary form , representing the open door of a canal lock.

These few examples prove that the principle was the same for the Egyptian and Babylonian picture-writing. But who were the inventors, when and where was it invented? That is what is difficult to decide.

Many theories have been brought forward, but none has been as yet scientifically developed or supported by any proof and a scientific demonstration.

The opinion, accepted by all the Assyriologists till the publication of my last article, is that the system of writing from which we derived the Cuneiform characters was invented by the Akkadians, according to some before the invasion of Mesopotamia,¹ according to others after their settlement there. One of the strongest arguments in favour of this theory of the Akkadian origin of the writing is the opinion of the Babylonians themselves: though they never said anything about this question, it is evident that, as they attributed to the Akkadians all the inventions in art and science, they must have considered writing as an Akkadian invention. But I have in my last paper shown in a satisfactory way, I think, that writing was known to the Semites previous to the Akkadian invasion. The Akkadian origin of the writing must be therefore dismissed.²






Another theory, the Semitic origin of the Cuneiform writing, which the first Assyriologists were inclined to accept before the discovery of the existence of the Akkadians by Sir H. Rawlinson, was soon abandoned, and the tendency

¹ This opinion is the more general, it was that of the late F. Lenormant.

² In my last paper I spoke only of this opinion, because after the discovery of Akkadian all the Assyriologists, except myself, had accepted it.

was to consider the art of writing as of foreign origin; the indigenous and Semitic origin is advocated now only by those exclusive Semitic scholars, who will not admit that the Semites borrowed anything. There is, however, in support of the theory the fact that some of the characters must have been invented in Babylonia.

Many reasons speak in favour of a foreign origin. The Semites never invented anything; in art and science, as literature, they always copied or imitated their neighbours, and the invention of a system of writing requires certain aptitudes which are wanting in the Semitic race. The Arabs, who, according to most writers, represent the Semites *par excellence*, lived till the third or fourth century without any system of writing.

The proximity of Egypt, the constant commercial intercourse of the Semites with this country, and the evident pictorial origin of the Cuneiform characters, seem to have suggested to Dr. Hincks the Egyptian origin of the Babylonian writing. Norris seems to have entertained the same opinion, but his great caution prevented him from writing anything about it. Dr. Hincks only compared two characters,  'country,' in Egyptian , and , archaic  'city,' in Eg. ; ¹ he had noticed no doubt the similarity of other characters, but was perhaps waiting to compare the two systems of writing, that more might be known about the Cuneiform syllabary.

This similitude of a few characters in the two systems of writing was explained by others in a different way. Mr. Hyde Clarke was the first one ² who brought forward the theory that both systems of writing—and that also developed in China—sprung from a more archaic system of writing, which was afterwards lost and must have been pictorial. This ingenious theory, supported by only a few philologic considerations, was not however scientifically demonstrated. The two points of Mr. Hyde Clarke's theory are: 1. The common origin of the Egyptian and Babylonian systems of

¹ In the Transactions of the Royal Irish Academy.

² See Journal of the Society of Arts, vol. xxviii. p. 791.

writing; and 2. The existence of a civilization, and the use of a system of writing, in Babylonia previous to the Akkadian and perhaps Semitic occupation. The second point seems to have been partly confirmed.

Prof. Terrien de Lacouperie, who took up Mr. Hyde Clarke's theory, has not brought forward any proof in support of his view,¹ but gives to the inventors of the writing, from which the Egyptian and Babylonian systems sprang, the name of Kushites, though at the same time he supposes, on what ground he does not say, a still older system, about which he says nothing.

It is difficult to accept this Kushite origin of the Babylonian writing, even if it was not scientifically unsupported, when the very existence of the Kushites is doubtful, and when we do not know even what was this population. The oldest school considered the Kushites, that is, the children of Kush, as a race akin to the Hamites, and consequently related to the Egyptians. This was certainly the view of the ancient writers, who took the relation of the Bible as their chief authority. But the desire to find Ethiopians in Asia has caused a great confusion in the use of this name.² Still the Kushites were considered as the ancestors of the Semites by most writers. M. Maspero, who as a rule gives on debated questions the opinion generally accepted, represents the Kushites as proto-Semites, and does not make of them a special race.³ Others go the opposite way, making of the Kushites quite a special race distinct from the Hamites and Semites. Some identify them with the Akkadians, and declare that the Akkadians were black. Some identify them

¹ When I wrote my last article I had not seen the Professor's note in the J.R.A.S. Vol. XV. p. 279, but the fact is not material, as the assertion which it contains are unsupported by examples or illustrations. The promised article on the Kushite origin of the Cuneiform Syllabary has not yet appeared.








² If it had not been for the social position of Baron d'Eckstein, his dreams about the Kushites would never have been taken seriously.

³ Maspero, *Histoire ancienne*, p. 145 *et seq.* Through a surprising oversight M. Maspero gives the physical characteristics of the Kushites, supposed to be taken from Pritchard, but the characteristics are given by Pritchard not for the Kushites, but for the Ethiopians of Egypt and Abyssinia in modern times. *Physical History of Mankind*, vol. ii. p. 44. Prof. Terrien de Lacouperie has reproduced this misstatement without correcting it.

with the Agau. The natural conclusion is that a theory, having as principal part the hypothetical existence of so uncertain a population, cannot be scientifically entertained.

For a comparison with Egyptian we have at least more solid ground to stand on. The hieroglyphs of an early period are known to us, and their pronunciation, if still doubtful for a few, is certain for the greatest number.

As has been said above, the likeness of some of the Babylonian signs with those of Egypt struck the very first Assyriologists, but the subject never was taken into serious and scientific consideration, and no comparative list drawn.¹ The vague statement of the common origin or the derivation of the Babylonian from the Egyptian syllabary never was besides, except in the case of the two signs given by Dr. Hincks, supported by any illustration at all.

There is another most important consideration, which does not appear to have been taken into account by those who hazarded the statement; it is, that in two pictorial systems of writing, even independently elaborated, many symbols must be the same; for instance, a man, a dog, etc., would always be represented by the image of a man, a dog, etc., or by the most characteristic part of the animal; the idea of walking will always also be represented by the foot or leg. We may have two examples of this necessary likeness in the two signs quoted by Dr. Hincks: , Eg. , may be the representation of an undulated land, and in , Eg. , the representation of a town with its streets; therefore two different inventors may have come to adopt symbols not far dissimilar to represent the same notion, and what in these two cases supports this explanation is, that the phonetic readings of the signs are not the same in both syllabaries. The first, however, , with the meaning 'mountain,' can be read in Assyrian *šadu*, and in Egyptian we have the value *set* for , from its meaning of 'country'  *set*.


¹ A list was drawn by Dr. Hommel; it contained only ten characters, among which were the two given by Dr. Hincks and two very doubtful. A list drawn by Prof. Terrien de Lacouperie contained only ten or twelve characters, among which the two above noted and some others were apparently misread.

There are many difficulties which render any comparison of the two syllabaries unsatisfactory and awkward.





I have myself, too hastily perhaps, accepted the probable connection between them; for, when I came to draw parallel lists of the signs of both, my belief was shaken a little, and, though my comparative table contained more than fifty characters, I felt that there were so many things which ought to be taken into account, that what might be considered as a connection may, if the utmost care be not taken, prove often only accidental.



The objects represented by the Cuneiform characters cannot always be identified with certainty, even when the lineary forms are known, as at that stage they have deviated already from the primitive drawings. We have not to contend with such a difficulty in the Egyptian syllabary, but for both there is a question of great importance which in many cases it is impossible for us to answer satisfactorily; that is, the question of symbolic relationship between the material objects and the abstract ideas. This depends upon many causes, especially on accepted notions, on figures of speech used in the language, and on the use made of the objects. For instance, a feather taken symbolically with us would mean 'to fly away,' but on the Western Coast of Africa it means 'to hear,' from the custom of the inhabitants of this part to use a feather to clean their ears. This one example is enough to show how little we may be able to understand the symbolism of other nations. And how different may have been the symbolical notions of people separated from us by hundreds of centuries, and living under a different climate with different wants!




On account of the symbolic meaning attached to characters we found that the phonetic value in many cases does not give the name of the object represented.

In Egyptian a small pot  has the value *nu*, and we may look in vain in the Egyptian vocabulary for a word *nu*, meaning 'pot,' but this same pot is used as a determinative to words meaning liquids, perfumes, oils; we may therefore

infer that the value is taken from *nu* 'sweet water,'¹ an antiquated word, which has been preserved in the name of the Goddess Nnt,² the primordial water, or the abstract water, the vase being taken to give the idea of its contents.

In Babylonian we have a similar pot very likely in the sign , archaic form , from ,³ it has the phonetic value *ni*; but, as in the case of the Egyptian sign , this value is not the name of the object represented. A bilingual list tells us that its ideographic meaning is *mustabaru* 'conductor.' We have here again a case of symbolic adaptation. Any one carrying an order or doing something for somebody else has been symbolically compared in the East to the vase or vessel containing a liquid, and it explains why this character has the ideographic values of 'conductor' or 'leader,' for the one who leads metaphorically carries his followers, and by extension 'man' in general.

Can we, however, assimilate the two characters  *nu* and  *ni*, because their phonetic value is nearly the same, and because they both represent a pot?

The Egyptian and Babylonian characters are most of them, we must not forget, polyphonic. This of course increases the possible accidental coincidence of sound. As seen above,  and  have the phonetic values *šad* and *set*; but the former may be read *mat*, *nat*, *lat*, *kur*, etc., and take its value of *šad* from its ideographic meaning of 'mountain' *šadu*; the Egyptian  on the other side may be read *set* only from its meaning of 'country.'






Other causes come also to increase the number of values attached to the signs.

In Egyptian there is a double vocabulary. As far back as we can go in the Egyptian literature, we can detect clearly the existence of two sets of words, one which may be called Hamitic proper, and the other which is more or less Semitic. The latter are not a later introduction through foreign


¹ This word is not given in the Dictionary of Pierret; but see S.B.A. Trans. vol. viii. p. 218.

² There is also the masculine form, the god *Nu*.

³ This identification is due to Mr. Pinches.

invasion, as they already exist in the earliest dynasties before the Asiatic eruptions in historic times. Separating these two vocabularies is often difficult, as they were already amalgamated when the first documents were written in Egypt. These Semitic or proto-Semitic words must be distinguished from the purely Semitic ones introduced at a later period, like      *lšau*, to be read *lausu* ראש 'head.'

In the Babylonian syllabary the alternative readings, as we have seen, are still more numerous, each sign having for values the Akkadian, Sumerian and Babylonian readings. And in both syllabaries there are also all the symbolical derivative meanings given to each primitive picture. In Babylonian we have, however, this advantage, of being able to assign with a certain degree of certainty the approximative period at which the values were given.

We ought not to be surprised to find in the Egyptian and Babylonian vocabularies a great many words having a close phonetic affinity, as the two languages sprung certainly from the same primitive stock, but the words which belong to the first period of separation of the two races, Hamitic and Semitic, must show the phonetic peculiarities of each branch of language; for instance, we have the Egyptian  *seb* 'star,' and the Semitic reduplicated form כּוּכַב, Ass. *kakkabu* for *kab-kab*, the Egyptian *s* being represented by *k* in the Semitic tongue.

A fact which has been a cause of great surprise to me is that often, when I had succeeded in tracing a Babylonian sign to a pictorial symbol, I found, on comparing it to the similar Egyptian hieroglyph, that the Akkadian values and pronunciation answered more often to the Egyptian than the Semitic readings. This would tend to support the theory of Dr. Strassmaier, who supposes that a relationship exists between the Akkadian and Egyptian languages.¹

Most of those who have tried to compare the syllabaries,

¹ In the album offered to Dr. Leemann of Leyden.

either Babylonian, Egyptian or other, have neglected to take into account two important considerations, the change of the meanings of the words, and their phonetic alteration in the long period which elapsed between the invention of the syllabary and the time at which the words of the language known to us belong. The second consideration is especially important for the case which concerns us now.

As already stated, Egyptian and the Semitic tongues are derived from the same stock, and a regular phonetic change ought to be traced from one language to the other. This is not the place to enter into an elaborate comparison of the two vocabularies, but I may state now that from a slight comparison of them I have noticed the following most important changes:

Eg. m = Semitic p , $n = r$ or l , $f = w$ or m , $r = l$, $\chi = \check{s}$, $s = k$.¹

These changes are not, however, constant and invariable. Some words, like the pronouns for instance, have escaped the law. We also notice in the Egyptian vocabulary a class of words which give exactly the Semitic forms, but are not of a later introduction, and appear on the monuments of the first dynasties. This might be explained by the supposition that, after the first separation, and after having experienced in their vocabulary the phonetic changes, a few of which we have noticed above, the Semites and the Egyptians came again in contact, and the latter borrowed largely from the vocabulary of the former.²






The two hypotheses, (1) that the hieroglyphic writing was invented before the first separation of the Hamites and Semites, and (2) that after this separation the Egyptian language suffered greatly from phonetic decay, are supported by the curious fact that the phonetic values of the hieroglyphs are more often found to correspond to the Semitic words of the picture, the Semitic tongues having perhaps suffered less from phonetic decay.






I will now give two or three examples of Babylonian









¹ I cannot here give any examples, as it would extend this paper too much.





² This contact must have taken place before the historical period.

signs, with their pictorial origin and their possible Egyptian equivalents:

𐎶𐎶𐎶𐎶, lineary form , representing a steaming pot, phonetic value *ga*, primitively *gur*, the first is 'milk' in Akkadian, but in the Semitic tongues we have 𐤒𐤓 'to be hot, to boil up,' 𐤒𐤓𐤕 'ewer, pot with pointed bottom,' we find in Egyptian the steaming pot  as determinative to    *ar-t* 'milk,' perhaps weakened form with loss of initial *g*, and the *t* mark of the feminine.

𐎶𐎶, archaic , lineary , represents the sail of a boat , the Semitic value *rim* (for *riv*) is taken from the root 𐤓𐤓 'to breathe,' the aspirate is often lost in Babylonian. In Egyptian we have the sail used as determinative for the word for 'wind, blow of wind, breathing,'   *nefi*. This word corresponds also to the Semitic one, Eg. *n*=Sem. *r*, Eg. *f*=Sem. *w*, and the Eg. *i* represents the lost aspirate.

𐎶, arch. , lin. , is the image of an ear of corn, phonetic value *še*, in Babylonian *šeim*, 'corn, wheat.' In Egyptian we have   *su* 'wheat,' with a feminine form   *stu*, to be read *sut*, and   *šames* 'an ear of corn.'

It is tempting to compare 𐎶𐎶 and 𐎶𐎶 with the Egyptian , both signs have the ideographic meaning of 'life,' *Balatu* in Assyrian, in which it is also used with the value of *laḫu* 'to take,' and *silu* 'side'; its phonetic value is *ti*, supposed to be the Akkadian pronunciation of the ideogram; in Egyptian the sign is read *ānḫ* 'life.' The value 'life' may after all in Babylonian have been given because the sign had the value *ti*, weakened Sumerian form of the word *til* 'life,' Akk. *din*. The ideogram for life, read *din* in Akk., is , lineary , which represents an eating bowl , and no doubt used symbolically to mean 'living' and 'life.'

Before concluding, a few words must be said of the syllabaries derived from that of Babylon. The oldest of these derived syllabaries is that used at Susa, which yet differs very little from that of Babylon, and may be considered as only graphic variants.

The Vannic syllabary¹ is derived from the Ninevite style of writing, and the combinations of the wedges are adapted to stone engraving. The characters have been much reduced in number, but the use of ideograms and determinatives is largely resorted to.

The syllabary of the Apirian inscriptions at Mal-Amir and that of the Medic text of the Bihustun monument are variants of the same.² The first one, which is the oldest, appears to have been derived from the Babylonian signs of the later epoch. The characters have been considerably reduced in number and abbreviated; the ideograms are but few, but the determinatives are still maintained.

The Persian syllabary is nearly alphabetic. It seems to have been devised under the reign of Cyrus, by translating the Babylonian signs and taking for value the initial sound of the Persian words.³

The Kappadokian syllabary, of which very little is known, was no doubt derived from early forms of characters used at Babylon. And possibly from it is derived the Cypriot system of writing.

As far back as 1868 F. Lenormant advanced that the Chinese system of writing was derived from that which was, he supposed, introduced by the Akkadians into Babylon.⁴ The same theory was advocated by Mr. Hyde Clarke. Lately an eminent Chinese scholar, Prof. Terrien de Lacouperie, took up the theory again; well qualified by his knowledge of old Chinese, but unfortunately unable, through his ignorance of the Akkadian and Babylonian syllabary and languages, to control the statements of the Assyriologists he had

¹ Sayce, *Inscriptions of Van*, J.R.A.S. Vol. XIV. Parts III. and IV.

² Sayce, *Inscriptions of Mal-Amir*, Congress of Orientalists of 1883, at Leide.

³ Oppert, in the *Journal Asiatique*.

⁴ Manuel d'Histoire ancienne, Paris, 1868, vol. i. p. 401.

consulted,¹ he failed to establish the theory on any scientific basis.

Several attempts have also been made to derive from the Cuneiform syllabary the characters of the Phœnician alphabet, but with very little success. The last exponent of the theory, Dr. Peters, has however shown much erudition; but the weak point is always the missing links, which would give the forms standing half way between the two systems of writing; he also does not perhaps take enough account of the archaeological evidence.

¹ For instance, in his *Early History of the Chinese Civilization*, lecture reprinted from the *Journal of the Society of Arts*, London, 1880, he gives a plate of twelve Chinese characters compared with those of Babylonia; four are misread, and most of the others have the wrong reading attached to the meaning given.

ART. XXI. — *The Babylonian Chronicle.* By THEO. G. PINCHES, M.R.A.S.

AMONG the tablets acquired by the British Museum in 1884, is one of peculiar interest. It is a tablet of unbaked clay, $6\frac{1}{4}$ in. by $7\frac{3}{4}$ in., inscribed, on both sides, with two columns of writing in the Cuneiform or wedge-character. This tablet is one of a series which must have contained, when entire, a complete chronicle of all the important events which had taken place in Babylonia, Assyria, Elam, etc., in ancient times. The text (of which a paraphrase has already been published by the present writer,¹) begins with the reign of Nabonassar (747 B.C.), and ends with the accession of Šamaš-šum-ukîn or Saosduchinos, brother of Aššur-banî-âpli (667 B.C.). The subject of this tablet was continued on others of the series, a part of one of the tablets, referring to the reign of Nabonidus and relating the capture of Babylon by Cyrus, having been acquired in 1878.²

The publication of the present text was announced in the April number of the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* (p. 327), but my publication of the text of the Chronicle, made known to the world by the paraphrase given by me in 1884, has meanwhile been forestalled by a German Assyriologist, Dr. Hugo Winckler.³ No notice of his intention was given to me by Dr. Winckler, it having been fondly hoped (as I hear) by him and his friends, that my publication of the text would be rendered superfluous by this act. Dr.

¹ Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology for May, 1884.

² See the Transactions of the Society of Biblical Archaeology, vol. vii. part i. 1880.

³ *Zeitschrift für Assyriologie* for June, 1887.

Winekler's edition of the text, however, is reproduced by the autographic process, and many of the characters are imperfectly printed. It contains, moreover, no less than fifteen mistakes, either of omission or of commission. Whether, therefore, my edition of this text be rendered superfluous or not by Dr. Winekler's forestalling, I leave to the reader to judge.

The first portion of the text, which includes four short paragraphs, refers to the reign of Nabonassar, during which there was a revolt in Borsippa. The next paragraph tells of the death of Nadinu, his son (who was killed in a revolt), the accession and overthrow of Šum-ukîn, and the accession of Ukîn-zēr or Chinzirus. After this is a paragraph which speaks of the invasion of Babylonia by Tiglath-pileser III. of Assyria, and his mounting the throne of Babylon.

The seventh paragraph mentions the death of Tiglath-pileser and the accession of Shalmaneser. The eighth speaks of the death of the last-named and the accession of Sargon in Assyria and Merodach-baladan in Babylonia. The next five paragraphs treat of the conflicts which took place between the Babylonians and the Elamites on one side and the Assyrians on the other. Four of these paragraphs are imperfect, and the connection is sometimes lost. The 13th ends with the accession of Bêl-ibnî (Belibus), who was placed on the Babylonian throne by Sennacherib. The next two paragraphs give an account of Sennacherib's continued incursions into Babylonia, the deposition of Bêl-ibnî, and the accession of Aššur-nadin-šum, his son, to the throne of Babylon.


The 16th and 17th paragraphs give an account of affairs in Elam, and Sennacherib's invasion of that country, in revenge for which, Hallušu, king of Elam, invaded Babylonia, carried Aššur-nadin-šum captive, and set Nergal-ušêzib on the Babylonian throne. This king, as was natural, resisted the Assyrians, the result being that he was captured by the Assyrians in a battle which took place near Niffer (18). Affairs in Elam are then treated of, and the paragraph ends with an account of a renewed invasion of Elam by Sennacherib, and


the accession of Mušêzib-Marduk in Babylon. The next paragraph (the 19th) refers to the battle of Halulê between the Assyrians and the Elamites, the victory being attributed to the latter. The Elamites, however, seem afterwards to have united with the Assyrians against the Babylonians, and Mušêzib-Marduk was captured and sent to Assyria.

The 20th paragraph refers to the affairs in Elam, and—most important of all—the murder of Sennacherib by one of his sons, during a revolt, and the accession of Esarhaddon. This is followed by an account of the rule of Esarhaddon in Babylon (paragraphs 21, 22 and 23), and a notice of his expedition against Sidon, etc., which is continued in the following paragraph. The 25th paragraph speaks of an invasion of Babylonia by Elam, the death of the Elamite king in his palace, “not sick,” the accession of Urtagu, and the carrying off of a Babylonian official to Assyria. The 26th refers to an Assyrian expedition to Egypt, and the return of Babylonian gods held captive by the Elamites; the 27th to Esarhaddon’s progress towards Egypt, and the death of his queen. The 28th refers again to Esarhaddon’s progress in Egypt, and records three battles there, resulting in the capture of the city of Memphis by the Assyrian army. The 30th refers to a second expedition of Esarhaddon to Egypt, his death on the road, and the accession of Assurbanipal in Assyria and Saosduchinus in Babylon. The 31st refers to the restoration of Babylonian gods held captive by the Assyrians, and is followed by the colophon giving the name of the owner and writer of the document.

[illegible]

COLUMN II.

5. 

10. 

COLUMN IV.

王領今 少壯之
主一以 少壯國以 一以 少壯國至
二以 少壯國以 一以 少壯國
三以 少壯國以 一以 少壯國

5. 多言多聞之謂多言。一曰：言者，心之聲也。言不妄發，行不徒然，則言必中理，而事無不濟矣。故君子必先慎其言。

六十四卦彖傳

10. 莊子曰：水之於人也，猶天之於地也。人之於水，猶地之於天也。故君子必先慎乎水。

15. 人一會以四十一四五同出一六一六三四

必
當
多
因
此
也
三
步
六
以
一
六
會
結
去
以
兩
美

一
因
此
以
三
二
與
且
五
極
入
十
美
口
二
與
且
五
極

與
之
比
合
又
以
三
美
合
又
四
一
因
此
也
人
房
一

三
與
且
五
極
然
而
美

多	多	十	金	多	圖	立	金	金	二
20.	六	金	金	金	金	金	金	六	六
	一	圖	金	金	六	圖	金	金	二
	圖	金	金	多	金	金	金	金	二

25. 多人多國四國六六十一 一合會終天 以金口
國四六三多 合會終天 合會終天
三六極上 合會終天 極上
合會終天 合會終天 合會終天
合會終天 合會終天 合會終天

TRANSCRIPTION.

COLUMN I.

1. šar Bâbîli D.S.
 2. ina mât Aššur ina kussî îšab
 3. šattu šuatu . . mât Akkad D.S. ur-dam-ma
 4. âlu Rab-bi-su u âlu H̄a-am-ra-nu iḫ-ta-bat
 5. u ilāni ša âl Ša-pa-az-za i-ta-bak
-
6. A-na tar-ši Nabû-našer Bar-šip D.S.
 7. itti Bâbîli D.S. it-te-kir. Šal-tum ša Nabû-našer
 8. a-na lib Bar-šip D.S. i-pu-šu ûl ša-ṭir
-
9. Šattu ḥamiltu Nabû-našer Um-ma- ni-ga-aš
 10. ina mât Êlamti ina kussî îša-ab
-
11. Šattu ârbâ-êšrit Nabû-našer imruš-ma ina êkalli-šu šîmāti
 12. ârbâ-êšrit šanāti Nabû-našer šarru-tam Bâbîli D.S. êpu-uš
 13. † Na-di-nu mâri-šu ina Bâbîli ina kussî îša-ab
-
14. Šattu šanîtu Na-di-nu ina si-ḫi daiku
 15. Šanîtu šanātu Na-din šarru-tam Bâbîli êpu-uš
 16. † Sum-ukîn, bêl piḫâte, bêl si-ḫi ina kussî îša-ab
 17. ârḫi šanî, ūmu [Šum]-ukîn šarru-tam Bâbîli
(D.S.) êpu-uš
 18. † Ukîn-zēr kussā idkû (?) -šu-ma kussā iṣ-bat
-
19. Šattu selaltu Ukîn-zēr, Tukul-ti-âpil-ê-šar-ra
 20. âna mât Âkkadi D.S. ki-i u-ri-dam
 21. Bêt-a-mu-ka-nu iḫ-ta-pi u Ukîn-zēr ik-ta-šad
 22. Šalšu šanāti Ukîn-zēr šarru-tam Bâbîli D.S. êpu-uš
 23. † Tukul-ti-âpil-ina-Ê-šar-ra ina Bâbîli ina kussî îša-ab
-
24. Šattu šanîtu Tukul-ti-âpil-Ê-šar-ra ina ârḫi Tebeti šîmāti
 25. šanāti Tukul-ti-âpil-Ê-šar-ra šarru-ta^m māt
Akkadi (D.S.)
 26. u mât Aš-šur êpu-uš šanîtu šanāti ina libbi ina mât
Akkadi êpu-uš

27. ârḥu Tebetu ūmu ḥamiš-šerâ Šul-man-a-ša-rid ina mât
Aš-šur
28. (D.S.) ina kussî îša-ab. Âl Ša-ba-ra-'-in iḥ-te-pi
-
29. Šattu ḥamištu Šul-man-a-ša-rid ina ârah Tebeti šimāti
30. Ḥaššu šanāte Šul-man-a-ša-rid šarru-tam mât Akkadi u
mât Aššur êpu-uš
31. Ârḥu Tebetu, ūmu šanê-êšrit Šarru-ukîn ina mât Aššur
ina kussî îša-ab
32. ina Nisanni ¶ Marduk-âbla-iddin ina Bâbîli (D.S.) ina
kussî îša-ab.
-
33. Šattu šanîtu Marduk-âbla-iddin Um-ma-ni-ga-aš šar
Êlamti
34. ina piḥat Dûr-îli (D.S.) šal-tu^m ana lib Šarru-ukîn šar
mât Aššur êpuš-ma
35. šapîlta mât Aššur išakka-an, âbikta-šu-nu] ma-'-diš
išakka-an
36. ¶ Marduk-âbla-iddin u um-ma-mi-šu ša a-na ri-šu-tu^m
37. šar Êlamti (D.S.) illi-ku šal-tu^m ûl ik-šu-ud, ana ârki-šu
iṣmid-sa
-
38. Šattu ḥamištu Marduk-âbla-iddin Um-ma-mi-ga-aš šar
Êlamti šimāti
39. . . . [šanāti] Um-ma-ni-ga-aš šarru-ta^m mât Êlamti
êpu-uš
40. . . un-du mâr a-ḥa-ti-šu, ina mât Êlamti ina kussî îša-ab
41. Marduk (D.P. bêl piḥati), a-di šatti êšrit
42. -ti Marduk-âbla-iddin na-si
-
43. Bît-Da-ku-ri
44. iḥ-ta-bat
-

COLUMN II.

1. Šattu
2. šal-tum
3. Marduk

4. šanê-êšrit šanāti
 5. Šarru-ukîn

6.
 7.
 8. ina kussî (?)
 9.
 10. îlani
 11. ša ina pani (?)
 12. šattu šanîtu


[Lines 13 to 16 illegible.]

17. Marduk
 18. it-ta-ši >✠ Sin-âhê-êriba ina
 19. Bâbilâa ul-taḥ-mi-iš
 20. ir-tib-ba Marduk-âbla-iddin u
 21. ḥu-bu-ut mâti-šu iḥ-ta-bat u
 22. âl La-rag âl Šar-ra-ba
 23. ki-i irki-su ✠ Bêl-ib-ni ina Bâbili ina kussî ul-te-šib

24. Šattu êštin Bêl-ib-ni >✠ Sin-âhê-êriba
 25. Âl Ḥi-ri-im-ma u Âl Ḥa-ra-ra-tum iḥ-te-pi

26. Šattu šalištu ✠ Bêl-ib-ni >✠ Sin-âhê-êriba ana mât Âkkadi
 (D.S.)
 27. ur-dam-ma ḥu-bu-ut mât Akkadi (D.S.) iḥ-ta-bat
 28. ✠ Bêl-ib-nî u >⇒ rabûti-šu ana mât Aššur ul-te-ek-lu
 29. Šalsu šanāti Bêl-ibnî šarru-ta^m Bâbili (D.S.) êpu-uš
 30. >✠ Sin-âhê-êriba >✠ Aššur-nadin-šumi mâri-šu
 31. ina Bâbili (D.S.) ina kussî ul-te-šib

32. Šattu êštin >✠ Aššur-nadin-šumi Iš-tar-ḥu-un-du šar
 Êlamti
 33. Ḥal-lu-šu âḥi-šu iṣ-bat-su-ma bâba ina panî-šu ip-ḥi
 34. Samašserit šanāti Iš-tar-ḥu-un-du šarru-tam mât Êlamti
 êpu-uš
 35. Ḥal-lu-šu âḥi-šu ina mât Êlamti ina kussî iša-ab
 36. Šattu šiššu >✠ Aššur-na-din-šumi >✠ Sin-âhê-êriba

37. ana mât Êlamti u-rid-ma âl Na-gi-tu^m, âl Ħi-il-lu^m
 38. âl Pi-il-la-tu^m, u âl Ħu-pa-pa-nu iĥ-[te-pi]
 39. ĥu-bu-us-su-nu iĥ-ta-bat, ârki Ħal-lu-šu šar Êlamti
 40. ana mât Akkadi (D.S.) illi-kam-ma ➤➤  ana Sipar
 (D.S.) êrub
 41. nîšê idûk, ➤✠ Šamaš ûltu Ê-bar-ra la îšu
 42. ✠➤ Aššur-na-din-šumi iṣbat-ma ana mât Êlamti a-bi-ik
 43. Šiṣšu šanāti ➤✠ Aššur-nadin-šumi šarru-ta^m Bâbîli
 (D.S.) êpu-uš
 44. Šar Êlamti ➤✠ Nergal-u-še-zib ina Bâbîli (D.S.)
 45. ina kussî ul-te-šib . . . mât Aššur iṣakka-an

46. Šattu êštin ✠➤ Nergal-u-še-[zib] âraĥ Du'uzi, ûmu
 šiššišerit
 47. ➤✠ Nergal-u-še-zib Nippuru (D.S.) iṣ-bat izammi-ir
 uṣal-lal (?)
 48. âraĥ Tešrîti ûmu êštin [ûmmanê mât] Aššur ana Uruk
 (D.S.) êrubu

COLUMN III.

1. îlani ša šu-ud Ūruk (D.S.) u nîše-šu iĥ-tab-tu
 2. ➤✠ Nergal-u-še-zib ârki ➤➤ Êlamê illi-ku-ma îlânî
 šu-ud Ūruk (D.S.)
 3. u nîšê-šu i-te-ek-mu. Âraĥ Tešriti, ûmu sibû, ina pi-ĥat
 Nippuri (D.S.)
 4. ṣal-tu^m ana lib ûmmani mât Aššur êpu-uš-ma ina tâĥazi
 ṣêri ṣa-bit-ma
 5. ana mât Aššur a-bi-ik. Šattu êštin, [šiššit (?)] ârĥe ➤✠
 Nergal-u-še-zib
 6. Šarru-tam Bâbîli (D.S.) êpu-uš. Ârĥu Tešriti, ûmu
 šiššu-êšrâ
 7. Ħal-lu-šu šar Êlamti nîšê-šu is-ĥu-šu-ma bâba ina panî-su
 8. ip-ĥu-u idûku-š. Šiṣšu šanāti Ħal-lu-šu šarru-ta^m mât
 Êlamti êpu-uš
 9. Kudurru ina mât Êlamti ina kussî îša-ab. Ârki Sin-
 âĥê-êriba
 10. ana mât Êlamti u-rid-ma ûltu mât Ra-a-ši a-di

11. Bît-Bur-na-ki iḥ-te-pi, ḥu-bu-ut-su iḥ-ta-bat
 12. Mu-še-zib-Marduk ina Bâbîli ina kussî îša-ab
-
13. Šattu êstin Mu-še-zib-Marduk, âraḥ Âbi, ûmu sebiššerit
 14. Kudurru šar mât Êlamti ina si-ḥi ṣa-bit-ma dêku.
Êšrit ârḥi
 15. Kudurru šarru-ta^m mât Êlamti êpu-uš. Me-na-nu ina
mât Elamti
 16. ina kussî îša-ab. Šattu-lâ-idû ¶ Me-na-nu ûminani mât
Êlamti u mât Akkadi (D.S.)
 17. id-ki-e-ma ina âl Iḥa-lu-li-e ṣal-tu^m ana lib mât Aššur
 18. êpu-uš-ma nabalkut-tu^m inât Aššur iṣakka-an
 19. Šattu îrbit Mu-še-zib-Marduk, âraḥ Nisanni, ûmu
ḥamiššerit.
 20. Me-na-nu, šar mât Êlamti, mi-rit-tum i-mi-rit-su-ma
 21. pî-šu ṣa-bit-ma at-ma-a la-li-'
 22. Ina ârḥi Kisilimi, ûmu êstin, âla ṣa-bit, Mu-še-zib-
Marduk
 23. ṣa-bit-ma âna mât Aš-šur a-bi-ik
 24. arbâ šanāti Mu-še-zib-Marduk šarru-ta^m Tin-tir D.S.
êp-uš.
 25. Ina ârḥi Âdari, ûmu sibû, Me-na-mu šar mât Elamti
šimāti.
 26. Arbâ šanāti Me-na-nu šarru-tam mât Êlamti êp-uš.
 27. Ḥum-ba-ḥal-da-šu ina mât Êlamti ina kussê îš-ab
-
28. Šattu samnu šarru ina Tin-tir ki . . . âraḥ Du'uzu,
ûmu šalšu
 29. ilāni šu-ud Uruk D.S. ultu mât Aššur D.S. âna Uruk
D.S. êtarbu
 30. Ina âraḥ Tišriti, ûmu [šalaš-êšrâ] Ḥum-ba-[ḥal]-da-šu
šar Êlamti ina ➤𐎶𐎵𐎶𐎵𐎶𐎵
 31. ma-ḥi-iṣ-ma ina âdari-e ➤𐎶𐎵 . . . imu-ut. Samnu šanāti
Ḥum-ba-ḥal-da-šu
 32. šarru-tam mât Êlamti êp-uš
 33. Ḥum-ba-ḥal-da-šu šan-û ina mât Êlamti ina kussî îš-ab.
 34. Âraḥ Tebēti, ûmu êšrâ, Sin-âḥê-êriba šar mât Aš-šur,

7. nak-is-ma âna mât Aš-šur na-ši. Ina âraḥ Âdari
kaḫḫada ša šarri
 8. ša mât Kun-du u mât Si-su-u nak-is-ma âna mât Aš-šur
na-ši.
-
9. Šattu šiššitu šar Êlamti âna Sipar D.S. êrib, idûk. D.P.
Šamaš ul-tu
 10. Ê-bar-ra lâ iṣû. Mât Aš-šur âna mât Mi-šir illik me-lu-u
sibittu
 11. Īum-ba-ḫal-da-šu šar mât Êlamti lâ marṣu ina êkalli-šu
imût
 12. Īamištu šanāti Īum-ba-ḫal-da-su šarru-tam mât Êlamti
êp-uš.
 13. Ur-ta-gu, âḫi-šu ina mât Êlamti ina kussī iṣ-ab.
 14. Âraḥ-lâ-îdû Nadin-šum D.P. gu-en-na
 15. u Kudurru, mâr Da-ku-ri âna mât Aš-šur ab-ku
 16. Šattu sibittu, âraḥ Âdari, ûmu ḫamšu, ûmman mât
Aš-šur ina mât Mi-šir idûku
 17. Ina âraḥ Âdari Istar A-ga-de D.S. u îlāni ša A-ga-de
D.S.
 18. ûltu mât Êlamti illiku-nim-ma ina âraḥ Âdari, ûmu êšrit,
âna A-ga-de D.S. illiku.
-
19. Sattu samantu Assur-âḫa-iddin, âraḥ Tebēti, ûmu (ḫi-bi)
 20. mât Ru-ri-ša-a-a ṣa-bit, šal-lat-šu šal-lat
 21. Ina ârḫi Kisilimi šal-lat-su âna Uruk D.S. i-tir-bi
 22. Âraḥ Âdari, ûmu ḫamšu, âššat šarri mât-at
-
23. Šattu êšrit, âraḥ Nisanni, ûmman mât Aš-šur âna Mi-šir
illiku (ḫi-bi)
 24. Ârḫu Du'uzu, ûmu šalšu, ûmu [šiššiserit], ûmu
[samaššerit]
 25. šelalta šu di-ik-tum ina mât Mi-šir di-kat
 26. Êmu [šanêšrâ] Me-im-bi, âlu šarru-tam ṣa-bit
 27. šarri-šu ul-te-zib, mârî-šu, u [mârāni âḫi-šu ina ḫâtâ]
ṣab-tu
 28. šal-lat-su šal-lat, nêši šu ina kir-ta ṣa-šu-šu . . tal-lu-ni
-

29. Šattu êštinêšrit šar ina mât Aš-šur D.P. rabûti [šu ina kakki] id-du-uk

30. Šattu [šanêšrit] šar mât Aš-šur ana mât Mi-šir illik . . .

31. ina ħarrani imruš-ma ina ârĥi samna, ûmu êšrit šîmati

32. [Šanêšrâ] šanâti Aššur-âĥa-iddin šarru-tam mât Aš-šur êp-uš

33. Šamaš-šum-ukîn ina Ê-ki ¶ Aššur-banî-âbli ina mât Aš-šur šanê mârâni-šu ina kussî î-šib.

34. Šattu rêši ¶ Šamaš-šum-ukîn ina ârĥi Aari

35. Bêl u îlâni ša mât Akkad D.S. ul-tu âl Aššur

36. u-šu-nim-ma ina ârĥi Aari [a-na Bâbîli] D.S. eribu-ni

37. Šattu ša'atu âlu Biš-bi-tum . . . šarri-su ka-sid.

38. Ârah Tebêti, ûmu êšrâ ¶ Bêl-êd-ir . . . Tin-tir D.S. ša-bit-ma dêku.

39. Ĥis-su rêš-tu-u, ki-ma labiri-šu šaṭru-ma ba-ru û ub-bu-uš.

40. Dup-pi ¶ A-na-Bêl-garib, âbli-šu-ša ¶ Li-ib-lu-ṭu,

41. mâr ¶ Ur-Aku, ḳa-at ¶ E-a-iddin, âbli-šu ša

42. ¶ A-na-Bêl-garib, mâr ¶ Ur-Aku. Tin-tir D.S.

43. Ârah . . . , ûmu šiššu, šattu [šanêšrâ], Da-ri-ia-muš, šar Ê-ki

44. u mâtâti.

TRANSLATION.

COLUMN I.

I.

1 king of Babylon.

2 sat on the throne in Assyria.

3. That year [to] Akkad he descended and

4. plundered Rabbisu and Ĥamranu,

5. and carried off the gods of Šapazza.

II.

6. In the time of Nabonassar, Borsippa,

7. against Babylon revolted. The battle which Nabonassar

8. fought in the midst of Borsippa is not described.

III.

9. In the 5th year of Nabonassar Ummanigaš
 10. sat on the throne in Elam.
-

IV.

11. In the 14th year Nabonassar fell ill and died in his palace.
 12. Nabonassar had ruled the kingdom of Babylon 14 years.
 13. Nadinu, his son, sat on the throne in Babylon.
-

V.

14. In the 2nd year Nadinu was killed in a revolt.
 15. Nadinu had ruled the kingdom of Babylon for 2 years.
 16. Šum-ukîn, a governor, leader of the revolt, sat on the throne.
 17. Šum-ukîn ruled the kingdom of Babylon for 2 months and days.
 18. Ukîn-zēr hurled him from the throne and took the throne.
-

VI.

19. In the third year of Ukîn-zēr Tiglath-pileser
 20. to the land of Akkad then descended.
 22. Ukîn-zēr had ruled the kingdom of Babylon for 3 years.
 21. He destroyed Bêt Âmukan and captured Ukîn-zēr.
 23. Tiglath-pileser sat on the throne in Babylon.
-

VII.

24. In the 2nd year Tiglath-pileser died in the month Tebet.
 25. [¹] years Tiglath-pileser the kingdom of Akkad
 26. and Assyria had ruled; he had ruled two years in the midst of Akkad.
 27. On the 25th day of Tebet Shalmaneser in Assyria
 28. [²] sat on the throne. He destroyed Šabara'in.
-

¹ Blank.

² Here a blank, followed by the character *ki*.

VIII.

29. In the 5th year Shalmaneser died in the month Tebet.
 30. Shalmaneser had ruled the kingdom of Akkad and Assyria for 5 years.
 31. In the month Tebet, 12th day, Sargon sat on the throne in Assyria,
 32. and in the month Nisan Merodach-baladan sat on the throne in Babylon.
-

IX.

33. In the second year of Merodach-baladan, Ummanigaš king of Elam
 34. made battle with Sargon king of Assyria in the province of Dûr-îli,
 35. he made a defeat of Assyria, and greatly overthrew them.
 36. Merodach-baladan and his army, who to the help
 37. of the king of Elam went, did not join battle—he followed after it.
-

X.

38. In the 5th year of Merodach-baladan, Ummanigaš king of Elam died.
 39. Ummanigaš had ruled the kingdom of Elam . . . years.
 40. [After him] . . . -undu, son of his sister, sat on the throne in Elam.
 41. . . . -Merodach, the prefect until the 10th year.
 42. . . . Merodach-baladan fled.
-

XI.

43. . . . Bit-Dakuri
 44. . . . he plundered
-

COLUMN II.

XII.

1. Year.
 2. battle
 3. Merodach-[baladan]

4. 12 years
 5. Sargon
-

XIII.

6.
 7.
 8. Assyria (?)
 9.
 10. the gods
 11. which before (?)
 12. the 2nd year

[Lines 13 to 16 illegible.]

17. Merodach
 18. went forth. Sennacherib
 19. the Babylonians he afflicted
 20. he increased. Merodach-baladan and
 21. the plunder of his country he carried off and
 22. Larancha and Sarraba
 23. then he captured. He seated Bêl-ibnî on the throne in
 Babylon.
-

XIV.

24. In the first year of Bêl-ibnî Sennacherib
 25. destroyed the cities Ĥirimma and Ĥararatum.
-

XV.

26. In the 3rd year of Bêl-ibnî Sennacherib to Akkad
 27. descended, he carried off the plunder of Akkad,
 28. he took Bêl-ibnî and his great men to Assyria.
 29. Bêl-ibnî had ruled the kingdom of Babylon 3 years.
 30. Sennacherib set Aššur-nadin-sum, his son,
 31. on the throne in Babylon.
-

XVI.

32. In the first year of Aššur-nadin-sum, Ištarḥundu, king of
 Elam,
 33. Hallušu, his brother, took him, and closed the gate
 upon him.

34. Istarhundu had ruled the kingdom of Elam for 18 years.
 35. Hallušu, his brother, sat on the throne in Elam.
-

XVII.

36. In the 6th year of Aššur-nadin-šum, Sennacherib
 37. descended to Elam, and the cities Nagitum, Hillum,
 38. Pillatum, and Hupapanu he destroyed,
 39. he carried off their plunder. Afterwards Hallušu, king
 of Elam,
 40. went to Akkad and in anger (?) descended to Sippara.
 41. He killed the people, (but) the Sungod went not forth
 from E-bara.
 42. He captured Aššur-nadin-sum and took him to Elam.
 43. Aššur-nadin-šum had ruled the kingdom of Babylon 6
 years.
 44. The king of Elam set Nergal-ušêzib on the throne
 45. in Babylon. He accomplished [the defeat] of Assyria.
-

XVIII.

46. In the 1st year of Nergal-ušêzib, the 16th day of
 Tammuz,
 47. Nergal-ušêzib took Niffer, proclaimed himself (?) and
 took spoil (?).
 48. On the 1st day of the month Tisri, the people of Assyria
 descended to Erech.

COLUMN III.

1. They carried off the gods which were over Erech, and its
 people.
2. Nergal-ušêzib went after the Elamites, and the gods over
 Erech
3. and its people he carried off. On the 7th day of Tisri in
 the province of Niffer
4. he made battle with the army of Assyria and was
 captured on the battle-field and
5. taken to Assyria. For 1 year and 6 months Nergal-
 ušêzib

6. had ruled the kingdom of Babylon. On the 26th day of [Tisri]
 7. Hallušu king of Elam his people revolted against him and the gate before him
 8. they shut; they killed him. Hallušu had ruled the kingdom of Elam for 6 years.
 9. Kudurru sat on the throne in Elam. Afterwards Sennacherib
 10. descended to Elam, and from Râš to
 11. Bît-Burnaki he devastated, he carried off its plunder.
 12. Mušêzib-Marduk sat on the throne in Babylon.
-

XIX.

13. In the 1st year of Mušêzib-Marduk, the 17th day of Ab,
 14. Kudur king of Elam was captured in a revolt and killed. For 10 months
 15. Kudur had ruled the kingdom of Elam. Menanu in Elam
 16. sat upon the throne. In a year unknown Menanu the army of Elam and Akkad
 17. gathered, and in the city Halulê battle with Assyria
 18. he made, and accomplished the overthrow of Assyria.
 19. In the 4th year of Mušêzib-Marduk, the 15th day of Nisan,
 20. Menanu king of Elam plotted (?) against him and
 21. his command he took away and annihilated (?) his authority.
 22. In the month Kislev, the 1st day, he took the city; Mušêzib-Marduk
 23. he captured and took away to Assyria.
 24. For 4 years Mušêzib-Marduk had ruled the kingdom of Babylon.
 25. On the 7th day of Adar Menanu king of Elam died.
 26. For 4 years Menanu had ruled the kingdom of Elam.
 27. Humbahaldašu sat upon the throne in Elam.
-

XX.

28. In the 8th year of the king in Babylon, the 3rd day of Tammuz,
 29. the gods over Erech from [Assyria] to Erech descended.
 30. On the 23rd day of Tisri Humbaḥaldašu king of Elam by fever
 31. was smitten, and in the sickness of [the fever] died.
For 8 years Humbaḥaldašu
 32. the kingdom of Elam had ruled.
 33. Humbaḥaldašu II. sat on the throne in Elam.
 34. On the 20th day of Tebet Sennacherib king of Assyria
 35. his son, in a revolt, killed him. For years
Sennacherib
 36. had ruled the kingdom of Assyria. From the 20th day
of Tebet to
 37. the 2nd day of Adar the revolt in Assyria continued.
 38. On the 18th day of Adar, Esarhaddon, his son, sat on the
throne in Assyria.
-

XXI.

39. In the 1st year of Esarhaddon Zēr-bêt-ûššur of the
land of Tamtim
 40. then arose, over Ur he placed (himself). The city [they
besieged (?)]
 41. he fled before the great men of Assyria, and [descended]
to Elam.
 42. In Elam the king of Elam captured him and [killed
him] with the sword.
 43. In a month unknown in Niffer the *Gu[enna]*
-

XXII.

44. In the month Elul the god Kadi and the gods
 45. went to Dûr-îli
 46. went to Dûr Šarru-ukîn (Khorsabad)
 47. In the month Adar the foundation (?) of
-

XXIII.

48. In the 2nd year the chief of the house
 [2 lines illegible.]

COLUMN IV.

1. âhê-šullim the *guenna*
 2. . . . they carried off to Assyria and killed in Assyria
 3. . . . Sidon was captured, its spoil carried off
 4. . . . the chief of the house in Akkad gathered an
 assembly.

XXIV.

5. The 5th year, on the 2nd day of Tisri, the army of
 Assyria Bazza
 6. took. In Tisri the head of the king of Sidon
 7. was cut off and taken to Assyria. In the month Adar
 the head of the king
 8. of Kundu and Sisû was cut off and taken to Assyria.

XXV.

9. In the 6th year the king of Elam went down to Sippara
 and made slaughter. The Sungod from
 10. Ê-bara did not go forth. Assyria went to Egypt, 7
 bands (?).
 11. Humbahaldašu, king of Elam, died in his palace. He
 was not sick.
 12. For 5 years Humbahaldašu had ruled the kingdom of
 Elam.
 13. Urtagu, his brother, sat on the throne in Elam.
 14. In a month not known, Nadin-šum, the *Guenna*,
 15. and Kudurru son of Dakuri, were carried off to Assyria.

XXVI.

16. In the 7th year, on the 5th day of Adar the army of
 Assyria fought in Egypt.
 17. In the month Adar Istar of Agadé and the gods of
 Agadé

18. went from Elam and descended to Agadé on the 10th of Adar.
-

XXVII.

19. In the 8th year of Esarhaddon, the . . . day of Tebet
 20. the land of Rurišâa was taken and its spoil carried off
 21. In the month Kislev its spoil was taken down to Erech.
 22. On the 5th day of Adar the wife of the king died.
-

XXVIII.

23. In the 10th year, the month Nisan, the army of Assyria went to Egypt.
 24. On the 3rd, 16th, and 18th of Tammuz
 25. three times a battle was fought in Egypt.
 26. On the 22nd day, Memphis, [the royal city], was taken,
 27. its king fled, (but) his sons, and the sons of his brother, were taken.
 28. Its spoil was carried off, its people in difficulty (?)
 their (?) goods
-

XXIX.

29. In the 11th year of the king in Assyria, he killed his great men with the sword.
-

XXX.

30. In the 12th year the king of Assyria went to Egypt . .
 31. he fell ill on the road, and in Marcheswan, on the 10th day, died.
 32. Esarhaddon had ruled the kingdom of Assyria for 12 years.
 33. Šamaš-šum-ukîn in Babylon, (and) Aššur-banî-apli in Assyria, his two sons, sat on the throne.
-

XXXI.

34. In the accession-year of Šamaš-šum-ukîn, in Iyyar,
 35. Bel and the gods of Akkad from the city of Assur
 36. went forth, and in Iyyar, to Babylon descended.

37. That year, the city Bišbitum [and] its king were captured.

38. On the 20th day of Tebet Bêl-êdir . . . was taken to Babylon and killed.

39. First tablet, written, explained, and made like its old copy.

40. Tablet of Ana-Bêl-garib, son of Libluṭu.

41. son of Ur-Aku, (written by) the hand of Êa-iddin, son of

42. Ana-Bêl-garib, son of Ur-Aku. Babylon,

43. month . . . day 6th, 22nd year of Darius, king of Babylon,

44. and countries.

(To be continued.)

NOTES OF THE QUARTER.

(June, July, August.)

I. REPORTS OF MEETINGS OF THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY, SESSION 1886-87.

Ninth Meeting, 20th June, 1887.—Sir Thomas Wade, K.C.B., President, in the Chair.

Elections: Miss L. L. W. Perkins, of New York, and Mr. Frederic L. Goldsmid, Non-Resident Members.

Mr. E. S. W. Senathi Rája read portions of an essay on the "Pre-Semitic element in Ancient Tamil Literature." As the paper is published *in extenso* in the present number of the Journal, no *resumé* of its purport need here be given. Professor Terrien de Lacouperie made a few remarks suggested by some of the arguments put forward; and the President, after thanking Mr. Senathi Rája for his lecture, declared the proceedings of the Session closed.

II. PROCEEDINGS OF ASIATIC OR ORIENTAL SOCIETIES.

Asiatic Society of Bengal, 2nd February, 1887.—E. T. Atkinson, Esq., President, in the Chair.

After the delivery of the Annual Address (alluded to last quarter), and the election of Office-bearers and Members of Council, the Annual Meeting was resolved into the Ordinary General Monthly Meeting, when eighteen presentations were announced; the election of one member and one withdrawal notified; and one gentleman was proposed for election.

2nd March, 1887.—E. T. Atkinson, Esq., President, in the Chair.

Seventeen presentations were announced; the election of one member, three withdrawals, and two deaths, notified; and three candidates for election were proposed.

The President reported to the Meeting that the Address to Her

Most Gracious Majesty the Queen Empress on the occasion of the Jubilee, prepared in accordance with the resolution of Council, was presented to the Viceroy by a deputation, together with a copy of the Centenary Review of the Society bound in vellum and enclosed in a kincob (*kim-kwáb*) case.

Lieut.-Col. Waterhouse submitted some photographs, showing the application of the principle of so-called "orthochromatic photography"; also some specimens of heliogravure produced in the Survey of India Offices; and Dr. Rajendralála Mitra made some appreciative remarks on the death of our late esteemed Member, Mr. Arthur Grote. After two contributions in natural history, a short paper was read by Mr. J. Cockburn on "Sítá's Window, or Buddha's Shadow Cave, near Prabhása, with an eye copy of an ancient inscription in the Asoka characters."

6th April, 1887.—Lieut.-Col. J. Waterhouse, Vice-President, in the Chair.

Twenty presentations were announced; the election of three Ordinary Members, one withdrawal, two deaths (one that of an Honorary Member) notified; and the names of five candidates for election were brought forward.

Dr. Rájendralála Mitra, referring in laudatory terms to the new edition of *Manu* with seven Commentaries, edited with notes by the Hon. Rao Sáhib Vishvanáth Nárayán Mandalik, C.S.I., put it to the Council whether this publication had not done away with the necessity of continuing the *Manu-tika-sangraha*, of which two fasciculi, or a ninth part only, had appeared in the *Bibliotheca Indica*.

The Philological Secretary read the report of a find of 38 old coins in Pargana Bánsi, east of the Bastí district; also an extract of a letter from Mr. C. J. Rodgers regarding coins he had lately collected, and one from Mr. A. M. Markham, of Bijnaur, on two terra-cotta Buddhist medals. He further exhibited a new gold Gupta coin forwarded by Mr. Rivett-Carnac, and a MS. in two volumes called "*Visúddhi Márya*," by Buddha Ghosha, lent by the Archbishop of Siam. Dr. Hoernle then submitted the Joint Report of Mr. Grierson and himself on the Congress of Orientalists at Vienna, to which they had been deputed as delegates from the Government of India.

4th May, 1887.—Lieut.-Col. Waterhouse, Vice-President, in the Chair.

Eleven presentations were announced; the election of five Ordinary

Members and two withdrawals notified; and three new candidates were proposed for election.

The Chairman reported that the publication of the Persian work *Ma'âşiru'l Umará'*¹ in the Bibliotheca Indica had been sanctioned, edited by Maulaví Abdu'r Rahim.

The Philological Secretary exhibited 20 old copper coins, Kashmíri, Indo-Scythian, and Indo-Bactrian, received from Babu Jogesh C. Dutt; also some ancient copper coins from Népal, forwarded by Mr. V. Smith, C.S., which Dr. Hoernle pronounced to be of great interest and "of a type hitherto unknown."

A paper by the Rev. J. H. Knowles was read on Kashmíri Riddles; one by the Rev. James Tracy on Pandyan Coins; and one by Babu Sarat Chandra Dás, C.I.E., on the Coinage and Currency of Siam. Col. Biddulph communicated "Rock-Cut Figures and Inscriptions in the Chittral Valley (Kashmír), and at Gangani, on the Upper Indus." "Notes on the City of Herat," were contributed by Capt. C. E. Yate, of the Afghan Boundary Commission.

Société Asiatique, Paris, 6 April, 1887.—M. Barbier de Meynard, Vice-President, in the Chair. After the election of a new Member, M. Senart presented a fresh impression of the Bhabra Inscriptions, and explained in detail such passages as had become clearer in its light. M. Clément Huart made some remarks upon three Bâbi works which would shortly be reported in the Journal. M. Halévy called attention to the following points in Assyrian texts: first, a system of enumeration like that in the *Mané thecel pharès* of Daniel; second, the orthography *Sa-mu-nu-ya-tu-nu* for the Phœnician Eshmounyaton.

13th May, 1887.—M. Rénan, President, in the Chair.—After the election of four Members and ordinary business, M. Barbier de Meynard, in presenting from the author, M. René Basset, *Le Manuel de Langue Kabyle*, expressed his opinion that this work would not only be useful for the study of Berber dialects, but also in generally forwarding the political and commercial interests of the French-African colony.

M. Rubens Duval gave some further information on M. Loevy's new study of the *Stèle de Mesha*; and M. Rochemontaix, alluding to M. Quatremère's identification of *Phanidjoit* with *Ez-Zeitoun*, and *Pouschin* with *Bousch* (accepted by M. Amélineau), showed

¹ See Dr. Rieu's interesting notice of this book and its author, Shah nawáz Khan, pp. 340-41, Catal. of Persian MSS. in the British Museum, vol. i.

cause for believing the first of these Coptic names to be found in *Ez-Zeidyā*, and the second in *Ausim*.

American Oriental Society, May 11th, 1887.—The Rev. Dr. Peabody, of Cambridge, Vice-President, in the Chair.

After the election of a Corresponding Member and eight Corporate Members, and transaction of ordinary and miscellaneous business, the Society proceeded to hear communications. The following is a list of the papers read, or accepted for reading:—

1. The rising sun on Babylonian seals; by the Rev. Dr. W. Hayes Ward.

2. On the Syriac text of the book of the Extremity of the Romans; by Professor Isaac H. Hall.

3. On the Transliteration of Sanskrit proper names into Tamil; by the Rev. John S. Chandler.

4. On Naville's Book of the Dead; by the Rev. Mr. C. Winslow.

5. On the relationship of the Kachari and Garo Languages of Assam; by Prof. John Avery.

6. Notice of Delitzsch's *Assyrisches Wörterbuch, Erste Lieferung*; by Professor David G. Lyon.

7. The discovery of the Second Wall, and its bearing on the Site of Calvary; by the Rev. Selah Merrill.

8. On Ikonomatic Writing in Assyrian; by Professor Morris Jastrow, jun.

9. The Lokman legend; by Professor C. H. Toy.

10. A Syriac Bahira Legend; by Dr. Richard J. H. Gottheil.

11. On a Syriac manuscript of the New Testament belonging to the Rev. Mr. Neesan; by the same.

12. On the MS. of a Syriac Lexicographical Treatise belonging to the Union Theological Seminary of New York; by the same.

13. On Avestan Similes: II. Similes from the Animal World; by Dr. A. V. Williams Jackson.

14. The Afrigān Rapithwin of the Avesta, translated with comments; by the same.

15. On the *Vyūha*, or Battle Order of the Mahābhārata; by Professor Edw. W. Hopkins.

16. On Fire Arms in Ancient India; by the same.

17. On Professor Bühler's "Manu"; by the same.

Of these, no less than four are evidences of Syriac, and three of Assyrian and Babylonian scholarship.

III. CORRESPONDENCE.

1. *The Persian for Rouble.*LONDON, *August 10th*, 1887.

SIR,

With reference to the Persian ISKENĀN (paper-rouble), quoted in the issue of the Journal for April, I would suggest that this word seems to be a somewhat irregular, or rather, vulgar plural form of اسکناس *askenas* (paper-money), which, according to Kasimirski, comes from the Russian word ассигнація *assignatsya* (French assignat).

Yours truly,

T. G. DE GUIRAUDON, CAPT.

*The Secretary of the Royal Asiatic Society.*2. *The Bibliography of Africa.*LONDON, *August 10th*, 1887.

SIR,

Will you allow me to add some information to the Bibliography of Africa for the current year?

Lieut. G. Binger, of the French Marines, has published at Paris, of course in the French language, a *Sketch on the Bambara language*, as spoken in the Kaarta and the Beledougou, West Sudan: this language belongs to the Mandingo family, and it is the first serious attempt to reduce it to writing. Lieut. Binger's little work contains a short Grammar, many usual phrases, and a Vocabulary of about 2000 words, and is accompanied by an interesting map: this Handbook is a very valuable contribution towards our knowledge of African languages, and it will prove quite useful.

Lieut. Binger is now engaged in travelling from Bakel down to the Guinea coast, and he will, no doubt, bring back some interesting notices on the great Mandingo family.

I am informed that the Roman Catholic Missionaries of the Senegambia have collected and will publish shortly an extensive Dictionary of the *Susu* language, also belonging to the Mandingo family, and for which we had only an old Vocabulary by Brunton (1802), with Grammar, and a little Grammar by Rev. J. H. Duport.

Yours truly,

T. G. DE GUIRAUDON, CAPT.

The Secretary of the Royal Asiatic Society.

IV. OBITUARY NOTICES.

The *Rev. George Shirt*,¹ Senior Missionary of the Church Missionary Society in Sindh, was born at Cawthorne, Yorkshire, in 1843. Educated at the C.M.S. College, London, and the University of Cambridge, he took his B.A. degree at the latter, with honours (Oriental Tripos) in 1864. He left England for India in 1866, and was shipwrecked on his way out; but after spending four days and nights in an open boat, he and his companions in peril were picked up by a passing vessel, and landed safely in Bombay. Mr. Shirt was appointed to Hyderabad, the old capital of Sindh, and having rapidly acquired the language of the country, he laboured on till 1873, when he left on furlough to England. His stay at home was spent at Cambridge, where he was engaged chiefly in the study of Oriental languages. He returned to Sindh in 1875, and was stationed at Karachi till 1877. During these two years he compiled, at the request of the Government of India, his *Sindhi Dictionary*. In October, 1881, being in a bad state of health, he went to Quetta for three months, during which short period, besides carrying on his studies in Arabic, he acquired a considerable knowledge of Brahui. In August, 1882, he came to England on furlough, and again settled at Cambridge, where, besides taking an active part in parish work, he continued his Oriental studies in the University. During this period he competed for the "Brotherton Sanskrit Prize," and was adjudged equal with another, the prize being divided. In January, 1885, he returned to India through Persia, by means of which tour he added to an already scholarly acquaintance with Classic Persian a powerful knowledge of the Colloquial.

Arriving in Sindh, he made Sukkur his head-quarters, and once again took up the great work of his life, in carrying on his Translation of the Bible into Sindhi. He was spared, not only to translate, but also to thoroughly revise and test, the greater portion of the Holy Scriptures. A number of smaller books, tracts, and hymns were given by him at various times, during his twenty years' work, to the Sindhi Church. In April, 1886, he was sent, in company with Dr. S. W. Sutton, to open the new C. M. S. Mission at Quetta. He entered upon this fresh sphere of work with all his accustomed energy, working at the same time hard at Brahui. At

¹ Memoir kindly contributed by the Rev. J. Bambridge.

the beginning of June he was taken ill, and on the 16th he died, quite suddenly, and without pain. As a Christian Missionary and Pastor he was equalled by few, whilst by a diligent use of his great linguistic talents, he surpassed many in the amount of literary work he was enabled to accomplish. By Europeans and natives, Christians and Non-Christians, throughout the Province of Sindh, he was beloved and respected. Mr. Shirt was married in 1868, and leaves a widow and eight children.

In 1878 his name first appears among the Members of the Royal Asiatic Society. He was, moreover, a Fellow of the University of Bombay.

The *Hon. Sir Ashley Eden*, K.C.S.I. and C.I.E.,¹ whose death took place in London on the 9th July, was a son of the Bishop of Bath and Wells, and educated at Winchester and Haileybury. Of his life at the latter seminary nothing is worthy of remark save his comparative indifference to the results of the periodical examinations, which are popularly supposed to foreshadow the career of after-years. Passing in some way or another through these barriers of successful egress, he passed out in 1852, and joining the Bengal Civil Service, soon began to show of what stuff he was made, with the result, that in 1861, although but of nine years' standing, he was selected as Special Envoy to Sikkim. He did his work well on this occasion, and was rewarded with the Secretaryship of the Bengal Government, a post which he held for the long period of nine years, leaving his duties for a while to take charge of the Special Mission to Bhutan in 1864. In 1871 Mr. Eden became Chief Commissioner of British Burma, and in 1882 succeeded to the Lieutenant-Governorship of Bengal. After the regulated five years—having become in the meanwhile *Hon. Sir Ashley Eden*, K.C.S.I.—he retired from the Service, and joined the Council of the Secretary of State for India. Possessed of great determination of character, and wide experience of Bengal customs and manners, his loss in this country is well-nigh irreparable. Many who disagreed with his views will avow that he was a most powerful opponent and a most vigorous foe. He became a member of the Royal Asiatic Society in 1882, and at the period of his decease was on the Executive Committee of the Imperial Institute.

The death of *Sir Barrow Helbert Ellis*, K.C.S.I.,² removes from

¹ By A. N. Wollaston, Esq., C.I.E., M.R.A.S.

² By Sir George Birdwood, M.D., K.C.I.E., C.S.I., M.R.A.S.

the world a distinguished member of the Anglo-Indian community of London, and one of the most active Members of this Society, which he joined in 1876, and served on its Council from 1878 to the period of his decease, having been for three years a Vice-President. He was educated at University College School, and University College, London, and matriculated, in 1839, at the University of London, taking a scholarship in classics. He subsequently entered Haileybury College, from which he was appointed to the Bombay Civil Service on the 26th of July, 1843, arriving in India on the 11th December in the same year. He served from 1844 as Third Assistant-Collector, and from 1847 as Second Assistant at Ratnagiri; from 1848 as Commissioner for investigating certain claims against the Nizam's Government; and from 1851 to 1855 as Assistant Commissioner, and from 1855 to 1857 in charge of the office of Commissioner, in Sind. This was during Sir Bartle Frere's absence in England, just before the outbreak of the Mutiny. From 1857 to 1859 he was at different times in charge of the office of Revenue Commissioner for the Southern Division of the Bombay Presidency, Special Commissioner for Jaghirs in Sind, and afterwards Acting Secretary to the Government of Bombay in the Revenue, Finance and General Departments, Government Director of the Bank of Bombay, and a Member of the Mint Committee; and, finally, for a short time, Collector and Magistrate of Broach. In April, 1860, he was confirmed as Secretary to Government, and in 1862 was made an additional Member of the Bombay Legislative Council, and Revenue Commissioner for the Northern Division of the Bombay Presidency; and in 1865 an ordinary Member of the Bombay Council. On the 2nd of May, 1870, he was selected as a Member of the Governor-General's Council; and on retiring from the Bombay Civil Service, on the 27th of April, 1875, he was appointed a Member of the Council of the Secretary of State for ten years from July, 1875. Within two years of his final retirement from the public service he died, on the 20th of June last, at Aix-les-Bains. His remains were brought home, and buried in the Jewish Cemetery at Willesden.

Sir Barrow Ellis was one of the ablest Revenue Officers of the Bombay Presidency, ever prolific of ability in this important department of the Indian administration, the brilliant traditions of which have been so honourably sustained in the present generation by such men as Sir B. Ellis, Mr. Pedder, C.S.I., and Mr. Peile, C.S.I.

Sir Barrow Ellis was remarkable also for the perfect confidence he

inspired in himself, and the Government he represented, among the various native communities of Western India. He was accessible to natives of all ranks and grades, who ever met with a patient and attentive hearing from him, and, where it was possible, the fullest and most cordial support. He thus endeared himself widely among them. His genuine sympathy with them is evinced by his will, in which he has left a sum of £500 to the Northbrook Indian Society, for the benefit of the Club, at No. 3, Whitehall Gardens, and the further sum of £2500 to be placed in trust for the benefit of the poor of Ratnagiri, his first official charge as an Assistant-Collector in the Bombay Presidency. Also while in Bombay on his way to England in 1875 he presented the local University with the sum of Rs. 1500 for an annual prize of books to the student who, on matriculation, passed the best examination in an Oriental language. Five years before, when leaving Western India to take up his appointment as Member of the Viceregal Council at Calcutta, public subscriptions to the amount of Rs. 7206 were invested on behalf of the Bombay University for awarding a scholarship in the name of Sir Barrow Ellis, to the student who passed the best examination in the English Language and Literature at the annual B.A. examination of the University.

In private life Sir Barrow Ellis was distinguished for his unbounded hospitality. He kept open house for all comers in India, and in this country his house in Cromwell Road was the common centre of Anglo-Indian officials from the Bombay Presidency, and of natives from every part of India. It is a remarkable fact that all the ablest Revenue Officers in India have been notable for their hospitality, and quick sympathy with the people of India; and no doubt their natural virtue in these respects, through keeping them in close touch with native feeling and opinion, has powerfully contributed to their success as administrators.

In the Asiatic Society, as in all his other offices, Sir Barrow Ellis was a thoroughly practical and useful adviser. Without any pretence to profound Oriental scholarship, he had a very fair knowledge of more than one Eastern tongue, and was a prominent promoter of education in Sind under the ever memorable government of that Province by the late Sir Bartle Frere.

The death, on the 7th August, at Malta, of *Sir Joseph Ritchie Lyon Dickson*, M.D., has deprived the Society of a valued member of more than twenty years' standing. For nearly forty years Physician to H.M. Legation in Persia—i.e. since 11th September,

1847—Dr. Dickson was well known to European residents and natives of all grades in the Shah's capital, not only for his medical skill and the readiness and kindliness with which this was rendered available to his fellows, but for his intimate acquaintance with the ways and customs, and sympathy with the character of the people among whom he lived. Many visitors to Teheran during the present generation will bear testimony to the deceased officer's genial qualities, and usefulness in imparting those lessons of local experience which are invaluable to travellers and diplomatists. His place of residence was always to be distinguished by groups of patient candidates for treatment and advice seated outside the door; and the fluency with which he spoke Persian, as also his intuitive grasp of its idiom, were remarkable. Sir Joseph Dickson accompanied the Shah on his visit to England in 1873, and on the 30th June of that year received the honour of Knighthood.

V. EXCERPTA ORIENTALIA.

The first number of part i. vol. lvi. of the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal* contains a brief account of Tibet from "Dsam Ling Gyeshe," the well-known geographical work of Lama Tsan-po Nomian Khan of Amdo, translated by Sarat Chandra Dás, C.I.E., and Sítá's Window, or Buddha's Shadow Cave, by S. J. Cockburn, Esq., M.A.S. Bengal. Mr. Sarat Chandra Dás is a most painstaking and intelligent Government servant, honourable mention of whose name has already been made in these Notes. His present paper is a reprint from an official report, but valuable in more than an official sense. The second paper, though very brief, is replete with epigraphic interest. The writer would identify the cave to which he refers with the "lofty stone cavern of a venomous dragon, in which Buddha was supposed to have left his shadow, and the spot visited by Hwen Thsang in the seventh century." Mr. Cockburn was enabled to copy the inscription above the door by using an astronomical telescope. He had first discovered it through his own glass, for it is, to all intents and purposes, invisible to the naked eye.

An extra number of the *Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society* is given up to Prof. Peterson's third Report on the Search for Sanskrit MSS. in the Bombay Circle during 1884-86. To this is added an Index of Books for the three Reports, and three valuable Appendices, the first of which is an illustrative and elaborately-prepared catalogue of the Palm-leaf MSS. in the Temple at Santinath, Cambay; the second supplies extracts from books preserved in libraries at Ahmadabad, Boondi, Kotah, Indore and Cambay; and the third relates to the Manuscripts acquired for Government.

Part I. of the *Transactions of the Asiatic Society of Japan* contains the following papers: 1. Japanese, by E. H. Parker; 2. The Yellow Languages, by the same; 3. On the Quasi-characters called Ya-jirushi, by B. H. Chamberlain; 4. The Gakashikaiin, by W. Dening; 5. The Manchus, by E. H. Parker; 6. The Manchu Relations with Corea, by the same; 7. Connection of Japanese with the adjacent continental languages, by Dr. Edkins; 8. On Maritime Enterprise in Japan, by H. A. C. Bonar; and 9. An Aino Bear Hunt, by B. H. Chamberlain. It will be seen that out of nine articles, no less than four are from the pen of Mr. Parker. The first two of these contributions are linguistic, while the other two are concise historical notes. Of Mr. Chamberlain's two papers the main defect is brevity. Not inferior in interest to any of the articles is Mr. Dening's account of the Society named in his title, founded at the suggestion of the Vice-Minister of Education in Japan. Mr. Bonar imparts to his readers much valuable information, and his pages are beautifully illustrated. Altogether, the June number of the Journal is excellent.

In the *Journal Asiatique*, huitième série, tome ix. No. 3 (Avril-Mai-Juin, 1887), are the following papers:—1. Le Sûtra d'Upâli (Upâli Suttam), by M. L. Feer. This creditable outcome of studies in Buddhism (*Études Bouddhiques*), is a translation from the Pâli text, with extracts from the Commentary, and an instructive prefatory Note. 2. Bibliographie Ottomane: a notice of Turkish, Arabic and Persian Books printed in Constantinople, by M. Cl. Huart. 3. Le premier conflit entre Pharisiens et Saducéens, by M. Montet: a singular paper, discussing three authorities, Josephus, the Babylonian Talmud, and Abu'l Fath, the Samaritan chronicler of the fourteenth century. 4. Le texte originaire du Yih-king, sa nature et son interprétation, by M. C. de Harlez. 5. Note sur la grande inscription Néo-punique, et sur une autre inscription d'Altibaros. 6. Notes d'épigraphie et d'histoire Arabe, by M. Clermont-Ganneau. The *Nouvelles et Mélanges* contains M. Rubens Duval's criticism of the method of Dr. Payne Smith's *Thesaurus Syriacus*, but in no way disparaging its high merit. He says: "La richesse des renseignements qu'il renferme, l'abondance des citations toujours exactes, empruntées aux meilleurs autorités, les dissertations du savant Orientaliste, toujours en quête des nuances les plus délicates des mots, font de l'ouvrage un guide indispensable pour quiconque veut acquérir une connaissance approfondie de la langue Syriaque ou éclaircir des locutions difficiles des autres langues Sémitiques." There is also a second note by M. Bergaigne on his *Recherches sur l'histoire de la Samhitâ du Rig-veda*; M. Mourier's memoir of Chota Rousthaveli, a Georgian poet of the twelfth century; a paper by M. Rodet, on a subject too little studied, and at one time utterly neglected in Indian Civil Service examinations—the expression of numbers in writing among natives of India; and short reviews of M. Van den Berg's *Hadhramout* and a French translation of the late Count de Noër's essay on Akbar.

German Oriental Society, vol. xli. part i. contains: "II. Die Separat-Edicte," being a continuation of G. Bühler's interpretation of the Asoka Inscriptions; Goldziher's "Materialien zur Kenntniss der Almohaden bewegung in Nord-Afrika"; Himly's "Die Denkmäler der Kantoner Moschee"; and Böhlingk's "Noch ein Wort zur Maurja-Frage in Mahābhāshya." There is also a review, signed O. Böhlingk, of Dr. Speijer's Sanskrit Syntax, mentioned in our April Notes.

In the recently-published Part I. Vol. IX. *Transactions of the Society of Biblical Archaeology*, the Memoir of Dr. Birch, Notes on Antiquities from Bubastis, Professor Sayce's "Karian Language and Inscriptions," and M. Lefébure's paper on "Le Cham et l'Adam Egyptien," have all a certain interest for the Royal Asiatic Society. The "Martyrdom of Isaac of Tiphre" affords a new instance of the increased activity of Coptic scholars in bringing to light valuable records hitherto little known in this country. M. Amélineau, though dwelling chiefly on a later period of Egyptian history, may be looked upon as a fellow-labourer in the same field.

Archæology.—In the *Madras Mail* of June 29 Surgeon-General Bidie gives a very interesting account of his visit, in company of Mr. Thorowgood, to the prehistoric graves near Pallāvaram. The following are extracts:—

"Such burial-places are known to the natives in some districts as *Pandu-kuris* or *Pandu-kulis*, and in other districts as *Pandavagudlu*, *Pundaval-kovil*, etc. . . . In some instances, they are simply kistvaens; in others—and more commonly—dolmens or cairns as on the Nilgiris, and lastly, we have the coffin-like vessels, such as those under notice, made of coarse pottery. The dolmens also differ in type, being in some cases roomy stone-built chambers with a cap-stone, the whole being usually buried in the earth; while in other localities they stand free, the dolmen being surrounded with several circles of stone slabs with rounded tops, like the head stones in a modern graveyard. Excellent specimens of the latter type exist at Tralabanda, Bapanatham, near Palmaner, and in the Kōlar district, but this style is not common. The dolmens vary in size, some of those buried in tumuli having a floor area of $8\frac{1}{2} \times 5\frac{1}{2}$ feet, and being as much as $6\frac{1}{2}$ feet in depth. In some cases a rectangular stone slab like a couch or bed, and supported at the corners by bits of stone, like legs, has been found resting on the floor of the dolmen. In fact, the construction of these sepulchral chambers shows some resemblance to the dwellings of the living, and we shall find that the similarity was still further maintained by the deposit along with the dead body of household utensils, arms, ornaments and tools, such as were used by the person when alive. It seems also pretty clear that the tumulus with its dolmen in the interior or outside on the crown of the elevation, and its enclosing concentric circles of stones, was the prototype of the Buddhist tope or dagoba, with its rails, mound and relic casket. At present there is no people in Southern India who practise

dolmen burial, and the time at which these monuments were constructed is so remote that no existing race has any reminiscences of their origin, and all repudiate them. The Pallāvaram sarcophagi, which have been so well described by Mr. Thorowgood, are made of burnt clay, and in one fragment of a broken one which I saw, the hard outer layer of the straw which had been mixed with the clay is still extant. The oblong vessels hitherto seen vary in length from upwards of six feet down to a little over two feet, and stand on strong legs which have somewhat the appearance of a pig's snout, nose downwards. The proper sarcophagi have as many as twelve legs, and the smaller six, and each leg is hollow, from seven to eight inches high, and pierced about midway with two round holes, which were probably made to facilitate the escape of gases in firing the clay. Looking at the vessel sideways, it has at a little distance some resemblance to a big caterpillar. . . . Mr. Thorowgood also mentions the occurrence of large globular sepulchral urns. . . . The popular belief regarding these . . . is, according to Bishop Caldwell, that in ancient days men lived to a great age, and shrank to the size of a cat. They were then put in lamp-niches in the walls to keep them out of harm, and when at last the relatives got tired of the aged pigmies, they put them in these large jars and left them to die. This is contradicted by the sizes of the bones found in the urns, which are generally those of ordinary-sized individuals, and is simply one of those myths which are sure to fasten on any object or subject the explanation of which is lost in the mists of antiquity. Besides the large pyriform jars, there are also occasionally found big vessels of a fusiform shape, and one of those exhumed at Pallāvaram has been sent to the Museum by Mr. Thorowgood. The articles which are lodged in dolmens and sarcophagi along with human bones, or in the places which once contained the latter, form a very curious paraphernalia, and plainly point to some glimmering idea of a future life, analogous to the present, having been entertained by the dolmen-builders. . . . South Indian dolmens and prehistoric graves differ in one important respect from those found elsewhere, viz. in the fact that they never contain any implements belonging to the Stone age. This, however, is of no value as a chronological fact, as some Indian tribes were making stone hatchets in modern times; and all that it shows, therefore, is that stone implements and weapons were not in common use when the graves were constructed. In a dolmen in the Coimbatore District some small human figures in copper were found. They are now lodged in the Museum, and are believed to be of Jain origin. A number of bronze articles also have been found in the curious Nilgiri cairns. . . . Sir Walter Elliot held the opinion, and so do others, that the dolmens were erected by the Kurumbars, and this view receives support from the fact that at the present time the shepherds of this race in North Arcot erect dolmens upon a small scale when a Goudu or head of a sept dies. On the other hand, it seems strange that any great difference should be found in the plan

of such monuments if they were the work of one race. It appears to me that not one but many races living at different times were the constructors of the *dolmens*. In fact, that these structures indicate a certain stage in the mental history of a people, and are due to a psychological principle which is the constant outcome of intellectual development. . . . The differences which we see in them would probably be due to the nature of the constructive materials available, and to the variation in customs and beliefs."

In the *Academy* of June 4, Mr. Burgess explains how Dr. Führer discovered, and obtained his copy of the inscription, in Gupta characters, over the cave of Rāja Gopāla (Banda district). He was not at the time aware that it had been previously brought to notice.

A Supplement to the Fatehpur Gazetteer, by Mr. F. S. Growse, published at Allahabad in 1887, purposes to correct certain inaccuracies in the topographical half of the larger work, and to supply the blank in architectural and archæological information occasioned by the incompetence to deal with such matters of the native subordinates engaged on the original compilation. The statement in the preface that "every paragraph is the result of personal observation" will carry double weight from the writer's well-known zeal and ability. "It will now be seen," he says, "that the district, instead of being exceptionally barren in objects of historical interest, is richer than many—far more so than Bulandshahr, for example, in monuments of the past."

The June and July numbers of the *Indian Antiquary* continue Mr. Patlibhai B. H. Wadia's "Folk-lore in Western India," and Pandit S. M. Natesa's "Folk-lore in Southern India"—both pleasant reading and instructive to those who seek more from them than amusement; Professor Kielhorn contributes a note on the Mahābhāshya, and a paper on "Three Chandra Copper Plate Grants"; the Rev. J. Hinton Knowles three more Kashmiri stories; the Rev. S. Beal "Some Remarks on the Suhillekha, or Friendly Communications of Nagarjuna-Bodhisatva to King Shatopohanna"; Professor R. G. Bhandarkar "A Supplementary Note on the Maurya Passage in the Mahābhāshya"; and Mr. Fleet "No. 170 of Sankrit and Old-Kanarese Inscriptions," as well as "The Date of the Poet Rajasekhara." The Miscellanea and Book Notices of both the *Antiquary* and *Notes and Queries*, would, it is believed, carry more weight if *invariably* signed or initialled by the several writers; or the source specified where an extract is taken from another periodical. Part cxcix. for August, besides a continuation of the Pandit's Folk-lore in Southern India, Mr. Fleet's Sanskrit and Kanarese Inscriptions, and Professor Kielhorn's Notes on the Mahābhāshya, has a practical and praiseworthy though very short paper, on the "Somāli as a Written Language." Its writer, Capt. King, of the Bombay Staff Corps, alluding to Dr. Cust's classification of this tongue under the Ethiopic sub-group of the Hamitic family, says:—"This may be the original stock on which the language mainly is founded; but the existence of a pre-Hamitic

element in it is not improbable. Various influxes from Hadhramaut and Yemen have added a Semitic element which now seems to predominate, and this element is observable, not alone in individual words, but also in the construction." A bright note by Mr. Grierson forms the month's "Miscellanea."

In the *Quarterly Statement of the Palestine Exploration Fund* for July the chief contributors are Capt. Conder, MM. Schick and Schumacher, and Drs. Chaplin and Hutchinson. From the "Notes and News" it appears that Herr Schumacher will arrange with the Turkish authorities for the removal of the sarcophagi recently found near Sidon; and that the same gentleman's English-translated "Jaulan" and Ajlûn Memoirs will be published by the Society. Whatever opposition Capt. Conder may meet with in the pending settlement of the great Hittite question, he will deserve the thanks of philologists and other learned bodies for a bold enunciation of views which none but a privileged few are competent to accept or reject, as well as for throwing broadcast original linguistic problems to interest the many. His notion that Ed Dejjâl, or more strictly "Al Masihu'd-Dajjâl," may originate in "the Masdean ideas of the false prophet," because "nearly the whole of the Moslem eschatology is founded on Persian ideas," needs, however, warranted as a general observation, to be confronted with the many interpretations given by learned Muhammadans of the Anti-Christ they have been taught to expect. According to the compiler of the *Qâmus*, Mr. Hughes reminds us in his Dictionary of Islâm, "there have been at least fifty reasons assigned for his (the Dajjâl) being called *al Masih*."

Hebrew and Semitic Languages.—In a note headed "Semitismi nel Libro dei Re di Firdusi," at page 74 of the *Giornale della Società Asiatica Italiana*, M. Pizzi finds in the Shah Namch certain Aramaic, Judæo-Pahlavi, and Arabic words, forms or expressions of which he gives instances: Masihâ, Salipâ (*salibô*), Skûbâ and Skûpâ (*episkûpô*). These, he is disposed to believe, the author obtained from a Pahlavi source, rather than that they were words in common use by the people among whom he lived. 2. Badkunisht he looks upon as exemplifying, in the final *sht* of Kunisht, a Judæo-Persianism, consequently a Semiticism. 3. Khudâvand, when used in the sense of Sahib, "possessor," before the thing possessed, he regards as an Arabicism; for instance, Khudâvand-i-nâm, Khudâvand-i-shamshir, etc., etc. Nishast (inf. Nishastan), combined with Gâh, a place, is compared with the Arabic Majlis or Maglis, a place of sitting. Râmish and Râmishgar, when meaning music and musicians, are likened to the Tarab and Muṭrib of the Arabs. Dâr, used as a capital, is assimilated to the Arabic Bâb.

The *Athenæum* of July 23 recommends to beginners the *Hebrew Grammar* by the Rev. W. H. Löwe, which has just appeared in Messrs. Hodder and Stoughton's series entitled "The Theological Educator." It remarks that "Mr. Löwe has shown his immense learning in Biblical Hebrew by his commentary on the Psalms and

on Zechariah, and in Rabbinical Hebrew by his edition from MSS. of the so-called Mishnah of the Talmud of Jerusalem, and of a fragment of the Babylonian Talmud of Pesahim."

General Houtum-Schindler, in the *Academy* of June 18, reverts to the translation of the word "Kipôd," propounded by the Rev. J. Davies in the same journal last December (see page 325 of our Quarterly Notes). He considers the Arabic version *hubdra*, "bastard," to be the right one—utterly disarding the fanciful connection of this word with the Persian *âhû-barah* "a fawn."

Die Semitische Sprachen. Eine Skizze, von Th. Nöldeke.—In our January "Notes," allusion was made to Professor Nöldeke's valuable contribution to vol. xxi. of the *Encyclopædia Britannica*. The German original of this article, revised and enlarged, has been reprinted at Leipzig, and forms the subject of an elaborate notice by M. J. Halevy in the *Revue Critique* of the 8th August. In one respect M. Nöldeke and his reviewer differ. The former considers the Nabateans to be Arabs who used the Aramean as a literary language; while the latter regards them as Arameans who had borrowed certain Arabic words from the dialects of their Arab neighbours.

Dr. M. Rabinowicz has announced the approaching publication of a new edition of his French translation of the Babylonian Talmud, or that section regarding the civil and criminal law of the Jews, the position of the women, medicine and other sciences, beliefs, manners and customs, and relations with the heathen. The work will be published in six volumes of about 500-600 pages octavo each, printed on fine paper. Six hundred copies, handsomely bound, will be issued to subscribers at one guinea a volume. It is expected that they will be ready at intervals of about six months. Messrs. H. Grevel and Co., 33, King Street, W.C., are the London agents.

In the *Academy*, 11th June, Professor Neubauer, under the head "Arabia in the Land of Goshen," throws out the following suggestions: "Can it be that the word Arabia represents the Hebrew *Arba* in the old name of Hebron, *Kirjath Arba*? . . . I have always been tempted to consider the *Ṁ* in such proper names as Balak, Amalek, and Anak as a suffix. Balak would thus be 'one who belongs to Baal'; Amalek, a tribe worshipping Amal=Amel; and perhaps also *Dameshek* (Damascus), a town consecrated to a deity called Demesh, or something like it."

Arabic.—The somewhat exceptional character of *Howell's Grammar* and *Prof. Sachau's Albirûni* render it necessary to defer notices of both works until January. In the meantime, attention is drawn to the estimate of the former expressed in the *Saturday Review* of March 26, and to the high value set upon the latter by our distinguished Honorary Member, Senator M. Amári of Pisa.

A new fasciculus (viii. 2) of Lane's Arabic Lexicon, edited by Mr. Stanley Lane Poole, has appeared, reaching page 2912. Two more fasciculi (*Athen.* 16 July) complete the alphabet. Hasty criticism

of such a work were mere presumption, unless confined to a particular word or entry. But it is mere justice to the indefatigable editor to acknowledge the self-evident ability he has displayed in the production of this latest instalment of the Arabic-English Dictionary.

At the sitting of the *Société Asiatique* in Paris on the 13th May, a letter was read from the Archbishop of Damascus, offering a catalogue of the Arabic MSS. in the library of that city; and an announcement was made from the Secretary of the *Académie du Var* that a complete translation of the Arabian Nights would be shortly published.

Mr. James Richard Jewett, "who has been teaching in Arabic in a little native school at Zahlek, Mount Lebanon," has informed the Oriental American Society "that he has a large collection of Proverbs and other texts in the common Arabic dialect of Syria, with translation, notes and vocabulary, all well-advanced towards readiness for publication." Some Arabic proverbs, it is observed, were submitted by this gentleman to the above-named Society at their meeting in October last.

Assyriology.—By his analysis of the first fascicle of *Delitzsch's Assyrisches Wörterbuch*, in the Proceedings of the American Oriental Society, Professor David Lyon has earned the thanks of students. To those who have been unable to subscribe to the work, it will give an admirable account of its teaching; while those who have become privileged to receive its several instalments will have their attention drawn to particular points which the Professor's high reputation stamps as worthy of comment.

M. Carl Bezold's *Journal of Assyriology* for April contains M. Barth's "Das Nominal-Präfix *na* im Assyrischen"; a contribution by M. Winckler on some recently published Assyrian texts, and the Babylonian Chronicle (of which the long since prepared edition by Mr. Pinches appears in the present number of our own Journal); M. Tiele's remarks on *E-sagita* in Babel and *E-zida* in Borsippa; a continuation of M. Jensen's "Hymnen auf des Wiedererscheinen der drei grossen Lichtgötter"; together with the Sprechsaal, Recensionen and Bibliographie.

Nos. 8 and 9 of the *Babylonian and Oriental Record* contain articles of much interest, though for the most part fragmentary. In both M. Amiaud discusses "the various names of Sumer and Akkad in the Cuneiform texts," and Mr. Pinches affords "Glimpses of Babylonian and Assyrian Life." The remaining articles are Babylonia and China, by Professor Dr. T. de Lacouperie; Some Babylonian Cylinders, by Mr. W. H. Ward, of New York; A Statement of Accounts in Nabopolassar's time, by Dr. V. Revillout; a critical notice of Dr. F. Delitzsch's Assyrian Wörterbuch; an outline of Professor Sayce's third and fourth Hibbert Lectures; the Borsippa Inscriptions of Nebuchadnezzar, by Mr. S. A. Smith; No. 2 of Dr. Casartelli's Pehlevi Notes; Remarks on some Enphratean Astronomical Names in the Lexicon of Hésychios, by Mr. Robt.

Brown, jun.; and Notes, News and Queries on miscellaneous subjects.

Independently of its Journal, the Italian Asiatic Society has issued No. 1 of its separate publications, entitled *Crestomazia Assira con Paradigmi Grammaticali*. The author, Dr. Bruto Teloni, claims to be but a compiler, and his work is meant for beginners in Assyriology. It contains a syllabary, a sketch grammar, a few texts, with interlineary transliteration and commentary, and a glossary, in which the words are placed under the Hebrew roots. Some critics will doubtless object that the Doctor follows too closely the German school, and ignores much that has been written in other countries, consequently falling into errors which a wider study might have avoided.

Hittite.—In the *Times* of August 22 is described a quadrangular hæmatite seal discovered not long ago near Tarsus by Mr. Greville Chester, and, owing to certain of its characteristics, regarded as Hittite. The presence of equilateral triangles on this, as on the circular seal previously found at Yuzgat (and now in the British Museum), is interpreted to represent sacred or mystical objects. If such notion be correct, the two together are brought into apparent connexion with Indian symbolism.

Aryan Languages.—M. Sol. Rainach, in a long and instructive criticism of M. Penka's *Die Herkunft der Aryer* (Wien, Prochaska), speaking of the lately disputed Asiatic origin of the Aryans, writes: "Le premier qui ait envisagé le problème sous toutes ses faces, en appelant à son aide les témoignages de la linguistique, de l'anthropologie, de la paléontologie, et de l'histoire, pour conclure à l'origine Européenne des Aryens, est M. Penka." This assertion is of itself a powerful advertisement. But the whole question has just been reviewed by Prof. Sayce in the Anthropological Section of the British Association at Manchester.

Sanskrit.—In the *Revue Critique* of June 6 is a notice of Dr. Pischel's edition of Rudrata's *Çrngâratilaka* and Ruyyaka's *Sahridayatila*. The first of these works, according to M. Sylvain Lévi, has enabled its author to display that passion for subtle analysis and minute classification which exemplifies at once the genius and mania characteristic of the Hindu mind. The second work is chiefly commended as illustrative of literary composition of a peculiar kind. With reference to the whole performance, it is considered that, whatever value may be attached to the learned editor's own conclusions, his publication and exposition of the native text will henceforth become indispensable to students.

Professor Max Müller enriches the columns of the *Academy* of July 30th with a pleasant review of Professor Peterson's edition of the popular *Hitopadesa*, noting his discovery of the verse containing the author's name, "suppressed," for some reason or other, by Schlegel and Lassen. The editor is said, by this new publication, to have "earned the thanks of all Sanskrit scholars."

The same number also mentions an edition of the *Bhagavadgita* with Sridharasvâmin's Commentary and a Bengali translation

under preparation, chiefly for the use of native students, by Gopāla Chandra Chattopadhyaya, in Calcutta.

Among the papers laid before the 18th Annual Meeting of the *American Philological Association*, held at Ithaca, N.Y., in July, 1886, was a translation by Professor Whitney of the *Katha Upanishad*. Instead of reading it through, the learned philologist remarked upon the *Upanishad* literature in general, in its relation to the history of religious thought in India. The abstract of his address, recorded in the *Proceedings*, concludes as follows:—"It appears impossible to regard the element of metempsychosis itself as having a popular origin, as developing by any natural process out of the older forms of Hindu religions; it must have been, as it here exhibits itself, rather the product of a school of religious philosophy, though winning afterward a general currency and acceptance, as is testified by its underlying the later systems of philosophy, including the philosophy of Buddhism."

In the *Athenæum* of July 30, a *Sanskrit Critical Journal*, "edited under the auspices of the Oriental Institute at Woking, by Pandit Rishi Kesh Shastri," is noticed. "Its object," we are told, "is not only the cultivation of Sanskrit learning and research, but also the formation of a linguistic command over that ancient language, especially for the expression of modern ideas."

The publication of Panini's *Grammatik* Hrsg., übers., erläutert., &c., O. Böhtlingk, 8 Lfg. Leipzig, Haessel, is notified in the *Academy* of June 11.

Pahlavi.—M. Darmesteter notices in the *Revue Critique* of June 20 a pamphlet of 80 pages, entitled *Gajastik Abalish*, professing to be the report of a Theological discussion presided over by the Khalif Ma'mûn. The text is published for the first time with translation, commentary and lexicon, and should be of exceptional interest to Pahlavi students.

Vol. xxxii. of the splendid series of *Sacred Books of the East*, containing part iii. of the *Zend Avesta*, translated by the Rev. L. H. Mills, has been received in the Society's Library. Professor Darmesteter, to whom the public is indebted for the translation of parts i. and ii., not having the requisite time at his disposal to continue his labours in this field, had himself apparently indicated a fitting successor.

Turkish.—The June number of the Austrian monthly journal (*Monatsschrift für den Orient*) has an interesting paper on Turkish Inscriptions of the last century in the grounds at Hadersdorf; and in July there is a notice, dated Basrah, 1884, on the inhabitants and tracts of Turkish Arabia between Baghdad and the Persian Gulf.

Central Asia.—The *Deutsche Literaturzeitung* of July 9 remarks that Karasin's *Sketches of Travel on the Road from Orenburg to Tashkend* are "full of life."

India.—The first Annual Report of the Max Denso Hall Literary Society for 1885-86 is indicative of healthy work at Karachi. There is no apparent reason why this should not be the nucleus of

a yet larger and more important Institution, as contemplated by many of its Members. But efforts must be continuous and wisely directed.

The three numbers of *Indian Notes and Queries* for the first quarter of 1887—of which February and January were saved from the wreck of the Tasmania, and reached the Society on the 21st July—are fair specimens of the whole work. Capt. Temple's remarks on the Orthography and Transliteration of Geographical names merits particular notice in reference to what is called the somewhat unscientific "phonetic" system. The numbers for April and May have followed, and are full of pleasant and instructive reading.

In an interesting notice of the *Report of the Operations of the Survey of India*, the Athenæum of July 16 remarks that had the native traveller known by the initials R. N. succeeded in his main object of gaining Gyala-Syndong, "the lowest point yet reached on the Sanpou," and starting thence kept down the stream and reached India without crossing it, "he would have been the most famous Asiatic explorer of the day." But while it was not R. N.'s good fortune to achieve such a triumph as this, he was still enabled to perform a useful and honest piece of work.

China.—The resolution of the Chinese Government to send a certain number of their civil servants to study Western lore in Western countries is a remarkable sign of the times in which we live. Each missionary, we learn from the *London and China Telegraph*, is to receive a salary a little over £500 a year, with an allowance of £125 a year for an interpreter and travelling expenses.

Professor Legge, in the Academy of the 9th July, when reviewing Mr. P. H. Balfour's *Leaves from my Chinese Scrap Book*, points to that writer's monograph of Ts'in Shih Hwang Ti, as "the longest and most discriminating account that has yet appeared in English of this remarkable personage." The reviewer's estimate of this hero places him third in the list of Chinese conspicuous above all others by "grand proportions and distinct personality." Yü the great is the first, and Confucius the second.

The two beautiful books on the Amoy Yearly Feasts, which have been translated into French and published under the authority of the Minister of Public Instruction as the 11th and 12th volumes of the *Annales du Musée Guimet*, are worthy pendants of a remarkable series. M. De Groot can hardly complain that justice has not been done him in this reproduction of his valuable work. Type, illustrations, paper—all are unexceptionable. Perhaps the most palpable drawback to the English reader is that the familiar 'Amoy' is replaced by 'Émoui.' In showing cause for this, the author tells us in his preface that he might have been more accurate had he written "E mung," and that some European maps have recorded the Mandarin pronunciation of "Hia-mun."

Of less bulk and substance, but attractive in its way, is an essay privately printed in Philadelphia by Mr. Stewart Curtin on "The Religious Ceremonies of the Chinese in the Eastern Cities of

the United States." "The first immigrants," we are told, "uncertain whether the gods would still hear their prayers and protect them in this remote land, neglected even these observances; but as fortune favoured them, many in time erected a figure of their accustomed god, and paid it the usual honour, attributing to its influence some part of their success. . . . In the course of time, as the people made homes for themselves, some of their former many household gods were recognized."

Japan.—The Academy of the 6th August has an interesting and appreciative notice, by Mr. F. V. Dickins, of a volume published in the current year by the Imperial University of Tokyo, entitled, "The Language, Mythology, and Geographical Nomenclature of Japan viewed in the light of Aino Studies, by Basil Hall Chamberlain, Professor of Philology in the Imperial University, including an Aino Grammar by John Batchelor, Church Missionary Society." Dr. Cust thus records his opinion of the work:—"The first part of the subject is ably treated in the first seventy-five pages, and I leave it to others to comment upon it. My task is to draw attention to the Aino Grammar by Mr. Batchelor: it is indeed an addition to Linguistic Science of the highest importance. In the Northernmost Island of the Japanese Group, Yezo, the Aino tribe, who were the aborigines, have still survived in considerable numbers, and are totally distinct from the more numerous and conquering people known as the Japanese. The chief town is Hakodati, and the Missionaries labour from this point. A portion of the Scripture has been translated, and now the Missionary has supplied a Grammar and a Vocabulary. The language belongs to the agglutinative class: it has neither gender, nor grammatical inflections, and the relation of words to each other is indicated by suffixes. The verbs have but one mood, the indicative: all varieties of moods or tense are indicated by auxiliary words. Postpositions take the place of Prepositions and Conjunctions. As regards Syntax, the subject of the verb is always placed at the beginning of the sentence, the verb at the end, and the object immediately before the verb, and the genitive precedes the noun which it qualifies. Some Texts are given to illustrate the Grammar. It is a most satisfactory work, and when it is recollected that it was printed at Tokio, we may well rejoice in the signs of progress in Japan."

Egyptology.—The Academy is rich, as usual, in Egyptian data. June 4 has a letter from Mr. Flinders Petrie stating that he had discovered way-marks on the ancient road from Memphis, across the desert, to the Faiyum; also, that on visiting the supposed site of Kanobos, west of Abukir, he had found "a large site of rock-cut baths in the sea," and "pieces of two granite colossi, and two large sandstone sphinxes thrown into the sea to form a breakwater." One of the sphinxes bore the name of a Psammetichos. M. Edward Naville, on July 2, has a long account of nine recent explorations, winding up with an expression of belief that "we may expect important results from a complete excavation of the temple of

Bubastis, of which we have cleared only about one-third." July 9 contains a letter from Professor Hirschfeld at Königsberg confirming his view against that of Mr. Gardner that there was no Greek town of Naukratis before the time of Amasis. In July 16, both Mr. Gardner and Mr. Flinders Petrie continue the discussion, ranging themselves on the opposite side of the question. August 6 brings a letter from Professor Sayce as a fresh contribution to the evidence adduced; and Professor Hirschfeld publishes a courteous rejoinder to MM. Gardner and Petrie on August 20. "It will perhaps be of use," he says, to "renew the discussion after the results from Daphnæ have been published;" and he is "glad to learn that this will be accomplished with the same promptitude which has already, in the case of Naukratis, won for Mr. Petrie the heartiest thanks of every scholar." There has been going on for some days in Oxford Mansions a so-called "Exhibition of Minor Antiquities" in connection with the work of the Egypt Exploration Fund. On Miss Edwards' high authority (see *Academy* of 13th August), "those who are interested in flint implements and pottery" are informed that a visit to this quarter will reward them more or less for the trouble involved.

Some interesting papers on Egyptian exploration have appeared lately in the *Times*, and added to the universally-recognized value of its many columns. One in the issue of August 22, commencing with the statement that Professor Maspero "has laid down the itinerary and topography of the Egyptian Inferno with a circumstantiality that is positively startling," proceeds to an elaborate analysis of the question mooted. While to the initiated the article will not be unattractive—to the uninitiated it will be instructive and pleasant reading, affording a curious insight into the beliefs of an ancient people.

M. Amélineau has published separately the thirteenth century Coptic MS. of the *Martyre de Jean de Phanidjoit*, mentioned in the last Notes of the Quarter as among the contents of the *Journal Asiatique* for February and March last. He has also made more generally known, by republishing in pamphlet form, his "Étude Historique sur Saint Pachome," heretofore confined to the pages of the "Bulletin de l'Institut Egyptien." Saint Pakhōm or Pakhōn of the Coptic Kalendar was the founder of the Cænobia, and called the father of the Cænobites. We read in the Rev. Mr. Malan's translation of the Arabic Notes of the Coptic Church that he wrote "Fifty Rules or Precepts for a Monastic Life," given in *Patres Egyptii*, p. 9, n. 8, ed. Migne.

In announcing that he has undertaken the preparation of a history of Christian Egypt, M. Amélineau explains the process by which he has attained the necessary knowledge and experience for so important a work. The materials which he has been enabled to collect during his residence in the country are such as throw much new light on the state of its Christian inhabitants, from the period of Diocletian (A.D. 284) to the thirteenth century. Independen-

dently of these, he has taken copies of all Coptic and Arabic MSS. bearing upon this particular subject in various public and private libraries of Europe, sufficient in themselves to fill many large-sized volumes. M. Amélineau has already drawn attention to the fact that many Coptic documents, lost in the original language, have been preserved in Arabic translations, made at the time that Coptic fell into disuse as a spoken language, to be superseded by Arabic. He proposes to render his *excerpta* faithfully into French for the benefit of students; each volume of collections being supplemented by a critical review of the *data* supplied, written without predjudice or partiality. His own private conclusions will be quite a separate affair, which he reserves to himself the right of expressing in such form as he thinks fit.

The French Government will lend its aid to the proposed publication, and has furnished the requisite funds for defraying the cost of the first volume (to appear in the course of October), but the subvention will, it is believed, be insufficient to cover the whole expenditure necessitated. An appeal is therefore addressed to learned Societies to secure, by means of a subscription list, completion of the author's labours. The work will be costly, and the price of each volume will depend upon the number of its pages. One volume will appear every year.

Numismatics.—M. A. de Barthélemy's short but suggestive notice, in the *Revue Critique* of June 27, of M. Théodore Reinach's "Essai dans la Numismatique des Rois de Cappadoce," designates the work to be a new and eloquent testimony in favour of those data which "Archæology supplies for the completion, and often rectification, of classical texts," and, moreover, a fresh argument in support of the writer's own proposition that historians and archæologists can, *of themselves*, "render but very imperfect service." According to the reviewer, M. Reinach examines successively the state of Kappadocia under the Persian rule (B.C. 546-333), the respective dynasties of the Ariarathes (333-100), and the Ariabarzanes (96-36), and Archelaus, placed on the throne by Mark Antony (36-17). The Persian period he finds illustrated only by a drachma coined at Sinope, and bearing the name of Datames. Now, the best numismatique authorities hold this personage to be the son of Kamissares, Governor of Kappadocia under Artaxerxes II.; but the concise character of the texts does not allow him to accept the fact as indisputable. On the other hand, he writes, "la série des Ariarathe et celle des Ariabarzane est classée avec une méthode et une critique qui ne laissent rien à désirer; la foliation des types, l'examen scrupuleux des surnoms pris par chacun de ces rois homonymes, tout concourt à reconnaître que M. R. n'a rien avancé sans être à même de fournir des preuves à l'appui de son système de classification."

Epigraphy.—At a sitting of the *Académie des Inscriptions et Belles-Lettres* on the 29th July, M. J. Halevy made some observations on the word *adlân*, which occurs in the lately discovered

epitaph on King Tabnit. The passage runs thus :—"Do not open my sepulchral chamber, nor disturb me, for there is neither an *adlân* of silver, nor yet of gold, nor any treasure whatever." *Ἐἴωλον* in Greek (image) was thought to be the word intended. At the same meeting, the same gentleman had something to say on the origin of the Phœnician letter *thét*. According to M. de Rougé, the Phœnicians had borrowed from the Egyptians the 22 letters of their alphabet. M. Halevy, on the other hand—holding the theory that they had only borrowed from them 12 or 13, making up the remainder by adding a diacritical sign to, or otherwise modifying some of these—showed that the letter *thét* was a combination of two others—tho *táv* and *ain*.

Miscellaneous.—The *Athenæum* of July 16 has a criticism of Mr. Arthur Lillie's *Buddhism in Christendom*. The chapters on ritual and observances, it remarks, are rendered attractive by a number of interesting illustrations.

A volume just published by Messrs. Whittingham, under the title "Christianity, Islam, and the Negro Race," merits the close attention of those who are sceptical as to the successful results of culture on the African mind. Dr. Blyden, its author, is, it is true, in respect of literary distinction, one of a million; but he shows us in his writings that there are a sufficient number of his fellow-countrymen (in the widest sense of the word) to prove the Negro capable of attaining the higher degrees of civilization. It is to the general tone of the papers put together, of which there are fifteen, exclusive of the Preface and interesting Biographical Note in this book, rather than to the literary composition—however able this may be—that the reader's attention should be drawn.

In the Oxford "Examination Statutes" for the Degrees of Bachelor of Arts, of Music, of Civil Law, and of Medicine, revised to Trinity Term of the present year, it is provided that there shall be two examinations in the Honour School of Oriental studies:—an examination in Indian studies, and an examination in Semitic studies. Sanskrit, Persian, Arabic, Hindustani, Hindi, Marathi, Bengali, Tamil and Telugu are the languages included in the former, and Arabic, Hebrew and Aramaic in the latter. The books chosen for Indian studies are :—The *Hitopadeśa*, *Raghuvansha*, *Bhagavad-gītā* and *Vedānta-sāra*; the *Shāhnāma*, *Life of Janghiz Khan*, *Jalālū'd-dīn's Masnavi*, and *Akhlak-i-Jalālī*; extracts in Wright's *Reading Book*, *al Fakhri*, the *Kuran*, and the *Hamāsa*; the *Ikhwānu's Safā*, *Arāish-i-Mahfil*, and *Nasr-i-benazīr*; the *Vikramorvaśī*, *Rājñitī*, and *Bāl-kānd* of the *Rāmāyan* of *Tulsī-Dās*; the *Mukta-mālā*, *Veṇīsaṃhāra Nāṭaka*, and *Tukārāma*; the *Charitāvālī*, *Nabanāsi*, and *Mahābhārata*; the *Pañcatantra*, *Kurraḷ*, and *Nīti Nerri Vilakham*; the *Vikramānka Tales*, *Vēmana*, and *Nala Dvīpada*. For Semitic studies :—Extracts in Wright's *Reading Book*, *al Fakhri*, the *Kurān*, and *Hamāsa*; i. and ii. *Samuel*, *Jeremiah*, *Job*, *Pirkē Ābhōth-Pesiktā*, *Rashi* on i. *Samuel*, *Kimchi* on *Jeremiah 1-15*; *Onkelos* on *Genesis*, the *Targum* of *Jonathan*

on Jeremiah, Psalms 1-72 in the Peshittā version; St. Matthew in the Curetonian and the Peshittā versions, The Acts of Thomas (in Wright's Apocryphal Acts of the Apostles), Ephraemi Carmina Nisibena (Bickell), 1-30. Provision is also made for History, general and literary, and special subjects.

VI. NOTES CONTRIBUTED BY THE HON. SECRETARY.

Africa.—*Vocabulary of "Kavirondo,"* S.P.C.K., 1887.—This tribe occupies the East shore of Victoria Nyanza, in Eastern Africa on the Equator. They are a Negro tribe, and the only one that has pushed down so far South as the Equator: all the tribes South of the Equator belong to the Bantu Family. The Rev. Mr. Wakefield, of the United Methodist Mission at Mombása, collected this Vocabulary from a Merchant, and forwarded it to the Hon. Secretary of this Society. As the tribe has been lately visited by Joseph Thomson and Bishop Hannington, it has been thought expedient to publish it.

Vocabularies of the Hadendoa and Beni Amír, S.P.C.K., 1887.—Major Watson of the Royal Engineers (Watson Pasha), while at Suakim, collected a Vocabulary of the two above-mentioned Dialects, and entered them in the Model Vocabulary Forms, which the Honorary Secretary had sent out to him. They are now being published by the S.P.C.K. The Hadendoa is a Dialect of the Bishári language, of the Hamitic Group (see page 126 of Cust's *Modern Languages of Africa*, 1883). The Bani Amír are wrongly entered as a Dialect of the same language, but the Vocabulary shows that the language is Semitic, and akin to the Tigré of Abyssinia.

Arab Tales in the Tugulo Dialect of the Makúa Language, Mozambik, East Africa, by Daniel Rankin, Acting British Consul, Mozambik, S.P.C.K., 1887.—These are very interesting and original specimens of this previously totally unknown dialect of the Makúa Language; they were collected by the very intelligent acting British Consul, and forwarded to the Hon. Secretary, with a letter explaining their nature. The tales have been published by the S.P.C.K., and some comparative Vocabularies.

Oceania.—*Melanesia.*—One of the languages spoken in the Isabel Island of the Solomon Group is the Bogútu. The English Melanesian Mission have prepared a translation of Mark in this language, and it is published by the S.P.C.K., and is interesting as a genuine specimen of this language.

Grammar and Vocabulary of Language spoken by the Motu Tribe, New Guinea, by the Rev. W. G. Lawes, with Introduction, by Rev. George Pratt. Sydney, Government Printer, 1885. London, Trübner & Co.—This is one of the first fruits of the noble attempt to evangelize the British portion of New Guinea by the London Missionary Society. The names of Murray and Macfarlane, of Lawes and Chalmers, are known to all. From the Fly River to the extreme point of the Island there are upwards of twenty-five

languages, or dialects of languages, spoken by the numerous tribes, or sections of tribes, which have pressed down from the unknown interior to the coast; they are all savage Pagans, but not unfriendly. These languages belong to the Melanesian Group with certain Polynesian affinities: totally without literature or written character. Mr. Lawes had seven years' residence among the people, to teach him the language of this important tribe, which lives near to Port Moresby, and he has translated a portion of the New Testament, which was printed by the British and Foreign Bible Society. It is of such importance that the officials appointed to carry out the Protectorate should understand this leading language, which no doubt will become the *lingua franca* of the South Coast, that Mr. Lawes deserves the thanks of the Government. He promises, on his return to the scene of his benevolent labour, a Comparative Grammar, and Collective Vocabulary of all the forms of speech spoken in the districts influenced by his Mission Stations. Attached to this Grammar is an English-Motu and Motu-English Vocabulary, of considerable length. It is an excellent book, and reflects credit on the Australian publisher.

Asia. — Indo-Chinese Peninsula. — Cambodia. — Dictionnaire Stieng; Recueil de 2500 Mots Fait à Brolam en 1865 par H. Azémar, Missionnaire, Saigon, 1887.—In the valley of the great Mekong, in Cambodia, are a great many wild tribes, of whose language little is known. Among them are the Stieng, and a French Roman Catholic Mission has been established in their midst for more than a quarter of a century. Their existence is noticed in the travels of Garnier and Bastian. M. Azémar was one of those Missionaries, who settled at Brolam in 1861, and left in 1866. He dwelt quite alone among the people, and picked up their language, and compiled this Vocabulary in the French language, which, accompanied by a full description of the tribe, has been published by the French Colonial Government of Cochin-China, and a copy has found its way to the Library of the Royal Geographical Society. It is a very creditable performance.

La Società Asiatica Italiana.—We welcome the appearance of the first volume of the Journal¹ of the Italian Asiatic Society, published at Florence. Its President, Count Angelo di Gubernatis, had lately visited India, and on his return conceived the idea of an Italian Asiatic Society and an Indian Museum. The King of Italy accepted the office of Patron, and in His Majesty's presence both Institutions were opened, and the President delivered his first address. Some of the most distinguished scholars of Europe and America have accepted the office of Honorary Members. The Society held its first Annual Meeting in May of this year. The Journal consists of 153 pages, of which 88 are devoted to 9 original communications on a great variety of Asiatic subjects, and 68 to Notices of 13 works in different languages of Europe. The account

¹ See *ante*, p. 699.

of the *res gestæ* of the Society occupy 39 pages in addition to the above. The whole is in the Italian language, and there are no illustrations. The Universities of Italy are numerous, some might say, too numerous, and the Professors are numerous, and the chief support of the Society must come from that quarter, as Italy has as yet no intimate relations with or a single colony or dependency in Asia. The names of some Italian scholars have a wide repute, Amári, Ascoli, Gorresio, Teza, and Di Gubernatis, all of whom have published noteworthy works. It might have been wiser to have established the Society at Rome, as the rivalry of illustrious cities is one of the causes of weakness of Italy.

PROGRESS OF WORK OF TRANSLATION OF THE HOLY SCRIPTURES IN
LANGUAGES OF ASIA, AFRICA AND OCEANIA.

Japan.—Ainu.—The Committee have published at Tokyo a tentative edition of 250 copies of nine chapters of the Gospel of St. Matthew. The remainder of the Gospel has now been translated, and a complete edition will be published for circulation. The translation was made by the Rev. J. Batchelor (C.M.S.), of Hakodate, Japan. He is the only foreigner who understands the language, and there is no native Ainu, who can speak English. The translation has been made from the Greek by the aid of the English Revised Version, and the few Ainu, who have been taught to read have gone over the translations made by Mr. Batchelor, and thus contributed to the idiomatic accuracy of the version.

Oceania.—Api or Baki.—The Gospel of St. Mark, translated by the Rev. Rule Fraser, of the Presbyterian Church of Tasmania, and printed by the New South Wales Auxiliary, is now in the hands of the people. The Rev. Dr. Steel, of Sydney, Agent of the New Hebrides Mission, read the proofs and edited the version.

India.—Badaga.—At the request of the Rev. J. Knobloch, of the Basel Mission, of the Madras Auxiliary to this Society, has agreed to publish an edition of the Gospel of St. Luke for the tribe of Badaga, who inhabit the Nilgiri Hills, and number about 24,000. The version will be prepared by the Rev. W. Lutz, who will take as the basis of his revision a translation prepared and lithographed in 1852.

Oceania.—Duke of York Island.—The Committee have authorized the Sydney Auxiliary to publish an edition of the Gospel of St. Matthew and of the Acts of the Apostles, prepared under the auspices of the Australasian Wesleyan Missionary Society.

Oceania.—Futé.—The Gospel of St. John, translated by the Rev. J. Cosh, and revised by the Rev. J. W. Mackenzie, is now in the hands of the people, who have refunded to the Society the cost of its production. The Rev. Dr. Macdonald, of Havannah Harbour, hopes that the New Testament, completed by Mr. Mackenzie and himself, will be ready for the press during this year. The translators have agreed to render the New Testament into the most

important dialect of Faté, trusting that the version will be sufficient for the whole island, and the surrounding islets.

Africa.—E'wé.—At the request of the North German Missionary Society, the Committee have agreed to publish an edition of 1500 copies of the Books of Isaiah and Jeremiah. The version was made by the Rev. T. Merz, formerly a Missionary on the Gold Coast. He has revised his translation by the help of an Éwé student now in Germany; and the Rev. Pastor Binder has also revised the version, assisted by two Éwé students, who are being educated by him in Germany.

Africa (Ashanti).—Fanti.—The printing of the Four Gospels progresses slowly, owing to the time lost in sending proofs to Cape Coast. Meanwhile a Bible Revision Committee has been formed at Cape Coast, consisting of ministers and laymen, who meet once a week. They are now engaged on the Book of Genesis, which they hope to complete in about a year.

China.—Fuh-chow Vernacular (Roman Character).—The reception given to his version of the Gospel of St. John has encouraged the Rev. R. W. Stewart, of the Church Missionary Society, to continue the translation of the New Testament, and the Committee have resolved to continue the publication of the version.

Africa.—Gogo.—The Committee have published an edition of 500 copies of the Rev. J. C. Price's version of the Gospel of St. Luke. The language is closely allied to the Kagúru, but sufficiently distinct to render Last's Kagúru version useless among the Wa-Gogo. Mr. Price's translation was made from the Greek, by the help of the English Revised Version, and Rebman's Swahili version. They number about 100,000. They inhabit the region between the U-Nyamwézi district on the West, and that of the U-Sagára on the East. They are bounded on the North by the Masai country. The rendering follows, with slight exceptions, Steere's system of orthography.

Gujarati.—The Committee have completed the final revision of the last 19 chapters of the Gospel of St. Luke, the Gospel of St. John, the Acts of the Apostles, and eight chapters of the Epistle to the Romans.

India.—Hindi.—The Revision Committee have completed the four Gospels, and revised a part of the Acts of the Apostles.

Hindustani (Dakhani).—The Rev. M. G. Goldsmith, of the Church Missionary Society, completed his revision of the Gospel of St. Matthew in 1885. When the portion was revised by the Delegates, it was sent to the lithographer to be photographed. The Gospels of St. Luke and St. John have also been revised, and that of St. Matthew is now being proceeded with. An edition of Genesis and Exodus was passed through the press in December, 1885. The brethren are aiming at a thoroughly idiomatic South Indian, which differs considerably from North Indian Urdu.

Japan.—Japanese.—The version of the Old Testament is now approaching completion. The work has been carried out by the

Rev. P. K. Fyson, and Drs. Hepburn and Verbeek, the three translators appointed by the Permanent Committee. In February, 1886, Mr. Fyson reported that the Books of Leviticus, Numbers, Deuteronomy, and Daniel, translated by Dr. Hepburn, had been published. Dr. Hepburn had also translated Hosea, Joel, Amos, Micah, Nahum, Habakkuk, and Zachariah. Dr. Verbeek continued his translations of the Psalms in addition to his revision work. Mr. Fyson translated 1st and 2nd Chronicles, Ezra, and Nehemiah, and worked with Dr. Verbeek on the Revision Committee. During the past year Dr. Verbeek has continued at work on the Psalms, and assisted in the revision of other Books. Dr. Hepburn has translated Esther, Job, and the Song of Solomon, and taken part in revision, and Mr. Fyson, in addition to revision work, has completed his version of Isaiah. During the year the Books of Hosea, Joel, Amos, Obadiah, Micah, Nahum, Habakkuk, Zephaniah, and Zechariah have been published.

Indian Archipelago.—Javanese.—The Rev. P. Jansz's version of the Gospel of St. Luke has been published and favourably received, and the Committee have authorized Mr. Jansz to complete the New Testament. As Mr. Jansz has already made extensive preparations, it is expected that the work will be finished in a year.

Africa.—Xosa alias Káfir.—The revision of the Bible has been completed, and the Committee have agreed to publish a new edition of 3000 copies, similar to the old 8vo. edition in type, page, and size, the verses to be numbered and the paragraphs to be marked by breaks. The poetical parts are to be printed in verse form.

Central Asia.—Kalmuk.—Professor Pozdnejeff has completed his version of the Four Gospels after six years of incessant labour. An edition of 4000 copies, with 1000 copies additional of each Gospel, has been published under the editorial care of the translator. The version was produced in the following manner. Professor Pozdnejeff first made draft translations of the Gospels. These he sent to Archimandrite Smirnoff, in Astrakhan, for revision. When Professor Pozdnejeff had collated M. Smirnoff's criticisms, he proceeded to the steppes to test the translation by reading it to the Kalmuks. In this way he was able to conform his version to the style understood by the people, and to acquire information for further translation. Professor Pozdnejeff made three journeys to the steppes for the purpose of testing his work. On his return home he carefully revised the translation once more, and prepared copy for the press. The Committee have arranged with Professor Pozdnejeff for the completion of the New Testament, and for this purpose he proposes to make two journeys to the Kalmuk steppes. On the death of Archimandrite Smirnoff, Professor Pozdnejeff employed as his assistant M. D. Kutusoff, a native Kalmuk, now Lector in the St. Petersburg University. M. Kutusoff, who has completed his studies in the Imperial Medico-Surgical Academy,

spent four years in Mongolia, and is acquainted with the literary language of the Mongols, and Professor Pozdnejeff considers his services of special value.

Russia.—Kazán-Turki.—The Gospel of St. Mark, translated and edited by M. Saleman, is now completed, and will be immediately circulated among the people for whom it is intended in Kazán and elsewhere. M. Saleman will proceed with the translation of the remaining two Gospels, St. Luko and St. John.

Central Asia.—Kirghiz-Turki.—The printing of the third edition of the New Testament, revised by Dr. Gottwald, at the Kazán University Press, under the care of M. Saleman, proceeds slowly. The Rev. W. Nicolson reports that thirty sheets out of forty-two have been printed.

India.—Konkani.—The Madras Auxiliary are taking steps for the formation of a Committee to revise the Gospels of St. Mark and St. Luke, already printed, and to prepare other portions of the New Testament for the press.

Caucasus.—Kumuk (Turki).—The publication of the Gospel of St. Matthew has been delayed owing to the discovery of a few typographical mistakes. The version is being re-examined by Dr. Sauerwein and M. Amirkhaniantz, and will be issued immediately.

Oceania.—Lifu.—The revision of the Bible has been brought to a close, and at the request of the Mission, the Committee have agreed to publish an edition of 4000 copies, the type and general style to be similar to that of the Samoan Bible.

U-Ganda.—The Rev. R. P. Ashe, on his return from U-Ganda, brought with him the first thirteen chapters of the Gospel of St. Matthew, translated by himself and the Rev. Mr. Mackay, and printed by their Mission press at U-Ganda. The version has been tested by the natives and re-revised, and the Committee agreed to print a tentative edition of 250 copies. Later news from U-Ganda reports that Mr. Mackay is completing the translation, and the Committee have resolved to await the arrival of the remaining chapters of the Gospel with a view to printing (500 copies) of the complete Gospel.

Madagascar.—Malagási.—The revision of the Bible begun thirteen and a half years ago is now completed, and the Revision Committee has been dissolved. The first meeting was held in the house of Mr. William Johnson, of the Friends' Mission, on July 21, 1873. The last meeting was held in the Committee-room of the London Missionary Society, Madagascar, on April 30, 1887. Owing to the absence on furlough of the chief reviser for two and a half years, the time actually spent in revision was a little over eleven years. On May 2, two days after the completion of the revision, a thanksgiving service was held in the Memorial Church, attended by Missionaries, Native Pastors, and a large number of Christians. The Prime Minister was present with a special message of thanks from Queen Ranavalona III., and this he delivered with his own

congratulations on the very spot, where thirty-eight years before fourteen Christians were hurled over the precipice, at the command of Ranavalona I., for their adherence to the Word of God.

India.—Malayálam.—The Revision Committee met last September, when it was resolved to circulate interleaved copies of the latest revision of the New Testament. The criticisms called forth have been revised by the Ven. Archdeacon K. Koshi, as far as the Gospel of St. Luke, and printed and circulated among the delegates and other scholars. The criticisms on the Gospel of St. John and the Acts are in course of collation, and arrangements have been made for the final revision of the four Gospels and the Acts.

New Zealand.—Maori.—The printing of the revised Bible has been continued throughout the year. First proofs are read by Archdeacon Maunsell in New Zealand, and Mr. Carleton, of Upper Norwood, reads the second proofs, to see that the Archdeacon's corrections are carried into the text.

India.—Maráthi.—The revised Book of Genesis has been examined and approved by the Maráthi Translation Committee, and an edition of 1000 copies, 12mo. has been printed under the joint supervision of the Rev. Baba Padmonji and the Rev. J. E. Abbott.

India. — Musalmáni-Bengáli.—The Calcutta Auxiliary have resolved to revise and publish a small edition of the Gospel of St. Matthew.

Oceania.—Nguna.—The Rev. P. Milne, of the New Hebrides Mission, has translated the Gospels of St. Mark and St. Luke, and hopes to go to New Zealand by the end of the year to carry an edition through the press.

China.—Ningpo Vernacular.—The Revision Committee continue their revision of the New Testament.

Africa.—Nupé.—The Committee have resolved to publish an edition of 500 copies each of the Gospels of St. Luke and St. John in the new orthography. The version was made by Archdeacon Johnson, and it has been rendered into the new orthography by the Rev. Dr. Schön.

Turkey.—Osmánli-Turki.—The Revised Bible has been published.

Afghanistan.—Pashtu.—The translation and revision of the Scriptures for the Afghans are proceeding under the superintendence of the Bishop of Lahore as chairman.

Persian.—The Rev. Dr. Bruce has been engaged on the revision of his New Testament during the last six years. He has also translated and revised the Books of Genesis, Exodus, and Psalms. He has returned to England with his MS., and the Committee are taking steps to have the whole finally revised with a view to publication.

Africa.—Popo (Dahomé).—In addition to the Gospels of St. Matthew and St. Mark, which are now passing through the press, the Popo Translation Committee at Lagos have completed the translation of the Book of Psalms, the Gospels of St. Luke and

St. John, and the Acts, and these portions are now being revised and copied with a view to immediate publication.

India.—Rajmaháli, alias Pahári (Maler or Malto).—The Rev. Ernest Droege has translated the Psalms, the Gospels of St. Matthew and St. Mark, and the Acts of the Apostles.

Oceania.—Rarotonga.—The Rev. W. Wyatt Gill has returned to England with the MS. of the revised Bible, and is now editing for the Committee an 8vo. edition of 4000 copies. As the text is now considered to be settled, stereotype plates of the edition are being prepared.

Morocco.—Riff (dialect of Shilha).—Mr. William Mackintosh, the Society's agent at Tangiers, has completed his version of the Gospel of St. Matthew, and the Committee have published an edition of 560 copies.

Oceania.—Samoa.—The Rev. Dr. Turner has carried through the press for the Committee an edition of the Bible in small size. He has made a few corrections in the text while passing through the press.

India.—Santal (Roman Character).—The Calcutta Auxiliary to the Bible Society have agreed to publish an interim edition consisting of 1000 copies of the New Testament. The edition will be made up of the portion of the New Testament completed by the Revision Committee and Mr. Cole's translation of the rest unrevised by the Committee. It is intended to meet the demand for the Book, until the version now being prepared by the Rev. F. T. Cole and the Santali Revision Committee is ready.

Santal (Bengáli Character).—The Calcutta Auxiliary published an edition of 1000 copies of the Gospel of St. Luke, prepared and edited by Mr. Cole.

Africa.—Suto.—A few corrections are being made by the Rev. A. Mabile in the Pocket New Testament with a view to the printing of an interim edition of 2000 copies. A further revision in the light of the Revised Bible is contemplated.

Swahili (Arabic Character).—The Gospel of St. John, transliterated and edited by Miss Allen, of the Universities' Mission, has been published.

Swahili (Roman Character).—The version of Exodus revised by the Venerable Archdeacon Hodgson, and edited by the Rev. F. A. Wallis, of the Universities' Mission, has been completed.

India.—Telugu.—The translation of the remaining books of the Old Testament has been retarded by the serious illness of Dr. Hay. During the year the Book of Isaiah has been translated, the Book of Psalms has been revised, and the Books of Judges, Joshua and Ruth have been printed. Dr. Hay is now translating the Book of Jeremiah. The work has sustained a loss in the sudden death of the Rev. M. Ratnam, one of the oldest members of the Revision Committee.

Caucasus.—Transcaucasian-Turki.—The printing of the Bible has been begun at Leipzig. Proofs are being read by the Rev. A. Amirkhaniantz.

India.—Tulu.—With a view to expedite the work of revision, the New Testament has been parcelled out among a number of scholars to make a first draft. The Rev. R. Hartmann is working on the four Gospels while on furlough. Catechist Obed has finished the Acts of the Apostles. Messrs. Ritter and Ott, assisted by competent native scholars, are engaged on the Epistles.

Urdu (Arabic Character).—The Committee have published an edition of the Bible under the superintendence of Dr. Weitbrecht, assisted by a native Urdu scholar. It was found undesirable to carry out the changes announced last year, and the new edition may be considered an interim reprint, with palpable mistakes and typographical errors corrected.

Uriya.—Last year the Committee agreed to bring out an edition of 2500 copies of the Old Testament, revised and edited by the lamented Dr. Buckley, of the Baptist Mission at Cuttack. Dr. Buckley was carrying on the revision with his usual energy, and had completed the work up to the 83rd Psalm, when he was suddenly called to rest. Dr. Buckley had already edited one edition of the Old Testament.

Central Asia.—Uzbek-Turki.—The printing of the Four Gospels, translated by M. Ostroumoff, has been begun. The proofs are being read by Dr. Radloff, Dr. Sauerwein, M. Amirkhaniantz, and the translator. The Sart dialect, chosen by M. Ostroumoff, is expected to become the chief language of Central Asia.

Africa.—Yao.—The version of the Scriptures begun by Archdeacon Maples, of the Universities' Mission, is being continued by the Missionaries of the Established Presbyterian Church of Scotland. The Gospel of St. Matthew was translated and edited by Archdeacon Maples. The remaining Gospels and the Acts have been translated by the Scotch Missionaries of Blantyre and Livingstonia.

Yoruba.—The first edition of the New Testament being almost exhausted, a Revision Committee, in which the Wesleyan Missionaries have joined the Church Missionary Society Missionaries, has been formed to revise the New Testament, with a view to the publication of an edition of 10,000 copies, same size and type as the present edition. The four Gospels have already been revised. Proofs of the new edition will be read at Lagos.

VII. SPECIAL COMMITTEE, ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY.

The statement and papers published under this head in the "Notes" of the April number of the Journal (pp. 342-349) are incomplete without the report of the Committee—of which they were the mere Appendices; it has now been considered advisable to add this document also. That it was withheld at all must be attributed to the circumstance that the papers were referred back by the Council for further information on certain points—a step which would

entail modification. But such reference having been shown to involve amplification only, without retraction, there appears no further reason to withhold publication of the first approved draft:

Report of Committee¹ appointed under the Resolutions of Council, dated 1st March and 10th May, 1886.—The Committee appointed to consider the best means for the promotion of Oriental Studies in England, and rendering the work of the Society more popular, beg to report as follows on the several heads of inquiry indicated to them:

I. In reference to the first head—"Preparation of a list of appointments in England, in Government Establishments, Universities and Colleges, and other Institutions for which a scholarly acquaintance with Oriental Languages is a necessary or important qualification, with the emoluments of each and the mode of appointment"—the Committee have prepared from the best information at their command a list of such appointments, together with a statement of the emoluments attached and mode of appointment; and a column has been added giving, where known, the name and designation of the present holder; they have also given a list of similar appointments in India open to Europeans.²

It will be seen from these lists that, excluding those for which a knowledge of Hebrew only is required, the number of permanent salaried appointments in the United Kingdom is about twenty-nine, the salaries ranging from £50 to £1000 per annum. In India there are ninety-eight Government appointments open to Europeans, with salaries ranging from 250 to 2450 rupees per mensem, for which a knowledge of Oriental languages and literature is either essential or a very important qualification. These appointments include 14 Professorships of Oriental Languages, 45 Headships of Colleges and Schools, 32 Educational Inspectorships, and 7 Directorships of Public Instruction, and all—with the exception of 8 Professorships and 2 Inspectorships—are at present held by Europeans.

Besides the appointments referred to above, there are, in the United Kingdom, Professorships at King's and University College, London, minor College Tutorships at Oxford and Cambridge, Examinerships in connection with Indian Civil Service competitions,

¹ The Committee consisted of the following Members of the Council R.A.S. : Gen. R. Maclagan, R.E. (Chairman); Messrs. Bendall, Dickens, Kay, Thornton, the Hon. Secretary, and Secretary. Sir Monier Monier-Williams afterwards joined.

² See Appendix, page 348, J.R.A.S. for April, 1887.

and temporary appointments in the British Museum, offering more or less remunerative employment to Orientalists. Again, in India, the Government offers to its Civil and Military servants handsome rewards for proficiency in Sanskrit, Arabic, Persian, and the languages of India, and success in the examinations for them not unfrequently leads to special advancement in the Service. Lastly, both in England and India, important work is being done, and much more remains to be done, in the editing and translation of Oriental texts, and in the preparation of dictionaries and grammars and other works relating to the history, antiquities, and languages of the East, while, judging from the periodical lists of Messrs. Trübner and other Oriental publishers, the public interest in this class of literature is on the increase.

Thus the prospect of remunerative employment open to English Orientalists, at any rate in the case of Indian languages, appears less discouraging than is usually supposed. The field is vast, the labourers—of British birth—are few, and the demand is greater than the supply. Of the appointments contained in the lists *twenty*, including some of the most important, are at present held by foreign scholars, and to foreign scholars we are indebted for many English versions of Oriental texts, and some of the most important articles on Eastern subjects contained in the *Encyclopædia Britannica*. Of twenty-nine English Translations of the “Sacred Books of the East,” issued from the Clarendon Press, *fourteen* are by German scholars, and that of Al Berûni’s great work on India is being made (partly at the expense of the Indian Government), not by an Englishman, but by Professor Sachau of Berlin.

The Committee believe that these facts—that is, the opening for Orientalists and the extent to which England has to resort in Oriental subjects to foreign scholars—are very little known, and that their publication may do something towards stimulating Oriental studies in this country. They recommend accordingly that the appended lists of appointments with names of present holders (after careful correction), be published in the *Journal*, together with these remarks (so far as they are approved of by the Council), and that all new appointments of like character created and all vacancies in appointments and changes of incumbency be notified from time to time in like manner.

II. With regard to the second head—“The possibility of approaching the Government, the Universities, the City Companies, etc., for support in the promotion of Oriental studies”—

the Committee do not see their way to recommend an appeal to the Government either of the United Kingdom or of India for direct support in the shape of University or School Endowments, but they presume the Government of India will be ready in the future, as in the past, to aid and assist in the production of Oriental works of public interest and importance. To that Government we owe, *inter alia*, the publication of the text of the *Rig Veda*, the translation of the *A'di Granth*, and Jaeschke's Tibetan Dictionary; and it has liberally contributed to the cost of Professor Max Müller's series of "Sacred Books of the East," of Dr. Badger's English-Arabic Dictionary, of Professor Geldner's *Zend-Avesta*, the text and translation of Al Berûni's "India," the new Persian-English Dictionary by Professor Steingass, the English-Persian Dictionary by Wollaston, and the new edition of Professor Sir Monier-Williams' Sanskrit Dictionary.

But while they see no hopes of success in an appeal to Government for direct support, the Committee feel strongly that an attempt should be made to awaken a more active interest in the subject on the part of the governing bodies of Educational Institutions, and also on the part of the great London Companies, many of whom are already distinguished by the liberal aid they render to Science and Education. The Committee therefore recommend (i) that letters be addressed to the governing bodies of the principal Universities, Colleges, and Schools of the United Kingdom, inviting their assistance; suggesting, in the case of the University of Oxford, the carrying out of the measures proposed by the Hebdomadal Council in 1877 for advancing the study of Arabic, Syriac, Persian, and Ethiopic, and of the languages and antiquities of Assyria and Ancient Egypt; and, in the case of Colleges, the setting apart of one or more of their existing *Fellowships* for bestowal on Oriental scholars, and of *Scholarships* and *Exhibitions* for promising students of Eastern languages; and urging, in the case of Schools, the formation of classes for the elementary teaching of such languages and the offer of prizes for proficiency in them.

They recommend (ii.) that similar letters be addressed to certain of the City Companies asking their aid and support by the grant of funds for the establishment of new Fellowships, Scholarships and prizes in Colleges and Schools, or for the publication of Oriental texts and translations and other works of importance not likely to be immediately remunerative.

The grounds of the recommendations are more fully set forth in

a statement which accompanies,¹ and it is suggested that a copy of the statement, if approved by the Council, might accompany the letters addressed to the various bodies indicated.

In the event of the response to the above communications being fairly favourable, an appeal might, the Committee think, be made to the chiefs, nobles and wealthier residents of India for the foundation of Scholarships at our Universities tenable to their fellow-countrymen.

III. As to the third head—"Possibility and expediency of amalgamating this Society with any other of kindred objects, and of reducing the scale of subscriptions now in force"—the Committee, after due inquiry, are not able to make any recommendation for the amalgamation of the Royal Asiatic Society with any other Society, with kindred objects. With regard to reduction of subscriptions, the case stands in this wise. There are at present 129 resident members paying three guineas per annum. A reduction in their rate of subscription from three guineas to two guineas—which on many grounds is desirable—will thus involve an immediate loss to the Society of 144 guineas, and it will require the addition of seventy-two new members to make good this loss. The majority of the Committee are not sanguine that this addition to the number of resident members will be soon obtained, but, meanwhile, the loss can be met, in part at least, from the annual surplus over expenses, which, the Secretary informs them, has latterly amounted to about £100. As the Committee are not unanimous as to the course to be pursued, they deem it best to leave the matter for the decision of the Council without making any specific recommendation. But, in the event of its being decided to retain the present rate of subscription, the Committee suggest that in special cases the subscription be remitted or reduced on the principles adopted at the meeting of Council on the 11th January, 1886.

IV. With regard to head number four—"Whether the publication of Oriental works beyond the scope of the Journal should be undertaken"—the Committee do not doubt that the publication of Oriental texts or their translation might be legitimately taken up by the Royal Asiatic Society; but having regard to the fact that the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge are already engaged upon the work, and have in their professors of Oriental

¹ See pp. 344-349, *J.R.A.S.* for April, 1887.

languages a specially competent editorial staff, and that in London there is more than one enterprising firm of Oriental publishers, the Committee are not prepared to advise, for the present, at all events, the assumption of such work by the Society. Works likely to be soon remunerative may, in their opinion, well be left to the enterprise of existing agencies, while for the publication of important works less likely to be remunerative, we should, the Committee think, look, in the first instance, at any rate, to our Universities. Our Universities—Oxford especially—have already done good work in this respect, and aided, it may be, by the liberality of individuals and corporations, and, in special cases, from the revenues of India, may be willing to extend and systematize the Oriental department of their Presses. In doing so they would doubtless receive the hearty sympathy and co-operation of this Society, and would do much to realize the hope which underlies the recommendations under the second head—that our Universities may become ere long centres of Oriental as well as of Western learning and research.

V. In considering the last of the five subjects indicated to them—that is to say, “the best means of rendering the Society more popular,”—the Committee have had the advantage of a valuable paper of suggestions by Dr. R. N. Cust, the Hon. Secretary. After considering those suggestions, the Committee submit the following recommendations:—

(i) One important means of rendering the Society more popular is doubtless the improvement of the Journal. In this matter, the Committee are glad to state, action has already been taken, and most of Dr. Cust’s suggestions have been carried out or anticipated by the Secretary of the Society, Sir Frederic Goldsmid. These improvements are all, more or less, embodied in a paper contained in the October number, and intended to form part of every succeeding issue, under the title of “Notes of the Quarter,” an introduction which, while it partakes of the character of Proceedings, will also aim at supplying such information gathered during the preceding three months as is likely to interest Oriental scholars and students. It should be remarked that arrangements are in contemplation, or in progress, by which the “Notes” may be rendered more complete and comprehensive than can be the case at present, owing to the deficiency of data and want of co-operation from without.

The Committee believe that the alterations and additions made

will add greatly to the interest and value of the Journal, and they recommend that they be approved by the Council.

(ii) Another effectual means for attaining the object aimed at will be, they believe, the institution by the Society of occasional meetings or conversaziones at which Orientalists of eminence should be invited to deliver lectures describing in a popular style the position, progress or results of some branch of Oriental research.

(iii) With the view of encouraging discussion at the ordinary meetings; and thus increasing their attractiveness, it is recommended that proofs of every paper about to be read be available at the time of the meeting, and for three days previously, at the rooms of the Society, and that the time allowed for reading the paper or extracts from it be ordinarily limited to half an hour.

(iv) They recommend that members of the Asiatic Society of Bengal and of the branch Societies of Bombay, Madras, Ceylon, North China, Japan and Singapore, who may be temporarily in England, be not only admissible to meetings (as already provided by the rules), but have the use of the library and reading room.

(v) Lastly, it is recommended that a Gold Medal be annually awarded by the Society in recognition of recent services in Oriental research or scholarship.

POSTSCRIPT.

The readers of the Royal Asiatic Society's Journal will be glad to learn that Professor Sayce has forwarded a supplement to his valuable Memoir on the Vannic Inscriptions published some five years ago. This will appear in the January number.

INDEX.

- Abe no Miushi, one of the suitors of the Lady Kaguya, and how he failed in the task imposed on him by her, 16-19.
- Abkhazian, vocabulary of, 146-156.
- Adi Granth*, arrangement of the, 605.
- Adlân*, J. Halevy's observations on the word, 704.
- Afghanistan, Surgeon-General Bellew's paper on the names borne by some of the tribes of, 503.
- African philology, 184, 342, 545, 706.
- Africa, the Bibliography of, 686.
- Agap' Porul*, a Tamil work on love, 575.
- Agastya, the legendary author of the Tamil language, 559.
- Agan, Kushites identified with the, 646.
- Ahuramazda, 204.
- Aino language, Grammar of the, 332, 702.
- Akinoyonaga-no-monogatari, a Japanese Romance, 44.
- Akkadian and Egyptian languages, theory of a relationship between the, 650.
- Akkadian invasion of Mesopotamia, its effect on the Babylonian language, 636.
- Akkadian origin of the Cuneiform syllabary discussed, and dismissed, 644.
- Altaic races, the earliest prose of the, 45.
- Alla Bux, his handbook of Brâhûi, 60.
- "Altar," ancient forms representing the word, 632.
- Amaravati Stupa, 172.
- Amélineau, M. E., notice of his article "Le Christianisme chez les anciens Coptes," 543, 703; of "Le Martyre de Jean de Phanidjoit," 544, 703; his "Etude sur Saint Pachome," 703.
- American Oriental Society, Report of the Annual Meeting for 1886, 316; list of papers read before the, on May 11, 1887, 685.
- American Philological Association, Prof. Whitney's paper on the Katha Upanishad read before the, 700.
- Amoy Yearly Feasts, 701.
- Andrew, Sir W. P., obituary notice of, 524.
- Angirasas, the arrangement of the Rig-Veda made by the, 599 *et seq.*
- Antiochus, the Inscription of, 632.
- Apirian syllabary, the, 653.
- Appointments in the U.K. for which a knowledge of Oriental languages is necessary, Appendix I. page 348.
- Appointments in India, do. do., Appendix II. page 348.
- Appointments for which a knowledge of Hebrew is necessary, Appendix III. page 348.
- Arab colouists in the Indian Archipelago, 534.
- Arabic literature, 176, 326, 532, 697.
- Arbuthnot, Sir A., his memoir of Sir W. Elliot, 519-524.
- Arbuthnot, F. F., notice of his "Persian Portraits," 329; and E. C. Wilson's account of the same, 538.
- Archæological Surveys of India, 172, 701.
- Archæology in India, 323, 530, 693.
- Aretas = Hârith the Great, 591.
- Ariabarzanes, the dynasty of, 704.
- Ariarathes, the dynasty of, 704.
- Armenian literature, 180.
- "Art," a poem by H. W. Freeland, Chinese and Italian versions of, 136-7.
- Aryan languages, literature of the, 177, 328, 537, 699.

- Asiatic Society of Bengal, Reports of meetings of the, 158-159; 313-315; 506-507; 682-684.
- Asiatic Society of Japan, Reports of meetings of the, 313.
- Assurbanipal, king of Assyria, 680.
- Assur-nadin-sum, king of Babylon, 675.
- Assyrian names of domestic animals, 319.
- Assyriology, 175, 327, 535, 698.
- Āśvaghosha, author of the *Jātakamālā*, 202.
- Āśvamedha*, the, or Horse-sacrifice, 622.
- Australia, characteristics of the languages of, 378 *et seq.*
- Aymonnier's "Notes on Annam," 331.
- Azazel, a pagan divinity, 325.
- Azémar, H., his dictionary of the Stieng language, 707.
- BABER, E. C., his "Note on Nine Formosan MSS.," 418-427.
- Bābū Ram Din Sinha, and Bābū Sahib Prasad Sinha, publishers of Hindi books, 140.
- Babylonian and Oriental Record*, notice of papers in the, 175, 327, 535, 698.
- Babylonian Chronicle, introductory remarks on the, 655-57; Cuneiform text of the, 658-664; Romanized transcription of the, 665-672; English translation of the, 672-81.
- Babylonian picture-writing, when and where was it invented? 644.
- Babylonian signs, examples of, with their pictorial origin and assumed Egyptian equivalents, 652.
- Babylonian Talmud, Dr. Rabbinowicz' French version of the, 697.
- Babylonians and Elamites in conflict with the Assyrians, 674.
- Balance-sheet for the year 1886, VI.
- Bambara language of Africa, 686.
- Bamboo-Hewer, Story of the Old, translated by F. V. DICKINS, 1-36; transliteration of the text of the, 46-58.
- Bambridge, the Rev. J., his memoir of the Rev. G. Shirt, 687.
- Bamian, the idols at, 164.
- Bāmiyan, the Red and the White idols in the locality of, 162.
- Batchelor, Rev. J., his *Aino Grammar*, 332; Dr. Cust's review of the same, 702.
- Bate, Rev. J. D., sketch of the plan of his proposed Hindustani-English and English-Hindustani Dictionary, 335.
- BEAL, the Rev. S., "Some Remarks on the Narrative of Fâ-hien," Art. VI., pp. 191-206.
- "Beche de Mer English," 380.
- Bêl-êdir, 681.
- Bel-ibnî (Bêlibus), king of Babylon, 675.
- Bellew, Surgeon-General, his grammar and vocabulary of Brāhūi, 60; his article on "Names borne by some of the Tribes of Afghanistan," 309, 503.
- Benjamin, Mr., notice of his "Persia and the Persians," 329.
- Bergaigne, M., his exposition of the First Maṇḍala of the Rig-Veda, 599.
- BERTIN, G., "Origin and Development of the Cuneiform Syllabary," Art. XX., pp. 625-654.
- Bhandarkar, Prof. R. G., his remarks on the study of Sanskrit in Europe, 537.
- Bibliotheca Indica*, notice of the new publications of the, 322, 529.
- Bidie, Surgeon-General, his account of prehistoric graves near Pallāvaram, 693.
- Bilhana, the story of, 329.
- Binger, Lieut. G., his sketch of the Bambara language, 686.
- Birdwood, Sir G., his memoir of Sir Barrow Ellis, 688.
- Bisbitum, the king of, 681.
- "Bishop," first European word known in the New Hebrides, 381.
- Blakiston, the Rev. R. M., his memoir of Archdeacon Harrison, 525.
- Blyden, Dr., his "Christianity, Islam and the Negro Race," 705.
- Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society, 691.
- Bouar, H. A. C., on Japanese Maritime Enterprise, 692.
- Books presented to the Royal Asiatic Society during 1886, XIII-XVI.
- Borsippa, revolt at, 672.
- Botany: "the oldest botanical work in the world," 542.
- Brāhūi Grammar, Dr. Duka's article on the, 59 *et seq.*
- British and Foreign Bible Society, extracts from the Annual Report of, regarding the progress of translation of the Holy Scriptures in the languages of Asia, Africa, and Oceania, 708-714.

- British India, total number of books published in each Province of, during the year 1885, 538-540.
- British Institute of Hebrew, proposal for a, 532.
- Brunton's Vocabulary of the Susu language, 686.
- Bubastis, expected important discoveries at the temple of, 703.
- Buddha's Sacred Begging-bowl, 7.
- Buddha's sacrifice of himself for the Tiger, 202.
- Buddha, the supernatural linguistic attainments of, 567.
- Buddhist Remains at Gṇṇṇupalle, 508 *et seq.*
- Buddhistic origin of the *Miryek* at Un-jin, 555.
- Buddhistic symbolism, 233 *et seq.*
- Bu-hwan dialect of Formosa, vocabulary of the, 487 *et seq.*
- Bullock, T. L., quotation from, on the tribes of Formosa, 423.
- Bunyu Nanjio, sent on a scientific mission to India, 332.
- Burma, notes on, 331.
- Burnell, Dr., on the derivation of the modern Tamil alphabet, 567.
- Burton, Lady, her edition of the *Arabian Nights*, 534.
- Burton, Sir R., on the discovery of the original of "Zayn al-Asnam and Aladdin," 326.
- Burty, P., 40.
- Butcher, the Rev. Dr., his remarks on the death of A. Wylie, 502.
- Cænobia, the founder of the, 703.
- Calcutta Review*, summary of the articles contained in the, 183, 336, 538.
- Callery's *Systema Phoneticum* quoted, 216.
- Campbell, J., quotation from his (or Oswald Fry's) "Lost Among the Afghans," concerning the idols at Bamian, 164.
- Campbell, Rev. W., his account of the Pepohwans from whom he obtained the Formosan MSS. sent to Mr. Baber, 426.
- Canarese vocabulary, 562.
- Candidius, George, 418; his description of Formosa, 453.
- Çangam of Madura, a sort of Académie Française, 574.
- Carles, M., on the *Miryeks* of Corea, 553.
- Caste, absence of, amongst the ancient Dravidians, 576.
- Çentamil literature, discussion as to the origin of, 560 *et seq.*
- Çentamil versification, names of the metres of, 568.
- Çentamil vocabulary, 562.
- Çerppan, an old title of the Pāṇḍiyas, 580.
- Chakra, the Buddhist emblem, 240.
- Chakravartti, 203.
- Chalmers' Concise Kanghi quoted, 216.
- Chamberlain, B. II., his translation of the *Kojiki*, 37; his investigations into Japanese place-names, 332; his contributions to Japanese literature, 692.
- Chamberlayne, John, his Formosan version of the Lord's Prayer, 439.
- Chester, Greville, Hittite seal discovered by, 699.
- "Child," pictorial signs representing the word, 643.
- China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society, Reports of meetings of the, 160; 507-8.
- Chinese civil servants sent to study in Western countries, 701.
- Chinese Guilds or Trades Unions, 507.
- Chinese immigrants in the United States, religious ceremonies of the, 702.
- Chinese literature, 179, 331, 542, 701.
- Chinese phonetics, priority of labial letters illustrated in, 207 *et seq.*
- Chinese porcelain, 179.
- Chinese version of H. W. Freeland's poem on "Art," 136.
- Choochur Shah Dowlah, Dr. Cust's remarks on the, 313.
- Chota Rousthaveli, a Georgian poet, 692.
- Christian Egypt, M. Amélineau's history of, 703.
- Christian, John, a writer of hymns in the Hindī vernacular, 141.
- Chronology of Mr. Baber's nine Formosan MSS., 419.
- Churchill, S., his note on Rezā Qulī Khān and his works, 163, 318.
- Chwolson, Prof., his report on Nestorian epitaphs in two recently-discovered Syrian cemeteries, 535.
- Clarke, Dr. Hyde, his remarks in the discussion on the study of Oriental languages, 505; his theory of the common origin of the Egyptian and Babylonian systems of writing, 645.
- Cochin-China, notes on, 331.

- Cockburn, S. J., his account of Sitâ's Window, or Buddha's Shadow Cave, 691.
- Cole, G., his Hittite seal, 699.
- Colebrooke, Sir E. T., his new edition of Mountstuart Elphinstone's "Rise of the British Power in the East, 337, 541.
- Conder, Capt., the exponent of Hittite Inscriptions, 328; his "Altaic Hieroglyphs and Hittite Inscriptions," reviewed by Prof. Sayce, 536; his notion of the origin of Ed Dejjâl, 696.
- Confucius not considered to be a "Myth," 507.
- Confucius, second in the triad of great Chinamen, 701.
- Coptic documents preserved in Arabic, 704.
- CORDIER, M. Henri, "The Life and Labours of Alexander Wylie," Art. XI., pp. 351-368.
- Corea, the *Miryeks* or Stone-men of, 553.
- "Corn," pictorial forms representing the word, 643.
- "Country," ancient pictorial signs for the word, 647, 649.
- Couvreur, Père S., obtains the Stanislas-Julien Prize for his Franco-Chinese Dictionary, 331.
- Cuneiform signs, great difference between those at Babylon and Nineveh, 632.
- Cuneiform Syllabary, G. Bertin's article on the origin and development of the, 625 *et seq.*
- CUNYNGHAME, H., "The Present State of Education in Egypt," Art. VIII., pp. 223-237.
- Curtin, S., his "Religious Ceremonies of the Chinese in the United States," 701.
- Cust, Dr. R. N., his note to Mr. Peacock's West Caucasian vocabularies, 145; his notes on African Philology, 184, 342, 545, 706; his account of the Oriental Congress at Vienna, 185-189; his remarks on the Choochur Shah Dowlah, 313; "The Modern Languages of Oceania," Art. XII., pp. 369-392 (accompanied by a Language-Map); his review of Dr. F. Müller's "Grundriss der Sprachwissenschaft," 546; his review of J. Batchelor's "Aino Grammar," 702; his notes on Oceanic Philology, 706.
- Cypriot system of writing, 653.
- Da Fonseca, Dr. J. N., obituary notice of, 513.
- Damascus, Catalogue of the Arabic MSS. in the Library of, 698.
- Darmesteter, Prof., his notice of the Gajastik Abalish, 700.
- D'Eckstein, Baron, his dreams about the Kushites, 646.
- De Groot, M., his work on Amoy Yearly Feasts, 701.
- DE GUIRAUDON, Capt. T. G., "The Persian for Rouble," and "The Bibliography of Africa," 686.
- De Meynard, M. B., his "Dictionnaire Turc-Français," 330.
- De Perceval, M. Caussin, his theory concerning Zenobia and Zebbâ'u, 585.
- Dening, W., his account of the Gaka-shikaini, 692.
- Diaramocks, the, of Formosa, 456.
- DICKINS, F. V., "The Story of the Old Bamboo-Hewer, a Japanese Romance of the tenth century," Art. I., pp. 1-58.
- DICKSON, Sir J. R. L., obituary notice of, 690.
- "Dimdim," the South Sea Islanders' synonym for English sailors, 380.
- "Dog," archaic forms representing the word, 630.
- Domestic Animals, Assyrian names of, 319.
- Douglas, Prof., his note on *Tsuh fu*, 512.
- Dragon's Head, The Jewel in the, 19.
- Dravidian literature, its soul departed with the advent of Sanskrit, 573.
- Duhalde, on the Formosan aborigines, 416.
- DUKA, Dr. T., "An Essay on the Brâhûi Grammar," etc., Art. II., pp. 59-134. For the table of contents to this article, see p. 135.
- Duport, J. H., his Grammar of the Susu language, 686.
- Duval, M. R., his criticism of Dr. P. Smith's Thesaurus Syriacus, 692.
- Ecole spéciale des Langues orientales vivantes, notice of its new volume of "Mélanges Oriëntaux," and history of its origin and progress, 338-341.
- Ed Dejjâl, Capt. Conder's notion as to the origin of, 696.
- Eden, the Hon. Sir Ashley, obituary notice of, 688.

- EDKINS, the Rev. Dr., "Priority of Labial Letters illustrated in Chinese Phonetics," Art. VII., pp. 207-222 (a lithographed Plate accompanies this Article).
- Egypt, discoveries in, 180.
- Egypt Exploration Fund, Report of the fourth annual meeting of the, 333; "Exhibition of Minor Antiquities" in connexion with the, 703.
- Egypt, the present state of education in, 223 *et seq.*
- Egyptian Inferno, Prof. Maspero's itinerary of the, 703.
- Egyptian origin of the Babylonian writing discussed, 645.
- Egyptian, the Hamitic and Semitic vocabularies in, 649.
- Egyptology, summary of progress in, 333, 542, 702.
- Ekotibhāva*, information requested as to analogues of, 507.
- Encyclopædia Britannica*, the Asiatic articles in the, 54, 184.
- Elliot, Sir W., obituary notice of, 320; memoir of, by Sir A. Arbuthnot, 519-524.
- Ellis, Sir B. H., obituary notice of, 688.
- Elphinstone, Mountstuart, his "History of India," 337, 541.
- Ephthalitæ, the, were probably the Mlechas, 200.
- Epigraphy, notes on, 341, 704.
- Ethiopic grammar, 328.
- Ethnology of the Formosans, 441 *et seq.*
- Esarhaddon, king of Assyria, 678-80.
- Excerpta Orientalia, 170-184, 321-342, 528-548, 691-706.
- Fâ-hien and the Ta-li-lo Valley, 198.
- Fâ-hien, remarks on the Narrative of, by the Rev. S. Beal, 191 *et seq.*
- Fâ-hien's route from Tnn-hwang to Shen-Shen and Wu-i, 194.
- Farhang Jahāngīrī, Dr. Redhouse's note on the, 161.
- Favorlang dialect of Formosa, vocabulary of the, 487 *et seq.*
- Favorlang version of the Lord's Prayer, 473.
- Feathers, The Celestial Robe of, 28 *et seq.*
- Feer, M. L., his Studies in Buddhism, 692.
- Fergusson, J., a tribute of respect to the late, 324.
- Finn, A., his note on the Persian word for Rouble, 317.
- Finzi, F., his monograph on Brāhūi, 60.
- Fish emblem of the Pāṇḍiyas, 580.
- Five Rishis, hymn of the, 618.
- "Fore-arm," as indicating "power," pictorial signs for the, 633, 643.
- Formosa, descriptions of the tribes of the south of, 457.
- Formosa, Notes on the MSS., Races, and Languages of, 413 *et seq.*
- Formosan alphabet at the Royal Printing Office, Vienna, 437 (a reproduction of this is given on page 438).
- Formosan MSS. in the British Museum, description of, 431.
- Formosan versions of the Lord's Prayer, 470.
- Foulk, Lieut. G. C., his photograph of the statue at Un-jin in Corea, 553.
- Four Castes, symbolization of the, 244.
- Fravartish, 204.
- Freeland, W. H., Chinese and Italian versions of his poem on "Art," 136-7.
- French translation of Mes'ūdīyy's "Meadows of Gold" criticized, and quoted, 583.
- Führer, Dr., his copy of an inscription in Gupta characters, 695.
- Fujisan, View of (a chromolithograph illustrating Mr. Dickens' paper), 40.
- Fur Robe, The Flaming Fire-proof, 16.
- Fusago, the lady sent by the Mikado to the Lady Kaguya, 24.
- Gajastik Abalish, a Pahlavi theological discussion, 700.
- Galland's "Thousand and One Nights," 532.
- Gassān, Chronology of the Syrian Princes of, 592.
- Gautama, statues in honour of, 556.
- Genji-monogatari, an early Japanese romance, 37, 43.
- Geographical names, the orthography and transliteration of, 701.
- Georgian, vocabulary of, 146-156.
- Gibbs, J., obituary notice of, 166.
- Gir'dhar Dās, 143.
- "Goddam," the French synonym for the English soldier at Agincourt, 380.
- Grantha alphabet supposed by Dr. Burnell to be the basis of the modern Tamil, 567.
- Graphic development of the Cuneiform syllabary, 626 *et seq.*

- Gravius, Daniel, his translation of St. Matthew and St. John into Formosan, 468; Romanized text of his version of the Lord's Prayer, 470.
- GRIERSON, G. A., "Some Useful Hindi Books," Art. IV., pp. 138-144.
- Grote, A., obituary notice of, 168.
- Growse, F. S., notice of his "Indian Architecture," 324; and of his "Supplement to the Fatchpur Gazetteer," 695.
- Guimet, M., on the Theatre in Japan, 331.
- Guncho ichiran, a Japanese Bibliography, short notices of the legends therein, 42.
- Gunṭupalle, Buddhist remains at, 508 *et seq.*
- Gupta characters, an inscription in, 695.
- Hadendoa, vocabulary of, 706.
- Haggard, A., his note on the idols at Bamian, 164.
- HAIG, Major-General M. R., "Ibnu Batūta in Sindh," Art. XIII., pp. 393-412.
- Hair, customs of wearing the, 575.
- Halevy, M. J., his criticism of Prof. Nöldeke's "Semitische Sprachen," 697; his remarks on the word *adlān* 704, and the Phœnician letter *thēt*, 705.
- Hallusu, king of Babylon, 675; he captures Assur-nadin-sum, 676; and is dethroned and killed, 677.
- Halulû, the battle of, 677.
- Hambroek, Mr., the victim of Koxinga, 418.
- Hammurabi, the Cuneiform documents of his time possess the highest palæographical interest, 633.
- Hamza of Ispāhān, quoted or referred to, 594 *et seq.*
- Hanna, the Christian Maronite, who supplied Galland with some of the material for his "Thousand and One Nights," 533.
- Hanniya Sutra, 43.
- Happart, G., his vocabulary of Favorlang, 472.
- Harischandra, 140, 143, 144.
- Harrison, the Ven. Archdeacon, obituary notice of, 525.
- Hebrew and Semitic languages, 174, 325, 531, 696.
- Hebrew Bible, Çentamil words found in tho, 565.
- Herod's city of Tiberius, 531.
- Hervas, Lorenzo, on the Formosan alphabet, 436.
- Hincks, Dr., the suggester of the Egyptian origin of the Babylonian writing, 645.
- Hindi books, notes on, by G. A. Grierson, 138 *et seq.*
- Hindu music, 183.
- Hittite inscriptions and monuments, 176, 324, 536; seal, 699.
- "Hollow," pictorial signs representing the word, 644.
- Holy Scriptures, progress of the work of translation of the, into languages of Asia, Africa, and Oceania, 708-714.
- Hommel, Dr., his comparative list of Egyptian and Babylonian signs, 647.
- Houghton, the Rev. Mr., Babylonian tablet published by, 632; he was the first demonstrator of the pictorial origin of the Cuneiform syllabary, 642.
- Houtum-Schindler, General, on the translation of the word "Kipōd," 697.
- Howorth, H. H., his remarks on Dr. Cust's lecture on the Languages of Oceania, 308.
- Hu Fêng, diagram of the two Chinese characters for, 422.
- Humbahaldasu I. and II., kings of Elam, 677, 678.
- Hun coins of Bijápúr, 506.
- Hunfalvy, M., on the Turko-Tatár and Finn-Ugric question, A. Vambéry's reply to, 330.
- Hunt, The Royal, 24 *et seq.*
- Ibnu Batūta in Sindh, Major-General M. R. Haig's article on, 393 *et seq.*
- Içai, the poetical dialect of Tamil, 559, 570.
- Iddesleigh, obituary notice of the Earl of, 320.
- Ideology of the Formosan languages, 484.
- Ima-monogatari, or biographies of poets, 43.
- Ima-mukashi-monogatari, a Japanese encyclopædia of habits and customs, 43.
- Indian Antiquary, summary of articles in the, 173, 324, 530, 695.
- Indian Archipelago, Arab colonists in the, 534.
- Indian Notes and Queries, notice of the contents of, 701.
- Indian Pagoda-umbrella, 555.

- Indo-Pacific stock of languages, table of the Formosan dialects belonging to the, 486.
- Inferno, the Egyptian, 703.
- Inscriptions of Palmyra, 323.
- "Instep," explanation of the Chinese symbol representing the word, 206.
- International Congress at Vicuna, 185.
- "Inundate," pictorial sigus representing the verb, 644.
- Iranyar, the author of Agap'porul, 574.
- Isaac of Tiphre, the martyrdom of, 693.
- Ise-mouogatari, the, 43.
- Ishizukuri, one of the suitors of the Lady Kaguya, and how he failed in the task imposed on him by her, 7-9.
- Istarhundu, king of Elam, 675-6.
- Italian Asiatic Society, publications of the, 699, 707.
- Italian version of H. W. Freeland's poem on "Art," 137.
- Iyat, the colloquial dialect of Tamil, 559, 570.
- Izumi Shikibu-monogatari, the love letters of the Princess Murasaki Shikibu, 43.
- Janāni, note on the situation of, 512.
- Japanese literature, short notes on, 37-45, 179, 331, 702.
- Japanese place-names, a subject awaiting investigation, 3.
- Japanese text of the Story of the Old Bamboo-Hewer, transliteration of the, 46-58.
- Japanese theatrical representations, 331.
- Jayakar, Surgeon-Major O. S., his paper on the Arabic dialect spoken at Oman, 535.
- Jebela VI., of the Gassān dynasty, historical note on, 595.
- Jerusalem, description of the Noble Sanctuary at, 247 *et seq.*
- Jewett, J. R., his collection of Syrian proverbs, 698.
- Jitō, the Emperor, 3.
- Journal Asiatique*, notice of articles in the, 170, 321, 529, 692.
- Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, notice of articles in the, 170, 321, 691.
- Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society*, 691.
- Journal of the China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society*, notice of papers in the, 171, 321, 528.
- Journal of the German Oriental Society*, notice of papers in the, 171, 529.
- Journal of the Straits Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society*, notice of papers in the, 174, 528.
- Junius, R., his Formosan version of the Lord's Prayer, 437; Romanized text of the same, 470.
- Justice's "Moneys and Exchanges" quoted, 496.
- Kachāri Bara language, Grammar of the, 335.
- Kachhār Naga tribes, Grammar, etc., of the, 336.
- Kaguya, Lady, the more common name of the heroine of the "Story of the Old Bamboo-Hewer," 1 *et seq.*
- Kaguya, The Upbearing of (a chromolithograph illustrating Mr. Dickins' paper), 40.
- Kālī, the worship of, 580.
- Kamal (or Shams) ad Dīn as Suyūfī, his description of the Noble Sanctuary at Jerusalem, 247 *et seq.*
- Kamissares, governor of Kappadocia, 704.
- Kanobos, discoveries at the supposed site of, 702.
- Kappadocian numismatics, 704.
- Kappadokian syllabary, the, 653.
- Kassite influence on the Cuneiform syllabary, 640.
- Kas'yapa, the author of the Soma hymn, 616.
- Kavirondo, vocabulary of, 706.
- KEENE, H. G., "On the Revenues of the Moghul Empire," Art. XV., pp. 495-499.
- Kie-cha, the Cassia Regio of Ptolemy, = Syr-daryā, the Yellow River, 197.
- King, Captain, his paper on Somālī as a written language, 695.
- "Kipōd" of the Bible, various meanings of the word, 325; Houtum-Schindler on the translation of, 697.
- Kiravan*, meaning of, 577.
- Kirjath Arba, is this the old Hebrew word for "Arabia"? 697.
- Kistvaens, dolmens, and prehistoric graves in India, 693.
- Khotan, Buddhism in, 196.
- Kodama Tadashi, his edition of the Taketori, 44.
- Koduntamil dialects, 569.
- Kojiki, the earliest specimen of Japanese literature, 37.
- Korān, the sacred copy of the, at Mecca, 225.
- Koxinga the Pirate, 418; derivation of his name, 453.
- Krishna, the worship of, 578.

- kudî*, the ancient origin of this termination in the names of towns and villages, 578.
- Kudurru, king of Elam, 677.
- Kunanda, the coins of, 341.
- Kundu and Sisû, the king of, 679.
- Kung-Ti, the Emperor, erects a statue of Buddha, 556.
- Kuramochi, one of the suitors of the Lady Kaguya, and how he failed in the task imposed on him by her, 10-16.
- Kurraver, another name for the semi-agricultural communities, 578.
- Kurrinchimakkal, the ancient Dravidian semi-agricultural tribes, 578.
- Kushite origiu of the Babylonian writing is doubtful, 646.
- Kuttab schools in Egypt, 227.
- Kwanzan, the Mikado, 43.
- Labial letters, priority of, illustrated in Chinese phonetics, 207 *et seq.*
- LACOUPERIE, Prof. Terrien de, "Formosa Notes on MSS., Races, and Languages," Art. XIV., pp. 413-494 (with three plates—an "Analytical Summary of Contents" is prefixed to this article on pp. 414-416, to which the searcher is referred); "The Miryeks or Stone-men of Corea," Art. XVI., pp. 553-557 (with a Plate).
- "Lagash," the Cuneiform mode of writing the word, 628.
- Lama Tsan-po Nomian Khan of Audo, 691.
- Landberg, Dr. C. Graf von, his "Critica Arabica," 533.
- Languages, etc., of Formosa, 413 *et seq.*
- Lasseu, Prof. C., his criticism of Major Leech's contributions to our knowledge of Brâhûi, 59.
- Lawes, the Rev. W. G., his Grammar, etc., of the Motu tribe, 706.
- Laz, vocabulary of, 146-156.
- LE STRANGE, G., "Description of the Noble Sanctuary at Jerusalem," Art. X., pp. 247-305 (with a Plan of the Haram-ash-Sharîf).
- Leech, Major, his contributions to Brâhûi literature, 59.
- Legge, Dr. J., his notice of A. Wylie, 353.
- Lenormant, F., his Assyrian studies, 625; his theory of the origin of the Chinese system of writing, 653.
- Levi, Dr. S., his "Hieroglyphic-Coptic-Hebrew Vocabulary," 326.
- Levi, M. S., his opinion of Rudrata and Ruyyaka, 699.
- Lillie, Arthur, his "Buddhism in Christendom," 705.
- Lion tribe of Ceylon, legend of the, 205.
- Lockhart, W., his remarks on the death of A. Wylie, 501; his memoir and list of A. Wylie's works, 513-519.
- Long, the Rev. J., obituary notice of, 524.
- Lord's Prayer in Formosan, 437; the Romanized versions of Junius and Gravius, 470; a Favorlang version, 473.
- Löwe, Rev. W. H., notice of his "Hebrew Grammar," 696.
- Lunar worship, 602.
- Ludolph, Job, his Formosan version of the Lord's Prayer, 438.
- Lyon, Prof. D., his analysis of "Delitzsch's Assyrisches Wörterbuch," 698.
- "Magyar," derivation of the word, 330.
- Maitreya, the statue of, 198.
- Makûa language, Arab tales in the, 706.
- Maldives, the curious modern Alphabet of the, 489.
- Ma'mûn, the Khalif, 700.
- "Man," archaic forms representing the word, 630-31.
- Mandingo family of African languages, 686.
- Manucci, the Italian physician of Aurangzeb, 496.
- Marotada, one of the suitors of the Lady Kaguya, and how he failed in the task imposed on him by her, 38 n.
- Marutamakkal, the ancient Dravidian agricultural tribes, 576.
- Maspero, Dr., his confusion of the Kushites with the Ethiopians, 646; his itinerary of the Egyptian Inferno, 703.
- Masson's collection of Brâhûi words, 62.
- Matsuho-monogatari, a Japanese romance, 44.
- Matthews, H., his reply to the Address presented to the Queen by the Royal Asiatic Society, 551.
- Max Denso Hall Literary Society at Karachi, first report of the, 700.

- "Meadows of Gold," the French translation of Mes'ûdiyy's, quoted and referred to, 583 *et seq.*
- Melanesia, characteristics of the languages of, 374 *et seq.*
- "Men with tails," the evidence proving that this "ethnological fable" is a fact, 453 *et seq.*
- Menant, Dr., his Grammar of Assyrian, 625.
- Menanu, king of Elam, 677.
- Merodach-baladan, king of Babylon, 674.
- Mes'ûdiyy, his imperfect account of the Gassāu and Lakhm dynasties, 584.
- Mibirakula, and his atrocious cruelty, 199; his interview with the mother of Balāditya, 201.
- Mikronesia, characteristics of the languages of, 377 *et seq.*
- Mills, Rev. L. H., his translation of the Zend Avesta, 700.
- Mimurodo Imube no Akita, the less common name of the heroine of the "Story of the Old Bamboo-Hewer," 2.
- Miumamoto Jun, the reputed author of the Taketori, 42.
- Mingrelian, vocabulary of, 146-156.
- Miryeks or Stone-men of Corea, 553.
- Mllechas, probably the Ephthalitæ, 200.
- Moabite Stone, the, 173.
- Modern India, notes on the literature of, 182, 334, 538, 701.
- Modern Languages of Oceania, 369-381; bibliographical list of the, 382-392.
- Moghul Empire, revenues of the, 495.
- Mosque al Azhar, the University at the, 229.
- Motu language of New Guinea, Grammar, etc., of the, 706.
- Mount Horāi, The Jewel-bearing Branch of, 10.
- "Mouth," pictorial forms representing the word, 643.
- Mullaimakkal, the ancient Dravidian pastoral tribes, 578.
- Müller, Dr., review of his "Grundriss der Sprachwissenschaft," 546.
- Müller, Prof. M., his review of Prof. Peterson's edition of the Hitopadesa, 699.
- "Multiply," pictorial signs representing the verb, 644.
- Munshi Rādhā Lāl, a compiler of Hindī books, 138.
- Murādi tankas, 498.
- Murasaki Shibiku, Princess, the author of the Genji-monogatari, 43.
- Musezib-Marduk, king of Babylon, 677.
- Nabonassar, king of Babylon, 672-673.
- Nabonassar Ummanigas, king of Elam, 673.
- Nādagam, the dramatical dialect of Tannil, 559, 570.
- Nadinnu, king of Babylon, 673.
- Nanbi, the author of Agap'porul, 574.
- Naukratis, discussion on the age of, 703.
- Naville, E., nine recent explorations by, 702.
- Nebuchadnezzar, analysis of the name, 634.
- Negritos in Formosa, 444, 458.
- Negro, the, his capability of attaining the higher degrees of civilization, 705.
- Nergal-usêzib, king of Babylon, 676.
- Nestorian epitaphs, 535.
- Neubauer, Dr., his Catalogue of the Bodleian Hebrew MSS., 326; his suggestions in Semitic philology, 697.
- New Guinea, languages of, 706.
- Neytamakkal, the ancient Dravidian fishing tribes, 579.
- Nicholson, Dr. J., obituary notice of, 321.
- Nicolson, Capt., his Brāhūi Reader, 61.
- Nirvāṇa, 239.
- Nishāpūr, General Houtum-Schindler's note on, 164.
- Noble Sanctuary at Jerusalem, description of the, 247 *et seq.*
- Nöldeke's "Semitische Sprachen," 697.
- Norris, E., apparently favoured the theory of the Egyptian origin of the Cuneiform syllabary, 645.
- Notes of the Quarter, September, October, November, 1886, 157-189; December, 1886, January, February, 1887, 306-349; March, April, May, 1887, 500-551; June, July, August, 1887, 682-720.
- Numerals, table of the, in the dialects of Formosa, 475-6.
- Numismatics, recent contributions to, 341, 544, 704.
- Nut, the Goddess, 649, and Nu, the God, 649 *n.*
- Nuyts, P., the first Dutch Governor of Taiwan, 443.

- Obituary Notices.** See Andrew, Da Fonseca, Dickson, Eden, Elliot, Ellis, Gibbs, Grote, Harrison, Iddesleigh, Long, Nicholson, Sarvardhikari, Shirt, Stenzler, Wylie.
- Oceania, the Modern Languages of, Dr. Cust's article on, accompanied by a Language-Map and a Bibliography, 369-392.
- Oceania, the various theories propounded for the existence of the Races of, 370-371.
- Ochikubo-monogatari, popularly ascribed to Minamoto Jun, 42.
- Odenathus = 'Udheyina, 588.
- Oman, a paper on the Arabic dialect spoken at, 535.
- Omina-meshi-monogatari, narratives of celebrated Japanese women, 44.
- "One heart," explanation of the Chinese symbols representing, 206.
- Oread's Haunt, The (a Chromolithograph illustrating Mr. Dickins' paper), 40. [N.B.—On the Plate unfortunately printed "Dreads' Haunt."]
- Oriental languages, discussion on the advantages of studying, 504-506.
- Oriental studies in England, statement of the Committee appointed to inquire into the best means for the promotion of, 342 *et seq.*, 714.
- Otomo no Miyuki, one of the suitors of the Lady Kaguya, and how he failed in the task imposed on him by her, 19-24.
- Oxford examinations for B.A., etc., list of subjects for the Honour Schools in Indian and Semitic studies, 705.
- Pachome, St., M. Amélineau's study on, 703.
- paḍi*, the ancient origin of this termination in the names of villages and towns, 579.
- Pahāri or Maler language, new publications in the, 335.
- Pahlavi literature, 700.
- pākkam*, the ancient origin of this termination in the names of small towns, 580.
- Pālainākkal, the ancient Drāvidian Nomadic tribes, 580.
- Palembang, a desirable place to search for Buddhist remains, 205.
- Palestino Exploration Fund, 172, 324, 531, 696.
- Palestine Pilgrims' Text Society, 326.
- Pallāvaram, prehistoric graves near, 693.
- Paṇḍit Bihārī Lāl Chaubē, a compiler of Hindī books, 139.
- Paṇḍit Chhotū Rām Tiwārī, a compiler of Hindī books, 142.
- Paṇḍit Kālī Prasād Tiwārī, 143.
- Paṇḍit Ravidatta S'ukla, 143.
- Paṇḍit Rishi Kesh Shastri, 700.
- Pāṇḍiyan*, meaning of, 577.
- Pāṇḍiyas, antiquity of the, supported by the evidence of ancient geographers and historians, 563-65.
- Pao-Yun, the probable author of "Narrative of Fā-hien's Travels," 191.
- Parbati Churn Roy's article on "High Education in Bengal," 540.
- Parker, E. H., his contributions to Japanese literature, 692.
- Patesi, the, 640.
- patnam*, the ancient origin of this termination in the names of modern large towns and cities, 579.
- PEACOCK, Mr., "Original Vocabularies of Five West Caucasian Languages," Art. V., pp. 145-156.
- Peiser, Dr., on the classification of the Cuneiform characters, 641.
- Pelam dialect of Formosa, vocabulary of the, 487 *et seq.*
- Pen for writing Arabic and Gothic characters, 237.
- Penka, M., his "Herkunft der Aryer" applauded by M. S. Rainach, 699.
- Pepo-hwan dialect of Formosa, vocabulary of the, 487 *et seq.*
- Perrot et Chipiez' "Histoire de l'Art," 323.
- Persia, the possibility of her regaining a position amongst nations, 533.
- Persian conquest of Babylonia, decay of Cuneiform writing after the, 633.
- Persian literature, 178, 329, 538; notes on, by S. J. A. Churchill, 318.
- Persian syllabary, the, 653.
- Peters, Dr., his unsuccessful attempt to derive the Phœnician alphabet from the Cuneiform syllabary, 654.
- Peterson, Prof., his third Report on the search for Sanskrit MSS., 691; his edition of the Hitopadesa, 699.
- Phanidjoit, M. Amélineau's article on, 703.
- Phœnician letter *thét*, remarks on the, 705.
- Phœnician, unsuccessful attempts to derive the alphabet of, from the Cuneiform syllabary, 654.

- Phonetic development of the Cuneiform syllabary, 633 *et seq.*
- Pictorial origin of the Cuneiform characters, 642 *et seq.*
- Pigeon Monastery at Sri Sâilam, 205.
- PINCHES, T. G., "Assyrian Names of Domestic Animals," 319; discoveries by, in the Cuneiform syllabary, 627, 631, 632, 643, 649; "The Babylonian Chronicle," Art. XXI., pp. 655-681 (previously mentioned on page 327).
- PINCOTT, F., "Tho Tri-Ratna," Art. IX., pp. 238-246 (illustrated with woodcuts in the text); "The First Maṇḍala of the Rîg-Veda," Art. XIX., pp. 598-624.
- Pischel, Dr., his edition of Rudrata and Ruyyaka, 699.
- Pizzi, M., his article on Semitic words in Firdusi's Shah Namah, 696.
- Pollock, Sir R., 60.
- Pool, S. L., a new fasciculus of Lane's Arabic Lexicon edited by, 697.
- Polynesia, characteristics of the languages of, 372 *et seq.*
- Portuguese origin of Psalmanazar's information concerning Formosa, 464 *et seq.*
- Poru', a term for old Drâvidian literature, 574.
- Pre-Sanskrit element in ancient Tamil literature, 558 *et seq.*
- Present state of Education in Egypt, 223 *et seq.*
- Priority of labial letters illustrated in Chinese phonetics, Dr. Edkins' article on, 207 *et seq.*
- Procopius' account of the Ephthalitæ, 201.
- Psalmanazar, George, 424; he must be acquitted of the charge of having invented the Formosan alphabet, 437; 450; his account of the Formosan numerals, 464.
- Psammetichos, a name inscribed on a recently discovered sphinx, 702.
- Publications received in exchange by the Royal Asiatic Society, xii.
- Purap' Foru', a Tamil work on war, 574.
- Purushamedha sacrifice, the, 607, 620, 623.
- "Quinquennial Assembly" of Asoka, etc., 192.
- "R. N.," the celebrated Indian traveller known by these initials, 701.
- Rabbinowicz, Dr., his new edition of the French translation of the Babylonian Talmud, 697.
- Rainach, S., his review of Penka's "Herkunft der Aryer," 699.
- Râja Gopala, the cave of, 695.
- Ramses, the statue of, given to Great Britain by Muhammad Ali, 542.
- Rawlinson, Sir H. C., his remarks on Dr. Bellew's paper, 504; his observations on the advantages of Oriental teaching, 505.
- REDHOUSE, Dr. J. W., "Persian Name for the Rouble," 161; "The Farhang Jahângîrî," 161; "Were Zenobia and Zebbâ'u identical?" Art. XVIII., pp. 583-597.
- Reinach, T., his essay on Kappadocian coins, 704.
- Reizei, the Mikado, 43.
- Report of the Council at the Anniversary Meeting, iv-xii.
- Rest-seasons, or religious retreats of the Buddhists, 193.
- Resûliyy dynasty, history of the, 591.
- Reynolds, Rev. J., his "History of the Temple of Jerusalem" pulled to pieces, 247 *et seq.*
- Rezá Qulî Khân, and his works, 163, 318.
- Rîg-Veda, F. Pincott's article on the First Maṇḍala of the, 598 *et seq.*
- Rodgers, C., his analysis of thirty coins, 341.
- Rômaji-kai, Society for the Romanization of Japanese, 45.
- Rost, Dr., his influence in securing the Burmese Royal MSS., 331; his letter in favour of lending MSS. from Public Libraries, 541.
- Rouble, Persian name for the, 161, 317, 686.
- ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY, Reports of meetings of the, 157-158; 306-313; 500-506; 682; Anniversary meeting, 504-506; Address by, to the Queen, 549-551; Report of the Special Committee, 714-720 (the Appendixes to this Report are given in Part II. at p. 348); Proceedings of the Sixty-fourth Anniversary Meeting, i-xvi; Balance-sheet of the, vi; Officers and Council of the, xi.
- Rumianzof Cabinet, the number of the coins in the, 544.
- Rusden, G. W., his remarks on Dr. Cust's lecture on the Languages of Oceania, 307.

- Sabbagh, Michael, his MS. of the Arabian Nights recently acquired by the Bibliothèque Nationale, 533.
- Sacred Books of the East, 183, 700.
- Saint-Martin, M., his conjecture regarding Zenobia and Zebbā'u, 586.
- S'akra-deva's visit to Buddha, 206 (a Plate in illustration of this subject is appended).
- Salmoné, H. A., his remarks on the study of Oriental languages, 504.
- Saoduchinos, king of Babylon, 680.
- Sanskrit Critical Journal*, 700.
- Sanskrit literature, 177, 328, 537, 699.
- Sanskrit MSS. recently acquired by the Bodleian Library, 537.
- Sanugi no Miyakko, the Old Bamboo-hewer, 1 *et seq.*
- Saracen art in Egypt, 182.
- Sarat Chandra Dās, his account of Tibet, 691.
- Sargon, king of Assyria, 674.
- Sargon of Agade, the fifth period of the Cuneiform syllabary began with the age of, 640.
- Sarvadhikari**, Babu Prasanna Kumar, obituary notice of, 320.
- S'atarchin, the meaning of the term, 614.
- Satow, M., his account of the Otsu-bomonogatari, 42.
- Sayce, Prof., his review of Capt. Conder's "Altaic Hieroglyphs and Hittite Inscriptions," 536; announcement of his forthcoming article on the Vannic Inscriptions, 720.
- Schindler, General, 164.
- Schools in Egypt, description of the new European, 230 *et seq.*
- Schulze, B., his Formosan version of the Lord's Prayer, 437.
- Schumacher, Herr, the publication of his "Jaulan" and Ajlūn Memoirs, 696.
- Sek-hwan dialect of Formosa, vocabulary of the, 487 *et seq.*
- Semitic origin of the Cuneiform writing abandoned, 644.
- Semites of Babylonia, decadence of the, 640.
- SENĀTHI RĀJĀ, E. S. W., "The Pre-Sanskrit Element in Ancient Tamil Literature," Art. XVII., pp. 558-582.
- "Sending" of Muḥammed, remarks on the, 594.
- Sennacherib, king of Assyria, invades Babylonia, 670, and Elam, 676, 677; is killed by one of his sons, 678, 679.
- "Servant," pictorial signs representing the word, 643.
- Severini's translation of the Taketori, 39.
- Sewell, the Rev. R., his note on "Buddhist Remains at Guṇṭupalle," 508-511 (illustrated with two Plates).
- Shah Nameh, instances of Semitic words found in the, 696.
- Shaiyang Miri language, Grammar of the, 336.
- Shalmaneser, king of Assyria and Babylon, 673-4.
- Shemida = Sumeida', 588.
- Shen-Shen, note on the clothing of the people in, 196.
- Shirt**, Rev. G., obituary notice of, 687.
- Sidon, the king of, 679.
- Sidon, sarcophagi recently found near, 696.
- Siṃha, the Buddhist Patriarch, slain by Mihirakula, 199; story of the "white milk" gushing from his body, 200.
- Siṃhala, origin of the word, 205.
- Siudh, Ibnu Batūta in, 393 *et seq.*
- Skanda, the worship of, 576, 578.
- Smeaton's "Loyal Karens of Burma," 331.
- Smith, G., his attribution of graphic doublets to the Babylonian scribes, 631.
- Smith, Dr. Payne, M. Duval's criticism of his Thesaurus Syriacus, 692.
- Smith, Prof. R., adopts the theory of the identity of Zenobia and Zebbā'u, 584.
- Société Asiatique, present of books by the, to the Royal Asiatic Society, 306.
- Société Asiatique, Reports of meetings of the, 160; 316-317; 508; 684.
- Solar worship, 601.
- Soma, the importance of the, in the Vedic ritual, 616.
- Somāli language, the Semitic element in the, 695-6.
- Spearman, Major H. R., compiler of the "Burma Gazetteer," 556.
- Speijer, Dr., on Sanskrit Syntax, 328.
- "Stand," archaic forms representing the verb, 629.
- Steere, Mr., his remarks on the ancient MSS. of the Pepohwans, 417.
- Stenzler**, Prof. A., obituary notice of, 526.
- Stieng language, dictionary of the, 331, 707.

- Stockholm, arrangements for the forthcoming Oriental Congress to be held at, 542.
- Stone-men of Corea, the, 553.
- Straits Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society, Reports of meetings of the, 159.
- Strassmaier, Dr., Cuneiform contract tablets published by, 633; his supposition of a relationship between Akkadian and Egyptian, 650.
- Sufi mysticism, 538.
- Sumerian influence on the Cuneiform syllabary, 639.
- Sumiyoshi-mouogatari, a Japanese love-story, 43.
- Sum-ukin, king of Babylon, 673.
- Sundara Pāṇḍiyan, the age of, 573.
- Sung-yun's account of the Ye-tha, 200-201.
- Susu language of Africa, 686.
- Suyematsu's translation of the Genji-monogatari, 37, 43.
- Swanetian, vocabulary of, 146-156.
- Swastika, the Buddhist emblem, 244 (illustrated).
- Syriae literature, 177, 535.
- Syrian proverbs, a collection of, 693.
- Tabnit, inscription of king, 705.
- Taketori, a Japanese story, 37.
- Taketori - no - Okina - no - Monogatari, English version of the, 1-36; notes on the, and on Japanese literature, 37-45; Romanized transliteration of the, 46-58.
- Taketori, various editions of the, 44.
- Takshasila, 202.
- Tamil alphabet, the, independent of Sanskrit, 566.
- Tamil language, two theories of the origin of the, 559-60.
- Tamil literature, the pre-Sanskrit element in ancient, 558 *et seq.*
- Tanaka Daishu, his edition of the Taketori, 44.
- Taqsim-jamas, 498.
- Tarsus, seal found near, 699.
- Tavernier, his estimate of the value of "The Great Table Diamond," 496.
- Taylards (*i.e.* men with tails), evidence in favour of, 453 *et seq.*
- Taylor, G., his work on the aborigines of Formosa, 457.
- Tedmur, the famous city, 589.
- Teloni, Dr. B., his Assyrian Chrestomathy, 699.
- Telugu vocabulary, 562.
- Temple, Capt., his address on the publications issued under his supervision, 309-313.
- Tenjiku = Northern India, 6.
- Theebaw's Pali and Burmese MSS. now in the India Office Library, 331.
- Theobald, W., on the coins of Kunanda, 341.
- Thesaurus Syriaeus, 183.
- Thomas, E., his overestimate of Moghul revenues controverted, 495.
- Thorowgood, Mr., his excavations at Pallāvaram, 694.
- Tiglath-pileser (III.), king of Assyria, usurps the throne of Babylon, 673.
- Tin-yūt, or Tin-yue, explanation of the compound, 192.
- Tipuns, the, of Formosa, peculiar marital custom of, 457.
- Tōgen senseki, a Chinese legend quoted from, 40.
- Tolkāpiyam, a Tamil grammar, the oldest grammatical work extant, 538.
- Tomkins, the Rev. Mr., referred to, 628.
- Transactions of the Asiatic Society of Japan*, notice of articles published in the, 322, 692.
- Trial of skill, curious Hindī, 143.
- Tri-Ratna, F. Pineott's article on the, 238 *et seq.*
- Triśūla, the Buddhist emblem, 241.
- Trumpp, Dr., his Brāhūi Grammar, 61.
- TSENG, THE MARQUIS, "Art, a Chinese Version of an English Poem by H. W. Freeland," Art. III., pp. 136-137.
- Ts'in Shih Hwang Ti, third in the triad of great Chinamen, 701.
- Tsuh fu, 'the instep,' Prof. Douglas' note on, 512.
- Tsui-hwan dialect of Formosa, vocabulary of the, 437 *et seq.*
- Tsung-Ling Mountains, note on, 197.
- Tul'si Dās, 140, 143.
- Turkey, present of books to the Royal Asiatic Society by the Sultan of, 306.
- Turkish Inscriptions, 700.
- "Turkish Race," Vambéry's work on the, 330.
- Turkish literature, 178, 330, 700.
- Uchimaro, a family of noted craftsmen, 10, who explain to Lady Kaguya the falsehood of Prince Kuramoechi, 14.
- Udyāna, desolation of the district of, by Mihirakula, 199.
- Ukin-zēr (Chinzirus), king of Babylon, 673.

- Ummanigas, king of Elam, 674.
 University at the Mosque al Azhar in Cairo, 229.
 Un-jin in Corea, description of a colossal statue at, 553.
 Upanishad literature, Prof. Whitney's remarks on, 700.
 -*ur*, the ancient origin of this termination in the names of large towns and districts, 577.
 Urdu, proposed new English-Hindustani Dictionary, 334.
 Urtagu, king of Elam, 679.
 Utsubo-monogatari, popularly ascribed to Minamoto Jun, 42.
 Vambéry, A., his "Turkish Race," and reply to M. Hunfalvy on the Turko-Tatár and Finn-Ugric question, 330.
 Van den Berg, M. L. W. C., his "Hadhramout et les Colonies de l'Archipel Indien," 534.
 Vannic syllabary, the, 653, 720.
 Varuna, the worship of, 576.
 Vatteruttu, the ancient Tamil alphabet, 567.
 VICTORIA, Address from the Royal Asiatic Society to Her Majesty the Queen, 549.
Vienna Oriental Journal, notice of papers in the, 341.
 Vienna, the Oriental Congress at, in 1886, 185-189.
 Vijayanagar, account of the ruins of, 530.
 Vocabularies of words in Formosan dialects, 473.
 Wade, Sir T., his collection of Chinese books at Cambridge, 179; his note on Dr. Edkins' paper on the priority of labial letters, 207.
 War, the nine branches of, amongst the Dravidians, 574.
 WATSON, Major C. M., his notes on the School of Modern Oriental Languages at Paris, 338-341.
 "Wce-wce," the South Sea Islanders' synonym for Frenchmen, 380.
 West Caucasian languages, vocabularies of five, 145-156.
 Whinfield, E. H., his translation of Jalálu'd-din Rumi's "Masnavi," 538.
 Whitney, Prof., his translation of the Katha Upanishad, 700.
 Wills, Dr. C. J., notice of his "Persia as it is," 329.
 Wilson, E. C., his lament at not finding a publisher for his translation of the Baháristán of Jámí, 538.
 Winckler, Dr., his publication of the Babylonian Chronicle, 655.
 Winslow, Dr., his remarks on the Tamil language, 538.
 Wolf, the fabled origin of the Turkish race from a, 206.
 Wollaston, A. N., his memoir of the Hon. Sir Ashley Eden, 688.
 Wong Puh's legend of "the flowing milk," 199.
 Wylie, A., obituary notices of, 320, 500; M. H. Cordier's article on his life and labours, 351-368; memoir of, by W. Lockhart, 513; list of his works in Chinese and translations, 516.
 Yamato-kotoba, archaic Japanese, 45.
 Yamato-monogatari, a collection of Japanese love-stories, 43.
 Ye Dharmá, the phrase commencing the Buddhist confession of faith (illustrated), 242.
 Ye-tha of Sung-yun were probably the Ephthalitæ, 201.
 Yü the Great, first in the triad of great Chinamen, 701.
 Yue-chis = Vajjis, 203.
 Yule, Colonel, his opening address at the Anniversary Meeting, I-II.
 Yuzgat Seal, the, 699.
 Zaing-ga-naing, the statue of Gautama at, 556.
 Zebbā'u, a woman's nickname, 589.
Zeitschrift für Assyriologie, notice of papers in the, 175, 328.
 Zend Avesta, Rev. L. H. Mills' translation of the, 700.
 Zenobia, was she identical with Zebbā'u? 583 *et seq.*
 Zēr-bêt-üssur, of the land of Tantim, 678.
 Zigarat, ancient forms representing a, 632.
 Zotenberg, M. H., his note on the Thousand and One Nights, 532.

ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY.

PROCEEDINGS

OF

THE SIXTY-FOURTH ANNIVERSARY MEETING OF THE SOCIETY,

Held on the 16th of May, 1887,

SIR THOMAS F. WADE, K.C.B., VICE-PRESIDENT,

IN THE CHAIR.

OPENING ADDRESS, FROM THE PRESIDENT.

(Read by the Honorary Secretary.)

GENTLEMEN,

In unavoidable absence and under much bodily weakness, I write these few remarks as a meagre substitute for a Presidential Address, which I beg the Secretary to be kind enough to read to the Society.

It is a matter of deep regret to me that I am prevented by serious illness from doing for the last time my duties as President. That you should have placed me in this Chair two years ago may, as I am apt to think, not have been altogether judicious; but be that as it may, you then conferred on me the greatest honour that I have attained in life. And I shall, whilst I live, so regard the choice which placed me in the succession between Sir William Muir and Sir Thomas Wade, to say nothing of earlier illustrious predecessors; and glad I should have been to preside once more at this Annual

Meeting, and at our Dinner, and to introduce to you formally my distinguished successor, Sir Thomas Wade.

There is much in the recent history of the Society that we can look upon with satisfaction. It has been to me a piece of good fortune that my Presidency has synchronized with the tenure of the Secretaryship by our esteemed friend, Sir Frederic Goldsmid; to his excellent service we are deeply indebted. Under his conduct both the *Finances of the Society*, by which we must in the present measure its prosperity, and the *Journal of the Society*, by which its value will be measured in future years, have made important advances.

As regards the financial position, our nett increase of Membership during the year now expiring amounts to 4 Resident and 19 Non-Resident; whilst our invested fund has once more reached the water-mark of £1200, from which it began to sink 19 years ago.¹

The *Journal* again, in mass of matter, and in excellence of form, has continued to improve; whilst in regularity of issue it has made a great advance, though difficulties have still beset the attainment of perfection. If we cannot claim for its contents the high value which distinguished the *Journal* in its early years, yet there has been steady growth in that respect, and such papers as those by the officers of the Frontier Survey, illustrating the remains at Bámián, by Mr. Colborne Baber, on documents in a language of Formosa, and by Professor Terrien de Lacouperie in the prosecution of his learned researches on ancient and obscure developments of Oriental writing, will always be turned to as valuable.

That our matter on the whole does not come up to the standard of earlier days is due, I conceive, in a measure to the great multiplication of learned and scientific societies of

¹ It is but right, however, to state that if we compare our list with that of May, 1885—two anniversaries ago—while a present gain of 15 is shown in our Non-Residents, there is a decrease of 11 apparent in Resident Members. This is owing notably to the heavy death-roll of that year, and many retirements during the period succeeding the decease of the late Secretary, and prior to the instalment of his successor.

late years, and the consequent far greater subdivision of research. It is due also no doubt to that decay or diminution in the pursuit of Oriental studies in this country, to which the Council of your Society has lately drawn prominent attention, and on which a special Committee which we appointed has reported. Not much as yet has resulted, even in the way of reply to the circular letters which we issued with the printed Report of that Committee; and I can only point to one such reply as encouraging, viz. that from the Hebdomadal Council at Oxford. Our action, if followed up by ourselves, may yet bear fruit. But I myself confess to a feeling that the decay which we lament has its origin in causes deeper than we can easily reach, and akin to changes which seem to be affecting English public character on sides more seriously touching the probabilities of our coming history than even the decay of zeal for Oriental learning in a nation which has been brought, in God's providence, to rule so wide an Oriental Empire.

I turn from these vast considerations; but before I close these few paragraphs, I feel constrained to recur to the sad catalogue of losses which the Society has had to bear during the two years of my incumbency. In no equal space of time, I should think, since its foundation, have we had to count up such a list of the tallest flowers of our field cut down; a list embracing the names of Vaux, Phayre, Fergusson, Edward Thomas, Arthur Grote and Walter Elliot. It will be long I fear before such another list can be formed; but I trust our younger Members will do their best to promote its growth. With hearty gratitude to the Society, and especially to my colleagues in the Council, who have always given me such cordial support, and to my friend the Secretary, I now make over the Chair to Sir Thomas Wade.¹

¹ For further proceedings, in reference to the President's Address and subsequent Report, see Notes of the Quarter.

REPORT.

The Council of the Royal Asiatic Society have to report that, since the last Anniversary Meeting held on Monday, May 17, 1886, there have been the following decrease in, and addition to, the numbers of the Society's Members.

They announce with regret the loss by *death* of seven *Resident* Members, viz. :—

Sir William Andrew, C.I.E.
James Gibb, Esq., C.S.I., C.I.E.
Arthur Grote, Esq.
The Venerable Archdeacon Harrison, M.A.
The Right Hon. the Earl of Iddesleigh, K.C.B.
The Rev. James Long.
Mrs. M. A. Smith.

and of one *Non-Resident* Member,

Dr. José de Fonseca.

Also the loss, by retirement, of three *Resident* Members,

Philip Sandys Melvill, Esq., C.S.I.
W. G. Pedder, Esq.
General George Ramsay.

and three *Non-Resident* Members,

Lieut.-Col. H. H. Godwin-Austen, F.R.S.
W. Trevor Roper, Esq.
Major-Gen. F. W. Stubbs, R.A.

On the other hand, they have great pleasure in announcing that they have elected fourteen *Resident* Members, viz. :—

Surgeon-General W. R. Cornish, C.I.E.
General John Baillie.
Mr. Jahangir Kama.
Louisa Lady Goldsmid.
Dr. J. Anderson.
Mrs. Fiun.
Pandit Shám Láll.
Pandit Lakhshmi Naráyan.
Mr. C. F. Johnston.
Mr. S. W. Graystone.
Mr. H. Hallett.
Mr. W. C. Capper.
Professor W. Robertson Smith, M.A.
Mr. W. Simpson, Assoc. R.I.B.A.

and twenty-three *Non-Resident* Members,

Mr. William Davies.
Mr. C. A. Cookson, C.B.
Mr. J. H. Barber.
Mr. S. M. Burrows.
Mr. J. K. Bireh.
Mr. Heetor van Cuylenberg.
Mr. J. D. Rees.
Mr. G. Staek.
Mr. Jai Singh Rao Angria.
Mr. Raganathji.
Mr. Venkatramana Naidu.
Lieut. W. H. Simpson.
Mr. W. McDouall.
Mr. A. Rae.
Mr. C. De Morgan.
Mr. C. Mullaly.
M. A. Baumgartner.
Dr. Marc Aurel Stein.
Mr. R. M. Henderson.
Mr. S. E. Wheeler.
Rev. E. Sell.
Professor Montet.
M. Enrico Vitto.

The difference showing a nett gain to the Society of twenty-three Members.

Under the last year's arrangements providing for a quarterly record of occurrences likely to interest the readers of the Royal Asiatic Society's Journal, obituary notices no longer appear in the Annual Report, and the retrospect of the more recent progress in Oriental research will be found elsewhere. The next subject, therefore, for submission is the account of the Receipts and Expenditure for 1886, as certified by the Auditors:—

ABSTRACT OF RECEIPTS AND EXPENDITURE FOR THE YEAR 1886.

RECEIPTS.		EXPENDITURE.	
	£ s. d.		£ s. d.
Balance at Bankers', January 1, 1886	337 9 11	Rents—House	300 0 0
136 Resident Members at £3 3s.	...	Insurance	5 0 0
126 Non-Resident Members at £1 1s.	...	Water and Gas	26 11 9
1 Non-Resident Member at £1	602 13 0	Salaries—Secretary and Assistants (5 quarters)	296 13 4
Arrears—Resident Members	...	Bedford (pension)	25 0 0
Non-Resident Members	£6 6	Housekeeper	60 0 0
2 Non-Resident Members	£13 13	Journal—Printing Vol. XVIII. 4 Parts	286 14 10
Rents—	...	Illustrations	41 9 0
British Association	...	Books purchased	32 6 1
University Extension Society	...	" repaired and bound	23 16 11
Hellenic Society (half-year)	...	Stationery	13 17 1
Aristotelian Society	...	Miscellaneous Printing	4 9 3
Numismatic Society	...	Postage and parcels	26 9 2
Hermetic Society	...	Advertisements	3 11 6
Donation from the India Office	210 0 0	Reporter	2 2 0
Dividend on Consols	30 9 0	Repairs (Bywaters)	10 13 7
Returned Cheque	13 13 0	Houshold, Coals, etc.	9 18 10
Sale of Journal	79 4 5	Errand Boy	6 4 0
		Repaid Cheque	13 13 0
		Investment	100 2 6
		Total Expenditure	1288 12 10
		Balance at Bank, Dec. 31, 1886	193 14 6
			£1482 7 4

Amount of Society's Funds,
Three per cent. Consols £1100.

Examined and found correct,
May 10, 1887.

F. V. DICKINS,
G. W. RUSDEN,
E. DELMAR MORGAN.

The items that require notice are :—1st, Salaries, which this year are shown to amount to £232 15s. in excess of 1885. Explanation of the apparent discrepancy is to be found in the circumstance that in the second half of the latter year no Secretary's remuneration was debited in account. From Mr. Vaux's death in June, the Hon. Secretary, Mr. Cust, performed the duties gratuitously up to the 31st October, and the amount due for the two months (November and December) to the newly-appointed Secretary was only debited in 1886, in which year, moreover, a yearly allowance of £60 to the Housekeeper also appears under this head. There is besides a sum of £40 6s. 3d. in excess for printing the *Journal*, to be readily accounted for by the fact that, in 1886, we had four issues instead of three, as in 1885. No other point seems to need explanation : but it may be stated that the proceeds of the sale of the *Journal* for the current year promise to attain a higher figure than in 1885 or 1886.

Proceedings.—The following papers have been read, or addresses delivered, at different Meetings of the Society since the last Anniversary (May 17) :—

1. Robert Sewell, Esq., Madras Civil Service, M.R.A.S., "On Early Buddhist Symbolism." Read June 21st, 1886.

2. H. H. Cunynghame, Esq. (introduced by Mr. Habib Anthony Salmoné, M.R.A.S.), "On the Present State of Education in Egypt." Read 15th November, 1886.

3. Rev. S. Beal, M.R.A.S., "Some Remarks on the Narrative of Fà-hien." Read in the author's absence by Professor R. K. Douglas, M.R.A.S., 20th December, 1886.

4. R. N. Cust, Esq., LL.D., Hon. Secretary R.A.S., Address "On the Languages of Oceania." Delivered 24th January, 1887.

5. Captain R. C. Temple, M.R.A.S., "Vivâ Voce Account of the Serial Publications edited by him, or of which he is joint Editor." 21st February, 1887.

6. "Nine Formosa MSS.," a paper by Mr. Colborne Baber, M.R.A.S., followed by "Formosa Notes on MSS., Races and Languages," by M. Terrien de Lacouperie, M.R.A.S. Read in part 21st March, 1887.

7. "Memoir of the Life and Writings of Alexander Wylie," by Prof. Henri Cordier (introduced by Prof. R. K. Douglas). Read 18th April, 1887.

8. "Notes on the Names borne by some of the Tribes of Afghanistan," by Surgeon-Major H. W. Bellew, M.R.A.S. Read 2nd May, 1887.

All the papers above mentioned have been published in the *Journal*, with the exception of three now to be noticed:—No. 4, which was not written at all; No. 5 suddenly substituted for another paper advertised for reading, but not read, and No. 8, limited in publication to some 50 copies.

Journal.—Since the last Anniversary, Parts III. and IV. of Vol. XVIII., and Parts I. and II. of Vol. XIX., have been published. They contain the following papers:

Vol. XVIII. Part III.

14. The Rock-Cut Caves and Statues of Bámíán. By Capt. the Hon. M. G. Talbot, R.E. With Notes hereon, and on Sketches of Capt. P. J. Maitland, Intelligence Branch, Q.-M.-Gen. Department, by W. Simpson, Hon. Assoc. R.I.B.A.; and an additional Note of Capt. Maitland's own.

15. The Sumerian Language and its Affinities. By Prof. Dr. Fritz Hommel, of Munich. Introduced by Dr. Rost, Hon. Memb. R.A.S.

16. Early Buddhist Symbolism. By Robert Sewell, Madras Civil Service, F.R.G.S., M.R.A.S. With a Note by Sir G. Birdwood.

17. The Pre-Akkadian Semites. By G. Bertin, M.R.A.S.

18. The Arrangement of the Hymns of the Adi Granth. By Frederic Pincott, M.R.A.S.

Vol. XVIII. Part IV.

19. Ancient Sculptures in China. By R. K. Douglas, M.R.A.S., Professor of Chinese at King's College, London.

20. The Mosque of Sultan Nasir Mohammed ebn Kalaoun, in the Citadel of Cairo. By Major C. M. Watson, R.E. Communicated by H. C. Kay, Esq., M.R.A.S.

21. The Languages of Melanesia. By Professor Georg von der Gabelentz, of the University of Leipzig. Communicated by the Hon. Secretary.

22. Notes on the History of the Banu 'Oḡayl. By Henry C. Kay, M.R.A.S.

23. Foreign Words in the Hebrew Text of the Old Testament. By the Rev. Stanley Leathes, D.D. Communicated by the Hon. Secretary.

Vol. XIX. Part I.

1. The Story of the Old Bamboo-Hewer. (Taketori no Okina no Monogatari.) A Japanese Romance of the Tenth Century. Translated, with Notes, etc., by F. Victor Dickins, M.R.A.S.

2. An Essay on the Brāhūi Grammar, after the German of the late Dr. Trumpp, of Munich University. By Dr. Theodore Duka, M.R.A.S., Surg.-Major Bengal Army.

3. Art. A Version in Chinese, by the Marquis Tseng, of a Poem written in English and Italian by H. W. Freeland, M.A., M.R.A.S., late M.P., Commander of the Order of the Crown of Siam.

4. Some Useful Hindī Books. By G. A. Grierson, M.R.A.S., Bengal Civil Service.

5. Original Vocabularies of Five West Caucasian Languages. Compiled on the spot by Mr. Peacock, Vice-Consul at Batum, Trans-Caucasia, South Russia, at the request of and communicated by Dr. R. N. Cust, Hon. Sec. R.A.S., with a Note.

Vol. XIX. Part II.

6. Some Remarks on the Narrative of Fâ-hien. By the Rev. S. Beal., M.R.A.S.

7. Priority of Labial Letters illustrated in Chinese Phonetics. By the Rev. J. Edkins, D.D., Peking, Hon. Member R.A.S.

8. The Present State of Education in Egypt. By H. H. Cunynghame, Esq. Communicated by Habíb Anthony Salmoné, M.R.A.S.

9. The Tri-Ratna. By Frederic Pincott, M.R.A.S.

10. Description of the Noble Sanctuary at Jerusalem in 1470 A.D., by Kamâl (or Shams) ad Dîn as Suyûtî. Extracts re-translated by Guy le Strange, M.R.A.S.

The "Notes of the Quarter" have been added since July, 1886, and, it is hoped, will be found, in point of form, a not inapt substitute for the Annual Review of Oriental Literature and Research, which has hitherto been connected with the Council's Report submitted to Members at the close of the Session. Time will, however, be required to give full effect to the significance and intent of this division of the Journal.

Special Sub-Committee.—In the President's Address of May last, mention was made of a Special Committee appointed to investigate the causes of decline in the prosecution of Oriental studies which had become apparent in England. The Proceedings of this Committee have, after many sittings, been recently brought to a close, and the character of the record is such as to certify that something has been done, not only in the investigation of an actual state of things, but also towards the revival of a languishing department of knowledge. The Statement and Appendices published at the close of the Quarterly Notes in the last number of the Journal show much of the nature and extent of the enquiries carried out, but it may be interesting to readers of these papers to learn that the appeal made by the Council to particular individuals and

bodies, in accordance with the Committee's recommendation, has resulted in 31 replies, which may thus be summarised :—

- 1 from the Chancellor of the University of Oxford.
- 3 „ the Colleges of Oxford.
- 4 „ the Colleges of Cambridge.
- 3 „ the Universities of Edinburgh, Aberdeen, and Dublin.
- 11 „ Miscellaneous Colleges and Schools.
- 4 „ Miscellaneous Societies and Institutions.
- 5 „ City Companies.

In all 31

None of these demand a more special allusion than already contained in the President's Address, with the exception of one just received by Sir Henry Rawlinson from the Merchant Taylors' Company, transmitting a donation of ten guineas—a sum which will at once be set aside as the first item of a fund to be devoted to the cause advocated, in such practical form as shall hereafter be decided.

The following list of Council and Officers for the ensuing year is submitted for approval :—

President.—Sir Thomas F. Wade, K.C.B.

Director.—Major-Gen. Sir H. C. Rawlinson, K.C.B., D.C.L., LL.D., F.R.S.

Vice-Presidents.—Sir T. Edward Colebrooke, Bart.; Major-Gen. Sir A. Cunningham, R.E., K.C.I.E., C.S.I.; The Rev. Professor A. H. Sayce, M.A.; Colonel Henry Yule, R.E., C.B., LL.D.

Council.—Professor Cecil Bendall, M.A.; F. V. Dickins, Esq.; Professor R. K. Douglas; Theodore Duka, Esq., M.D.; Sir Barrow H. Ellis, K.C.S.I.; Colonel George E. Fryer; Major-Gen. Sir F. J. Goldsmid, C.B., K.C.S.I.; H. H. Howorth, Esq., F.S.A., M.P.; Henry C. Kay, Esq.; Professor Terrien de Lacouperie, Ph. and Litt. Doctor; General

Robert Maclagan, R.E., F.R.S.E.; Henry Morris, Esq.; T. H. Thornton, Esq., C.S.I.; M. J. Walhouse, Esq.; Professor Sir Monier Monier-Williams, K.C.I.E., M.A., D.C.L.

Treasurer.—E. L. Brandreth, Esq.

Secretary.—From 1st October, 1887, Professor T. W. Rhys Davids.

Hon. Secretary.—Robert N. Cust, Esq., LL.D.

Trustees.—Sir Thomas E. Colebrooke, Bart.; R. N. Cust, Esq., LL.D.; Sir Richard Temple, Bart., G.C.S.I., C.I.E., D.C.L., M.P.

Hon. Solicitor.—Alex. H. Wilson, Esq.

The following exchange Publications—

- The Asiatic Society of Bengal.
- Madras Literary Society.
- Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society.
- Ceylon Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society.
- North China Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society.
- Straits Settlements Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society.
- Japan Asiatic Society.
- Geological Museum, Calcutta.
- Meteorological Committee, Calcutta.
- Royal Society.
- ——— Institution.
- ——— Astronomical Society.
- ——— Colonial Institute.
- ——— Geographical Society.
- ——— Society of Literature.
- Society of Antiquaries.
- Society of Arts.
- Geological Society.
- Anthropological Institute.
- Biblical Archæology.
- Hellenic Society.
- Linnæan Society.
- Numismatic Society.
- Statistical Society.
- United Service Institution.
- Zoological Society.
- Manchester Geographical Society.
- ——— Philosophical Society.
- Liverpool Philosophical Society.
- Royal Irish Academy.
- Royal Society of Edinburgh.

- The Scottish Geographical Society.
 — American Oriental Society.
 ————— Geographical Society.
 — Smithsonian Institution.
 — New Zealand Institute.
 — Royal Society, Victoria.
 ————— Tasmania.
 ————— New South Wales.
 — Société Asiatique, Paris.
 ————— Géographique, Paris.
 ————— Ethnologique, Paris.
 — Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris.
 — Royal Academy, Brussels.
 ————— Munich.
 — University, Bonn.
 — Royal Academy, Lisbon.
 — Imperial Academy, St. Petersburg.
 — Royal Academy of Berlin.
 — Berlin Geographical Society.
 — German Oriental Society.
 — University of Copenhagen.
 — Royal Academy of Sciences, Amsterdam.
 — University Library, Tübingen.
 — Imperial Academy of Vienna.
 ————— Geographical Society, Vienna.
 — Royal Academy, Leyden.
 — Hungarian Academy, Pesth.
 — Society of Arts and Sciences, Batavia, Java.

The Journal is sent to

India Office Library. Advocates' Library. House of Commons. Royal Library,
 Windsor. Athenæum Club. The Bodleian Library. British Museum.
 Public Library, Calcutta. Devon and Exeter Institute. Guildhall, London.
 House of Representatives, New Zealand. University Library, Cambridge.
 Free Public Library, Manchester. Trinity College Library, Dublin.

The Society receives

The Athenæum. The Academy. Allen's Indian Mail. Homeward Mail.
 London and China Telegraph. Reports of the British Association. Indian
 Journal. Seismological Society of Japan. Mittheilungen der Deutschen
 Gesellschaft für Natur- und Völkerkunde Ostasiens, Yokohama. China
 Review. Excursions Chinoises.

Presented during the year :

From the Secretary of State for India in Council.—Archæological Survey of
 Western India. Bombay, 1885.—Ditto Southern India: Tamil and
 Sanskrit Inscriptions. Madras, 1886. By James Burgess, C.I.E., LL.D.,
 M.R.A.S.—The History of Káshgharia, by Dr. H. W. Bellew.—Calcutta

Review.—Flora of British India, part xiii. 1886.—Selections from the Records of the Government of India, 1885-6.—Early Voyages and Travels to Russia and Persia, edited by E. Delmar Morgan and C. H. Coote (Hakluyt Society).—Sacred Books of the East, vols. xxv. and xxix.

From the Government of Bengal.—Report of Administration, 1885-6.—Memoirs of the Geological Survey of India.—Meteorological Memoirs.—Records of the Geological Survey of India.—Report on the Administration of the Hyderabad Assigned Districts for the year 1885-6.—Catalogue of the remains of Siwalik Vertebrata in the Indian Museum, Calcutta, 1885-6, by Richard Lydekker, B.A.

From the Government of Madras.—Report on the Administration of Madras during the year 1885-6.—Annual Report on the Civil Hospitals and Dispensaries, 1885.—Madras Medical College; Annual Report 1885-6.—Annual Report on the Lunatic Asylums, 1885.

From the Government of Bombay.—Report of Administration 1885-6.—Ditto Public Instruction, 1886.—Bombay Gazetteers, vols. xxiv.-v.—“Kolhapur” and “Botany.”—Howell, Arabic Grammar; introduction and part i. fasciculus ii.

From the Government of the Panjaub.—Report of the Administration of Panjaub.

From the French Government.—Nouveaux Mélanges Orientaux, 1886.—Revue de l'histoire des Religions, 1886.—Dictionnaire Turc-Français. 2nd vol. Première Livraison, Paris, 1886.—Annales du Musée Guimet, 1886.

From the Government of the Netherlands.—Nederlandsch-Chineesch Woordenboek, Dr. G. Schlegel, Deel ii. Aflevering 1.—Le Hadhramout et les Colonies Arabes dans L'Archipel Indien, par L. W. C. Den Berg. Batavia, 1886.

From the Turkish Ambassador.—

تاریخ عمومی—مراد بک، Tārīkh ‘Umúmf, General History, by Murad Bey, 6 volumes.

تلماع ترجمہ سی—یوسف کامل باشا، Talmák Tarjumasi, Translation of Tclemachus, by Yusuf Kamil Pasha, 1 volume.

مطایبات ترکیہ—عبدالحمید غایب، Muṭâyabât Turkíya, Turkish Pleasanteries, by Abdul Halim Gháiab.

تکملة العبر—صبحی باشا، Takmilatu'l ‘Abr, by Subhí Pasha.

معلومات کافیہ—احمد جواد، M‘alumát Káfíyah, Abundant Knowledge, by Ahmad Juwád.

مجموعۃ الطرب—نادر، Majmu‘atu’t-Ṭarab, Collection of Cheerfulness, by Nádír.

مفتاح العلوم—لاوری، Miftahul ‘Alám, Key to Sciences.

مبدأی ادب—ابرهیم حالت بک، Mubádi Adab, Beginning of Knowledge, by Ibrahim Hálát Bey.

تعلیم ادبیات—اکرم بک، T‘alím adabíyát, Lessons in Politeness, by Akram Bey.

مدخل انشاء—احمد حمادی، Mudakhal Insha, Elements of Composition, by Ahmad Hamadi.

نمونه انشاء—احمد عاصم، Namúna-i-Insha, Specimens of Composition, by Ahmad ‘Aásim.

اصول کتابت—سید محمد سیرت، Aşúl kitábat, Principles of Writing, by Saiyid Muhammad Sairat.

- جیب کتابخانسی — سامی بک, Jéb katabkhánasi, No. 12, Pocket Library (Proverbs), by Sâmî Bey.
- سودای سعی و عمل — احمد مدحت, Saudái-s'ai wa 'Amal, The Advantages of Endeavour and Action, by Ahmad Madahat.
- اصول جغرافیای کبیر — احمد حمدی, Asál Geographiyái Kabír, Principles of High Geography, by Ahmad Hamdi.
- فلمنص جغرافیای — عزت, Mulakhas Geographiyá, Abridgment of Geography, by 'Izzat.
- جغرافیای عمومی — عبد الرحمن شرف, Geographiyái 'Umúmi, General Geography, by Abdu'l-Rahman Sharaf.
- مدخل و تاریخ فانن جغرافیای, Mudakhal wa táríkh fanun Geographiyá, Introduction to the Science of Geography.
- زبدة الجغرافیای, Zubdat ul Geographiyá, The Cream of Geography.
- اجمال جغرافیای, Ajmál Geographiyá, Compendium of Geography.
- ضروب امثال عثمانیه, Zarúb Amsál Usmaniyyá, Turkish Proverbs.
- From Adler, Marcus N., The Temple at Jerusalem, with a report of the remarks of Major-Gen. Sir Charles Warren, G.C.M.G., F.R.S.
- Andrew, Sir William P., The Advance of Russia, Lond. 1886.
- Baumgartner, Antoine J.—Le Prophète Habakuk, Leipzig, 1885 :—Grammaire Hébraïque, Leipzig, 1886 :—Les Etudes Isagogiques chez les Juifs, Genève, 1886 :—Notes Historiques et Littéraires sur la Poesie Gnomique Juive, Geneva, 1886.
- Bertin, G., L'incorporation Verbale en Accadien, Paris, 1886.
- Bushell, Dr. S. W., Chinese Porcelain before the present Dynasty, Peking, 1886 :—"Ancient Roman Coins from Shansi," Peking, 1886.
- Bellew, Dr. H. W., Kashmir and Kashghar, Lond. 1875 :—From the Indus to the Tigris, Lond. 1874.
- Budge, E. A. W., The Book of the Bee (Anecdota Oxoniensia).
- Chamberlain, Basil Hall.—A Romanized Japanese Reader :—A short statement of the Aim and Method of the Romaji Kai, Tokio, 1886.
- Chijs, J. A. Van (the author), Nederlandsch-Indisch Plakaatboek, 1886.
- Dr. Cust., Yalulema Vocabulary, London, 1887 :—Kibangi ditto, Lond. 1886 :—Kiteke ditto, Lond. 1886, by A. Sims, C.M. :—A Temne Primer, by Rev. C. Knoedler, 1865.
- Casartelli, L. C., Traité de Médecine Mazdéenne, Louvain, 1886.
- Colebrooke, Sir Edward, "The Rise of the British Power in the East," by the late Hon. Mout-Stuart Elphinstone, 1837.
- Doese, Rev. Ernest, Malto Language and Vocabulary, Agra, 1884.
- Delbos, Léon, Moments de Loisir, Paris, 1886.
- Frothingham, A. L., jun., Stephen Bar Sudaili, the Syrian Mystic and the Book of Hierotheos, Leyden, 1886.
- Fryer, Col., Note on the Páli Grammarian Kachchayana, Calcutta, 1882.
- Giles, H., The Remains of Lao Tzu, Hongkong, 1886.
- Gheyn, Van den, Les Populations Danubiennes, Gand, 1886 :—Où est-ce l'Ethnographie :—Les peuples de l'Autriche-Hongrie :—Le Périphe d'Hannon :—Empire of the Hittites (review) :—L'unité de la Race Australienne.
- Grierson, G. A., The Song of Mánik Chandra [Bengal Asiatic Journal].

- From Haggard, Alfred, *A new departure in Foreign Policy*, London, 1886.
- Harlez, C. de, *Histoire de L'Empire de Kin ou Empire d'Or*, Louvain, 1887.
- Huet, M. Gédéon, *Catalogue des Manuscrits Néerlandais de la Bibliothèque Nationale*, 1886.
- Jámáspjee Minocheherjee, *On the Avestic Terms Mazda—Ahura—Mazda—Ahura*.
- Kavi Ráj Shyámál Dáss, *The Miná Tribe of Jáppur, in Maywar:—Birthday of the Emperor Jaláluddin Muhammad Akbar:—On the Epic called The Prithi Ráj Rásá [from the Bengal Asiatic Journal]*.
- MacDonell, A. A., *Anecdota Oxoniensa, Aryan Series, Katyáyana's Sarvanukramani*.
- Minocheherji, *A short treatise on the Navjot Ceremony*, Bombay, 1887.
- Neve, Felix, *L'Arménie Chrétienne*, Louvain, 1886.
- Poole, Stanley Lane, *The Art of the Saracens in Egypt*, Lond. 1886.
- Société Asiatique de Paris, *Voyages d'Ibn Batoutah; Maçoudi, Les Prairies d'Or*, 9 vols. 1861-1877.
- Pope, Dr. G. U., *The Sacred "Kural."*
- Rusden, G. W., "Suggestions for a History of the Origin and Migrations of the Maori People," by Francis Dart Fenton.
- Weber, A., vol. ii., *Die handschriften verzeichnisse der Königlichen Bibliothek zu Berlin*, 1886.
- Whinfield, E. H., M.A., "Masnavi i Ma'navi" (Trübner's Series), London, 1887.
- Wheeler, J. Talboys, *India under British Rule*, London, 1886.
-

13966TA

LR

11-27-02 32100

23

XL



